



Schism of the Cosmos

Glen E. White

Copyright January 2003. All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any form by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopy, recording or otherwise, without the prior permission of the author.

Scripture quotations are taken from the New International Version 1986, Zondervan Corporation, unless indicated.

Editing thanks to Mavis Andrews, former editor of *Focus on Women*, Heather Wiebe, Wayne Wilson, and Larry Hatch.

The Author

Glen White, Geophysicist, has been involved in the study of natural sciences since the mid-1960s. He seeks to discover if, philosophically, God the uncreated cause can exist and if so is the Bible His supernatural inspired word to mankind. Can Evolution or God show that we have purpose to our lives and that humanity has meaning in the cosmos? If the Bible is the inspired word of God to men, then how did it come about and where does it tell us that we are headed? Was there a great Schism in the cosmos of ethereal forces that impinges on the destiny of mankind and planet Earth?

Dedicated to my
Darling wife Karen,
Beautiful Daughters Ariel, Heather, Julie and Rena
and
Handsome sons-in-law Craig, Barry and James

Praise for Schism Of The Cosmos

Glen White's writings show a passion about God's world that has been thoroughly researched and intimately walked with his Saviour.

Mr. White's book "Schism Of The Cosmos" takes you on a journey starting in the world of science, through scripture dealing with aliens, angels and the Heavens, and how they are all connected, into the history of a nation belonging to the God of the Universe. His highly scientific walk through/over the theory of evolution should be a great help to those who need "scientific proof" on which to base their beliefs. In regards to the next section, I have said for many years that Satan is going to use the phenomena of aliens to explain away the rapture of the Church. Mr. White has been able to scripturally confirm the basis for his theory and mine and take it so much further than my little concept!

I really enjoyed the section of writing that wove through much of the history of the Jewish people in such a way that it brought a lot of clarity for me of God's work in and with His Chosen. I was able to see the hows and whys of historic events and see connections that were unclear to me before. Mr. White is able to bring history alive like few others. I feel that this is because he is writing about something dear to God's heart.

While Mr. White's books are not necessarily for the average reader (closer to a university-level text!), everyone would benefit from the information and views shared within. He has an extraordinary gift for pulling scripture, science, and history together into a flowing picture that runs like a movie through your mind.

I eagerly await book number three!

In Christ

Nadine Hartwig

A Cosmic Interlude

The ferry from Vancouver Island is crowded with additional walk on passengers for the holiday long weekend. A slow stroll up one deck and down another finally reveals a possible seat by a young man deeply engrossed in a hardcover book. Likely—a student I think to myself. “Mind if I sit here?” “Sit down,” he answers, shuffling in his seat and once again penetrating his book to the throb of the massive diesel engines and the gentle sideways rolling of the ship. “Crowded in here” one of us says, and like all travelers thrown together for a moment of time we chat the usual state of the economy and world events. “What are you reading?” “Oh about life” he responds hesitatingly. “You mean about the meaning of our existence in the cosmos?” His face brightens with inquisitive intensity. “Yes” is his quick response. “Well what do you think about the philosophical possibility of God and his involvement in space-time?” I ask. It is a great discussion; the usually long journey melts away. “All passengers prepare to disembark,” blares over the loud speaker.

Reaching into my cardholder, I retrieve and pass him my card. An expression of absolute shock piles up on his face. “Mr. White?” His voice registers the sound of uncertain astonishment. “Do you ever wear a brown hat,” he inquires? I hesitate in a momentary preponderance. Would you believe that this was one of the rare occasions that I was not wearing my usual brown cowboy hat. So I explain. He slowly looks down at the card, then back up at me as if something cosmologically significant had happened. “Where I am reading in this book,” he hesitates in deep thought, “the young man in the story is just at the point where a stranger in a brown hat comes, sits down beside him and explains the meaning of the cosmos.... his name is Mr. White.”

Table of Contents

Chapter	Page
Second Letter from An Ambassador For King Jesus Christ	12
Dear Citizens Of Earth	
An Incredible Biological Machine	13
Are We an Electrochemical Accident	14
A Supernatural Legislator	16
Supernatural Information	17
1 The Infinite	19
Metaphysical Reality	21
The Physical Universe	22
God's Claim	25
2 Satan, A Love Lost Relationship	28
The Heart of the Rebellion	31
3 World Of Wonder	36
Models of the Universe	37
The Universe in a Bubble	43
Searching for Truth	44
4 The Solar System	50
Planet Problems	51
The Sun and the Ecliptic	53
The Moon	55
5 Accident Or Design	59
Fundamental Darwinism	60
The Genetic Code	62
The Blind Man's Solution	65
The Chicken or the Egg	68
Philosophical Lamarckism	69
Mass Extinctions	72
God, Evolution or the Alien	78

6 The Question Of God	81
Spiritualism	82
A Philosophical Challenge	83
7 The Bible	89
Why The Scriptures are Accurate	92
The Word in the World	97
8 Inspired Scripture	99
Archaeological Background	100
Genesis: Book of Beginnings	104
Genesis on Cuneiform Tablets	106
Ancient knowledge	112
Supernaturally Dictated and Inspired	119
9 God “I Am”	127
God’s Cosmological Viewpoint	128
God’s Character	132
The Godhead	133
10 Creation	142
The Cosmos	143
The Big Bang	145
The Sci-Fi Continuum	147
Creation ex-nihilo?	149
A Theistic Universe	150
11 In The Beginning	164
Propositional Truth	165
Fossils	168
The Differentiation Period	170
What is a Day	176
12 The Garden	181
The Creation of Adam	183
Sentient Free Will	189
Cosmic Automatons	193
The Future of God’s Biological Marvel	195
13 The Rebellion	198
The Cosmic Rebellion	200
The Great Pyramid and the Sphinx	204
Are We Alone?	210

14 The Attack	213
Morality by Evolution	214
Deception In The Garden	217
Sovereign Wills	223
Shame	224
Mankind Joins the Cosmic Rebellion	227
The Articles of War	231
Sacrifice of the Lamb Foretold	234
15 The Occupation	238
Genealogies	240
Master Your Will	242
An Evil Civilization	244
The Secret Document	245
Ethereal Government	246
The Story in the Sky	249
The Invasion of Alien Angels	251
16 Chaos	259
Catastrophism	259
Flood Legends	261
Gods in the Heavens	265
What about Mars	271
Celestial Mud and Ice	275
Other Biblical Catastrophes	278
The Earth Wobbles	279
Putting the Puzzle Together	281
17 The Deluge	287
Ancient Civilization	289
Noah's Ark	291
The World Wide Deluge	295
Continental Floods	299
A Challenge to Uniformitarianism	300
Interplanetary Devastation	303
The Question of Glaciers	305
Ooparts—Out of Place Artifacts	307
The Legions of Doom	311
18 Melchizedek	314
The Significance of the Ark	315
Civilization Begins Again	316
Astrology	320
God Picks His Man	323

19 Abraham	327
The One Way Covenant of <i>The Land</i>	328
The Covenant of Circumcision	331
Jerusalem the City of Destinies	331
Sodom and Gomorrah	332
Futuristic Word Pictures	337
20 Who Is God	351
Just a Biblical Myth?	366
A Logical Sequence of Events	367
Circumstantial Evidence	369
21 Treasured Possession	375
The Sinai covenant	377
The Israelites Meet Their God	378
God's Laws and Regulations	380
Spiritual Considerations	383
Spiritual Adultery	385
Michael the Prince	388
Wandering in The Desert	390
22 The Stiff-necked People	396
King David	398
Prophecies of the Messiah	399
The First Temple	401
Spiritual Idolatry	402
The March into Captivity	405
Supernatural Code	406
The Judgment of Nations Foretold	411
23 Powerful Angels At War	413
God Departs From Jerusalem	415
The Statue Of Nations	418
Powers and Principalities	420
A Holographic Vision of the Future	425
Historical and Future Fulfillment of the Visions	430
The Resurrection	432
Israel and The End Times	433
The Lord Will Bring Salvation	438
24 It Is Time	441
The Incarnation of The Son	442
The Star of Bethlehem	452
Prophetic Proof	452
Jesus is God	453

Jesus as a Youth	456
25 Jesus	459
Jesus the Man	461
The Baptism of Jesus	463
A Clash of Wills	466
Religious and Political Power	468
The Question of the Messiah	470
The Declaration of Freedom	471
Jesus Claims to be God	474
26 The Face Of God	477
Hades	478
The Kingdom of God	479
To Be Born Again	484
Living Water	485
Wheat and Weeds	486
Jesus The God-Man	488
The Era of The Bride—His Church	492
End Times	493
The Anointed One is Cut Off	495
27 The Transformation	500
The Last Supper	501
The Arrest Conspiracy	504
The Murder of The Divine Son	510
The Paradox of Good and Evil	519
The Transformation	520
Why Wasn't Jesus Recognized	527
The Ascension	527
28 The Interval Of The Bride	531
The Coming Counselor	532
Ambassador Peter	534
Stephen Martyred	536
Ambassador Paul	538
Salvation for All	541
The Kingdom of Heaven Rejected	545
A Cosmic Revelation	546
29 God Exists	553
The Letter	556
Changed Lives	574
God Exists!	582

30 The Paradigm Shift	588
Do The Church Ages Foretell The End?	590
Golden Threads	593
31 Cosmic Warfare	615
The Riders of the Apocalypse	617
Jerusalem and Babylon	619
Death From Space	623
32 The Great Consequence	643
Israel Recognizes Their Messiah	645
Judgment of the Nations	646
The Millennium	648
The Bride	652
Topographic Adjustments in Israel	655
The Millennial Temple	659
The Rule of the Iron Scepter	661
Administrations of Heaven and Earth	662
A Timely Story	666
The Millennium is Over	669
33 The Ages of Ages	673
The New Earth	674
The New Jerusalem	676
Light Has Vanquished Darkness	683
Respectfully,	
An Ambassador For King Jesus to Planet Earth	684

From the Office of an Ambassador for King Jesus Christ

Dear Citizens of Earth,

Blood, clothes, bones and flesh are splattered everywhere from the suicide bomber blast. *My baby, my baby* wails a distraught mother holding her child like a rag doll. Senseless sectarian and religious hate murders are awash in every country. Hate drives nation against nation, race against race and religion against religion until the world is a boiling cauldron of death. Kill the Jews—wipe Israel into the sea screams the president of Iran as Muslim anti-Semitic ferocity increases around Jerusalem and is raising its head, like a tongue darting cobra, in other nations.

Yes, dear citizens, civilization is under attack. Since my first letter to you regarding *Of The Something More*, many of you have been asking about the great and terrible war in the Cosmos. How did this war start? How will it affect planet Earth? Does God really exist, and is the Bible an authentic cosmic revelation from Him. Moreover, some of you still question your very significance, so I thought it best, my friends, in this second letter to start at the very beginning, so that you will be encouraged as you see space-time history race towards you, and catch a glimpse of the great Celestial City glimmering in the future. But first let's take a brief futuristic look at what John, one of Jesus' apostles, sees from his heavenly viewpoint as the great concluding battle of the cosmos, between the forces of Light and Darkness, centers around Jerusalem.

As Jerusalem is being sacked with vicious slaughter and rape, I see a massive glowing transition cloud, stretching from horizon to horizon, form over Israel between the dimension of Heaven and Earth. Through the cloud, a gigantic breach opens up

from Heaven. Colossal flashes of lightning envelope Earth from the leading point of the breach. Deep rumblings, violent thunder and atmospheric compression-decompression waves torture the atmosphere. Simultaneously an earthquake, the likes of which has never before occurred or will ever occur again, vibrates around Earth— islands and mountains disappear—oceans slosh over continental lowlands like dirty water in a washbasin. A major fault ruptures through to the hydrocarbons under Babylon in Iraq. Oil and natural gas fireball explosions reach the upper stratosphere as the evil city is devoured in brilliant flames and intense heat.

*Huge hailstones, bigger than basketballs, pound Earth. The armies surrounding Jerusalem vehemently curse God and try to hide from the super hail. What they can't see, is the heavenly highway rapidly extending like a gently sloped wide ribbon, as if a road comes from nowhere out of the sky onto **the land**. It stops at the Mount of Olives, in Israel, beside the city of Jerusalem. The Earth starts to tremble with the beat of untold millions of horse hooves. The sound of shouting and neighing dwarfs the thunder of artillery and the screaming of the terrified and dying, then suddenly the clouds are gone. The interdimensional connection is complete.*

So let's start at the very beginning and ask—Is anyone out there? When we think beyond our present moment of existence, we will usually question: are there humanoids like us somewhere out there, or some kind of ethereal interdimensional spirit being—or even God, creator of it all. With this thought, we arrive at the possibility of more than just the physical essence that we call “ourselves.” Often we are too busy, totally harassed and have not really thought about the complexity of our physical—spiritual body. Our concept of God may be nothing more than

spiritualizing something we do not understand. Then in some ponderous moment we might pause and ask—why do we as unique thinking human beings even exist on this beautiful planet called Earth?

An Incredible Biological Machine

Here we are, we walk upright on two specially designed legs. Our arms are just the right length, not too short or too long. On the end are units called hands with remarkably flexible digits called fingers. Sounds enter our brains through holes in our heads that have hardened wrinkles of skin on each side in just the right places to hang our glasses. Our eyeballs look straight out and give us stereovision in millions of shades of living color. Our hairless bodies are such that we can wear lovely designer clothes, which allow us to live and work in all sorts of environments. Inside the globe of our skull, balanced on top of a unique skeleton structure, is a blob of mass called a brain, which processes five streams of real-time data—sight, hearing, taste, touch and smell. This marvelous biological machine somehow knows that it **is**, and at times seems to have a very high opinion of itself in a way that is unique to any other living species on Earth. It has a built in sound-processing unit that science tells us is specially designed to support the intricacies of human speech, and, it can generate a pattern of continuous wave forms called singing. Not only that, this biological machine also automatically understands spatial, mathematical, musical, philosophical and past-future concepts. It responds to its physical surroundings with variable feelings, called emotions. This biological machine is not only physically complex, but is loaded with innate (built in) computer programming that allows it to function.

Are We an Electrochemical Accident?

In our complex highly technical world most—of us live-as-we-go individuals—utilize modern gadgets for what they are and junk them when they no longer work, not caring about their

underlying scientific principles. Our faith in these scientific principles is justified because, for most of us, the explanation that it is complex technology is good enough as long as the thing works. In that sense then, faith in something is justified by results. Scientists tell us the atom, the building block of matter, is mostly empty space. Yet—a piece of wood seems solid. In that ponderous sense, which is easier to believe—evolution, the idea that we are some kind of electrochemical accident from a cesspool of amino acids, or that God exists—and we are an act of divine creation? Both require faith. In the case of evolution, imagine a frothing pool of ammonia, carbon, and mineral salts hidden in a dense fog (sunlight destroys amino acids, which would interfere with the possibility of growth), a bolt of lightning hits and somehow the complex biological engine of life begins and continues to evolve over eons of time. Alternatively, a Divine Being takes a lump of clay forms a complex biological machine fully encoded with genetic information ready to operate, then breathes life—intangible energy—into this lump of clay and, as told in the Bible, we have Adam, the first human.

The emotion of faith is rooted in a personal belief system that may be logical or illogical, reasonable or unreasonable, but it is this belief system that brings hope or despair. Few of us, when there is a pause in the mad hectic pace of our get-me-there, do-me-that lifestyle, will deny our reality of the here and now. At any given moment, when a soft breeze drifts the smell of roses into our presence, or the laughter of our loved ones delight our hearts, we may admit life is gracious, and revel in the essence of our being. But, the crunch of tragedy, or the pain of sickness and death more times than not, blinds our hope, dulls our understanding and our pensive hearts cry out against the great beyond, at the perceived unfairness of our existence. Thoughts become embittered and warm rays of sunlight are unnoticed as we sit in despair, unaware of the gentle tick

of the grandfather clock, forgetting, or not understanding that we really are *of the something more*. Let's stop to consider; is it evolution or creator God that gives purpose to life?

A Supernatural Legislator

What is supernatural? An elementary answer is—"that which is beyond the normal or the natural." The famous Oxford thinker, C.S. Lewis, comments that to define the natural, you have to assume the uniformity of the natural; in other words, that nature is the same today as yesterday, and that it can only be proved by experience. This is impossible because "uniformity has to be assumed before experience proves anything."ⁱ "Man became scientific," said Lewis, "because they expected Law in Nature, and they expected Law in Nature because they believed in a Legislator." He adds, "We may be living nearer than we suppose to the end of the Scientific Age."ⁱⁱ

The last several decades of science fiction and supernatural film plots have blurred the distinction between supernatural and natural. We might question if this is part of a subtle alien agenda, because technological modern man is more than willing, in his philosophical thinking, to exclude a personal Creator—God and

Is there really a Time Continuum?

Science fiction plays with the concept that through time travel, past and future events can be manipulated. In that sense—you exist in multiple branching decisions in multiple time frames. Is there really a time continuum where everything is already decided? Can evolution really create all sorts of diverse life forms? Dean Foster's science fiction story, *The Path Of The Perambulator*, has a random occurring force, a ball of energy called a perambulator that reassembles matter into "anything-goes" life forms. What if there is no legislator and evolution is a perambulator? Mutation would be the random super nature force. Chaos can only be the result; yet, our planet is full of system and order.

substitute nebulous beliefs in alien-directed evolution for mankind's origin. The late Dr. Carl Sagan,ⁱⁱⁱ a renowned scientist, searched the heavens for intelligent binary code when the cells of our bodies contain more bits of programmed binary code than all the words in all the books in the world's libraries—a truly remarkable life-form!

Supernatural Information

The Bible, a book of sacred writings, —consisting of the Holy Scriptures of Judaism and those of the early Christian Church, describes the supernatural, —and may itself be a supernatural book. Certainly, it outlines a supernatural beginning for man—a monotheistic personal God who created the heavens and the earth and who intervened on Earth on behalf of mortals in the great and terrible war of the cosmos. The Bible further claims a high and lofty destiny for people to become Celestial Citizens governing the universe from a magnificent Celestial City.

As Kenneth Boa comments, —“since the Bible is an infinite revelation, it often brings the reader beyond the level of his intelligence. The man who believes God's Word does not end up committing intellectual suicide. Instead his mind rises to heights that he previously could not have attained.”^{iv}

Notes:

ⁱ C.S. Lewis, *Miracles*, Collier Books 1960,pg. 102

ⁱⁱ Lewis, *Ibid*, pg. 106

ⁱⁱⁱ Carl Sagan, I.S. Shklovskii, *Intelligent Life In The Universe*, Dell Publishing Co. 1966

^{iv} Kenneth Boa, *God I Don't Understand*, Victor Books 1975, pg. 11

Chapter 1

The Infinite

God created! It is an easy statement to say, but the intellect boggles at the mental picture of an endless black expanse of space with twinkling stars, whirling galaxies, black holes, quasars, pulsars and star cluster bubbles that astronomers say inhabit this vast space-time universe. Yet, as we stand on planet Earth, there is security in looking up at blue sky, down at soft brown dirt, or sideways at green vegetation or rippling blue waters; even if sideways, up and down are only relative terms depending where we stand on this rainbow-colored ball hurling silently around a glowing globe of nuclear fire. Both ball and globe are part of the outer arm of a spiral galaxy of stars (viewed from Earth as the Milky Way), slowly rotating as it proceeds through uncharted space.

The thought of a personality so unconfined and infinite that He could create a universe is inconceivable to microdot man. Although humankind may not be able to fully understand the concept of such a being, religion throughout the ages stands as proof that we can imagine it. And for some deep reason, though we may believe that life came from an electrochemical accident, we explore the concepts of an invisible spirit dimension and/or complex inter-related physical dimensions. Let's examine some of these concepts.

The belief that God is part of the universe as a universal spiritual medium like a fluid or a gas rather than a cognitive reality is called pantheism, which is "the mindset of the natural man,"¹ who does not believe in, or does not want there to be an Almighty God.

The belief that this force produces life is called animism—even inanimate objects are thought to have a spiritual energy. Since a believer in pantheism feels they are part of this force, and have a sense of self-awareness, they may conclude, “they are a god.” Shirley Maclaine, famous for her writings on out of body experiences, is one of these believers.

F. Lagard Smith comments,

If there was any lingering doubts in Ms. MacLaine’s mind about her own self being a metaphor for God, in *Dancing in the Light* she quite clearly has resolved it in favor of self-deity.

‘I know that I exist, therefore I AM.

I know that the God source exists.

Therefore It is.

Since I am part of that force, then I AM that I AM.’

Smith concludes, “I AM THAT I AM” is a biblical reference applied exclusively to the Creator God of the universe, the one true and living God.ⁱⁱ

The New Age movement believes that a unified mindset called global consciousness, where everyone thinks the same thoughts, can shape the future of our space-time world in a god-like fashion. What should be seriously questioned is how can inner wisdom or any spiritual force evolve from an accumulated mass of organic molecules, such that it will affect non-local (outside of space-time) or even local (inside space-time) physical matter? The irony is that here we are, the human race, just beginning to understand that we are in an already complex universe so we could not have thought it into existence. Maybe there is a God, outside of our space-time dimension, and He did the planning and design—if He did, then He is not pantheistic.

Metaphysical Reality

Next, look beneath the layer of classical physics into the quantum realm where all is whirling electrons whose existence is statistical; here the improbable become probable. The “Many Worlds Interpretation Of Quantum Reality”^{iv} by Hugh Everett PhD describes the world as a continually proliferating jungle of conflicting possibilities each in its own universe. Each world is a result of a continually branching tree of possibilities where anything that can happen will happen. His concept is that there are many “you”, living out each decision on a different world. Everett calls this complex time continuum “super reality.” Science fiction goes as far as having people with a physical identity in one world of possibility meeting themselves in another world of possibility, as if the person’s spiritual component is composed of only natural subatomic particles. In this viewpoint, which is the same as evolution, death dissolves both physical and spiritual.

“Supernature”

C. S. Lewis calls everything outside of nature “Supernature.” This is not to be confused with Everett’s “super reality” which pertains to a quantum theory of physics and therefore would be a complex phase of nature. Supernature is controlled by the “Legislator” outside of space-time and implies intelligence and direction.ⁱⁱⁱ

The Gaia hypothesis, originated by inventor scientist James Lovelock and named after the ancient earth goddess of the Greeks, is that the planet is “alive” and functions as a self-regulating super organism. This super organism is proposed to be all knowing and is forming its destiny; our importance is no more than that of a seasonal flower. Now, no one would argue against the complex interaction between the atmosphere, the land, the

ocean and the delicate symbiotic relationships of living systems. However, to ascribe to Gaia a living spiritualism such that it “promises to end the long estrangement of Western science and religion”^v implies a powerful pantheistic god wherein we should prostrate ourselves before the rocks, trees, sun and moon. Darwinian evolution

You’re only a seed

“Gaia hypothesis proponent Lewis Thomas, coyly suggests that through space exploration, mankind may be acting as an inadvertent disseminator of earth’s spore.”^{vi}

has no provisions for the supernatural; yet, God-denying modern man by circular reasoning, “I exist, therefore I AM” is trying to climb a spiritual evolutionary tree to godhood. The result is a gumbo of spiritual holistic views that blur the purpose of living and the distinction between life and death.

The Physical Universe

Cosmic Coincidences, by John Gribbin and Martin Rees, probes the question of the flatness [the state between contracting and expanding] of the Universe; i.e. that it cannot be determined if the universe is static, expanding or contracting. The authors state, “If the Universe really is flat... the “right” amount of primordial energy was converted

Circular Reasoning

Evolutionist and paleontologist Niles Eldredge writes, “this poses something of a problem: if we date the rocks by their fossils, how can we then turn around and talk about patterns of evolutionary change through time in the fossil record?”^{vii}

into baryons (visible matter) when the Universe was young to ensure the eventual emergence of stars, planets, and us.”^{viii} This is an improbable outcome considering the number of critical factors that had to be just right to arrive at our world and our existence.

Yet, because we are here, evolutionists conclude by circular reasoning that it must have happened.

Gribbin and Rees then question: “What features of the Universe were essential for the emergence of creatures such as ourselves, and is it through coincidence, or for some deeper reason, that our Universe has these features?” Their conclusion is that “if there is no life elsewhere, the Earth acquires universal significance as the spark with the unique potential to spread life and consciousness through the cosmos.”^{ix}

Just as there is no certainty as to whether the universe is static or expanding, the distribution of matter in interstellar space is not what it was thought to be according to the Big Bang theory. Matter is not evenly distributed, but occurs in some parts as immense bubbles, each of them approximately 150 million light years across. A second feature is a great wall of galaxies at least 200 million light-years wide, 500 million light-years long and perhaps 15 million thick. Jeremiah Ostriker, chairman of Princeton University’s astrophysics department, was quoted as saying, “There is no theory using conventional physics that can explain these structures without causing other inconsistencies.”^x Somehow, all these theories have to fit the requirements for the development of intelligent life.

Fred Heeren science writer and lecturer, in his book *Show Me God*, lists 12 requirements that limit the possibility of Earth’s biological life systems occurring profusely throughout the universe.

- 1) The host star must be of right size and type.
- 2) The planets must start from a small, short-lived type of proto planetary disk.

- 3) The system must be devoid of large planets with elliptical orbits.
- 4) Large planets with circular orbits are required at the right distance.
- 5) The planet must maintain a circular orbit within narrow limits within the Goldilocks zone [a zone favorable for biological life].
- 6) The planet's size must fit within narrow limits to hold the right kind of atmosphere and maintain moderate temperatures.
- 7) The planet must be a member of a double-planet system to avoid tilting too far on its spin axis.
- 8) The time when the parent star heats up must coincide with the time in which the planet's atmosphere changes to a cooler mixture.
- 9) Continuous tectonic plate activity is required to keep the planet from freezing and to cause precipitation.
- 10) The planet must have two kinds of crust of right thickness;
- 11) It must overcome the odds against the formation of life and
- 12) It must overcome the odds against the development of intelligence, which Professor Stephen Jay Gould calls "an ultimate in oddball rarity."^{xi}

In his book *A Brief History Of Time*, Stephen W. Hawking Ph.D., discusses the arrow of time, which is pointing in the direction of increasing entropy (a loss of useful energy), or in other words, disorder is increasing with time. Heat is a disordered form of energy. It takes a lot of heat and light from the sun, which is burning up, to maintain life. The thermodynamic arrow of time is in the direction of the expanding universe. Hawking states, "This becomes a question of why we should be in the expanding phase rather than

the contracting phase. One can answer this question on the basis of the weak anthropic [having to do with mankind] principle. Conditions in the contracting phase would not be suitable for the existence of intelligent beings who could ask the question: ‘why is disorder increasing in the same direction of time as that in which the universe is expanding?’”^{xii} The echo keeps sounding—is it through coincidence, or for some deeper reason, that our Universe has these features?

Naturalists, whose philosophy is that of evolution, need to answer the question; how did the direction of the “intelligence arrow” develop. The author, to define the purpose and direction of life including the organic binary code instructing the biological engine of humanity, has coined the term “intelligence arrow.” Evolution assumes a branching tree of increasing complex life forms headed by man. However, purpose has not been defined by evolution, nor can it be, since by definition evolution is a random time-plus-chance event.

So, what is man’s destiny—is man the visible representation of the force of pantheism? But, the thermodynamic arrow of time dictates an end to this universe, which would obliterate the gods of pantheism and the wheel of reincarnation. Moreover, to imply a personality to pantheism puts a mysterious *someone else* in charge

God’s Claim

If God did create the heavens and the earth, then He is in control of the thermodynamic direction of our universe and the direction of the intelligence arrow for the human race. God, through the prophet Isaiah as recorded in the Bible, makes dramatic statements about who He **is**.

Isaiah. 46:9 *“Remember the former things, those of long ago; I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like me.”*

Isaiah. 46:10 *“I make known the end from the beginning, from ancient times, what is still to come. I say: My purpose will stand, and I will do all that I please.”*

Isaiah. 48:13 *“My own hand laid the foundations of the earth, and my right hand spread out the heavens; when I summon them, they all stand up together.”*

In the beginning, God did, or He didn't. If He didn't, we have the impersonal beginning, which is the consensus of the scientific Western world and Eastern religious thinking.

If He did, then before “in the beginning,” the personal already existed. “Therefore, prior to Genesis 1:1, [the first verse in the Bible] love and communication are intrinsic to what

Spheres of Angels

Philosophers before Copernicus believed that the Sun orbited Earth. Earth was the center of the universe and was surrounded by outer spheres of watching angels. “Copernicus dethroned the Earth from a [Ptolemaic] central position in the Universe; the cosmologists of the 1920's and 1930's demoted us from any privileged location in space, and taught us that the Milky Way Galaxy is simply an ordinary collection of stars located in an ordinary, typical region of the Universe.”^{xiii} Did Copernicus really show that Earth is not an important planet? If God is outside of space-time and yet we are His focus, what does it matter if we are on the outer spiral arm of an ordinary galaxy on the edge of nowhere? However, if the boundaries of the universe are undefined, then there is no way to know where we are.

has always been.”^{xiv} A personal beginning would explain the universe, its form and the complex nature of man, which Dr. Francis Schaeffer, an articulate theologian, terms the “mannishness of man.”^{xv} This would validate the curious scientific coincidences that suggest the universe and planet Earth is made to accommodate mankind (anthropic).

If mankind is special then what sets him apart from all other living creatures? The answer is that he is cognizant that “he is,” a role totally elevated from the rest of the animal kingdom. Moreover, it has been observed that man does not fill any biological niche. The biological system seems to work best without his demonstrated destructive environmental influences. So if God created man, then is the purpose of man to understand and love God on a personal level, rather than as a biological automaton filling an evolutionary niche? If the universe, this world, and man, did commence with a personal “in the beginning God created,” then how did man get the freedom to deny his creator? A reasonable hypothesis is that the infinite personal God, existing outside of space-time, is using the intelligence arrow of the biological system, and the thermodynamic arrow of time, to fashion a free will love relationship between Him and independent cognizant beings, whether spiritual or corporeal.

The Bible describes mankind as having a complex nature of body: soul and spirit. It also describes an ongoing cosmic battle being waged in the heavenly realms by spirit beings, which affects planet Earth. If man is more than just an evolutionary biological machine, then the spiritual and corporeal struggles between good and evil as outlined in the Bible could only make sense if the rebellion of ethereal identities that affects our world of corporeal beings, comes to some conclusion and there is judgment for the evil done in both realms. Accordingly, both the heavenly and space-time realms become

linked in a glorious Celestial future—such as eternal life, and a Heaven and Earth where there is purpose, direction and meaning to our existence under the *Whole* heaven.

Notes:

ⁱ C.S. Lewis, *Miracles*, Collier Books 1960, pg. 82

ⁱⁱ Smith F. LaGard Dr., *Out On A Broken Limb*, Harvest House Publishers 1986, pg. 180

ⁱⁱⁱ Lewis C.S., *Ibid*, pgs. 28, 106

^{iv} Herbert Nick, *Quantum Reality*, 1985, Doubleday Dell Publishing, pg. 19

^v Linden Eugene, "How Earth Maintains Life," *TIME*, November 13, 1989

^{vi} Linden, *Ibid*

^{vii} Eldredge Niles, *Times Frames* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1985, p.52)

^{viii} Gribbin J., Rees M., *Cosmic Coincidences*, 1985, Bantam Books, pg. 107

^{ix} Gribbin & Rees, *Ibid*, pg. 291

^x *TIME*, November 27, 1989

^{xi} Heeren Fred, *Show Me God*, Vol 1, Day Star Productions, 1998 pg. 74

^{xii} Hawking W. Stephen Prof., *A Brief History of Time*, Bantam Book 1988, pg. 151

^{xiii} Gribbin & Rees, *Ibid*, pg. 61

^{xiv} Schaeffer Francis A., *Genesis in Space and Time*, 1972, Intervarsity press, pg. 20

^{xv} Schaeffer Francis, *Ibid*

Chapter 2

Satan: A Lost Love Relationship

He had never thought of it before; actually, he had never thought before. That fact in itself was a startling revelation. But the probing pulse of consciousness nagged at him until the thought became focused like a laser beam... steadily, steadily until it penetrated the mega-faceted crystal of reality and exploded in brilliant rainbow webs of living essence.

Around him were others like himself, a flashing brilliance, and a surge of spirit becoming laughter. A need of being sprang to consciousness—he saw the CREATOR and knew that he was created. Orbs of knowledge swirled within, dimensions of energy pulsed his reality and exploded into sentience of being.

Lucifer, meaning: Shining One, Satan, resistor or adversary, Devil, accuser or slanderer—these are terms referring to a powerful spirit being. The Bible calls him the god of this world.ⁱ

But why discuss spiritual beings? Is this reality? In the 1960s under the intellectual pursuit of evolution, God was declared to be dead or well on his way to being a passé myth. In our 21st century, the Biblical God has been replaced, in part, by a paranormal spirit essence that—in an unprecedented type of paradigm shift—is to quantum-leap mankind into evolutionary godhood,

even though according to the pure theory of evolution there are no spirits or supernatural forces. A true evolutionist believes himself to be accountable only to himself since he is an improbable statistic of inorganic matter. So, why then, in spite of this evolutionary philosophy of scientific enlightenment, does most of Earth's population to some degree either, pray, chant, meditate, worship, attend séances and/or seek spirit guides?

Spirit Identities

Channeling and chanting for visionary guides in a séance, introduce outside forces into our corporeal self. By what power can they be expelled?

If humanity evolved, it should be “natural” to be non-spiritual, however, most people regardless of race compromise this position and define relevant terms of good and bad, which they broadly term “morality.” A religion ascribes morality to rules instituted by a higher order of “spirit beings”. This usually culminates in spiritual systems of dos and don'ts. Whether we ascribe to a secular or a religious concept of morality, we are really left with only two choices—we are an elegantly evolved biological machine, or we are a composite created being with an unexplained life force flowing through our complex matrixes of organic cells.

Scientists have not been able to create the “life force” in their laboratories. They have reassembled living organic cells already containing the life force, but have not been able to jump-start a string of inorganic molecules into living matter with electricity or chemical reactions. Like life force, spiritual essence is not

Crystals

The natural growth of crystals is a complex interaction of electric fields within their atoms and has nothing to do with “life force.”

measurable. Death causes the life force to flow out of a loved one, a pet or enemy within our intimate presence. It dissipates and nothing brings it back, though the individual cells that comprise

the body may assimilate nutrients and continue functioning for a while (for instance, a dead person's fingernails will continue to grow for a short period of time).

However, we are *of the something more*, body, soul and spirit and can sense the presence of spirit, or ethereal, beings as energy forces outside our bodies. So, how did this war in the cosmos of ethereal beings start? We can only surmise that before “in the beginning,” that if love and communication existed, God could have created spirit beings and given them free will. The Bible describes a happy period when the morning stars sang together and all the angels shouted for joy.ⁱⁱ If angels are happy and shouting for joy, where did the negative spirit forces, the Legions of Doom, come from?

He knew in his innermost being that he was powerful. Before him scattered arrays of dimensions. With a flicker of his will, he passed through the hyperbole of time and stood before his Creator in the heavens. Laughter filled his essence, hallowed with brilliant shimmering rainbow light pure as the ruby, topaz, emerald and sapphire, the shining cherub knelt and received his commission.

“I anoint you guardian cherub,” pronounced the Creator.ⁱⁱⁱ Lucifer stood and walked amongst the burning spheres of nuclear fire that here in the innermost heaven radiated like a molecular lattice into dimensions and dimensions of space-time. He Looked across the flaming spheres and marveled that at a flicker of his will his finiteness was almost infinitely present.

The books of Isaiah and Ezekiel in the Bible describe this powerful spirit being. Such a spirit being could certainly intermingle amongst mortals in our material dimension of space-time; but how does this lead to the philosophical question that keeps nagging mankind—the question of

rightness, wrongness, cultural ethics and moralities? Heaven forbid, if God does exist, He may have a defined moral code. A philosophical starting point for sentience (able to think and analyze) has to be cognitive (being conscious) freedom and a relative free will to choose. Nevertheless, between what elementary points does this choice take?

The Heart of the Rebellion

The Creator manifests his Omnipotent presence over the Great Assembly. A reverent stillness silences the focal point of hyper dimensions. It is impossible, how could it have happened? Yet, it had. The ramifications were going to be unimaginable. Whoever would have thought that individual freedom would result in the crystallization of will formulating into the unthinkable.

GOD the Absolute I Am, the I Am of Love and Communication, speaks:

“You were blameless in all your ways from the day you were created until wickedness was found in you.” No one dares look away. “How you have fallen from heaven, O morning star, son of the dawn.”

A mummer ripples throughout the great assembly as the Only One, The Great Alpha and Omega continues:

“You said in your heart, ‘I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God; I will sit enthroned on the mount of assembly, on the utmost heights of the sacred mountain.’”^{iv}

“Unbelievable!” The exclamation of those assembled sounds like a clap of thunder. “Is it true that Lucifer has declared ‘I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High’,” they question one another?

The expression of selfish-will in an environment of conscious freedom, leads to divergence. If Lucifer, the magnificent archangel, did seek to supersede his Creator, then the heavens have been infected with self-seeking divergence. One can't help but think of the human statement, "familiarity breeds contempt" wherein contempt springs forth from vanity; extreme vanity succumbs to self-deification. It would appear that even Lucifer, in all his radiant being, did not comprehend the infinite depths of his Creator.

What precipitated this dramatic event in the heavens? According to the ancient prophet Ezekiel, God said "*Your heart became proud on account of your beauty, and you corrupted your wisdom because of your splendor,*" and "*So I drove you in disgrace from the mount of God, and I expelled you, O guardian cherub, from among the fiery stones.*"^v

Herein lies another dilemma, if God is sovereign, why did this rebellion happen. Obviously, this is a point in time antecedent to the story of the creation and fall of man. They would appear to be similar events in the spiritual and corporeal realms, separated by time. Cognizant freedom to choose is the term we have been using; therefore, in some complex interdimensional cosmic arena, the

Sin

The Biblical term "sin" means to be separated from the pure holiness of God. Pantheistic man cannot sin because his "moral condition" is only a position of relativeness from a shifting cultural viewpoint. It is amazing that modern pantheistic man, believing he was not divinely created and therefore having no inner God consciousness, should be in such a confusing state of religious and moral weights and balances. Is it too much of a coincidence that the basic problem—that of *pride*—which upset the spirit realm, is the one troubling man?

spirit world was given a period of relative time to choose; to crystallize their individual wills.

A love relationship can only be entered into by intentionally giving of one’s inner will. This is not to infer that God had a need to be loved, but that sentient beings would see the magnificent complexity of their existence and respond in worship and love. It is difficult for the human mind to comprehend how the spirit world could, given the complexity of the heavens, rebel against their Creator—whom they could see—a sad moment indeed! However, the apathetic way we view the complexity of our world isn’t much different.

From humanity’s perspective, Lucifer’s act of rebellion gives us a primary point of divergence. At this point, there is a choice for individual wills between God, and Lucifer who wants to be worshipped as God.

Lucifer, the brilliant angel of light, by virtue of his vanity is now divergent from God. This prime divergence has locked the corporeal and spiritual cosmos in a conflict wherein the free will of cognitive man has three choices: align himself with the Creator

Cosmos

The term “cosmos,” in this book, means the vast space-time universe as an ordered entity, including interdimensional spirit reality. “Almost every cosmology before our own modern nebular explanation of the universe revered a sacred place within its system where the gods—who usually dwell elsewhere—are said to grant men a transcendent revelation of themselves.”^{vi}

Supreme; join the usurpers rebellion, or deify himself as king of evolution. From God’s perspective for us to imagine we can be a self-appointed deity is paramount to joining the rebellion.

The great assembly sits in horrified silence. Lucifer, the brilliant one departs purposely from the pronouncement of the One. Arrogance is born. The wills of decision are being

crystallized. Each identity has a choice. It is recorded by the great scribe, “Lucifer has swayed one third of the spirits of heaven.” How can it be the remaining ask each other, how can it be?^{vii}

The *schism of the cosmos* has begun; an event that is center stage in the creation of the universe of space-time, an event that will have ramifications into eternity for mankind. The great divergence of vanity—self-deification—permeates freedom: the cosmos is at war!

The Bible’s pictorial description of this *schism of the cosmos* is certainly a valid alternative to man’s cultural developmental problems, whether from an atheistic evolutionary concept or an inner/outer spiritual force viewpoint. This leaves us with a question: is the Biblical Lucifer story divinely inspired, or is it an allegory by an ancient psychologist seeking to explain our corporeal nature? If it is the former, then the event must play an important part in the cosmic development of mankind. If it is the latter, we have grossly underestimated the depth of human perception of the ancient cultures.

Notes:

ⁱ 2 Corinthians 4:4

ⁱⁱ Job 38:7

ⁱⁱⁱ Ezekiel 28:14

^{iv} Isaiah 14:12-14

^v Ezekiel 28:13-17

^{vi} Lockerbie D. Bruce, *The Cosmic Center*, Multnomah Press 1986, pg. 117

^{vii} Isaiah 14:12-14 and Revelation 12:4

Chapter 3

World Of Wonder

Somewhere in this vast universe, our world of wonder, aglow with a dazzling swirl of blue and white colors, orbits silently through the black expanse of space, in the embrace of a nearby star. It is a globe of molten rock covered with a thin skim of rocky crust, water and air. Rotating on its axis once every 24 hours, 92,900,000 miles from the ball of nuclear fire, the lonely little planet completes a great circle around the sun every 365.25 days. Thanks to modern technology, Earth is ablaze with electromagnetic radiation like a flashing neon light. A swarm of tiny winged satellites, pulsing radio waves, orbit just above the churning atmosphere. Further out in space, a ball of rock one-fourth of Earth's diameter, circles Earth slowly like a distant silvery pearl.

Apparently, if we were closer to the sun we would broil, and further away we would freeze. Many interesting coincidences have come together to make life possible; even the average depth of the oceans, which is around two miles, is required to maintain the atmosphere's balance of carbon dioxide. In addition, if they were too shallow not enough heat from the sun would be retained and the polar ice caps would increase.¹ Even the formation of the elements of matter is unique. In their book, *Cosmic Coincidences*, Gribbin and Rees state, "Sure, oxygen-16 is manufactured in stars, but only in small quantities (at least, at this early stage of a star's life) compared with carbon. If that oxygen energy level were 1 percent lower, then virtually all the carbon made inside stars would be

processed into oxygen, and then (much of it) into heavier elements still. Carbon-based life forms like ourselves would not exist.”ⁱⁱ

The Big Bang happened, or the Big Bang never happened; no the “Big Bang” is not your spouse crunching the car into the garage. It is supposed to be how our universe got started. The universe is thought to have exploded with a big bang, from a super small, super dense something into what it is today.

Models of the Universe

“*In the beginning,*” states the Bible, “*God created the heavens and the earth.*”ⁱⁱⁱ James Reid,^{iv} an Engineer, was associated with the Atomic Space field for many years interpreting modern space age jargon. He proposes in his book, *God The Atom and the Universe*, that God in the book

Space Fireworks

The size of the universe with its far-flung galaxies is impossible to understand. Here is a simple illustration. Imagine that you take one of those Halloween fireworks that screech, spin and shoot out sparks when they are nailed to a post and lit. Now, take a picture with a high-speed camera. The developed snapshot will show a bright swirl of sparks forming arms. The bright swirl of sparks would be our galaxy with each spark a star. Someone in Europe or visa versa (we are in North America) does the same. Both toss their swirling fireworks into the sky—presto, two galaxies in the universe. It takes four years traveling at the speed of light to reach our closest star neighbor. In our model, this is the closest spark to us and of course, our spark has some planets orbiting around it, one of which is our lovely little world, home to you and I. Such distances are hard to visualize, but that is how empty the universe is between galaxies, and their contained stars.

of Genesis (the first book in the Bible) inspired an ancient writer to give a brief synoptic description of His handy work.

The complexity being, how does an infinite God, in simple pictorial terms, outline His thoughts to one of our ancient ancestors so that cosmologically aware modern man would understand them thousands of years later? Genesis 1:1-7 records:

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. The earth was without form and void, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters. And God said, "Let there be light," and there was light. God saw that the light was good, and he separated the light from the darkness. God called the light "day," and the darkness he called "night." And there was evening, and there was morning—the first day. And God said, "Let there be an expanse between the waters to separate water from water." So God made the expanse and separated the water under the expanse from the water above it. And it was so.

Reid contends it is remarkable that God, in the second sentence of this great cosmological statement, describes earth, which is material or matter as being "void" that is to be associated with emptiness. This is a very accurate description of the atom, the building block of the elements. If the nucleus of an atom were two inches in diameter, the first electron would be orbiting over one mile away.^v That is empty! The actual material in the atom takes up only one trillionth of the atom's

volume. When atoms join up, they do so at their outer electron orbits. The motion within the atoms and the motion of the atoms themselves make matter seem solid. Thus, to us, a piece of wood seems firm. Reid also makes a strong case for the word *waters* to mean *plasma*, which is an electrical cloud of free wheeling hydrogen electrons and protons. He maintains that the spirit of God moved, i.e. started organizing the plasma, which energized into *light*. Reid follows the Big Bang theory that the

Paid to have Faith

“A challenge to Big Bang theory would threaten the careers of several hundred researchers. It could hardly be surprising that by the end of the seventies virtually no papers challenging the Big Bang in any way were accepted for presentation at major conventions or for publication in major journals. It became simply inconceivable that the Big Bang could be wrong—it was a matter of faith.”^{vii}... Eric Lerner: *The Big Bang Never Happened*.

universe exploded from one super dense chunk of something. A black hole is supposed to be a very small super dense sphere of matter. There does not seem to be any theory for exploding black holes—so why should a super dense ball of matter become a universe? Eric Lerner in his book, *The Big Bang Never Happened*, argues for an infinite cosmos of plasma that forms electromagnetic filaments and twisting vortices. These become mighty rivers of electricity generating magnetic and electromagnetic fields. Eventually stars and their nuclear reactions are formed.^{vi}

We think of light as something that we can see, however, the meaning of light also takes into account all of the invisible electromagnetic radiation propagating through the universe. Scientists refer to the observable threshold level of this radiation in a vacuum, as the zero-point field, (ZPE). Theoretical calculations suggest that our material space-time universe rides on a sea of light. We only measure energy above this level; therefore, plasma is energy that is above the zero-

point field. However, there is at present no way of knowing what the true level of this zero-point field is with respect to an unknown hidden reality. Astrophysicist Bernhard Haisch and his colleagues have explored these calculations,

As encouraged as I am, it is still too early to say whether history will prove us right or wrong. But if we are right, then "Let there be light" is indeed a very profound statement, as one might expect of its purported author. The solid, stable world of matter appears to be sustained at every instant by an underlying sea of quantum light.

But let's take this even one step further. If it is the underlying realm of light that is the fundamental reality propping up our physical universe, let us ask ourselves how the universe of space and time would appear from the perspective of a beam of light. The laws of relativity are clear on this point. If you could ride a beam of light as an observer, all of space would shrink to a point, and all of time would collapse to an instant. In the reference frame of light, there is no space and time. If we look up at the Andromeda galaxy in the night sky, we see light that from our point of view took 2 million years to traverse that vast distance of space. But to a beam of light radiating from some star in the Andromeda galaxy, the transmission from its point of origin to our eye was instantaneous.

There must be a deeper meaning in these physical facts, a deeper truth about the simultaneous interconnection of all things. It beckons us forward in our search for a better, truer understanding of the nature of the universe, of the origins of space and time — those "illusions" that yet feel so real to us.^{viii}

George Ellis, a South African cosmologist has been studying alternatives to the Big Bang model. According to many cosmologists this theory suggests that the Big Bang was followed by a period of rapid inflation, thus termed the “inflation model,” which yielded a universe near “critical density” that is with just about enough matter such that the universe will eventually start deflating and collapse into the Big Crunch. Mr. Ellis, in a controversial article in *Nature*, is countering a recent trend “of researchers being very dogmatic, almost to the point of discounting the astronomical evidence.” He and a colleague reviewed all the observations that might indicate the true density of the universe. They concluded, “No strongly convincing case can be made for a critical-density Universe.” On the contrary, “an open Universe (one that continues to expand for all eternity) should be preferred,” even though that assumption may conflict with current inflationary theories. He continues, “People need to be aware that there is a range of models that could explain the observations. For instance, I can construct you a spherically symmetrical universe with Earth at its center, and you cannot disprove it based on observations.” He concludes, “you can only exclude it on philosophical grounds. In my view, there is absolutely nothing wrong in that. What I want to bring out into the open is the fact that we are using philosophical criteria in choosing our models. A lot of cosmology tries to hide that.”^{ix}

Is space finite, or is what we see only reflections like a hall of mirrors? Luminet, Starkman and Weeks write:

The question of a finite or infinite universe is one of the oldest in philosophy. A common misconception is that it has already been settled in favor of the latter. The reasoning, often repeated in textbooks, draws an unwarranted conclusion from Einstein’s general theory of relativity.

According to relativity, space is a dynamic medium that can curve in one of three ways, depending on the distribution of matter and energy within it. Because we are embedded in space, we cannot see the flexure directly but rather perceive it as gravitation attraction and geometric distortion of images. To determine which of the three geometries our universe has, astronomers have been measuring the density of matter and energy in the cosmos. It now appears to be too low to force space to arch back on itself a “spherical” geometry. Therefore, space must have either the familiar Euclidean geometry, like that of a plane, or a “hyperbolic” geometry, like that of a saddle. At first glance, such a universe stretches on forever.... The cosmos could, in fact, be finite. The illusion of infinity would come about as light wrapped all the way around space, perhaps more than once creating multiple images of each galaxy.^x

There are also problems with a philosophical understanding of the age of the universe. Remember all the hundreds of feet of cosmic dust that was supposed to be on the moon because it was billions of years old. In case you have forgotten, there was only a thin skim of dust, so new theories had to be proposed to account for this fact. Furthermore, scientists, based on the estimate of a 15 billion year old sun have calculated that there should be a certain amount of helium created by the nuclear reactions and therefore a certain stream of neutrons coming to Earth from the sun. Approximately only one half of this stream of neutrons can be detected, thus implying that the sun may be younger than evolutionary theories indicate. When the supernova explosion of SN 1987A occurred in the Large Magellanic Cloud in 1987 the detectors performed marvelously, so is there another explanation? Studies done at the deep underground cavern at Sudbury Ontario, which

contains a 1,000-ton sphere of ultrapure heavy water, suggest that the missing neutrinos from the sun “morph from one subspecies to another during their flight from the sun to the Earth.”^{xi} The sun is reported to only produce electron-neutrinos. This creates more complications; now the question has to be, what kind of neutrinos were detected from SN 1987A, and were the scientific assumptions built only on this wave of neutrinos? The question as to the amount of helium existing on the sun has still not been confirmed, but is postulated to fit evolutionary assumptions based on the theory of morphing neutrinos.

Oops...Wrong Answer says *TIME*. “Last week the Hubble delivered its preliminary verdict: the universe is between 8 and 12 billion years old. That may seem impressive, but it was specific enough to throw astrophysicists into a state of high anxiety. The problem: our own galaxy has stars believed to be as much as 14 billion to 16 billion years old. And it makes astronomers uncomfortable to try and explain how stars could have formed before the universe began.”

Alexei Filippenko, a University of California, Berkeley, astronomer who was on the team that made the Hubble observations comments: “This is fantastic stuff...it might lead to a revolution in cosmology.”^{xii}

Big Deal!

So—what does it matter if the universe is some 3 to 7 billion years younger. Well, if you are an evolutionist, your philosophy needs time to create the complexity of life—the more time the better.

The Universe in a Bubble

In the mean time, one might say, “well that is just great, but the universe is just *too big* for a God.” Well, have you heard of the *Inflationary Universe theory*? Andrei Linde, one of the originators of the inflationary theory, has self-reproducing cosmoses as extending interconnected branching bubbles. He writes, “The properties of space in each bubble do not depend on the time

the bubble formed. In this sense, the universe as a whole may be stationary, even though the interior of each bubble is described by the big bang theory.” He purports, “One would have to compress some matter in such a way as to allow quantum fluctuations to trigger inflation. Simple estimates in the context of the chaotic inflation scenario suggest that less than one milligram of matter may initiate an eternal, self-reproducing universe. We still do not know whether this process is possible. The theory of quantum fluctuations that could lead to a new universe is extremely complicated. And even if it is possible to “bake” new universes, what shall we do with them? Can we send any message to their inhabitants, who would perceive their microscopic universe to be as big as we see ours? Is it conceivable that a physicist-hacker created our own universe? Some day we may find the answers.”^{xiii}

Serious Science

Some may laugh at the idea of a universe in a bubble, but these are serious ideas to some intelligentsia. Putting things back into perspective Dr. Robert Gange writes; “we realize that a quantum fluctuation is more of a tag placed on a mathematical result, than an explanation of how something came to be. The idea that a quantum fluctuation evolved into our universe is an imaginative guess; it certainly is not rooted in scientific fact. Ideas of this kind are energized by a philosophical prejudice toward materialism.”^{xiv}

Searching for Truth

The problem for us ordinary readers is that scientific facts become entwined with worldview philosophies. Scientist Paul Steidl explains:

Since astronomers are limited in that they cannot perform actual experiments with what they are observing, astronomy tends to take on the aspects of philosophy as well as science. In order to develop a theory to explain some

observed facts, a scientist must make some assumptions. These assumptions usually deal with the nature of the physical universe and concern laws and principles, such as the law of gravity.

Never having been to distant galaxies, astronomers can only assume that the same laws of gravity work there as here; hence the applicability of the law of gravity on a universal scale is an assumption. One assumption that is always made, though usually not explicitly, is that the universe is old. This idea is derived primarily from the areas of geology and evolution, which over the last two centuries have demanded more and more time for their slow processes to develop the earth into what it is.

The great age is not based upon astronomical evidence initially but upon the theory of evolution which many Christians, correctly we feel, believe not to be true. If the theory of evolution is disregarded, there is far less reason to begin with the assumption that the universe is old. The evidence can be examined more objectively.

Evolution itself is more a philosophy than a science. It begins with the implicit assumption that God did not create the universe. Astronomy is like a philosophy since hidden deep within astronomers foundational presuppositions are the philosophical assumptions about the nonexistence of God, which have been gradually infiltrating all the sciences for centuries.^{xv}

The mode of beginnings will sooner or later be arrived at by science if truth is followed, rather than philosophy. The more truth is bent to adjust to philosophy, the more outlandish become

the theories. Accepting the statement, “God Created,” makes it possible to believe that God the Creator-Legislator outside of space-time may have a specific purpose for mankind. Philosophically, this planet becomes anthropocentric (relating to man). In fact, it may *be* the center of the universe as far as God’s focus is concerned. If it is the pivotal point in a cosmic war targeted by spiritual forces, then the very element of time may be of great consequence. “If there is a God who is supreme over our universe, and IF the Bible is the revelation from that God, then there is ONE essential that must be inherent within that revelation. It must be constituted solely of TRUTHS! It is an absolute necessity then, the Bible writer when describing or mentioning physical laws of this universe, other than allowed through poetic license, must coincide perfectly with all known facts of science (not necessarily theories). Furthermore, they must do this regardless of the accepted theories and level of scientific knowledge of the age in which they wrote,” states Arnold Schnabel.^{xvi} The church in the Middle Ages became embedded with the scientific thoughts of the day, and insisted that Earth was the center of the universe. Consequently, Galileo was threatened with burning at the stake for stating that it moved around the sun. This is not much different than Christians jumping onto the Big Bang bandwagon in today’s era. The Big Bang theory may very well be discarded in the future; all Bible believers who inferred God created in this fashion will have their spiritual beliefs discarded as well.

The Bible does not say how God created the universe, but it does suggest that He created the present biological system, mankind and the Garden of Eden in a short time frame with respect to our space-time reality. From God’s viewpoint, He created the heavens and earth out of the invisible, a starting point before the existence of plasma or a Big Bang. “*By faith we understand that the universe was formed at God’s command, so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible.*”^{xvii} One would then have to take C.S. Lewis’s viewpoint that God is a legislator outside

of space-time. Space and time are the dynamics of our material universe. What we are—is a result of high order fundamental laws given by the Legislator. These laws direct the universe and allow us to make consequential scientific observations.

From God’s viewpoint, He is the Creator Omnipresent in space-time, Omnipotent sustainer of the great balls of fire, and because he is Omniscience, all knowing, there must be a purpose discernible in the intelligence arrow of mankind. From our viewpoint, we see a material dimension so huge we say, “where is God.” If we take time to comprehend the complexities of the universe, and the grand cascade of life on Earth, we can almost believe that He exists. “*For since the creation of the*

A Thoughtful Dream

One night in restless sleep, my subconscious mind contemplated the possible viewpoint God has of our universe. A scene slowly unfolded, a powerful being (intuitively interpreted to be an angel) stood beside me. We were looking off into space, hanging there was a big brown blob with flickering firefly like lights all over it. As he focused some kind of energy reading device, full color active pictures snapped into view of people totally oblivious of our presence.

One scene showed how God uses ordinary people to draw individuals to Himself. A businessman flipped through the TV channels, chancing upon a Billy Graham program the moment Mr. Graham explained how to find God’s forgiveness for sins. The man flipped on, but the thought had penetrated his inner consciencousness. A second scene revealed the man’s secretary to be a “born again” Christian. At the office the secretary was questioned, “did you see that Billy Graham fellow on TV?” The way of salvation was discussed. Whether it was a restless, or inspired dream, it illustrates the mysterious workings of God.

world God's invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.”^{xviii}

In whatever way the universe came into being, the Biblical proposition is that God is deeply involved in the affairs of mankind. This brings us back to the question—no matter how we view our universe—is God working on some incredible plan that imports significance to each of our lives—are we His principle focus in space-time?

Scientists dream up bubble cosmoses, but what happens when to quote Linde's term, the “physicist-hacker” ends his experiment. On the other hand, what happens when God completes His plan for mankind? The Bible states, *“But the day of the Lord will come like a thief. The heavens will disappear with a roar; the elements will be destroyed by fire and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare. Since everything will be destroyed in this way, what kind of people ought you to be? You should live holy and godly lives as you look forward to the day of God and speed it's coming. That day will bring about the destruction of the heavens by fire, and the elements will melt in the heat. But in keeping with his promise we are looking forward to a new heaven and a new earth, the home of righteousness.”^{xix}* God inspired Peter, a fisherman, to write this, two thousand years ago. What did Peter know about elements melting in the heat? His description reads like the collapse of a quantum bubble universe!

Notes:

ⁱ Gange Robert Dr., *Origins And Destiny*, 1986, Word Books, pg. 59

ⁱⁱ Gribbin J., Rees N., *Cosmic Coincidences*, 1985, Bantam Books, pg. 246

ⁱⁱⁱ Genesis 1:1

^{iv} Reid James, *God The Atom And The Universe*, Zondervan Publishing House 1968, pg.35

^v Reid, *Ibid*, pgs. 84-88

^{vi} Lerner, Eric J., *The Big Bang Never Happened*, Random House Inc, New York, 1991, pg.214

^{vii} Lerner, *Ibid*, pg. 155

^{viii} *Science & spirit magazine* 2002, Bernhard Haisch, staff physicist at the Lockheed Martin Solar & Astrophysics Laboratory in Palo Alto, California, is a scientific editor of *The Astrophysical Journal* and editor-in-chief of the *Journal of Scientific Exploration*.

^{ix} *Scientific American*, October 1995, “PROFILE GEORGE F.R. ELLIS,” pg. 50

-
- ^x Luminet Jean-Pierre, Starkman Glenn D., Weeks Jeffrey R., "Is Space Finite," *Scientific American* April 1999, pg. 90
- ^{xi} *Scientific American*, September 2001, SNO "Nus Is Good News," pg. 18
- ^{xii} *TIME*, November 7, 1994.
- ^{xiii} Linde, Andrei; "The Self-Reproducing Inflationary Universe," *Scientific American*, November 1994, pgs 48-55
- ^{xiv} Gange, Ibid, pg. 20
- ^{xv} Steidl: Ibid, pages 3 and 4
- ^{xvi} Schnabel, Arnold O., *Hath God Spoken*, Dakota American Co. Bismarck, North Dakota, 1972, pg. 1
- ^{xvii} Hebrews 11:3
- ^{xviii} Romans 1:20
- ^{xix} 2 Peter 3:10-13

Chapter 4

The Solar System

Particulars of the solar system are not as simple as some newspaper articles and scientists would have us believe. Anyway, as we live our busy complex lives on this jewel of a planet does it really matter? Yes, it does—because if no simple evolutionary explanation can be found, then there is the possibility of a Creator. To get an idea of dimensions—on a football-field size model of the solar system—Earth, a beautiful twinkling blue and white jewel with its orbiting pearl, is but a grain of sand four feet from the Sun, an orange cat’s eye marble. If we use the American football system with the 50-yard line being the center of the field, and the Sun is in the middle of the field, then Pluto the most distant planet would be on the goal line at one end. Mercury, which is closest to the Sun, is almost an invisible speck of dust 18 inches from the orange marble. Venus is a small grain of sand on the 49-yard line, Earth a similar grain on the 48.5, and Mars a dust speck on the 48th. Jupiter is a large grain of sand (1/25 inch) on the 44th. Saturn, another large grain, is on the 38th, while Uranus and Neptune are smaller grains on the 26th and 12th yard lines respectively. Pluto would be a barely perceivable dust speck on the goal line.¹ If the solar system is a simple case of physical mechanical evolution, then everything should be nicely organized and explainable—right?

Guess again, just as organic evolution is an act of philosophical faith, so is the theory for the formation of the solar system.

Solar system, solar system

Who formed you?

Whirling around

In the starlight hue.

The general idea for the formation of the solar system is that a gigantic cloud of hydrogen gas and dust, called a nebula starts to rotate around a proto-Sun. The nebula slowly flattens into a disk shape due to the rotation.

Simply Elegant

I like it I like it, simple elegant theory! Sorry, there are a few major problems to solve before the theory is simply elegant!

Condensations of gas and dust within the nebula grow into planets.

Planet Problems

Planets Mercury, Venus, Earth and Mars are called terrestrial because they are solid like Earth. Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune, which lie outwards from Mars, are called Jovian—named after Jupiter. They are made up of gases with no solid surfaces. The Sun is composed of 90 percent hydrogen, 8 percent helium and 2 percent other elements, and is thought to be happily nuking its hydrogen into helium to give us sunlight. The Sun's planets

Energy Jets

To solve the angular momentum problem, astronomers postulate the Sun had jets of electromagnetic energy blasting into space at right angles to the plane of the solar system. The magnitude and duration of this radiation discharge would be detrimental to the formation of life. There is no physical reason for the jets to have stopped.

have 98 percent of the angular momentum contained in the solar system, (60 percent is lodged with

the Jovan group), leaving the Sun with 2 percent, which is the wrong way around. In basic terms, the Sun could not have spun the material out into a proto-planet disk and the gaseous material could not move inward to form the Sun.

Now the explanation starts to get complicated. Condensing dust into planets is also hypothetical. Dust grains traveling at high velocities around the Sun would have to compact into rocks the size of golf balls, then into boulders, then into lumps the size of asteroids, then accrete into planets without smashing themselves to bits and finally heat up to get a molten core that would eventually produce volcanoes. The molten rock then has to separate into different compositions, like cream separating from milk, to form continents. All this takes a long time. If they lose momentum, they will spiral into the Sun. If they increase in velocity they move further out in orbit so that a disk of debris is formed, like Saturn's rings. The rings would somehow have to condense into planets against the tidal effects of the Sun, which operates to tear them apart.

To form the terrestrial planets, this swarm of dust and rocks has to be orbiting in a circle between a burning gas ball (the Sun) and several mini sized gas balls (the Jovian planets) and then form in spite of the gravitational attractions. Possibly a second rockier nebula was captured by the proto-Sun, forming the terrestrial planets, or perhaps the Sun huffed, puffed, and blew all the hydrogen and helium off of the terrestrial planets. Nevertheless, Mars should be bigger, have more gases and the Jovian planets should be gas balls with solid cores.

The Galileo probe, which descended into the atmosphere of Jupiter in December 1995, recorded two to three times more nitrogen and the heavier gases, argon, krypton and xenon than would be the case if it had been derived from the Sun.ⁱⁱ This brings the origins of Saturn and Neptune into question. If the Sun was huffing and puffing trying to create the Jovian planets, there is a problem for organic evolution on Earth. Life generating chemical reactions between amino

acids would have great difficulty getting started if a pulsating Sun was spasmodically blasting Earth for several billion years. The intense radiation from the active Sun would destroy any chemical bonds formed and it would quickly convert, in a few thousand years, any ammonia or methane gas (required for the theory of evolution) in the atmosphere to simple hydrogen gas, which would dissipate into space.

The Sun and the Ecliptic

The Sun is tilted with respect to the orbits of its satellites. If the Sun and planets formed from the rotation of a solar nebula then their orbits and spin should align in the plane of the original rotating disk, called the *ecliptic*. However, the spin axis of the Sun is tilted 7 degrees to this plane, which means the Sun could not have spun the disk material out into space to form the planets. The orbits of the planets, except for Pluto, follow circular paths and revolve around the Sun in the correct direction, thus this tilt is difficult to explain. Venus, a sister planet to Earth orbiting between the Sun and Earth, does not have the correct spin, it rotates backwards and takes 243 of our days to rotate once. Uranus is even more of an odd ball; its spin axis is tilted 98 degrees to the ecliptic. In other words, if Earth's spin axis is up and down, Uranus's is almost horizontal. Not only that, all of its satellites (like our Moon) orbit as they should around the equator of Uranus, and therefore at right angles to the Sun's ecliptic. Any theory to explain this phenomena, such as a large body striking Uranus, somehow has to tip the planet and its moons over 98 degrees. The explanation of a foreign body passing through the solar system creating these tilts causes more problems than it solves. The orbits of Uranus and Earth are nearly circular, they are also the two planets closest to the plane of the Sun's ecliptic, thus, there is no evidence for a major disturbance in the distant past.

The Kuiper Comet Beltⁱⁱⁱ surrounding the solar system is a colossal disc of debris containing lumps of ice and rock extending outward from the orbit of the planet Neptune. This vast disc of

debris is thought to be a comet reservoir extending from about 34 to 50 times the Earth's distance from the Sun. It is estimated to contain one billion mountain-sized chunks of primordial ice, each about the size of the nucleus of Halley's Comet. The nice orderly arrangement of this disc

Primordial Material

“The Kuiper belt comets are primordial material, formed at the same time as the outer planets. They are seen today basically where they were when they were formed 4.5 billion years ago.” Terence Dickinson. *SkyNews*.^{iv}

suggests no passing star has disturbed the solar system in the remote past. Pluto is now considered to be the largest member of the Kuiper Belt, although it will retain its status as a planet.

The high eccentricity of Pluto's orbit, which takes it into the main Kuiper Belt, creates a problem for the evolution of the solar system. The motion of Pluto into the Belt and the periodic gravitational effect every 179 years of the grand alignment of the planets in a super-conjunction, where all nine planets line up on the same side of the Sun, will disturb the peaceful repose of these mountain-sized chunks of primordial ice. In 4.5 billion years, there should not be many mountains of ice left in the Belt.

The Moon

Silver rays

Dancing

Eyes

Embracing

Sea shells

Tumbling

Silver rays

Dancing.

To most of us, the Moon is simply the Moon because there it is in the sky, and though it has enthralled lovers for centuries, scientists do not know how the great round chunk of rock got to be doing what it is doing. Not that you or I care, should we be enraptured by our sweetheart's embrace in its beams of silvery light!

Idea number one, the Moon was a blob that spun off of a rapidly rotating molten Earth, possibly as a result of a massive asteroid impact with the semi-molten Earth. Number two, the lonely Earth captured the silvery wayfaring stranger and they are dancing the great orbit together. Number three; Earth had a nasty swirling dust cloud that hardened in to a silvery ball. Personally, being a romantic I like number two. However, romantic or not, the scientific facts still leave the intelligentsia guessing.

A number of beneficial coincidences make the Earth-Moon relationship unique. The Moon is almost a double planet companion to Earth. The diameter of the Moon is 2161 miles, the planet Mercury 3000 miles, and Mars 4191 miles. In comparison, Earth and Venus have diameters of 7,913 and 7,600 miles respectively. Thus, the mass ratio of the Moon to the Earth is ten times that of any other satellite and planet in our solar system.

The orbital angular momentum of the Moon as it goes around the Earth is greater than the Earth's rotational angular momentum about its own axis. This fact raises several difficulties with Moon formation idea number one—suggesting that the Moon was a blob spun off of the Earth.^v Complicated computer modeling has not been able to solve this scientific problem.^{vi} Moreover, the plane of the lunar orbit is inclined to the ecliptic (the plane of Earth's orbit around the Sun) by a little over 5 degrees, while the axis of the Earth's rotation is inclined to the ecliptic by 23.5 degrees.

In other words, nothing is in the correct spin-alignment. Most satellites are along the plane of their planet's equator. However, because the Moon's orbit is inclined 5 degrees, light gets reflected into the far Northern and Southern latitudes providing for the September Harvest Moon in the Northern latitudes.

No, the Moon is not made of green cheese. It is composed of igneous rocks (rocks that were once molten) similar to Earth's oceanic crust, which is basaltic in composition. The surface has a thin skim of meteoric dust, contrary to the five billion year uniformitarian age theory, which predicted a deep cushion of dust. If the Moon was originally compacted from golf balls, it somehow had to get completely cooked and cooled. The philosophy of evolution also predicted that the Moon was cold, "after all it was billions of years old;" yet, there are hot spots where gases are being emitted from possible molten rock deep within the Moon's crust.

The reflecting laser panel placed on the Moon in 1969, by Neil Armstrong and Buzz Aldrin, has allowed scientists to measure the distance to the Moon with exceeding accuracy. *CNN News* July 21, 1999, the anniversary of the Moon landing, reports the Moon is receding from the Earth by some 3 to 4 centimeters per year (about 1.5 inches). Using 1.5 inches per year, for the sake of easy calculation, this amounts to almost 25,000 miles per one billion years. Two billion years ago, the Moon was 50,000 miles closer. This puts the distance from the center of the Earth to the center of the Moon at around 189,000 miles.

Gravitational tidal forces between the two bodies would have significantly increased volcanic activity on Earth while heating the interior of the Moon. In addition, oceanic tides on Earth would sweep over low laying continents creating thick layers of sediment. High volcanic cones and extensive layers of cinders should exist around the equatorial belt of the Moon due to the tidal forces within. This is not the case, so it is more likely that the Moon has been captured later. If

Spiritual Darkness

TIME November 6, 1995 comments on the eclipse that passed though India, Thailand, Cambodia and Malaysia: “But for many people along the shadow’s path, ancient fears dawned anew. In the days leading up to the event, the robustly superstitious Thais stocked up on traditional antidotes for the eclipse’s effects, including black beans, black glutinous rice and chickens with black feathers. During the eclipse, the banging of pots and pans could be heard in villages on the subcontinent, across Indochina and, near the end of the shadow, in the Malaysian state of Sabah. Equally noticeable was a silent tribute to the malevolent powers of the eclipse: many people stayed indoors to evade its harmful effects. In New Delhi the streets were deserted. ... Solar eclipses, the ancient Hindus concluded, were caused by a malicious spirit named Rahu, who tried to eat the Sun and Moon.”

the Moon orbit is projected back another one billion years in time closer to Earth, evolution has a serious problem trying to explain how life got started amongst all the destructive volcanic and tidal action that would be taking place. Modern ocean tides around the world are taken for granted. The water advances and then recedes. Yet the cleansing effect of the tides in harbors and the movement of currents in the world oceans which moderate the thermal dynamics of our planet are only two of the benefits of a delicately balanced Earth-Moon relationship.

The most surprising coincidence, or “lucky accident,” from the prospective of someone on Earth, is that the distant gigantic

“It is sheer happenstance that the Moon, because of its size and orbit, neatly covers the Sun during a total eclipse like a plug in a drain.” *TIME*, November 6, 1995.

Sun has the same apparent diameter as of the Moon. Thus, the Moon is able to eclipse the Sun

exactly when the respective orbit planes intersect. This was foreboding to the ancient peoples of the world, yet the eclipses serve as time markers into recorded history. Even today, the world is filled with darkness and spiritual shadows for many peoples.

Is it by Accident or Design? To some the intricate dynamics of the solar system and life on Earth are like a finely tuned watch, indicating design; to others, this motion through time is only a statistical directionless event of a blind watchmaker.

Notes:

ⁱ Steidl Paul; *The Earth, The Stars, The Bible*; Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company, Phillipsburg, New Jersey 08865, pg .33

ⁱⁱ *Nature Magazine* November 18 1999

ⁱⁱⁱ *SkyNews*; The Canadian Magazine of Astronomy & Stargazing: September/October 1995

^{iv} *Skyline News*, Ibid

^v Whitcomb John C. Th.D/Deyoung, Donald B. Ph.D.: *The Moon Its Creation, Form and Significance*, BMH Books Winona Lake, Indiana 46590, 1978, pg. 37

^{vi} Musser George, "Earth Shattering Theory," *Scientific American* November 2001, pg. 18

Chapter 5

Accident or Design

Brightly colored leaves drift onto the park walkway inspiring the autumn day. The warmth of the sun caresses our faces; who could want for more. “Look, daddy” says a soft voice beside me. Her little hand suddenly leaves mine as she bends down to pick up a watch from amongst the rustling colored patchwork of leaves. She stares intently at all the numbered circles and knobs.

“Put it back, honey, it is growing up to be a big clock,”

A pair of pretty little eyes look up at me with that ‘oh come on’ look.

“Yes dear—it is just growing up out of the ground—I can’t tell if it will be a mommy or daddy clock.”

“But daddy—somebody had to make it and somebody had to lost it.”

(Not too bright am I?)

I can remember when my mother told me clouds bumped together to make it rain.

“Honey, I think we should put it back in the leaves and let it grow.”

Dad-deeeee!!! Two beautiful sparkling eyes in a perfectly formed face (beautiful like her mother) penetrate me as if I am a stupid mushroom.

You might think that design is an argument for the existence of God, not so, the logic of “Daddy somebody had to make it,” does not phase on an evolutionist should they perchance see a crab scampering along the sea shore.

Fundamental Darwinism

The Darwinian worldview, as stated by Charles Darwin in *Origin Of Species*, is that natural selection has had lots and lots of time, such that “slow, gradual, cumulative natural selection is the ultimate explanation for our existence. If there are versions of the evolution theory that deny slow gradualism, and deny the central role of natural selection, they may be true in particular cases. But they cannot be the whole truth, for they deny the very heart of evolution theory. If it could be demonstrated that any complex organ existed which could not possibly have been formed by numerous, successive, slight modifications, my theory would absolutely break down.”ⁱⁱⁱ Consequently, under the hypothesis of evolution, there can be no supernatural outside force or spiritualism meddling in the accumulation of information by lifeless organic atoms in their transition to life.

James Hutton (1726-1797) and Charles Lyell (1797-1875) began the modern concept of evolution theory. Hutton advanced the idea that

Countering Blind Religion

The advancement of these ideas in the academic circles of Europe, gave a ray of hope for freedom from the monstrous edifice of religious systems of the day. Darwin’s theory of evolution justified humanism and thus broke the chains of spiritual bondage inflicted by corrupt church control. “Even as uniformitarianism has been an integral part of humanism for the last 150 years, so catastrophism has been an integral part of the Judeo-Christian heritage for the past 4000 years.”ⁱ

everything in the past is evident today and changes took place on a slow uniform basis, this became

“uniformitarianism.” Lyell opposed the catastrophic doctrine of Earth’s history, as advocated in the Bible, and was successful in advancing uniformitarianism by setting up geological time scale of multiplied millions of years on estimates that seemed quasi scientific to that generation of intelligentsia.

Logic has no power over faith that chooses the path of irrationality, so we might ask; is it rational, to believe God created, or to take the position of evolutionists as stated by Richard Dawkins? “A true watch-maker has foresight. He designs his cogs and springs, and plans their interconnection, with a future

I want to persuade the reader, not just that the Darwinian world-view happens to be true, but that it is the only known theory that could, in principle, solve the mystery of our existence." Richard Dawkins.

purpose in his mind’s eye. Natural selection, the unconscious, automatic, blind yet essentially nonrandom process that Darwin discovered, and that we now understand to be the explanation for the existence and form of all life, has no purpose in mind. It has no mind and no mind’s eye. It does not plan for the future. It has no vision, no foresight, no sight at all. If it can be said to play the role of the watchmaker in nature, it is the blind watchmaker.”ⁱⁱⁱ

Dawkins continues, “What about our own bodies? Each one of us is a machine, like an airliner only much more complicated. Were we designed on a drawing board too, and were our parts assembled by a skilled engineer? The

William Paley

In the pre-Darwin era William Paley, a nineteenth century Anglican clergyman, put forth the argument for God by design in logical detail subject to the scientific knowledge of the day. His premise was that biological life was built out of components and operated as a system. He used a watch as an example. This is why Dawkin’s book is called *The Blind Watchmaker*.

answer is no.”^{iv} Therefore, based on Dawkin’s philosophy, the evolutionist’s position must be that there is no purpose to life and no discernable direction to the intelligent arrow. Everything is a statistical accident; given enough time anything is possible. The fact that we, as thinking bipeds, ended up on top is exceedingly lucky for us.

Professor Michael Behe,^v a modern 21st century microbiologist, takes up Paley’s viewpoint from scientific observations by drawing a simple analogy with the common mousetrap. He maintains that like a mousetrap, biological systems are irreducibly complex. Meaning, if any part of the mousetrap fails, or is missing, it doesn’t work. A watch is the same. The argument of irreducible complexity implies there had to be a designer to give conception to such a system, whether mechanical, or biological. Paley’s main argument, “how to produce an irreducible complex system without a designer,”^{vi} has never been refuted. Professor Behe’s conclusion is that life was designed, but he does not try to identify the designer—it could be an alien or even God. The theory of intelligent design (ID) is not trying to say who did it, but that interdependent biological complexity, suggests design.

“Darwin never envisaged the almost depthless complexity of the cell when he postulated his theory of evolution.” Professor Behe.

The Genetic Code

However, what are the basic facts of becoming what we are? Somehow, lifeless matter has to ‘get’ information. This information is encoded within the 100,000-150,000 genes that make up each cell of the human body. Each cell contains billions of DNA words to construct specific proteins. Biological life consists of making the correct proteins with the proper timing and amounts; once formed, these various proteins can do many wonderful things. Scientists have determined that one human cell contains over six feet of DNA (complex computer code) in 46

chromosomes.^{vii} In terms of an analogy, human DNA is like a very large encyclopedia of 46 volumes, 20,000 pages each. Every cell in the human body is provided with the whole encyclopedia. It is estimated that the total DNA content in your body would span the solar system.^{viii} I would say that is a little stretched out!

DNA is like a twisted ladder (called a double helix) where the rungs of the ladder contain the genetic message on how to build

specific protein molecules from 20 smaller amino acid molecules. All amino acids are made up of four kinds of atoms: carbon, hydrogen, nitrogen and oxygen. Two of the amino acids also have a sulfur atom each. Proteins are simply long chains of these amino acids. Life requires a colossal array of different types of proteins. Further complicating life, amino acids can be formed as mirror

The Genetic Code

In 1953, James Watson and Francis Crick, at Cambridge University in England, announced the discovery of the structure of DNA (deoxyribose nucleic acid). That there should be a “language of life” as Crick called it, which is a universal code, is very mysterious and intriguing. Abundant research indicates this universal nature of the code to be the same in all creatures studied (with possibly very rare minor variations).^{ix}

images, left handed and right handed. A person’s hand shows how this can be. However, life is only composed of proteins made of L=levo left-handed and not D=dextro right-handed amino acids. The length of the average protein in the smallest known living thing is at least 400 amino acid links, containing more than 7000 atoms. The smallest known antonymous *living* organism, the bacteria like *Mycoplasma hominis*, has around 600 different kinds of proteins.^x

We get side tracked on the discussion of amino acids and proteins and miss the point that the fundamental building blocks are simply *lifeless* atoms of carbon, hydrogen, nitrogen, oxygen

and minor sulfur. What is life, how did it originate? How can the genetic code of a combination of amino acids, give form and context? Superimposed on form and context is innate programming within each living cell, thus, within the biological system as a whole; a dog is a dog, a cat is a cat and behaves in kind.

This information is described bit by bit on the DNA double helix. One million types of protein chains form the building blocks of our body's cells. Somehow, the proteins in the cells have to communicate with one another. Moreover, the DNA has to be the same today as at biogenesis. "For, if their chemical or physical properties had changed in the passage of time since biogenesis, then life could not have remained the same or been continuous since biogenesis." states A. E. Wilder-Smith, a Ph.D. in organic chemistry.^{xii}

Ultra Complexity

The \$250-million Human Genome Project^{xi*11} announced, in the spring of 2000, its successful efforts to map the human genome. Some scientists estimate there are at least three billion DNA base pairs, or units making up the human genome. Moreover, each individual has his or her own genetic characteristics. The next step is to try and map the millions of proteins that comprise the body's cells and how they effect and communicate with one another. One type of protein can turn a specific gene on or off within a cell changing the cell's manufacturing activity. Accordingly, there are millions of switches being turned off and on within the body moment by moment to keep it functioning.

The various combinations of amino acids have to form a genetic code in the DNA, such that the metabolic engine of the cell can produce context. The complex context of protein engines within a developing cell must overcome local inner cell problems and yet somehow know how to fulfill "requirements of the integrated system."^{xiii}

What underpinning law is there that determines what proteins will come from a certain combination of amino acids and why do they function as they do? The monkeys and the typewriters time-plus-chance argument for evolution (that if they type long enough they will write some English Shakespeare) breaks down when it comes to modern microbiology. Biological chemical reactions to form protein are reversible—so what is really happening, is that each monkey is writing in a different language, the typewriters break down, the ink disappears and the paper disintegrates. If one truly understands the complexity of life—has there really been enough slow uninterrupted time for life to evolve? Why is life not one large amorphous mass—with all its millions of proteins randomly switching on and off?

The Blind Man’s Solution

Dawkins solves the problem of blind chance by designing a systems processor, which he calls “cumulative selection.” It can cumulate minor genetic changes of chance into biological meaning. “This system of cumulative selection” says Dawkins “can tame the astronomical probabilities of chance,” yet by his own admission “Cumulative selection is the key but it had to get started, and we cannot escape the need to postulate a single-step chance event in the

Blind Chance Can’t

The probability of life forming by chance bumping together of amino acids, in a warm sheltered pond, to form even the simplest *theoretical* reproducing cell of 239 proteins, becomes astronomically small, and therefore, approaches the impossible.

The probability of 239 protein molecules all being left-handed is 1 in 10^{29345} .

To get the correct protein sequences for the simplest living entity is 1 in 10^{119776} .

For comparison, there are only 10^{18} seconds in 15 billion years.^{xiv}

origin of cumulative selection itself.”^{xv} This system takes combinations of letters that you want, then sorts through the jumbled stream of letters until these combinations are found. If you are looking for “agbq” it will sort through the new protein strings until it is found. So, who defines the combination of letters and in what language do the letters gain form and context yielding biological meaning? His answer is that cumulative selection has to **assume** knowledge of direction, which is then superimposing intelligence on inorganic matter.

Dr. Wilder-Smith states the problem succinctly:

Now in the eyes of the Darwinists, “nonliving nature” has itself become creative; nonliving nature has ordered simple molecules to more complex ones capable of bearing life. Nonliving nature, according to this scheme, has assumed the properties of “intelligence” or of life itself, which reduces the Darwinist to ascribing creative properties to nonliving matter; that is, nonliving matter is simply a kind of creative god to them. But the laws of thermodynamics demand just that nonliving nature be not creative but subject to decay. This is the true impasse between creationism and Darwinism.^{xvi}

Biological life is inorganic matter that is manipulated by a life force using information encoded in

strings of protein. Biological growth requires high-speed replication of the protein strings. The metabolic motor of the cell requires energy as it undertakes replication and hooks up amino acids into simple units, called peptides.

Dr. Brum an evolutionist, critiques this issue,

Theistic Evolution

Theistic evolutionists believe that God defined the computer program, and natural selection runs the operational sequences.

The spontaneous formation of a polypeptide of the size of the smallest known proteins seems beyond all probability. This calculation alone presents serious objection to the idea that all living matter and systems are descended from a single protein molecule, which was formed as a “chance” act. ... The riddle seems to be: How, when no life existed, did substances come into being which, today, are absolutely essential to living systems, yet which can

Psychic Pressure

An upward synthesis of nonorganic matter requires molecular order. However, by the laws of thermodynamics, as infinite time is approached, infinite randomness will be achieved. To accomplish order Father Teilhard de Chardin, a Darwinist writer, boldly ascribes to all matter the property of an upward surge of “psychic pressure,” an “irresistible” urge to upward development and consciousness of matter. Primitive molecules, by this innate tendency to psychic pressure build-ups, end “inevitably,” in man or the noosphere and Point Omega.^{xvii} The natural extension of this thinking is the Gaia philosophy that “the planet is alive and functions as a superorganism.”

only be formed by those systems? ... A number of major properties are essential to living systems as we see them today, the origin of any of which form a “random” system is difficult enough to conceive, let alone the simultaneous origin of all.^{xviii}

Dawkins calls the metabolic motor of the cell, a replicator. He comments, ”So, cumulative selection can manufacture complexity while single-step selection cannot. But cumulative selection

cannot work unless there is some minimal machinery of replication and replicator power, and the only machinery of replication that we know seems too complicated to have come into existence by

means of anything less than many generations of cumulative selection!”^{xix} The replicator in modern biology is RNA (ribose nucleic acid). Furthermore, contemporary organisms carry their genetic information in

“The precise events giving rise to the RNA world remain unclear. As we have seen, investigators have proposed many hypotheses, but evidence in favor of each of them is fragmentary at best. The full details of how the RNA world, and life, emerged may not be revealed in the near future,” says Professor Orgel.

both nucleic acids DNA and RNA and use essentially the same genetic code.

The Chicken or the Egg

“Nowadays,” writes Professor Leslie Orgel, “nucleic acids are synthesized only with the help of proteins and proteins are synthesized only if their corresponding nucleotide sequence is present. It is extremely improbable that proteins and nucleic acids, both of which are structurally complex, arose spontaneously in the same place at the same time. Yet, it also seems impossible to have one without the other. And so, at first glance, one might have to conclude that life could never, in fact, have originated by chemical means.”^{xx}

The RNA world is even more complicated for there is “the fascinating biochemical machinery that regulates an essential step in protein synthesis: the transcription of genes” writes Professor Tjian. Each cell in the body contains a genome, the complement of some 150,000 genes that form the blueprint for a human being. He continues, “The engine driving transcription of most, if not all, human genes consists of some 50 distinct proteins. These proteins must assemble into a tight complex on DNA before a special enzyme, RNA polymerase, can begin to copy DNA into

messenger RNA.... Still other proteins essentially plug into receptive sockets on the engine and, in so doing, “program” it, telling it which genes should be transcribed and how quickly.”^{xxi} Now the chicken or egg scenario gets really complicated, since the essential transcription engine requires a “plug in” information module to operate. If one thinks about this long enough, there is the realization that the information module would have to foreknow some particulars about the information stream that it is going to transcribe.

Circular Reasoning

The words, ‘we evolved’, are blind faith philosophy, since the binary bits of instruction encoded in the cell, according to one scientist, are more than what is required to describe the known physical universe. No time is enough to assemble that kind of information. One has to be careful that because we are, it had to be, as if this is proof of a theory.

Philosophical Lamarckism

Granting movement of nonorganic atoms to protein strings and a metabolic motor to make things happen, we still have the problem of context. Context is information code encrypted in RNA and DNA protein strings. For life forms to scale up in their environmental niches, increasing units of intelligent operational data must be added to the DNA code. Mutation is usually the grand word used to describe genetic changes. However, the cell has a built in system in the interdependent DNA-RNA operation to eliminate mistakes in the genetic code. Dawkins states that the DNA patterns and sequences are “as durable as the hardest rocks. They have what it takes to exist for millions of years.”^{xxii} That is why zillions of fruit flies, for instance, have lived and died and still look and act like fruit flies. Not only are there form and context, but also innate programming making a fruit fly operate as a fruit fly.

Dawkins writes “Anybody who wants to argue that mutations, without selection, is the driving force of evolution must explain how it comes about that mutations tend to be for the better. By what mysterious, built-in wisdom does the body choose to mutate in the direction of getting better, rather than getting worse? You will observe that this is really the same question, in another guise, as we posed for Lamarckism.”²³ A French scientist, Lamarck, proposed “Lamarckism” in 1802 whereby animals pass on to their offspring the characteristics they have acquired in adapting to their surroundings. Modern Lamarckism, because the older idea was proved invalid, postulates that hormones rewrite the information code.

Even if hormonal changes were possible, this could not begin to explain the first formation of complex protein molecules. The hormone system itself is complex, delicately regulated, and many hormones are proteins. They would first have to exist, before they could help evolution.^{xxiv} Lamarckism becomes a philosophical belief, as it has no scientific foundation. However, modern evolutionary scientists imply Lamarckism as an evolutionary subtlety. For instance in the case of modern birds evolving from small theropod dinosaurs, Michael D. Lemonick reports in *TIME*:

But the two new turkey-size specimens discovered last year at Liaoning, leave little room for doubt: they have feathers on their arms and tails and show evidence of body feathers as well. These were clearly not used for flight, but scientists think feathers may not have evolved for flight in the first place. They may have served as colorful body

Only some have long legs

Imagine a bird that walks in shallow water and continually stretches it's legs to try for the deeper parts, well, it is proposed, the hormones will be modified by this repeated emotionally stressful event, and cause the next generation that hatches to have longer legs.

decoration to attract mates or frighten off enemies. By this reasoning, flight was discovered by accident; feathered dinosaurs may have found that flapping their arms while running gave them added speed, and a **few million years of flapping could eventually have resulted in lift-off*** (*emphasis mine).^{xxv}

Kevin Padian and Luis Chiappe in an article titled, *The Origin of Birds and Their Flight* clearly show that scientific facts are philosophically derived. Archaeopteryx, a blue jay sized “animal that had bird-like wings and feathers but a very unbird like long, bony tail and toothed jaw turned up in ... Bavarian limestone deposits dated about 150 million years ago.” This was some 95 million years before the dinosaurs became extinct. Philosophically, because birds cannot exist at this time, a CLADOGRAM OF BIRD EVOLUTION is invented. This imaginary diagram takes “shared derived traits,” which “can be represented in the form of a cladogram: a treelike diagram depicting the order in which new characteristics, and new creatures, evolved.” Thus, a small Velociraptor dinosaur, whose scales become feathers, magically in millions of years transforms into modern living birds. The article concludes: “There is no reasonable doubt, however, that all groups of birds, living and extinct, are descended from small, meat-eating theropod dinosaurs, as Huxley’s work intimated more than a century ago. In fact, living birds are nothing less than small, feathered, short-tailed theropod dinosaurs.”^{xxvi}

Professor Caid Menton, Associate Professor of Anatomy at the Washington University School of Medicine, addressed the issue of Archaeopteryx, from a creationist’s viewpoint. He points out that some other fossil birds had grasping teeth, some didn’t. He asks “How can teeth prove a relationship to reptiles, when many reptiles don’t have teeth?” Archaeopteryx had “a true grasping hallux with curved claws for perching.” His studies showed that feathers have more in common with hair than scales:

The most fundamental difference is that the feather grows out of a follicle. A follicle is a tubular down-growth of the epidermis that protrudes deeply into the skin—all the way down to under laying bone in the case of primary feathers. And this tube of specialized living skin produces the feather inside of itself from a growth matrix at the very bottom. The reptilian scale has absolutely nothing to do with follicles. All of the scales can shed as a sheet because they're nothing but folds in the epidermis, like fabric folded over on itself, whereas feathers would have to come out of their own follicle.

So, if evolutionists really wanted to make a case they could argue that feathers evolved from hair, or vice versa. Now, of course, that wouldn't fit the evolutionary belief that mammals and birds evolved independently from reptiles. So hardly anyone gets to know that in fact, it's hairs, not scales, that are similar to feathers.^{xxvii}

Mass Extinctions

In the order of things, as established by modern paleontologists, life remained almost exclusively unicellular for the first five sixths of its history from the first recorded fossils at 3.5 billion years to the first well documented multi-cellular animals less than 600 million years ago. Dr. Gould writes “Starting about 530 million years ago, constitutes the famous Cambrian explosion, during which all but one modern phylum of animal life made a first appearance in the fossil record, ... but this delay may be an artifact of failure to discover Cambrian representatives.” This amazing explosion of life is thought to have occurred over a mere five million years. He states further:

The Cambrian explosion was the most remarkable and puzzling event in the history of life. Moreover, we do not know why most of the early experiments died, while a few survived to become our modern phyla. It is tempting to say that the victors won by virtue of greater anatomical complexity, better ecological fit or some other predictable feature of conventional Darwinian struggle. But no recognized traits unite the victors and the radical alternative must be entertained that each early experiment received little more than the equivalent of a ticket in the largest lottery ever played out on our planet - and that each surviving lineage, including our own phylum of vertebrates, inhabits the earth today more by the luck of the draw than by any predictable struggle for existence.^{xxviii}

Worlds In Collision, a well-researched controversial book by Immanuel Velikovsky, came to press in 1950. One quote by *This Week*, said it “will have an explosive effect on the world of science,” and it did! It struck at the heart of uniformitarianism, the foundation of evolution. “The most discussed book of our time, propounds the startling theory that more than once within historical times the order in our planetary system was disturbed and caused enormous cataclysms; the earth became a primeval chaos lashed by tornadoes of cinders; the skies darkened; land masses were destroyed and large portions of the human race perished,” writes the editor.^{xxix}

The scientific establishment raised a storm of protest against Dr. Velikovsky. “Efforts were made to block dissemination of Dr. Velikovsky’s ideas, even to punish supporters of his investigations. Universities, scientific societies, publishing houses, the popular press were approached and threatened; social pressures and professional sanctions were invoked to control

public opinion.”^{xxx} However, the result of all this was a recognition of major catastrophic events in the geologic record, which forced a new evolutionary concept, “punctuated evolution.”

Five mass extinction events are postulated including the last one, the death asteroid proposed by Luis and Walter Alvarez in 1979 that wiped out the dinosaurs 65 million years ago at the Cretaceous-Tertiary boundary. Careful study leads to the general conclusion that mass extinctions were more frequent, more rapid, more extensive in magnitude and more different in effect, than paleontologists had previously

realized.^{xxxi} Evolution has not had lots and lots of time to generate context and form as demanded by fundamental Darwinism. This fact is quickly eclipsed as evolutionary scientists evolve their chosen philosophy. The solution to this problem is “macromutation.”

Macromutation means, a fish in a blink of geological time became a lizard or maybe a bird. Not only that, it only happened for some unknown reason all at once, once in awhile. These philosophical scientists are known as “punctuationists.” The “take a long time to do it” are “Darwinists” “uniformitarianists” or “gradualists.” The alternative? “Both schools of thought [punctuationists and gradualists] despise so-called scientific creationists equally, and both agree that the major gaps are real, that they are true imperfections in the fossil record. Both schools of thought agree that the only alternative explanation of the sudden appearance of so many complex

A Junk Pile CD

A simple analogy for macromutation is like having a CD player suddenly form in a junk pile with all the built in programming needed to make this electronic marvel work. Not only that, a CD disk spontaneously forms with music on it that can be read by the CD player. Oh yes, how did the CD player know electricity was available for it to operate?

animal types in the Cambrian era is divine creation, and both would reject this alternative^{»xxxii}—so its macromutation, anything but an infinite God—Creator!

Alan Feduccia, an ornithologist at the University of North Carolina, takes on the traditional Darwinists with the view that “early proliferation of bird species during the Mesozoic was followed by massive extinctions at the Cretaceous-Tertiary boundary: only a few survivors slipped through the key hole into the Tertiary. Then in two spurts [macromutation] of evolutionary fervor, all modern birds arose from the lucky few.” He states, “The old model was one of sluggish, gradualistic evolution, with all the modern bird order appearing back in the Mesozoic and then oozing into the present. It makes no sense. Birds, like the proverbial test canary for gases in coalmines, would be the first to be wiped out in the Cretaceous cataclysms. However, in a very short geologic time they rapidly evolve; “within 10 million years a first phyletic surge had replenished the void left by the Cretaceous extinctions with the avian orders that exist today. The second phase filled the skies with trilling, twittering and cheeping, as the age of songbirds, or passerines, dawned.” The scientific question as to “how” all these avian orders rapidly “evolved” is not answered. ^{»xxxiii}

It is estimated that one million species of animal life inhabit the earth’s surface while an additional ten times that number live underground. Bacteria occupy a wider domain of environments and span a broader range of biochemistries than any other group. “Bacteria represent the great success story of life’s pathway,” says Dr. Gould. “The number of *Escherichia coli* cells in the gut of each human being exceeds the number of humans that has ever lived on this planet.”^{»xxxiv} Based on this fact, the tremendous bacterial biomass and number of rapidly duplicating cells multiplied by every person on Earth should allow more complex forms to pop out in infinitum even

if evolution operates in slow gradual changes—no such luck, the DNA and RNA of each cell continue context and form.

To explain the advancement of a cell's protein engines, evolutionists assume that possible favorable mutations will still be around, when needed, for a cell's future complex machinery. Professor Behe suggests that a cell would not waste valuable energy producing something that it could not know it would need in some distant future. These mutations would be degraded and become useless. "The situation is actually much worse: if a protein appeared in one step with nothing to do, then mutation and natural selection would tend to eliminate it. Since it is doing nothing critical, its loss would not be detrimental, and production of the gene and protein would cost energy that other animals aren't spending."^{xxxv}

Professor Behe, a microbiologist, based on his microbiology studies has brought scientific consternation upon himself because of his concept of molecular design, even though he has not attributed it to divine creation. His study of blood clotting shows a complex cascade of chemical reactions wherein all chemical components had to be in existence simultaneously, for it to work. Thus, blood clotting is of irreducible complexity.^{xxxvi} His research shows there are no scientifically published papers backed by methodical laboratory testing, showing how life, or irreducible complexity came about. He writes,

Molecular evolution is not based on scientific authority. There is no publication in the scientific literature—in prestigious journals, specialty journals, or books—that describes how molecular evolution of any real, complex, biochemical system either did occur or even might have occurred. There are assertions that such evolution occurred, but absolutely none are supported by pertinent experiments or calculations.

Since no one knows molecular evolution by direct experience, and since there is no authority on which to base claims of knowledge, it can truly be said that—like the contention that the Eagles will win the Super Bowl this year—the assertion of Darwinian molecular evolution is merely bluster.... Despite comparing sequences and mathematical modeling, molecular evolution has never addressed the question of how complex structures came to be. In effect, the theory of Darwinian molecular evolution has not published, and so it should perish.^{xxxvii}

Shifting viruses

Quasispecies^{xxxviii}*38 are the shifting of genome information forming clouds of virus types within a class of species. Research shows if a virus type shifts its genetic makeup too far from the norm it dies out. This is not evolution, but species variability allowing it to exist in changing environments. The DNA still has the form and context of the virus and will not evolve to fill ecological niches.

It is often stated that human genes are only 10 percent different than that of the ape family, however this took into account only the 2 percent of DNA that contains the blue print for proteins, the remaining “98 percent of the DNA—was often dismissed as junk”.^{xxxix} Scientists are discovering that this hidden “junk” forms a complexity far beyond the simple cell envisioned by Darwin. Gibbs reports for *Scientific American*, “Just when scientists thought they had DNA almost figured out, they are discovering in chromosomes two vast, but largely hidden, layers of information that affect inheritance” and “development of disease. ... Much as dark matter influences the fate of galaxies, dark parts of the genome exert control over the development and

distinctive traits of all organisms, from bacteria to humans. The genome is home to many more actors than just the protein-encoding genes.”^{x1} It is the interaction in these hidden layers of the cell that gives the difference in identical twins. Thus, as scientists delve deeper and deeper into the cell there is an increasing complexity, as if the cell and its functions were designed. Evolution should not have allowed this apparently useless information to exist—maybe the cell for each species is unique, and “irreducibly complex.”

God, Evolution or the Alien

The theory of evolution does not imply, nor can it predict a potential internal direction for life’s pathway. Yet, naturalists have considered the explosion of life forms in the Cambrian geological era as an initial filling of the ecological barrel of niches. Professor Gould writes, “In this wise and crucial sense, the Darwinian revolution remains woefully incomplete because, even though thinking humanity accepts the fact of evolution, most of us are still unwilling to abandon the comforting view that evolution means (or at least embodies a central principle of) progress defined to render the appearance of something like human consciousness either virtually inevitable or at least predictable,”^{xli} ... “culminating in humans as life’s expression and intended planetary steward.”^{xlii}

You shall be “as gods”

“What the Velikovsky affair made crystal clear ... is that the theories of science may be held not only for the truth they embody, but also because of the vested interests they represent for those who hold them.”^{xliii}

Mankind has a vested interest; without the Legislator they shall be “as gods.”

Scientific studies have shown that uniformitarianism, the founding premise of evolution, does not exist. Since things had to happen without a Legislator (no Creator) outside of space-time,

radical adjustments have been made to Darwin's hypothesis with the introduction of macromutation and punctuationism, such that evolution is a chosen overview or philosophy rather than a science. This gap in logic is filled by 21st century alternate-science, which has proposed a solution to the macromutation and punctuationists dilemma. They propose that theoretical inner cosmic electromagnetic (EM) folded channel ways give continuous feedback from each living creature. In addition, their idea is that each species has a quantum potential, known as a morphogenetic field. The feedback from this field reaches a point whereby the Gaia force will spontaneously generate a new fully genetically functioning species, or correct a faltering one. However, to give Gaia intelligence and direction is to approach the definition of God.

The question should be posed; what if there is no Creator (God), no Gaia force, and no evolution—instead all life arrived on Earth in a remote probe termed a *Genesis Bomb* from a far away tremendously advanced civilization (ID creators). Moreover, what if this alien race is on its way to administer our civilization; will we as a race still cry out—"I will have no ruler over me?"

Notes:

ⁱ Patten, Donald Wesley, *The Biblical Flood and The Ice Epoch*, Pacific Meridian Publishing Co., 1966, pg. 8

ⁱⁱ Darwin, C. (1872) *Origin of Species*, 6th ed., 1988, New York University press, pg. 154

ⁱⁱⁱ Dawkins Richard, *The Blind Watchmaker*, W.W. Norton & Company, New York, 1986, cover

^{iv} Dawkins, Ibid, pg. 3

^v Behe Michael Professor, *Darwin's Black Box*, Touchstone Book Simon & Schuster 1998, pg. 173 & 39-45

^{vi} Behe, Ibid, pg. 213 & 197 following

^{vii} Coppedge, Ibid, pg. 125

^{viii} Coppedge, Ibid, pg. 126

^{ix} Kendrew John C., *The Thread Of Life*, Cambridge, Mass., Harvard University Press, 1966, pg 104.

^x Coppedge, Ibid, pg. 99 & pg. 73

^{xi} *Scientific American*, July 2000, Articles on the Human Genome, pgs. 50-72

^{xii} Wilder-Smith A.E., *Man's Origin, Man's Destiny*, Bethany Fellowship, Minneapolis Minnesota, 1975, pg. 87

^{xiii} Behe Ibid, pg. 138

^{xiv} Coppedge, Ibid, pg. 74, 111, 77

^{xv} Dawkins, Ibid, pg. 47

^{xvi} Wilder-Smith, Ibid, pg. 88

^{xvii} Wilder-Smith, Ibid, pg. 89

^{xviii} Blum, Harold F., *Time's Arrow and Evolution*, (2nd ed., Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1955)

-
- ^{xix} Dawkins, *Ibid*, pg. 141
- ^{xx} Orgel, Leslie E., "The Origin of Life on the Earth," *Scientific American*, October 1994, pg. 77
- ^{xxi} Tjian, Robert: "Molecular Machines That Control Genes," *Scientific American*, February 1995, pg 54
- ^{xxii} Dawkins, *Ibid*, pg. 127
- ^{xxiii} Dawkins, *Ibid*, pg. 305
- ^{xxiv} Coppedge James F. PhD., *Evolution: Possible or Impossible?* The Zondervan Corporation, pg. 83
- ^{xxv} Time, July 6, 1998
- ^{xxvi} Padian Kevin Luis Chiappe, "The Origin of Birds and Their Flight," *Scientific American* February 1998, pg. 38
- ^{xxvii} David Menton, "Bird evolution flies out the window," *Creation*, September-November, 1994, pg. 16
- ^{xxviii} Gould, Stephen Jay; "The Evolution of Life on the Earth," *Scientific American* October 1994, pg. 89
- ^{xxix} Velikovsky, Immanuel; *Worlds In Collision*; Dell publishing Co., N.Y., pg. 1
- ^{xxx} DeGrazia, Alfred; ed., "The Velikovsky Affair;" Hyde park, N.Y.; University Books, Inc. 1966
- ^{xxxi} Gould, *Ibid*, pg. 90
- ^{xxxii} Dawkins, *Ibid*, pg. 230
- ^{xxxiii} Stock Christina, "Flying in the Face of Tradition," *Scientific American*, June 1995, pg. 22
- ^{xxxiv} Gould, *Ibid*, pg. 87
- ^{xxxv} Behe, *Ibid*, pg. 96
- ^{xxxvi} Behe, *Ibid*, pg. 78
- ^{xxxvii} Behe, *Ibid*, pg. 185-186
- ^{xxxviii} Eigen, Manfred; "Viral Quasispecies," *Scientific American*, July 1994
- ^{xxxix} Gibbs Wayt, "The Unseen Genome," *Scientific American*, November 2003, pg. 48
- ^{xl} Gibbs, *Ibid*, pgs 47, 48
- ^{xli} Gould, *Ibid*, pg. 91
- ^{xlii} Gould, *Ibid*, pg. 86
- ^{xliii} *Worlds in Collision*, *Ibid*

Chapter 6

The Question Of God

The absolutely immense expanse of the universe is mind-boggling—where is God? If God can't be seen through the lens of a telescope waving at us through a window in the great beyond, can we discern any progress of the intelligence arrow that would substantiate our faith in Him? The antithesis, of course, is that chaos is king and we for the moment are fortunate to be the pick of the lottery draw as life's planetary stewards—because under the true philosophy of evolution your life has no meaning, except for biological reproduction—then upon death all that is so vainly you is but maggots and dust. Yet, mankind seems to rebel at the thought of total personal annihilation; each culture is permeated with religious systems, spiritualism, and life after death beliefs. Is this an evolutionary flaw, or is it because man has a built-in desire to seek God in an eternal relationship?

The question of God can be started with the simple fundamentals of, *God is; or God is not.* “God is not,” is easy to dispense with, since this is a pure case of time-plus-chance statistics. Moreover, evolution is impartial and directionless, it is impersonal, and it cannot be equated to any form of spiritualism whereby man is so desperately trying to increase the significance of his life.

Remember of course, from our last chapter, that at any moment a crack may occur in our quantum reality, and poof—our universe is no more! However, the minute one ascribes any spiritual forces to our, or our planet’s existence, they have crossed over into the “God is” statement, since the philosophy of evolution does not permit any supernatural meddling.

Spiritualism

Spiritualism may be in the subtle form of James Lovelock’s Gaia philosophy, Father Teilhard de Chardin’s psychic pressure, the great pantheistic current, or New Age spiritualism of cosmic consciousness. Other religious systems worship spirits, gods or God. God—being the infinite personal monotheistic God of the Bible. An interesting observation is that most peoples have wrapped themselves in spiritual bondage of some sort; only certain foods can be eaten, specific codes of dress must be maintained, physical disciplines undertaken, symbolic articles are worn or worshiped.

Why is it hard for microdot man on planet Earth to be free, to communicate, to love, to laugh,

to sing, to create, and to deal with one another with justice, mercy and individual respect? The specific void seems to be that mankind wants to be *of the something more*, to increase his essence of personal being through spiritualism and political power. However, religious spiritualism and political power are in servitude to vanity and pride—leading to rules and regulations, to the dissolution of freedom and interpersonal respect, to the classification and enslavement of people, and to the degradation of women. There are those who are waiting for the great cosmic leap, the

Aberrations

In 1995, the report that a statue of a baby elephant god sucked up milk from devotee spoons caused a great resurgence of Hinduism.ⁱ Catholicism has its periodical appearances of aberrations of Mary the mother of Jesus, or of angels of some sort, which draw adulatory devotees.

great change (paradigm shift), believing that the “psychic pressure” is going to lead mankind to the great something better—out of the chaos of rules and regulations, and the discords of life.

The Bible’s—“God is” statement—begins with the premise that the universe had a personal beginning, a personal beginning on the high order of the Trinity. That is, before ‘in the beginning’ the personal was already there. Love and thought and communication existed prior to the creation of the heavens and the earth.”ⁱⁱ This is a powerful concept and needs to be respectfully considered. God, as defined by the Holy Trinity—Father, Son and Holy Spirit, is all that there is before the creation of the realm of angels and the causative event of the space-time universe. That God is the creator of this mind boggling vast event makes Him an extremely powerful God-concept to be reckoned with. Spiritualism, man’s concept of God, is contained within our space-time world and therefore is a sub-event to the concept of God, creator of the universe. Needless to say, if we are to try and find a meaning to life we need to go beyond any sub-events to the source of life and His revelation of Himself.

A Philosophical Challenge

Does God exist? This is the principle philosophical challenge that must be dealt with. “How is it that something as basic as the first cause of the universe can be so obscure and elusive?” writes Ravi Zacharias in his book titled, *Can Man Live Without God*. He continues; “There has to be something more than physical or ‘natural,’ something quite different in character from which or from whom this physical universe derives its existence. Clearly, this at least provides for the possibility of God, giving a ‘spiritual’ uncaused entity some ‘breathing room.’ A strictly physical or natural explanation is not provable by the laws that govern a physical or natural universe. In short, the tests of nature for nature establish that naturalism, as a first cause is indefensible. Something beyond a physical reality is needed to explain this universe.”ⁱⁱⁱ

The study of reality is known as *ontology*. The physical argument for a God outside of space-time (physical reality) can be developed from the philosophical argument from cause (causality), which is known as the *cosmological argument*. From this basic tenet the argument from design (teleological) and moral (morality) can be developed. The will to believe, to reason, or the unreasonableness of the reasoning's of one's heart is still superimposed on any philosophical argument. William Paley augurs for God on the basis of design. Darwinism is founded on the belief that given enough time—anything can happen. Glancing at the biological aspect of our world it would appear that anything that could happen by chance, has not. Is morality a fundamental law, rather than rules that are temporally established by the shifting values of human society? The establishment of a philosophical causality that could be God of the Bible would suggest that there is design and fundamental laws that lead to direction and purpose, but to say that God exists because there is design is circular reasoning from an evolutionist's perspective.

Ravi Zacharias outlines in his book a simple form of theistic defense provided by Professor Dallas Willard of the School of Philosophy at the University of Southern California. Professor Willard establishes the philosophical tenet "God exists". Mr. Zacharias describes this defense as follows:

Stage One is his argument from the physical world. "However concrete physical reality is sectioned, the result will be a state of affairs which owes it's being to something other than itself." Willard gives a detailed demonstration that for anything to exist, all preconditions necessary for its existence must have been completed in order for that particular thing to exist. In that series of causes there has to be at least one state of being which itself exists but does not derive its existence from anything else. It is self-existent, i.e. uncaused.

Professor Willard responds to those who would argue that this uncaused entity itself could be just another physical reality: “It will be objected by some that, though the series of causes for any physical state is finite, the first physical event or state in the series could have come into existence without a cause could have, in short, originated “from nothing.” Many discussions today seem to treat the “Big Bang” in this way, though of course that would make it totally unlike any other “bang” of which we have any knowledge. “Big Bang” mysticism is primarily attractive, I think, just because “the bang” has stepped into a traditional role of God, which gives it a nimbus and seems to rule out the normal questions we would ask about any physical event. That “bang” is often treated as if it were not quite or not just a physical event, as indeed it could not be. But what, then, could it be? Enter “scientific mysticism.” And we must at least point out that an eternally self-subsistent being is no more improbable than a self-subsisted event emerging from no cause. As C.S. Lewis pointed out, “An egg which came from no bird is no more natural than a bird which had existed from all eternity.” (C.S. Lewis, *God in the Dock*, p. 211)

The whole idea of the universe “popping out,” or of something coming from nothing, would in effect violate the system of law which governs the origin of things of its type. The probability of something physical coming from nothing is zero, and not a single physical state or event being observed or otherwise known is known to originate from nothing.^{iv}

We might note here that Andrei Linde, as we discussed earlier, required a “physicist-hacker” and a small amount of matter to establish his inflationary universe. The physicist-hacker establishes order over something—not nothing. This leads into Dr. Willard’s second stage.

Stage two is Willard’s argument in the form of the teleological argument, but he underscores the fact that it is not an argument from design [circular reasoning] as much as it is an argument to design. That is a pivotal distinction. Evolution as a theory cannot logically be a theory of ultimate origins, precisely because its operation presupposes a text of design within a context of facilitating that actualization. In other words, not all order has evolved. The being from order that the evolutionists argue for did not come from being without order. The dimensions are of a stupendous magnitude: they are both diachronic and synchronic.

After establishing that not all order has evolved, the theist can then demonstrate that in our human experience, before any order is imparted to our physical creations, order first existed in our minds. Design in mind precedes design in kind. Once again there is breathing room for God, for nothing in our experience that is designed has come to be, apart from the coalescing of entities conducive to design, in circumstances complementing that capability; existing first in the mind. Dallas Willard ends stage two with this challenge to the antitheist:

“At the first stage we said that the probability, relative to our data, of something (in the physical universe at least) originating from nothing was zero, and we invited the atheist to find one case of this actually happening, to revise the probability a bit above zero. Now we urge him to find one case of ordered

being—or just being, for, whatever it is, it will certainly not be ordered—
originating from being with no order.”

We might again add that in the scientific world, many articles are written about using chaos theory, as if order came out of chaos. But, we need to understand what scientists mean by the term chaos; it is “the behavior of a chaotic system is a collection of many orderly behaviors, none of which dominate under normal circumstances.”^v An illustration is a high school band where each member is playing a different tune at the same time. Not the kind of sound that I like to be around! All it would take is several members to start playing the same tune and one of the “orders” would start to dominate. True chaos has every member with earplugs on, randomly playing notes. Notes are a form of order, and a string of notes can relate to a series of words (in many languages) that give context to a pattern of notes. However, the probability of a song being produced with a set pattern of notes being assigned to words that give context as a song, relates back to the discussion of the monkeys trying to type a sentence. Music and song require intelligence and design.

In stage three, Willard presents the argument for God from the course of human events historical, social, and individual within the context of a demonstrated extra-naturalism (stage one), and of a quite plausible cosmic intellectualism (stage two). “This human life is to be interpreted within the ontological space of the actualities, with their attendant possibilities hewn out in stages one and two.” If nothing cannot create something, this allows, indeed demands, that a nonphysical reality be the first cause. Further, if the text to design within a context of complementariness sustains the conclusion that order has never come from disorder, the argument for an intelligent cause is again supported. And if history and human experience reveal realities that can only be explained in the

realm of transcendent reality, one can compellingly argue for the existence of an intelligent first cause we call God. Willard powerfully ends his summary by quoting the skeptic, David Hume:

“The most natural sentiment, which a well disposed mind will feel on this occasion, is a longing desire and expectation that heaven would be pleased to dissipate, at least alleviate, this profound ignorance, by affording some more particular revelation to mankind, and making discoveries of the nature, attributes and operations of the divine object of our faith.”^{vi}

If the Bible stands as “The Revelation from God,” then in it, God must reveal Himself (Willard’s stage three), and through that revealing there has to be a consistent word of truth that will define the direction of the Intelligence Arrow in space-time—such that there is a unified direction of purpose interlinking God, the cosmos, angels, man, and eternity.

Notes:

ⁱ *TIME*, November 6, 1995

ⁱⁱ Schaeffer Francis A., *Genesis in Space and Time*, Intervarsity Press 1972, pg. 21

ⁱⁱⁱ Zacharias Ravi, *Can Man Live Without God*, Word Publishing, 1994, 190-194

^{iv} Zacharias, *Ibid*, pg. 191ff. This summary of Dallas Willard’s theistic defense is excerpted from J.P. Mooreland and Kai Nielsen, *Does God Exist?* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson, 1990),

^v Ditto W. and L.M. Pecora, “Mastering Chaos,” *Scientific American*, August 1993, pg.78

^{vi} Zacharias, *Ibid*, pg. 193

Chapter 7

The Bible

The Bible, an incredibly unique book, is God’s revelation of Himself to man. It was written over a span of 1600 years by more than 40 authors from every walk of life; yet, it is cohesive in thought and purpose as if a single author wrote it. F.F. Bruce, *The Books and the Parchments* Fleming H. Revell, writes,

The writers themselves were a heterogeneous number of people, not only separated from each other by hundreds of years and hundreds of miles, but belonging to the most diverse walks of life. In their ranks we have kings, herdsmen, soldiers, legislators, fishermen, statesmen, courtiers, priests and prophets, a tent making Rabbi and a Gentile physician, not to speak of others of whom we know nothing apart from the writings they have left us. These authors spoke on hundreds of controversial subjects with harmony and clarity as if the book were written by a single author who knew the end before the beginning. There is one unfolding story from Genesis (the beginning) and Revelations (the end), which is “God’s redemption of man.”¹

Grant Jeffrey in his book, *The Signature of God*, asks the question “How Would God Reveal Himself to Mankind?” He continues,

Let’s conduct an experiment to examine the question of how God would reveal Himself to mankind if He truly exists. After creating this universe and mankind, how would God reveal Himself and His instructions to His creatures? He could choose to speak to every single one of the billions of humans in every generation, but that would be somewhat impractical. On the other hand, God could choose a number of men over a period of years and inspire them to faithfully record in writing His instructions for the rest of mankind. Obviously, the second option is the most practical.

However, there is another problem that God would face in revealing His will to mankind. How would God prove that the Bible was His legitimate revelation to mankind? The challenge would be how best to differentiate the true inspired Scripture of God from the many other religious books produced by religious philosophers over the centuries. I believe the solution is quite obvious: God would authenticate His own true revelation by writing His signature on the pages of His Scriptures.

This signature of God would consist of evidence, knowledge and phenomenon in the text of the Bible that no unaided human could possibly have written. In other words, the genuine Scriptures should contain supernatural evidence within its text that no one apart from a divine intelligence could create. Interestingly, the Scriptures do contain a direct statement from God that He had provided precisely this type of supernatural evidence as unmistakable proof of the Bible’s

inspiration and His divine powers to foretell future events through His prophets.ⁱⁱ

Professor M. Montiero Williams, (cited by Sidney Collett, *All About the Bible*, Fleming H. Revell), a former Boden professor of Sanskrit, spent 42 years studying Eastern books and said in comparing them to the Bible. “Pile them, if you will on the left side of your study table: but place your own Holy Bible on the right side—all by itself, all alone—and with a wide gap between them. For... there is a gulf between it and the so-called sacred books of the East which severs the one from the other utterly, hopelessly, and forever... a veritable gulf which cannot be bridged over by any science of religious thought.”ⁱⁱⁱ

The Bible, as we think of it today, is composed of the Hebrew Canon, known as the *Old Testament*, and the *New Testament*, or New Testament Canon. The word Canon as applied to Scripture, means an officially accepted list of books. Five principles determine whether or not a book is canonical or Scripture.^{iv}

1. *Is it authoritative—did it come from the hand of God? (Does this book come with a divine “thus saith the Lord”?)*
2. *Is it prophetic—was it written by a man of God?*
3. *Is it authentic? (The fathers had the attitude of “if in doubt throw it out” policy. This enhanced the “validity of their discernment of canonical books.”)*
4. *Is it dynamic—did it come with the life-transforming power of God?*
5. *Was it received, collected, read and used—was it accepted by the people of God?*

Josh McDowell states, “One thing to keep in mind is that the church did not create the canon or books included in what we call Scripture. Instead, the church recognized the books that were inspired from their inception. They were inspired by God when written.”^v A Latin Version of the

Bible, known as the Latin Vulgate (meaning common or popular), was the first Bible to incorporate both verse and chapter in both the Old and New Testaments. This was accomplished in 366-384 AD by Jerome who was the secretary of Damascus Bishop of Rome, at the Bishops request.

Why The Scriptures are Accurate

The ancient Hebrew scribes that were responsible for faithfully making new copies of the Scriptures had a demanding copy procedure that ensured the correct transmission of The Word. The Massorettes (from massora, “Tradition”) had the laborious job of editing the text and standardizing it. Rabbi Aquiba, 2nd century AD, is credited with saying that “the accurate transmission (Massoreth) of the text is a fence for the Torah.” This “Massoretic” text had vowel points added in order to ensure proper pronunciation; this text is the standard Hebrew text today. Sir Frederic Kenyon writes:

Besides recording varieties of reading, tradition, or conjecture, the Massorettes undertook a number of calculations which do not enter into the ordinary sphere of textual criticism. They numbered the verses, words, and letters of every book. They calculated the middle word and middle letter of each. They enumerated verses which contained all the letters of the alphabet, or a certain number of them: and so on. These trivialities, as we may rightly consider them, had yet the effect of securing minute attention to the precise transmission of the text; and they are but an excessive manifestation of a respect for the sacred Scriptures, which in itself deserves nothing but praise. The Massorettes were indeed anxious that not one jot nor tittle, not one smallest letter nor one tiny part of a letter, of the Law should pass away or be lost.^{vi}

The accurate transmission of the Scriptures was verified in a dramatic way with the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls in 1947. The Dead Sea, in Israel, is a body of extremely salty water in a hot dry valley some 1000 feet beneath sea level. Around 68 AD, near the community of Qumran, someone hid their precious manuscripts in tightly sealed pottery jars in caves high up in the sedimentary clay gravel bluffs overlooking the Dead Sea. The Roman army destroyed the community shortly afterwards. Grant Jeffrey explains about these scrolls:

The most incredible discovery was the immense library of biblical manuscripts in Cave Four at Qumran that contained every single book of the Old Testament with exception of the Book of Esther. Multiple copies of several biblical texts such as Genesis, Deuteronomy and Isaiah were found in Cave Four. Scholars were able to reach back a further two thousand years in time to examine biblical texts that had lain undisturbed in the desert caves during all of the intervening centuries. The scholars discovered that the manuscript copies of the most authoritative Hebrew text, Textus Recepticus, used by the King James translators in 1611, were virtually identical to these ancient Dead Sea Scrolls. After carefully comparing the manuscripts they discovered that, aside from a tiny number of spelling variations, not a single word was altered from the original scrolls in the caves from the much copied AD 1100 manuscripts used by the Authorized King James Version translators in 1611.^{vii}

He writes further,

As proof of the incredible accuracy of this transmission through the centuries, consider the Masoretic and Yeminite translations of the Torah. Over a millennium ago, Yemenite Jews were separated from their brother Jews in the

Middle East and Europe. Despite separate transmissions and copying of their Torah manuscripts, a thousand years later only nine Hebrew letters, out of some 304,805 letters in the Yemenite Torah manuscript, differ from the accepted Hebrew Masoretic text of the Torah. Not one of these nine variant letters in the Yemenite Torah change the meaning of a significant word. This astonishing fact proves how exceptionally careful, over a thousand year period, Jewish scribes were in copying their original text of His sacred Scriptures throughout the last three thousand years, enabling us to have confidence that we still possess the inspired Word of God. The Prophet Isaiah declared that the Word of God is eternal: “The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the word of our God shall stand forever” (Isaiah 40:8). In the New Testament, Jesus Himself confirmed the indestructibility of His Holy Word. “For verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled” (Matthew 5:18).^{viii}

The New Testament reliability has the support of a large volume of manuscripts from the 2nd and 3rd centuries, plus secondary quotes from the early church fathers (70 - 250 AD). In an article in *TIME* titled, *A Step Closer to Jesus?* Richard Ostling, states:

The Magdalen fragments caused barely a stir because scholars dated them around AD 200, and there were already 37 other New Testament papyruses from the 2nd and 3rd centuries. (In all, parts of 5400 ancient New Testament manuscripts survive, by far the broadest textual basis for any body of ancient writing.)^{ix}

Josh McDowell writes,

A.T. Robertson, the author of the most comprehensive grammar of New Testament Greek, wrote, “There are some 8000 manuscripts of the Latin Vulgate and at least 1,000 for the other early versions. Add over 4000 (Bruce Metzger says we have close to 5000) Greek manuscripts and we have 13,000 manuscript copies of portions of the New Testament. Besides all this, much of the New Testament can be reproduced from the quotations of the early Christian writers.^x

Grant Jeffrey comments,

Fortunately, the tremendous advances in historical research and biblical archeology in the last century have convinced most scholars in the last two decades that the Gospels and Epistles were written within thirty-five years or less of the events which they describe. The late William F. Albright, the greatest biblical archaeologist of his day, declared, “We can already say emphatically that there is no longer any solid basis for dating any book of the New Testament after about AD 80.” In an article for *Christianity Today*, January 18, 1963, W.F. Albright wrote: “In my opinion, every book of the New Testament was written by a baptized Jew between the forties and eighties of the first century AD.^{xi}

The *TIME* article, discusses several papyrus fragments of the Gospel of Matthew which Peter Thiede, a specialist in ancient papyrus manuscripts, claims came from Upper Egypt and were written in the 1st century AD Mr. Ostling writes,

Thiede finds certitude in comparative paleography, by which handwriting in an undated manuscript is compared with that in texts containing exact dates. He derives his dating from the latest research on 1st century Greek texts from the

Dead Sea Scrolls, Pompeii and Herculaneum. In theory, Thiede's assessment could put the writing of Matthew only a matter of years after Christ's crucifixion under Pontius Pilate, whose rule ended in AD 36. But Thiede dates the manuscript somewhat later. For one thing, the fragments come from a codex, a format that apparently began to supplant the scroll later in the 1st century. Until now the key factor in Matthew dating has been the assumption that the Gospel implicitly reflects Rome's destruction of the Jerusalem Temple in AD 70. But that is no certainty. In his new Word Books commentary on Matthew, Donald Hagner of California's Fuller Seminary, for one, switches to a pre-AD 70 date after reassessing what the Gospel says and does not say about the temple.^{xii}

Confirmation of the early 1st century writing of the Gospels by Matthew, Mark, Luke and John has been made from fragments of the Dead Sea Scrolls which were hidden in caves around 68 AD. Grant Jeffrey, in his book *The Signature of God*, comments "In 1991 the world was astonished to hear that one of the unpublished scrolls included incredible references to a "Messiah" who suffered crucifixion for the sins of men. The scroll was translated by Dr. Robert Eisenman, Professor of Middle East Religions of California State University.... Another fascinating scroll discovered in Cave Four known as 4Q246 refers to the hope of a future Messiah figure. This is another of the scrolls that was unpublished until recently. Amazingly, the text in this scroll refers to the Messiah as "the son of God" and the "son of the Most High." These words are the exact wording recorded in the Gospel of Luke."^{xiii}

Jeffrey concludes, from all his research, with the dramatic statement:

When we consider the total amount of evidence that confirms the biblical record about Jesus of Nazareth, we can have confidence that we know more about the

life and resurrection of Christ than we know about any other person in the ancient world. God has not left us in darkness concerning the truthfulness of the miracles, prophecies and teaching of his Son, Jesus Christ.^{xiv}

Philosophically, if God Exists and if the Bible does stand as a direct revelation from God whereby he reveals Himself; then “heaven,” in reference to the writing of skeptic David Hume, may very well have given us a “particular revelation” such that “the nature, attributes and operations of the divine object of our faith,” is Jesus Christ. The continued study of this document, the Bible, may determine if it is supernaturally inspired, and if so, then it may reveal to us the meaning of our existence in this magnificent cosmos.

The Word in the World

The study of Scripture would be impossible, except for a select few, if the study of ancient Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek texts were required. Fortunately, in-depth study by diligent scholars has resulted in the publishing of a number of modern versions of the Holy Bible that can be read and understood in this century’s vernacular. The translators of these editions have made involved studies of the thought patterns and syntax of language that varies from language to language and age to age. The New International Version is one of these modern translations. The publisher writes,

The International Bible Society used over one hundred scholars working directly from the best available Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek texts... The fact that participants from the United States, Great Britain, Canada, Australia and New Zealand worked together gave the project its international scope. That they were from many denominations—including Anglican, Assemblies of God, Baptist, Brethren, Christian Reformed, Church of Christ, Evangelical Free, Lutheran, Mennonite, Methodist, Nazarene, Presbyterian, Wesleyan and other Churches—

helped to safeguard the translation from sectarian bias... In working towards these goals, the translators were united in their commitment to the authority and infallibility of the Bible as God's Word in written form. They believe that it contains the divine answer to the deepest needs of humanity, that it sheds unique light on our path in a dark world, and that it sets forth the way to our eternal well being.^{xv}

F.F. Bruce, renowned Bible scholar, astutely summarizes the work of modern scholars; "There has never been a time when the work of Bible translation has been so closely tied to the study of the text and transmission of the Bible as today; Bible translation is all the more effectively executed on this account."^{xvi}

Notes:

ⁱ McDowell, Josh; *Evidence that demands a Verdict*, Campus Crusade For Christ, 1972, pgs. 18-19

ⁱⁱ Jeffrey Grant R., *The Signature of God, Astonishing Biblical Discoveries*, Frontier Research Publications Inc, P.O. Box 129 Station "U", Toronto, Ontario M8Z 5M4, 1996, pg. 8

ⁱⁱⁱ McDowell, Ibid, pg. 17

^{iv} McDowell, Ibid, pg. 33

^v McDowell, Ibid, pg. 33

^{vi} Kenyon Frederic G., *Our Bible and the Ancient Manuscripts*, New York: Harper and Brothers, 1941, pg. 38

^{vii} Jeffrey Ibid, pg. 97

^{viii} Jeffrey, Ibid, pg. 14

^{ix} Ostling Richard, "A Step Closer to Jesus?" *TIME*, January 23, 1995,

^x McDowell, Ibid, pg. 46

^{xi} Jeffrey, Ibid, pg. 86

^{xii} Ostling, Ibid

^{xiii} Jeffrey, Ibid, pgs. 99, 100

^{xiv} Jeffrey, Ibid, pg. 104

^{xv} *The New International Version*, Copyright International Bible Society, Zondervan Bible Publishers, Grand Rapids Michigan, 1987

^{xvi} Bruce F.F., "Transmission and Translation of The Bible," *The Expositor's Bible Commentary*, Volume 1, Zondervan Publishing House, 1979, pg. 56

Chapter 8

Inspired Scripture

The first five books of the Old Testament portion of the Bible, Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy, are known as the *Torah* in Hebrew, or the *Pentateuch* in Greek. Most scholars assert that Moses, the great prophet, wrote them around 1500 to 1400 BC. Genesis describes the beginning of world history from God's viewpoint—man's rebellion, the invasion by alien angels, Noah's flood and then focuses on a man named Abraham, whom God calls His friend. Around 2000 BC, God implemented an eternal covenant with Abraham, that he would be the father of a great nation. Through this nation the promised *seed*, or Messiah, would come who would defeat the great cosmic rebel, Satan. Genesis ends with this tribe of people, the Hebrew or Israelites, moving to Egypt because of a great famine.

Exodus begins some 400 years later (1500–1400 BC) when Moses is called of God to lead approximately 2 million descendents of His friend Abraham, out of slavery in Egypt. The remaining three books cover a period of forty years during which the Hebrew wander in the deserts of Arabia, because they doubted God. The next thirty-four books, Joshua to Malachi, cover a period of approximately 1000 years to 400 AD. Around 1000 BC, Israel briefly became a powerful God-fearing nation under the leadership of King David. The nation soon slipped into idolatry, and

because of their adultery against God, the Babylonians conquered them. The walls of Jerusalem were breached in 606 BC and its citizens led away, bound in iron chains, as slaves in exile to Babylon. Several years later, in 586 BC, the magnificent first temple was sacked, burnt and more slaves taken. The 400 years from Malachi to the birth of Jesus, the Christ (messiah), are called the *silent* years, as there was no word of prophecy from “God.”

The first four books of the New Testament period—Mathew, Mark, Luke and John describe the birth of Jesus, thought to be between 4 and 1 BC, and His ministry from 28 AD to 32 – 33 AD, whereupon He was crucified, was resurrected and ascended into Heaven. The remaining books from Acts—which begins with the ascension of Jesus—to Revelation span a period of some sixty-four years, to 96 AD. Jesus dictated Revelation to the apostle John through a supernatural vision.

Archaeological Background

We live in a world where the philosophy of evolution and its biased view of human history dominate. The prevalent wisdom until the early 1900’s was that the ancient cultures of Moses’ day had no form of writing; that history was passed down by oral

Iceman

The discovery in 1991 of a man, dubbed “Iceman,” who froze to death 5300 years ago in the Similaun Glacier, between Austria and Italy, stunned scientists. *TIME*, October 26, 1992 reports; “They’ve been stunned by the sophisticated design of his arrows, which reflect a basic grasp of ballistics, and by the ingenuity of his clothing. Even more amazing is the evidence that Neolithic people had discovered the antibiotic properties of plants. Among other surprises, the Iceman has shown irrefutably that human haircuts and tattoos have been in vogue a good deal longer than anyone suspected.”

transmission and therefore subject to considerable error. These ideas were held even though the Scriptures clearly say that Moses wrote on tablets.

Modern archaeology has shown that culturally advanced civilizations with systems of writing existed as far back as 5000 years ago. The more archaeologists look around the world ancient cities are being discovered, particularly in the Middle East, which pushes the discovery of sophisticated cultures back in time. It is as if man has always been culturally advanced—with a fair degree of technological knowledge. P. J. Wiseman, who studied Assyriology in Iraq in the late 1920's and early 30's, visited the exciting archaeological excavations of his day, such as the famous dig at Ur under Sir Leonard Woolley. He writes:

One of the most remarkable facts which has emerged from archaeological research, is that the art of writing began in the earliest historical times known to man. It is now generally agreed that history first dawned in the land known as Babylonia, and that civilization there is older than that of Egypt. Both civilizations are characterized by the use of written records. Until recent times it was the general tendency to insist on the late appearance of writing, now the pendulum has swung to the opposite direction, and the present tendency is to thrust back the period for which written records are claimed to about 3500 BC. Egyptologists have discovered documents written on papyrus which they claim may be dated as early 3000 BC.ⁱ

The book of Genesis, chapter 11 states that Ur of the Chaldees was the birthplace of the patriarch Abraham. The ancient city of Ur is approximately 100 miles inland from the Persian Gulf in Iraq. Some 4500 years ago, it was a seaside metropolis. Sir Leonard Woolley commenced archaeological excavations in 1923, uncovering the Royal Tombs of Ur dated at 2500 BC. The

tombs contained intricate jewelry including a headdress of thin leaves of gold crafted to form flowers, gold daggers, musical instruments and many other ornaments of incredible workmanship. The discovery also included an extensive collection of cuneiform clay tablets. Some of these tablets were obviously used by students. These tablets contained tables of verbs—for arithmetic, they had tables of square and cube roots and reciprocal numbers. Alan Millard writes, “Tablets from other cities of the eighteenth century BC in Babylonia display a correct understanding of ‘Pythagoras Theorem’—1,200 years before Pythagoras formulated it!”ⁱⁱ

Cuneiform Tablets

Cuneiform writing is formed by making wedge shaped impressions at various angles in clay—600 distinct signs are known. These tablets are then baked like a ceramic tile.

Mari, an ancient city of the same era as Ur, further up the Euphrates River, has yielded over 20,000 cuneiform texts. These texts are letters and records that illustrate the way of life of the people of Mari. One report describes the manufacturing progress on some musical instruments. The ancient cities of Ebla and Ugarit on the Mediterranean Sea side of Syria also contained burnt libraries of cuneiform tablets. The powerful Babylonian kings Sargon and Naram-Sim destroyed Ebla about 2300 to 2250 BC. Both Ugarit and Ebla were wealthy city-states thriving on regional trade and commerce. Concerning the destruction of Ugarit, Peter Craigie writes,

It was the movement of the Sea Peoples throughout the eastern Mediterranean world towards the end of the thirteenth century BC, which was to bring about the destruction of Ugarit. The term “Sea Peoples” is in some ways a misnomer,

for it covers at least five groups of people who sometimes operated in concert; but some of them functioned mainly on the basis of naval power, while others possessed troops that operated primarily on the land. These peoples probably came originally from the vicinity of the Aegean and southeastern Europe; about midway through the thirteenth century, they began a massive and powerful military expansion eastwards into the Mediterranean world.

They were responsible for the decline and fall of the Hittite Empire. They threatened Egypt and engaged with the Egyptians in both land and sea battles. Some of them, referred to in the Bible as Philistines, settled in Palestine (which is named after them) and for awhile threatened the survival of the Hebrew

Map by "The Creator"

"A find of Bashkir scientists contradicts traditional notions of human history: a stone slab which is 120 million years old [age of attached fossils], covered with a relief map of the Ural Region. This seems to be impossible. Scientists of Bashkir State University have found indisputable proof of an ancient highly developed civilization's existence. The question is about a great plate found in 1999, with [a] picture of the region done according to an unknown technology. This is a real relief map. Today's military has almost similar maps. The map contains civil engineering works: a system of channels with a length of about 12,000 km, weirs, and powerful dams. Not far from the channels, diamond-shaped grounds are shown, whose designation is unknown. The map also contains numerous inscriptions. At first, scientists thought that it was an Old Chinese language. It turns out that the subscriptions were done in a hieroglyphic-syllabic language of unknown origin. Scientists have not yet managed to read it...[Sic some corrections]."ⁱⁱⁱ *Pravada* April 30, 2002

immigrants there. And it was the Sea Peoples who devastated Ugarit.^{iv}

Studies of thousands of these cuneiform tablets have revealed an advanced civilization that had its customs, manners, dress, morals and business ethics for that era. Abraham and his father Terah lived in Ur around 2000 BC. Parallel events of customs, morals and business ethics in Genesis, authenticate the age of the manuscript. Identical nose rings to those given by the servant Eliezer to Rebekah, Genesis chapter 24, were found in Ebla and in the Royal Tombs of Ur. Abraham had a quarrel with the King of Gerar over water rights. The quarrel ended in a peace treaty. Similar treaties are found in the tablets.

Genesis: Book of Beginnings

The first book of the Bible, Genesis, is known as the book of beginnings. The question is—did God inspire this book such that the authors truthfully wrote out details as they occurred—or did Moses, inspired by God, write it around 1400 BC? The former would authenticate life's sordid real life events and be much more preferable. Certainly, the book of Genesis seems to reflect real life stories. David Van Biema, in an article for *TIME*, titled "Genesis Reconsidered," writes,

The first book of the Old Testament and of Jewish Scripture falls into two parts: primeval history (chapters 1-11); and patriarchal tales (12-50). The first part covers the Creation, Adam and Eve, Cain and Abel, the Flood and the Tower of Babel and establishes the basic premise of a God who acts in the history of his most problematic creation. The last three-quarters of Genesis by contrast, is the wild and woolly saga of one family more widely perceived as historical. Exhorting Abraham to leave his father's house and country, God offers him incalculable descendants and property. Abraham accepts, and the rest of Genesis describes his triumphs and travails and those of his son Isaac, grandson Jacob

and great grandson Joseph; as they and their extended families are tested by hostile neighbors, famines, recurrent infertility and sometimes by the Deity himself.

The article continues further along,

Genesis chapter 12, as Visotzky [a professor at Manhattan's Jewish Theological Seminary] was disagreeably reminded, seems to find Abraham allowing his wife to be taken into Pharaoh's harem both to ensure the couples safe passage through Egypt and "so that all may go well with me." Sarah barren, offers her slave, Hagar to Abraham as a kind of surrogate mother but when Hagar gets pregnant, Sarah becomes jealous and beats her (16). Lot sleeps with his daughters (19). Jacob embezzles from his brother (27). His sons enraged at the rape of their sister, kill every man in a neighboring town (34). Much of this is unpunished by God and indeed seems to fulfill his larger purposes.

Van Biema continues,

God intended them not as paragons but as a paradox: badly flawed yet nonetheless blessed. It was in the struggle to "mediate this dissonance" concluded Visotzky, that believers would achieve their own moral understanding. "It is not the narrative of Genesis that makes the work sacred," he later wrote. "Rather it is in the process of studying Genesis that the transformation takes place."^v

The larger purposes of God would seem to be, as we look back through the ages, that "*All scripture is God breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in*

righteousness,”^{vi} such that we can learn from the mistakes of others. The question that needs to be answered is—could there be a precise method of accurate transmission of these events on cuneiform tablets, such that they could be passed down from generation to generation? The historical accuracy of Genesis is continually being verified by archaeology—to be inspired of God though—it has to be more than a historical document. Somehow, God must impart supernatural knowledge, or do something to make His book—the “Book of Books!”

Genesis on Cuneiform Tablets

Wiseman discusses the first chapter of Genesis,

This first chapter is so ancient that it does not contain mythical or legendary matter; these elements are entirely absent. It bears the markings of having been written before myth and legend had time to grow, and not as is often stated, at a late date when it had to be stripped of the mythical and legendary elements inherent in every other account of Creation extant. This account is so original that it does not bear a trace of any system of philosophy. Yet it is so profound that it is capable of correcting philosophical systems. It is so ancient

that it contains nothing that is merely nationalistic; neither Babylonian, Egyptian nor Jewish modes of thought find a place in it, for it was written before clans, or nations, or philosophies originated. Surely, we must regard it as the original, of which the other extant accounts are merely corrupted copies. Others incorporate their national philosophies in crude polytheistic and mythological form. This is

Did God dictate to Adam?

This is a contentious statement and a provocative thought—could it be true?

pure. ***Genesis chapter 1 is as primitive as man himself. It is the threshold of written history***(*emphasis mine).^{vii}

Mr. Wiseman studied the format of the ancient cuneiform tablets in the Middle East and compared their format with the system of wording in the book of Genesis. This work results in a dramatic breakthrough in understanding the transmission of the written word. He discovered that even as we have subtitles on pages, the cuneiform tablets have statements that link a series of tablets together. Another important observation is that the tablets began with a genealogical list and end with a phrase, as in Genesis 5:1—“This is the written account of Adam’s line.” Thus, the “written account of” or “origins of” refer to a book, or tablet owned by that person. ““These are the origins of...’ makes it clear that it refers to the owner or writer of the tablet, rather than to the history of the person named; i.e., ‘These are the origins of Noah’ does not necessarily mean ‘This is the history about Noah,’ but the history written or possessed by Noah.”^{viii}

Wiseman postulates that the book of Genesis was a compilation of eleven tablets. Each of the tablets would be written and owned by the family patriarchs and passed down from son to son. Moses, to compile the Torah, could have edited copies of these original documents. The tablets are listed as follows

Tablet 1: Genesis 1:1 to 2:4;

This is the book of the origins of the heavens and the earth.

Tablet 2: Genesis 2:5 to 5:2;

This is the book of the origins of Adam.

Tablet 3: Genesis 5:3 to 6:9a;

These are the origins (or histories) of Noah.

Tablet 4: Genesis 6:9b to 10:1;

These are the origins (or histories) of the sons of Noah.

Tablet 5: Genesis 10:2 to 11:10a;

These are the origins (or histories) of Shem.

Tablet 6: Genesis 11:10b to 11:27a;

These are the origins (or histories) of Terah.

Tablets 7 & 8: Genesis 11:27b to 25:19a;

These are the origins (or histories) of Ishmael and Isaac.

Tablets 9 - 11: Genesis 25:19b to 37:2a;

These are the origins (or histories) of Esau and Jacob.”

“Two remarkable conformations of these divisions are:

(1) In no instance is an event recorded which the person or persons named could not have written from his own intimate knowledge, or have obtained absolutely reliable

Stela of Hammurabi

The Stela of Hammurabi, a black stone pillar about 7 feet high with hundreds of lines of cuneiform writing, was found in western Persia in 1902.^{ix} The writing describes the “Laws of Hammurabi,” king of Babylon around 1750 BC, in the age of Abraham and Terah. This stela contains the same closing format to the writing. Wiseman states, “Here again the conclusion is more lengthy and formal than the preface. It is at the end of his great inscription that he speaks of having written it. He says, ‘The righteous laws which Hammurabi the wise king established...my weighty words have I written upon my monument.’”^x

information.

(2) It is most significant that the history recorded in the sections outlined above, ceases in all instances before the death of the person named, yet in most cases it is continued almost up to the date of death, or the date on which it is stated that the tablets were written.^{xi}

Therefore, Tablet 3 is history written by Noah. He is an eyewitness to the evil on the earth; he is an old man and is preoccupied with building a monster boat (the ark), which would explain the shortness of this Tablet. His sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth, faithfully record details over a longer stretch of history on Tablet 4. Besides that, would it be like Noah's character to start out his account with "Noah was a righteous man"? This is the type of wording that his sons would use.

Tablet 3 has its parallel in the Babylonian Epic of Gilgamesh. In the 1850's, Sir Henry Layard^{xiii} excavated

the ruins of Nineveh and uncovered the torched 612 BC library of the Assyrian king, Ashurbanipal. Among the thousands of clay tablets were two mythical poems—the Epic of Gilgamesh and the Atrakhasis Epic. The first tells a story of a flood, referred to as the "Babylonian Flood Story." It relates how Utnapishtim (Noah) builds a square boat, puts his family and animals in it and is saved from the flood. The second poem describes the creation of man, his history to the time of the flood, and the new society that was set up after it. The reason for the flood, says this Epic, was that mankind was too noisy and the gods sent the flood to destroy these troublesome humans and silence them forever.

Facts not myth

Alan Millard writes, "When it comes to the interpretation of the [flood] event the biblical record clearly stands apart from the others, supporting its own claim to be not just a human tale but the revelation of God."^{xii}

In Tablet 5, Shem gives an eyewitness account of the Tower of Babel and the confusion of language by God, which caused the post-flood people to disperse around the world. Shem writes, “At that time, the people spoke one language and set out to build a tower that would reach to heaven. So on the plain of Shinar, which is the ancient city of Babylon in modern Iraq, they made bricks and started building the tower.”^{xiv} Archaeological digs have found the base of the tower and a fascinating inscription written around 595 BC by King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, which substantiates this tablet.

Research by Grant Jeffrey indicates that King Nebuchadnezzar decided to rebuild the lowest platform of the Tower of Babel, and resurface it in honour of the Chaldean Gods. Nimrod, the first king of Babylon, built the Tower of Babel over 16 centuries earlier. By the time of King Nebuchadnezzar, only the base of the tower was left. It measured 460 feet by 690 feet and stood 270 feet high above the plain. The tower was refurbished with baked bricks covered with gold, silver, cedar and fir. An inscription by King Nebuchadnezzar found on the new base of baked bricks refers to the tower as *Barzippa*, which in Chaldean meant “Tongue-Tower” (Borsippa in Greek). He also called it the temple of spheres. In a portion of this inscription he says:

The first, which is the house of the earth’s base the most ancient monument of Babylon; I built and finished it.

I have highly exalted its head with bricks covered with copper.

We say for the other, that is, this edifice, the house of the seven lights of the earth, the most ancient monument of Borsippa. A former king built it, (they reckon 42 ages) but he did not complete its head.

Since a remote time, people had abandoned it, without order expressing their words.

Grant Jeffrey continues,

Compare the statement of Nebuchadnezzar, “A former king built it, but he did not complete its head. Since a remote time, people had abandoned it,” with the words of Moses in Genesis 11:1; “So the Lord scattered them abroad from there over the face of all the earth, and they ceased building the city.” Even more startling is the phrase of the pagan king where he declared that the reason they could not complete the top of the “tongue-tower” was that the people abandoned it, without order expressing their words.” This expression by Nebuchadnezzar clearly confirms the historical event recorded in Genesis that God supernaturally “confused the language of all the earth” and He “scattered them abroad over the face of all the earth” (Genesis 11:2-8). This inscription by King Nebuchadnezzar is one of the strongest proofs possible that the Bible is an accurate record of the events it describes.^{xv}

Moses did not have to rely on oral transmission to compile the book of Genesis in its present form. He had before him a treasure of ancient tablets! Wiseman summarizes further evidence as to the antiquity of these tablets as follows:

- (1) The presence of Babylonian words in the first eleven chapters.
- (2) The presence of Egyptian words in the last fourteen chapters.
- (3) Reference to towns which had either ceased to exist, or whose original names were already so ancient in the time of Moses, that as compiler of the book, he had to insert the new names, so that they could be identified by the Hebrews living in his day.

(4) The narratives reveal such familiarity with the circumstances and details of the events recorded, as to indicate that they were written by persons concerned with those events.

(5) Evidences that the narratives were originally written on tablets and in an ancient script.

He writes further: “In Genesis 10:19 we read, ‘and the border of the Canaanite was from Zidon as thou goest towards Gerar unto Gaza; as thou goes towards Sodom and Gomorrah.’ This sentence arrests attention, for it must have been written before the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah, which took place in Abraham’s day. So completely were those cities blotted out that all trace of them became lost and it was believed that they were buried beneath the Dead Sea.”^{xvi}

The study by Mr. Wiseman supports the contention that many times we can read the Bible without really reading it. For instance, in Genesis 23:19 a similar note is added by Moses about “the cave of the field of Machpelah before Mamre (the same is Hebron in the land of Canaan).” The point being, if this had been written after the Hebrews had occupied the land they would have known exactly where their ancestors Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were buried. Thus, Wiseman says, “I suggest that these explanations were written for those who were about to enter into the land of Canaan. This supports the view that these notes were written by Moses who died on the margin of the land, immediately before the Israelites had entered into it.”^{xvii}

Ancient Knowledge

The method of transmission of the cuneiform tablets from antiquity makes Genesis historically unique and reliable. That the Bible has been supernaturally inspired is much more difficult to discern. However, we must accept an initial premise that God wants His book to be a supernatural “Revelation from God,” and therefore if we care to pay attention, the supernatural may

be observable. Besides archaeological confirmation, Arnold Schnabel maintains that God has revealed information that was unknown in the writer's day, in other subjects such as Astronomy, Geology, Oceanography, Meteorology, Physics and Biology. He writes,

As evidence of their Divine Guidance the writers of the Bible have included scientific truths in nonscientific terms. Truths that for centuries the skeptics considered as errors because it disagreed with their darkened understanding. Truths that have come to light in recent times only through painstaking and costly research. Truths that without the late development of instruments would have been impossible for us to witness with our own eyes as facts.

I am indebted to Mr. Schnabel for his excellent list of topics; just a few are listed as follows.

His quotes are from the old KJV.

The Earth Is Not Supported:

Bible: 2000 BC, JOB 26:7, "*He ... hangeth the earth upon nothing.*"

History: Pre-1543 AD, the world's scholars and scientists, with the exception of a few early Greeks, believed in the Ptolemy system that the earth was rigidly supported and all movement was in the heavens.

The Earth Is Spherical:

Bible: 1033-975 BC, Solomon wrote in Proverbs 8:27, "*He set a circle upon the face of the deep.*"

745-695 BC Isaiah 40:22, "*It is He that sitteth above the circle of the earth.*"

History: 384-322 BC. In every civilization, other than Israel, the unearthed records show man taught the earth to be flat. The first argument set forth for a spherical earth were by the famous Greek, Aristotle. These were: ships

disappear over the horizon, and the circular shape seen on the moon during an eclipse of the latter. Disappointingly few people, other than Aristotle's personal students, were convinced of the evidence.

The Stars Are Innumerable:

Bible: 628-588 BC. Jeremiah 33:22, "*As the host of heaven cannot be numbered, neither the sand of the sea measured.*"

History: 150 BC. Hipparchus taught that there were less than 3,000 stars.

150 AD Ptolemy counted 1056 stars and claimed the actual number would not exceed 3,000.

Recesses Of The Deep:

Bible: 2000 BC Job 38:16 "*Hast thou walked in the recesses of the deep?*"

1015 BC David in a psalm spoke of these recesses, 2 Samuel 22:16 "*The channels of the sea appeared. The foundations of the world were laid bare.*"

History: 1504 AD. Juan de la Costa made the first sounding in this year. They were made in shallow water near the coast, and placed on his map. This effort did nothing to change the universal opinion that the ocean floors were flat, sandy beds like our deserts.

Water-Vapor Cycle:

Bible: 2000 BC, Job 36:27,28, "*For he draweth up the drops of water, which distill in rain from his vapor, which the skies pour down upon man abundantly.*"

History: 350 BC. Aristotle is accredited with being the first to comprehend the water-vapor cycle that produces rain. His "Meteorologica" became standard treatise for 2000 years. In it he theorized clouds and rain are caused by

condensation of water-vapor from the atmosphere that had gotten there by evaporation of water at the surface of the earth. His observations concluded that this was only a localized cycle, where rain replaced the water from the area it had vaporized from.

The Universe Is Decaying:

Bible: 745-695 BC, Isaiah 51:6, *“Lift up your eyes to the heavens, and look upon the earth beneath; for the heavens shall vanish away like smoke, and the earth shall wax old like a garment.”*

History: 1850 AD. The first indication science had that the universe was growing old and being used up, was the discovery of the Second Law of Thermodynamics, or as it is sometimes referred to, The Law of Entropy. This law is of almost as great a significance to science as the First Law of Thermodynamics.

Man And Woman Each Have Seed Of Propagation:

Bible: 1491-1451 BC, Moses wrote of God speaking to Satan in Genesis 3:15, *“I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed.”* Also Genesis 13:15, God speaking to Abraham, *“The land which thou seest, to thee will I give it and to thy seed forever.”*

Comment: The Bible’s use of the word “seed” denotes the descendants generated by an individual’s reproductive seed.... Moses revealed that both men and women had “seed” necessary for child bearing.

History: 1000 AD. To this time it had been universally accepted that only the males of a species had the seed of propagation. Michael Psellos, who lived in

Constantinople during the 11th Century is the first recorded to believe both male and female contributed semen to a born embryo.

All Animals Reproduce After Their Own Kind:

Bible: 1491-1451 BC Genesis 1:21,24, *“God created the great sea-monsters, and every living creature that moveth, wherewith the waters swarmed, after their kind, and every bird after its kind: and God saw that it was good... And God said, “Let the earth bring forth living creatures after their kind, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth after their kind: and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after their kind and cattle after their kind and everything that creepeth upon the ground after its kind.”*

History: All Greek philosophers held with the Aristotlian dictum that “eggs” of all lower animals are formed out of rotting substances. It was out of this corruption that insects originated. Frogs and other small sea life had their origin in slime pools or seawater. This idea, which persisted for centuries, became known as the “Spontaneous Generation Theory.

Life Is In The Blood:

Bible: 1491-1451 BC Moses wrote in Leviticus 17:11, *“The life of the flesh is in the blood.”*

History: Blood letting is known to have been practiced as early as the 4th century BC. Herophilos, a physician of the Museum at Alexandria, advocated it as a means to rid the body of disease. Many of his contemporaries also used it as a cure, considering blood a carrier of DISEASE instead of LIFE.

Health And Sanitation:

Bible: 1491-1451 BC, Moses recorded many laws regarding health and sanitation for the Jewish Nation. Leviticus 11:32 *“And upon whatsoever any of them, when they are dead, doth fall, it shall be unclean; whether it be any vessel of wood or raiment, or skin, or sack whatsoever vessel it be, wherewith any work is done, it must be put into water, and it shall be unclean until the even; then it shall be clean.”* Leviticus 14:8 *“And he that is to be cleaned shall wash his clothes, and shave off all his hair, and bathe himself in water; and he shall be clean.”* Deuteronomy 23:13 *“Thou shalt have a shovel (margin) among thy weapons and it shall be, when thou sittest down abroad, thou shalt turn back and cover that which cometh from thee.”*

Comment: Moses recorded laws comparable to modern health and sanitation practice in most civilized countries. This included Quarantinement, the wearing of a mask over the nose and mouth, the uncleanness of anything touched by the sick people and the use of running water to wash with.

History: 1892 AD. Conclusive evidence of the actual existence of (virus) such infectious matter dates only from 1892. Louis Pasteur was one of the first to use the information. Men can now give scientific reasons for a nation adopting the strict code that Moses decreed. ^{xviii}

Moses, who grew up in the court of Pharaoh, would have been familiar with the Egyptian remedies, yet none of these occur in his writings. His methodologies were commanded directly from God. Deuteronomy 28:27 lists a number of the diseases that afflicted the Egyptians, boils,

tumors, festering sores, the itch, madness, blindness and confusion of mind. Jeffrey in *The Signature of God* writes,

As an example of the medical ignorance and primitive state of their medical knowledge, consider the Egyptian doctor's suggestion for healing an infected splinter wound. The prescription involves the application of an ointment mixture composed of the blood of worms mixed with the dung of a donkey. The various germs, including tetanus, contained in donkey's dung must have assured that the patient would rapidly forget the pain of his splinter as he died from an assortment of other diseases produced by his doctor's contaminated medicine.^{xix}

In contrast, God had instructed Moses to prepare a water of purification from the ashes of the Red Heifer (these would act as a chemical buffer agent) combined with cedar, hyssop and scarlet thread, Numbers 19. This ointment had the ability to destroy germs and infection. Jeffrey refers to a book titled *None Of These Diseases*, by S. I. McMillen, M.D.^{xx}, Jeffrey explains,

This water of purification contained "cedar" oil that came from a kind of juniper tree that grew in both Israel and the Sinai. This cedar oil would irritate the skin, encouraging the person to vigorously rub the solution into their hands. Most importantly, the hyssop tree—associated with mint, possibly marjo-ram—would produce hyssop oil. This hyssop oil is actually a very effective antiseptic and antibacterial agent. Hyssop oil contains 50 percent carvacrol which is an antifungal and anti-bacterial agent still used in medicine.^{xxi}

Some people who have never read the Bible mistakenly say it is mythical—yet, the writings of the ancient patriarchs and Moses are devoid of myths, legends and magic potions. Historical detail is outlined; complex dysfunctional family relationships that can be used for instruction and teaching is described. Knowledge of nature that would appear to be several millennia ahead of time is stated, divinely dictated instructions are received that give a wandering tribe of people laws that are comparable to modern health and sanitation policies practiced in most civilized countries. Is this supernatural or just random chance?

Supernaturally Dictated and Inspired

So far, we have not discussed Tablet 1, Genesis 1:1 to 2:4. Wiseman maintains that it was written on a “personal note” in a “most exceptional way.” He writes, “It is recording the words of God used in telling Adam the story of Creation. Observe the method employed in writing this narrative. ‘And God said...and God called’... It is written in the style of someone recording precisely what Adam heard when the narrative was told to him.” He continues, “These words were spoken to the first man. It is not a vague and general account. All the reader needs to do is to realize its unique features and to compare it with the Babylonian versions.”^{xxii} **The implication is that it was dictated by God and written by Adam!**

If a reasonable supernatural proof were found that God, The Infinite, the great “I AM,” did inspire Scripture would you believe it? The now deceased humanist Dr. Carl Sagan, who at one time was Professor of Astronomy and Space Sciences at Cornell University, wrote an upbeat Sci-Fi novel, *Contact*, (later made into a movie) that deals with the question of hidden order in nature. Near the end of the story, two of his main characters are discussing a mathematical computer analysis of the physical constant pi.

“Sure. Imagine after awhile we get a long sequence of just zeros and ones. Then, just as we did with the Message, we could pull a picture out, if there’s one in there. You understand, it could be anything.”

“You mean you could decode a picture hiding in pi and it would be a mess of Hebrew letters?”

[The conversation continues several paragraphs further on.]

“I remember very well. You think God is a mathematician.”

“Something like that. If what we’re told is true. If this isn’t a wild-goose chase. If there’s a message hiding in pi and not one of the infinity of other transcendental numbers. That’s a lot of ifs.”

“You’re looking for Revelation in arithmetic. I know a better way.”

“Palmer, this is the only way. This is the only thing that would convince a skeptic. Imagine we find something. It doesn’t have to be tremendously complicated. Just something more orderly than could accumulate by chance that many digits into pi. That’s all we need. Then mathematicians all over the world can find exactly the same pattern of message or whatever it proves to be. Then there are no sectarian divisions. Everybody begins reading the Scripture. No one could then argue that the key miracle in the religion was some conjurer’s trick, or that later historians had falsified the record, or that it’s just hysteria or delusion or a substitute parent for when we grow up. *Everyone could be a believer**(**emphasis mine*).”^{xiii}

If such a phenomenon were uncovered in the Bible, *would everyone believe?* Modern day mathematical statisticians, Doron Witztum, Eliyashu Rips and Yoav Rosenberg, of the Jerusalem College of Technology and the Hebrew University, may have uncovered such a mathematical phenomena called “equidistant letter sequences” (ELS). Using powerful computers, they discovered words encoded in the Biblical text of Genesis that were humanly impossible to place there. Has God allowed his supernatural signature in the Holy Scriptures to be revealed to our generation? The great prophet Daniel, who we will meet later in this book, was told by a powerful supernatural being “*Go your way, Daniel, because the words are closed up and sealed until the time of the end. Many will be purified, made spotless and refined, but the wicked will continue to be wicked. None of the wicked will understand, but those who are wise will understand.*”^{xxiv} Are we that generation who will see God do powerful acts in “the time of the end?”

The discoverers of this phenomenon, Witztum, Rips and Rosenberg submitted their findings to the prestigious journal *Statistical Science* for publishing. Editor Robert Kass wrote, “Our referees were baffled: their prior beliefs made them think the Book of Genesis could not possibly contain meaningful references to modern day individuals, yet when the authors carried out additional analyses and checks the effect persisted.”^{xxv} What is supernatural about all this? Grant Jeffrey says,

Jesus Christ, Himself, affirmed that the actual letters composing the Scriptures were directly inspired by God and were preserved in their precise order throughout eternity. “For verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled” (Matthew 5:18). The English word jot is our translation for the Greek word iota, the Greek letter i. This iota is the Greek equivalent of the Hebrew letter yod, which is the

smallest letter in the Hebrew alphabet.” “Using the ancient Hebrew textus receptus (The Masoretic text) of the Torah, the scientists began by eliminating the spaces between the Hebrew letters, words, and sentences throughout the first five books of the Bible. The traditional Orthodox text was written in this manner without punctuation marks or spaces between letters, words, grammatical marks, or sentences.^{xxvi}

High-speed computers were then employed to search for words by using a constant skip interval, which is why the phenomena is termed equidistant letter sequences, (ELS). The computers searched hundreds of skip intervals both forwards and backwards. Not only were words found, but also they occurred in word pairs or word sequences. In an Article titled, “Scientists Prove Divine Author of Genesis,” Terry Watkins writes,

In “close proximity” were related word-pairs. For example, the researcher found the name “Zedekiah” (a sixth century BC king of Judah) and in “close proximity” was the word “Mantanya” which was Zedekiah’s original name! They found “Hanukkah” (the Jewish festival that commemorates the rededication of the Temple after it was recaptured from the Assyrians in the second century BC) and in close proximity was the word “Hasmoneans” which was the family name of the leaders of the Jewish armies that took the temple from the Assyrians for which Hanukkah celebrates!^{xxviii}

Divine Authorship?

“The phenomenon [ELS] cannot be attributed to anything within the known physical universe, human beings included.” *Biblical Review*^{xxvii}

This complex equidistant letter sequencing was tried on other texts with Hebrew letters both secular and sacred, including the Samaritan Pentateuch, which is slightly different from the Masoretic text. Jeffrey notes,

A reviewer insisted they attempt to find codes in a Hebrew translation of Tolstoy's famous novel War and Peace, because it was the same length as the Book of Genesis. However the phenomenon was not present in War and Peace, or any other modern Hebrew writing. In fact, an exhaustive analysis reveals that no other Hebrew text outside the Old Testament contains these mysterious codes, not even the Hebrew apocryphal books written during the four hundred years before the birth of Christ.^{xxix}

Watkins concludes,

The researchers selected, at random, 300 related Hebrew word-pairs from names and events that occurred hundreds and thousands of years after Genesis was written. And of these 300 related name-events all 300 were found. Looking for some coincidental explanation they searched for the word-pairs in randomized tests! But they were not found! The word-pairs were only found in close proximity to each other proving irrefutably that the encoded word-pairs were not coincident or accident but were intellectually encoded by a superior intelligence!^{xxx}

Difficult to explain word sequences have been found. Jeffrey relates,

Possibly the most astonishing of the phenomena recently discovered involves codes that reveal events that occurred in our generation. As one example, the name of the late Egyptian President Anwar Sadat occurred together with the name of the Moslem Brotherhood assassination team that killed him. The same code sequence also contained the year of his assassination, 1981, and the words “president,” “gunfire,” “shot,” and “murder.” Incredibly, even the Hebrew word for “parade” appears in this coded sequence. President Sadat was assassinated during the president’s review of a military parade in 1981.^{xxxii}

Michael Drosnin, author-reporter, used the same mathematical procedure in his bestseller book, *The Bible Code*. In a book review for *TIME*,^{xxxiii} David Van Bema writes, “The code predicted the Gulf War and Bill Clinton’s 1992 election. Chillingly it yielded the words “Assassin that will assassinate” along with the name Yitzhak Rabin a year before Rabin was killed.” However, some of Mr. Drosnin’s other predictions did not materialize. This suggests that the outcome may well be a function of the assumptions and calculations. The Bible should not be used for forward-looking predictions. Prophecy is a fundamental aspect of the Holy Scriptures where we are told of events to come. We are not to try and find hidden meanings to calculate future events. Through prophecy, God reveals who He is. There are many accurate detailed prophecies concerning the coming Messiah, which were fulfilled with the advent of Jesus Christ. Prophets were taken very seriously, since by God’s order, if their predictions did not come to pass, they were to be killed. The Bible code concept is a contentious issue because computer generated words can be found in other documents (even a phone book) if the calculation parameters are set right. The difference being that

meaningful code uncovers hidden details—thus, the closely related word pairs revealed by the code—have to be associated with what one can read in the section of scripture being analyzed.

Yacov Rambsel, a student of Hebrew, verified God’s supernatural accreditation of Jesus in Scripture and has published his equidistant letter sequencing research in a book titled, *Yeshua*.^{xxxiii} Yeshua is the Hebrew word for Jesus. The name Yeshua was found encoded in the Book of Genesis beginning with the very first verse, “*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*” Yacov found that by starting at the 5th Hebrew letter and counting forward every 521st letter he could read the words Yeshua Yakhol, which translates as “Jesus is able (to have power).”^{xxxiv} This is a long forward letter sequence, however, Yacov found many other interesting revelations of Yeshua throughout the Old Testament with much shorter ELS lengths. One of these is associated with Isaiah 53:10. This verse, in the KJV, reads: “*Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in his hand.*” Yacov counted every 20th letter (a short letter sequence) and uncovered the phrase “Yeshua - Shmi” which means “Jesus is my name.” It is either a remarkable coincidence, or divine inspiration that this phrase should appear in the verse that teaches us about the suffering Messiah who died to atone for our sins!^{xxxv} It is, of course, only Christians who believe that Jesus was the Messiah.

God spoke—God said—transmitted by the patriarchs—transcribed by Moses—God breathed—God inspired Scripture; words of flowing verbal thought containing complex mathematical patterns of supernatural inspiration—reaching forward into human history—what did Sagon’s character say—“So that everyone could believe!” Dr. Satinover, *Biblical Review*, gets straight to the point: “What then was the purpose of encoding this information into the text? Some would say it is the Author’s signature. Is it His way of assuring us that at this particular, late

moment when our scientific, materialistic doubt has reached its apotheosis, when we have been driven to the brink of radical skepticism that He is precisely who He had said He is.”^{xxxvi}

That He is—who He says He is—is moving the cosmos forward in space and time, an infinite Creator establishing reality for those who would seek Him—moving forward into eternity with purpose and direction. “*The God of your fathers has sent me to you, and they shall ask me, ‘What is his name?’ Then what shall I tell them? God said to Moses “I AM WHO I AM.*”^{xxxvii}”

Notes:

ⁱ Wisman J.P., *Clues To Creation in Genesis*, Marshall, Morgan & Scott London, 1977, pg. 25

ⁱⁱ Millard Alan, *Treasures From Bible Times*, Lion Publishing plc. England, 1985, pg. 53

ⁱⁱⁱ <english.pravda.ru/main/2002/04/30/28149.html>

^{iv} Craigie Peter C., *Ugarit And The Old Testament*, William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1983, pg. 42

^v Van Biema David, “Genesis Reconsidered,” *TIME*, October 28, 1996

^{vi} 2 Timothy 3:16

^{vii} Wiseman, *Ibid*, pg. 59

^{viii} Wiseman, *Ibid*, pg. 41

^{ix} Millard, *Ibid*, pg. 81

^x Wiseman, *Ibid*, pg. 40

^{xi} Wiseman, *Ibid*, pg. 41

^{xii} Millard, *Ibid*, pg. 41

^{xiii} Millard, *Ibid*, pg. 40

^{xiv} Genesis 11:3

^{xv} Jeffrey Grant R., *The Signature of God*, Frontier Research Publications, Inc, 1996, pg. 40

^{xvi} Wiseman, *Ibid*, pgs. 46-49

^{xvii} Wiseman, *Ibid*, pg. 49

^{xviii} Schnabel Arnold O., *Hath God Spoken*, Dakota American, 1972

^{xix} Jeffrey, *Ibid*, pg. 141

^{xx} McMillen S.I. MD. *None Of These Diseases*, Spire Books, Fleming H. Revell Company, 1967

^{xxi} Jeffrey, *Ibid*, pg. 153

^{xxii} Wiseman, *Ibid*, pgs. 58-59

^{xxiii} Sagan Carl Dr., *Contact*, Simon and Schuster, New York 1985, pg. 416 ff

^{xxiv} Daniel 12:9,10a

^{xxv} “Equidistant Letter Sequences in the Book of Genesis,” *Statistical Science*, August 1994, p. 306

^{xxvi} Jeffrey Grant R., *Ibid*, pg. 204

^{xxvii} Satinover Jeffrey Dr., “Divine Authorship?” *Biblical Review*, October 1995, p.45

^{xxviii} Watkins Terry, “Scientists Prove Divine Author of Genesis,” < www.av1611.org/genesis.html>

^{xxix} Jeffrey, *Ibid*, pg. 215

^{xxx} Watkins, *Ibid*

^{xxxi} Jeffrey, *Ibid*, pg. 208

^{xxxii} Van Biema David, “Deciphering God’s Plan,” *TIME*, June 9, 1997

^{xxxiii} Rambsel Yacov, *Yeshua*, Frontier Publications Research 1996

^{xxxiv} Rambsel Yacov, *Ibid*, pg. 1

^{xxxv} Rambsel, *Ibid*, pg. xxi

^{xxxvi} Satinover, *Ibid*, pg. 45

^{xxxvii} Exodus 3:13b-14a

Chapter 9

God “I AM”

The warm summer sun shining—fragrant smells shuffling along on warm breezes, the rush of active life bustling and hustling; waves swishing along the shore—rushing and ebbing in the starlit night; drifting snow flakes, sparkling in the streetlight, waft softly to the garden below. Seasons in our world are a reality that most of us can comprehend. However, in the vastness of the universe, the complexity of our being stands silhouetted, staring silently at our souls.

Philosophically, whether one cares to admit it or not, God says that He Exists! Not only that, He appears to have taken a radical step and authenticated His reality in an inspired meticulously transmitted document. It is interesting that the humanist Dr. Sagan had his characters looking for some significant sign in the mathematical constants that form the physical laws of our world. The story *Contact* concludes, by the mathematician discovering a hidden order in the deep computer analysis of pi, in the form of a circle within the array of numbers. The question we need to ask is this—if God, the great mathematician, did design a hidden order in the fundamental laws of nature would, as Sagons characters say, “everyone would believe”, or would modern evolutionary man say that they are only an aspect of nature—do his calculations and not even consider that God exists.

Adherents of humanistic evolution have already determined that chaos can lead to order, thus, the evidence of design in nature is futile to this modern group of philosophers. Nevertheless, serious consideration should be given to the evidence imparted in the Bible of design, that it is

someone making a pronounced statement—"I AM." God may very well have revealed Himself in our ontology (reality) through His Word; and in Hume's words, in "the course of human events historical, social and individual within the context of a demonstrated extra-naturalism," a solid case for Willard's stage three is established, giving evidence that God exists and is active in the economics of space-time.

God's Cosmological Viewpoint

The dramatic discovery of equidistant letter sequences (ELS) in the Hebrew Masoretic text of the Scriptures is of such profound significance that it should strike awe and apprehension into the heart of every questioning human being. The information imparted into the text spoke of events yet to take place in the distant future—by as much as 5000 years! Do we hear unbelievers enthusiastically embracing the concept of God? No! The skeptics cry out, "impossible" and seek ways to discredit the calculations. So it is not a matter of evidence—it is a matter of comprehension, of grasping the full concept of this possibility. Then the choice becomes believing, ignoring, or rationalizing it to a philosophical worldview. At this juncture then, we should find out who God says He is from His authenticated Word, what He has done and what He states He is going to do! He has taken dramatic supernatural steps to be sure that His cosmic viewpoint is clearly stated. It is a cosmic viewpoint that may not be liked, but it is one that gives incredible direction and purpose to the intelligence arrow of mankind and our world system. Though His statements were listed in Chapter 1, let's take another look at Gods proclamations:

Isaiah 42:8: *"I am the LORD (Jehovah); that is my name! I will not give my glory to another or my praise to idols."*

Jeremiah 33:2,3: *"This is what the LORD says, he who made the earth, the LORD who formed it and established it—the LORD (Jehovah, self Existent or Eternal) is his*

name: 'Call to me and I will answer you and tell you great and unsearchable things you do not know.'”

Isaiah 46:9-10: *“Remember the former things, those of long ago; I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like me. I make known the end from the beginning, from ancient times, what is still to come. I say: My purpose will stand, and I will do all that I please.”*

Isaiah 42:5: *“This is what God the LORD says—he who created the heavens and stretched them out, who spread out the earth and all that comes out of it, who gives breath to its people, and life to those who walk on it.”*

Isaiah 48:13: *“My own hand laid the foundations of the earth, and my right hand spread out the heavens; when I summon them, they all stand up together.”*

It is obvious that God considers Himself not some Earth bound Gaia force, or pantheistic spirit but a *Someone* who could create the heavens, the Earth and give the breath of life. When we consider the magnitude of the universe, God would have to be unbounded in space-time and infinite in His ontology and is therefore *Omnipresent* (everywhere present), *Omniscient* (wise-knowing) and *Omnipotent* (unlimited power). To package this kind of God concept into an abstract study in religious anthropology is in the realm of uncomprehending fools.

The Fool

The fool (one who is morally deficient) says in his heart, *“There is no God.”*ⁱ Accountability to an infinite Creator is an awesome liability, which is the main aspect of why humanity despises the concept of a Holy God.

The name, God, is a title. The opening verse of the Bible reads, “*In the beginning God;*”ⁱⁱⁱ here the word God is translated from the word Elohim, which is plural in number. Kenneth Boa writes, “There are also many instances of God using the plural pronoun to describe Himself, as an example: “*Then God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness.’*”^{iv}

Historically, sometime around 1800 B.C., in the era of Laban, Jacob and Rebacca, the use of the title Elohim had degenerated to elohim (gods).

P.J. Wiseman writes,

When men began to make ‘gods many and lords many,’ they called them ‘gods;’ but

to distinguish them from each other, they gave each a name. So that the word ‘god’ ceased to be used, even in Scripture, exclusively of the Creator of the heavens and the earth. It is used for idols, for we find Laban calling his teraphim, which Rachael had stolen, ‘gods’ (elohim), and Jacob does the same. In Exodus 12:12, we read of the ‘gods’ (elohim) of Egypt. Chemosh and Dagon are the names of, and are called, ‘elohim.’ In early times, Babylonia had dozens of ‘gods’ but each of them had a distinguishing name, as well the title ‘god.’^v

Satanic Deception

In the advancing war of the cosmos, the Raelian sect leader, Claude Vorilhon a French racecar driver, claims he was taken aboard a bell shaped UFO, by a tiny individual with black hair and beard. This alien claimed he is of the Elohim who genetically created mankind and states, men have no soul and there is no god.ⁱⁱ

God appeared to Abraham as *El Shaddai* (God Almighty or All Sufficient). The term “Shaddai” was used by persons living outside of the Palestine region, such as Balaam, Job and Ezekiel, in Babylon where they are in contact with the Babylonian cuneiform modes of expression. In the story of the burning bush, God reveals Himself to Moses and instructs Moses to tell the

Israelites what His name is; “*God said to Moses, “I AM WHO I AM. This is what you are to say to the Israelites: ‘I AM has sent me to you.’” God also said to Moses, “Say to the Israelites, ‘The Lord, (Jehovah or I AM) the God of your fathers—the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob—has sent me to you.’ This is my name forever, the name by which I am to be remembered from generation to generation.*”^{vi} Wiseman writes,

It is necessary at this juncture to note the difference between a name and a title. The word “God” is not a name it is a title. Jehovah was the name of God. This distinction may be seen in the second commandment: “Thou shalt not take the name of Jehovah thy God in vain.” The Jew did not mind writing and speaking of God (Elohim), but he so regarded this commandment that he did not utter the name Jehovah when reading the Scriptures, but substituted the word ‘Adonai’ for it. Moreover, the Hebrews spoke of the Elohim, the true God, as contrasted with false gods, but never did they speak or write of the Jehovah, for there was only one Jehovah in heaven and earth. In Genesis, we read of ‘my God,’ but never of the “Jehovah of Israel,” for there was only one Jehovah. I do not stay to enter into the question of the exact pronunciation of the name. God says: ‘I am Jehovah, that is my name, and my glory I will not give to another, neither my praise to graven images.’^{vii}

In Exodus 6:3, God says to Moses, “*I appeared to Abraham, to Isaac and to Jacob as God Almighty [El Shaddai], but by my name the Lord [Jehovah, I AM] I did not make myself known to them.*” Thus when Moses was transcribing, compiling and possibly translating the cuneiform tablets, “what name should he use, seeing that the ancient title El Shaddai, God Almighty or All Sufficient, had been corrupted by its use in connection with scores of other “gods” each of whom were called “god almighty” by their devotees? The most natural course was to use the name

Jehovah. Thus then, is the presence of the word Jehovah in Genesis quite naturally explained. Not by assuming a complicated jumble of tangled documents written by unknown writers as the modern scholars do, or by an evasion of the literal meaning of Exodus 6:3, but by the inspiration by which God led Moses in most instances to translate El Shaddai by the word Jehovah—his distinguishing name, which separated him from the heathen gods around.”^{viii}

God’s Character

It is remarkable to realize that the very editing and compiling of the Torah by Moses had to be inspired by God, since every letter of the Torah fits a staggering complexity of mathematical precision as uncovered by modern computers. The God “I AM” has gone to great lengths to clearly define who He is and to authenticate His message to mankind. What is His message? What is God doing in our cosmos? Why do we even exist? God has informed us by His name that He is the eternal “I AM.” But what is the character of God? He informed Moses at the burning bush to take off his sandals, “*for the place you are standing is Holy ground.... Moses hid his face because he was afraid to look at God.*”

The character of God is that He is *Holy* (morally pure - to be set apart). The gods of mythology are not thought of as being “morally pure.” God speaks to Moses concerning the Israelites, “*You are to be holy to me [or be my holy ones] because I, the Lord, am Holy, and I have set you apart from the nations to be my own.*”^{ix} Now, we might ask, what is the form of God such that Moses was afraid to look at God?

Here the mystery deepens, we are informed by the apostle John that, “*God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth.*”^x Yet, Abraham saw and spoke with the Lord; “*The Lord [Jehovah, self Existent or Eternal] appeared to Abraham near the great trees of Mamre while he was sitting at the entrance to his tent in the heat of the day. Abraham looked up and saw three*

men standing nearby. When he saw them, he hurried from the entrance of his tent to meet them and bowed low to the ground.”^{xi} Sarah, Abraham’s wife, and his servants prepared a meal for them and they ate, (one does not think of God eating a meal). After they had eaten, Abraham finds out that Sodom and Gomorrah are to be destroyed and pleads the city’s case before the Lord. “*Far be it from you to do such a thing—kill the righteous with the wicked alike. Far be it from you! Will not the Judge (Ruler) of all the earth do right?*”^{xii} Abraham was able to plead with the Lord that if just ten righteous persons could be found in the city, He would not destroy it. The Lord Himself declares, “*Let him who boasts boast about this: that he understands and knows me, that I am the Lord, who exercises kindness, justice and righteousness on the earth, for in these I delight.*”^{xiii}

The Godhead

In the opening verse of the Bible, “*In the beginning God,*” God reveals himself as the plural Elohim. This plural form, ‘us’, is used in the following verses. Genesis 1:26; “*Then God said, ‘Let us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness.’*” Genesis 3:22; “*The man has now become one of us, knowing good and evil. He must not be allowed to reach out his hand and take also from the tree of life and eat, and live forever.*” Genesis 11:7; “*Come, let us go down and confuse their language so they will not understand each other.*” Isaiah 6:8; “*Then I heard the voice of the Lord saying, ‘Whom shall I send And who will go for us?’ And I said, ‘Here am I. Send me!’*”

Trinity, is a term used to describe the Godhead; ‘tri’ emphasizes God’s threeness and the ‘nity’ emphasizes His unity. This threeness is clearly revealed in Scripture, yet, the unity of God is strongly stated, “*Hear, O Israel! The Lord is our God, the Lord is one!*”^{xiv} The book of Isaiah appears to reflect the Trinity in Isaiah 48:16. Here the Lord is speaking. He says, “*And now the Lord God has sent Me, and His spirit.*” In Isaiah 9:6 Isaiah refers to the Messiah and reveals Him to be an equal with God, calling Him the “*Mighty God, Eternal Father, Prince of Peace.*” Micah 5:2 also

refers to the Messiah, “*But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are small among the clans of Judah, out of you will come for me one who will be ruler over Israel, whose origins are from of old, from ancient times,*” i.e. eternity. The meaning here is that though the Jews were waiting for a Messiah to be born, this Messiah was somehow to be equated with the eternal God.

Boa writes,

One of the most satisfactory definitions (of the Trinity) has been given by Warfield: “There is one only and true God, but in the unity of the Godhead there are three coeternal and coequal Persons, the same in substance but distinct in subsistence.” The word substance speaks of God’s essential nature or being, and subsistence describes His mode of quality of existence. However, as good as this definition is, it still falls short of capturing the mystery of the Trinity. For instance, the word Persons is somewhat misleading because it implies three separate rational and moral individuals. “But in the being of God there are not three individuals, but only three personal self-distinctions within the one divine essence.” The intellect, emotions, and will of the Three-in-One God are manifested as much in His oneness as they are in His threeness. The Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are distinct in their personhoods, and yet they act and exist as a unit.^{xv}

Dr. Nathan Wood in his book, *The Trinity in the Universe* completes a summary of the essence of the Trinity, which is quoted as follows:

1. Absolute Threeness. It is apparently an absolute threeness. Everything in the Biblical description of the three called Father, Son and Holy Spirit presents definitely and absolutely no more and no less than these three persons in the Godhead. It seems to be an absolute threeness. In such an absolute threeness each one of the three is so

genuinely distinct from the others that no one of the three can possibly be either of the others. Otherwise they are not absolutely three. And in such threeness, in which there absolutely must be three, no two of the three therefore can exist without the third.

2. Absolute Oneness. The Three in that Trinity are represented as absolutely one. They are not only called so in direct statements, but further than that is the fact that each one is represented as God. That means that each one is not a part of God—each one is God. It means that each one is the Whole. For God is not divisible. Personality is not divisible. If God is Three in One, each one of the three is God, and each one is the whole of God.

3. It is very clear that, as personal beings, Father, Son and Holy Spirit are represented as three things, which God is. In other words, they are pictured as three modes of being. They do not mean primarily three ways in which He acts, three modes of action or manifestation, although of course if they are three things or persons, which He is, they present three ways in which He acts. But primarily, if God is Father, Son and Holy Spirit, it means three things, which He is, or three modes of being.

4. The Scripture makes it invariably clear that in some way it presents the Father as first, the Son second and, the spirit third. It evidently does not mean that one is first in deity, when all are represented as being God. Neither does it mean that one is greater, when all must be infinite. Nor does it mean that one is first in time, when all are represented as eternal. It can only mean that one is first, one second, one third, in a logical, causal order.

5. In the Scripture the Father is represented as the Source. The eternal Son is “begotten of the Father.” The eternal Spirit “proceeds,” from the Father, through the Son. Jesus

said, “the Spirit whom I will send unto you, from the Father,” and “the Spirit whom the Father will send in my name.” This relation is mysterious, but emphatic.

6. In that extraordinary Triunity of Scripture the Father is unseen. He reveals Himself in the Son. “No man has seen God. The only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he has revealed him.” The Son is the visible embodiment of the Father, and of the Godhead. “He, being the express image of the Father,”—“he that hath seen me hath seen the Father,”—“In him,” the Son, “dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily.” The Son acts. He does the things which are done. He creates. It is he who becomes Man. It is he who dies, and who rises. It is he who raises the dead, and who judges. The Son, the Scripture says, works now among men through the Spirit. The Spirit, like the Father, is unseen. He reveals the Son. That is His chief work. And He reveals the Father, in the Son. He works unseen, in other beings as for instance in man. This is the presentation by the Bible.

7. One thing there is, with which we should not attempt comparison in the physical world. The Biblical presentation of Father, Son and Holy Spirit in God means what can best be described as “three Personal centres of consciousness in one Being.” That cannot possibly be paralleled in the impersonal physical world, and should not be sought there.^{xxvi}

Boa comments,

Though we cannot comprehend the biblical doctrine of the Trinity, the things God has chosen to reveal about His Three-in-One nature are extremely important. The doctrine of the Trinity connects closely with other important doctrines, including the work of

redemption, the God-man, and revelation. This unique biblical teaching invades everything we know about love, fellowship, prayer, and worship.^{xvii}

The second person of the Trinity, the *Son* as a man at the virgin birth, came the first time in history as the suffering Messiah. Isaiah depicts the suffering Messiah when he writes prophetically, “*Yet it was the Lord’s will to crush him and cause him to suffer, and though the Lord makes his life a guilt offering, he will see his offspring and prolong his days, and the will of the Lord will prosper in his hand.*”^{xviii} Yacov Rambsel, as discussed in the previous chapter, found that God the Son revealed who He was as the suffering Messiah. The supernaturally inspired equidistant letter sequence clearly states, “Yeshua - shmi,” Jesus is my name. The favorite disciple of Jesus, the apostle John, wrote, “*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made.*”^{xix} Starting at Genesis 1:1, “*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth,*” Rambsel found the term “Yeshua [Jesus] yahkol,” which means “Yeshua [Jesus] is able to have power,”^{xx} leaving no doubt that Jesus is the Word.

Francis Schaeffer writes,

The teaching that the Trinity was already there in the beginning is especially emphasized in John 1:1-3. As a matter of fact, the concept has particular force because it picks up the first phrase of Genesis and makes it, it seems to me, into a technical term: “In the beginning already was [the Greek imperfect here is better translated already was than was] the Word and the Word already was with God and the Word already was God. The same was in the beginning with God.” Then in the third verse the Greek aorist tense is used in contrast to the imperfects that preceded it: “All things were made [became] by him...” Thus we find first a statement that the Word already

was, but then in sharp contrast to this we find something new was brought into being “in the beginning” when he who already was there made what now is. Furthermore, we know who the personality called the Word (Logos) is; verses 14-15 make it plain: “And the Word was [became] flesh, and dwelt among us...[and] John [John the Baptist] bare witness of him...” Of course, the one John bare witness to is Jesus Christ.” And who did Jesus Christ say that He was “I tell you the truth...before Abraham was born, I AM” (Jehovah, the eternal one) John 8:58.”^{xxi}

The third person of the Trinity is The *Spirit*, known in New Testament terms as the *Holy Spirit*. God the Son speaks saying, “*And now the Lord God has sent Me, and His Spirit.*”^{xxii} In the New Testament when Jesus is being baptized in the Jordan River, as he steps out of the water, heaven is opened and the Spirit of God descends upon him as a dove and the Father speaks from heaven saying “*This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased.*”^{xxiii} The Spirit of God was active “in the beginning” where in verse two of Genesis we find “the Spirit of God hovering over the waters.” Moreover, Job says, “*The Spirit of God has made me; the breath of the Almighty gives me life.*”^{xxiv}

David Yonggi Cho, a Godly Korean pastor, writes,

More than these proofs, the Holy Spirit has all the attributes of God. Only God is eternal, omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent—and the Holy Spirit is all these. Hebrews 9:14 says that the Holy Spirit is eternal: “How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?”

The Holy Spirit is omniscient: “But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God” (1Cor. 2:10). The Holy Spirit knows all things, even the deep things of God.

The Holy Spirit is omnipotent: “And the angel answered and saith unto her [Mary], The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee” (Luke 1:35). Clearly, the Holy Ghost is the power of the Highest, and nothing is impossible with God.

Finally, the Holy Spirit is omnipresent. Psalm 139 expresses well the omnipresence of the Holy Spirit. Speaking to the Lord, David says, “Whither shall I go from thy spirit? Or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there” (vv. 7,8).^{xxv}

The essential foundation that had to exist before our cosmology of space-time is love. It is this foundation that flows within the Persons of the Trinity. It is the outward manifestation of love from the Trinity that gives a focal point for our being. Ken Boa writes,

The fact that God is a perfect Trinity means that in Him is all the fullness of being, life, and fellowship. God is living love, self-conscious and dynamic. Love is impossible without a lover and a beloved. Within the triune Godhead, there is a perfect interrelationship of love, lover, and beloved. God can indeed rejoice in Himself. This mutual intimacy within the Godhead is clearly seen in Christ’s high priestly prayer: “And now, glorify which I ever had with Thee before the world was...Thou didst love Me before the foundation of the world” (John 17:5, 24).^{xxvi}

Francis Schaeffer summarizes this thought pattern of eternal God “I AM,”

The universe, therefore, speaks of Being existing, It speaks of order and reason. It speaks of a personal God. The end of man is to stand as a finite, personal being in personal relationship with the infinite, personal God who is there. When we hear the first command of Christ to love God with all our heart and soul and mind, we are not faced with just an abstract duty—a devotional exercise separated from all that is reasonable. Rather we have an infinite reference point that gives meaning to all of our finite reference points. This infinite reference point not only exists, but is personal and can communicate with us and we with him, an infinite reference point whom we may love.^{xxvii}

Notes:

ⁱ Psalms 14:1

ⁱⁱ prophecyinthenews.com “Rael, Inc, Cloning for Eternal Life,” February 2003

ⁱⁱⁱ Genesis 1:1

^{iv} Boa Kenneth, *God I don't Understand*, Victor Books, 1979, pg. 36

^v Wiseman P.J., *Clues to Creation in Genesis*, Marshall Morgan & Scott, London, pg. 91

^{vi} Exodus 3:14,15

^{vii} Wiseman, *Ibid*, pg. 91

^{viii} Wiseman, *Ibid*, pg. 93

^{ix} Leviticus 20:26

^x John 4:24

^{xi} Genesis 18:1,2

^{xii} Genesis 18:25

^{xiii} Jeremiah 9:24

^{xiv} Deuteronomy 6:4

^{xv} Boa, *Ibid*, pg. 37

^{xvi} Wood Dr. Nathan, *The Trinity in the Universe*, Kregel Publications, Grand Rapids Michigan 4951, 1978, pg.27

^{xvii} Boa, *Ibid*, pg. 45

^{xviii} Isaiah 53:10

^{xix} John 1:1-3

^{xx} Rambsel Yacov, *Yeshua*, Frontier Research Publications Inc., Toronto, 1996, pg. 1

^{xxi} Schaeffer Francis A., *Genesis in Space and Time*, Intervarsity Press, 1972, pg. 22

^{xxii} Isaiah 48:16

^{xxiii} Matthew 3:16

^{xxiv} Job 33:4

^{xxv} Cho David Yonggi, *Holy Spirit my Senior Partner*, Creation House Orlando, Florida, 1989, pg. 37

^{xxvi} Boa, *Ibid*, pg. 44

^{xxvii} Schaeffer, *Ibid*, pg. 60

Chapter 10

Creation

Biblical *Creation*. The very word embodies a tangled web of feelings. Evolutionists abhor it; some religious liberals deny it, while many Christians set its details aside as being too contentious. Yet, from a Scriptural viewpoint, if we are *of the something more*, creation and the concept of a higher purpose to life is a valid proposition. The apostle Peter described Jesus as the “*lamb*” who was slain. In God’s cosmic plan “*He was chosen before the creation of the world.*”ⁱ Peter never wavered from following Jesus and meant what he wrote. Tradition has it that he chose to be crucified upside down so as not to be the same as his Lord; that is staking your life on what you believe! Since this plan was in place *before* the creation of mankind, the Trinity knew that their creation, microdot man on planet earth, was not going to deal with freedom of choice very well. Man has been given sovereignty of will, true freedom of choice—to trust in the goodness of God or to follow Lucifer, the king of vanity, who is stalking the heavens and Earth in rebellion against God.

Creation

As I sit to write this chapter, I think I must be very adventurous to tackle such a preponderant subject that has been so diversely articulated by all the great masters over the centuries.

The higher purpose for mankind begins with some very profound implications commencing with the formation of the universe and its unfolding in cosmic time. The fact that God, the Son, chose to be incarnated as a man in our Earthly sphere as Yeshua-Jesus, before the actuality of our cosmosⁱⁱ, and to be murdered as a focal point event in the cosmic war, makes our universe from the Biblical viewpoint an anthropocentric certainty. Thus, the destiny and higher purpose of mankind should be revealed in the supernaturally inspired scriptures.

The Cosmos

The Bible maintains that our reality is multi-dimensional, comprised of a spirit world and a space-time material universe—forming a systematic whole, which is the meaning of the word “cosmos.” The apostle Paul tells of a supernatural experience of someone being taken to the “third heaven.”ⁱⁱⁱ The first heaven would be our atmosphere, the second heaven would be space and the third heaven would be outside of space-time—the world of spirit. The world of spirit is the ultimate reality. It subsists through and beyond our material dimension. God is spirit, yet He, somehow, is even outside the dimensions of the third heaven in that He also created and sustains it.

The Scriptures state, *“God, the blessed and only Ruler, the King of kings and Lord of lords, who alone is immortal and who lives in unapproachable light, whom no one has seen or can see. To him be honor and might forever.”*^{iv} *“By faith we understand that the universe was formed at God’s command, so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible,”*^v (that does not mean out of nothing). *“But in these last days he has spoken to us by his Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the universe. The Son is the radiance of God’s glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word.”*^{vi} *“He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. For by him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all*

things were created by him and for him. He is before all things, and in him all things hold together.”^{vii} “*For this is what the LORD says—he who created the heavens, he is God; he who fashioned and made the earth, he founded it; he did not create it to be empty, but formed it to be inhabited—he says “I am the LORD, and there is no other.”*”^{viii}

We refer to this vast universe that God says He created, as space. Space as we know it has three dimensions (like a box), it is being defined by the motion of matter. The movement of matter over distance makes the box bigger and requires time. Matter is composed of energy, which in turn is composed of the phenomena of light, radioactivity, and electromagnetic, gravity, and magnetic fields.^{ix} The question arises, does space have a boundary like the sides of the example box or an expanding balloon, or is space infinite with no boundaries? Mr. Halliwell writes for *Scientific American*,

In cosmology the system under scrutiny is the entire universe. By definition, it has no exterior, no outside world, no “rest of the universe” to which one could appeal for boundary or initial conditions.

Many of us have stared out into space on a clear night and wondered, “Where did all this come from?” For many centuries, this question, pondered by philosophers and theologians, lay far outside the reach of scientific investigation. Only in this century has theory grown sufficiently subtle and rigorous to provide a plausible look at the very beginning of the universe. Using Einstein’s theory of general relativity to extrapolate back in time, investigators deduced that the universe emerged from a single, unbelievably small, dense, hot region. The events that have unfolded since that moment, including the formation of matter as well as its coalescence into galaxies, stars, planets and chemical systems, appear to be adequately described by conventional cosmology.

Yet the conventional ideas are incomplete. They fail to explain or even describe the ultimate origin of the universe.^x

The Big Bang

In the *Big Bang* theory, the extrapolation of the universe back in time will encounter an initial singularity, which is the “small hot region.” “There the size of the universe tends to zero, and the strength of the gravitational field and the energy density of matter tend to infinity. That is, the universe appears to have emerged from a singularity, a region of infinite curvature and energy density at which the known laws of physics break down.” Mathematical manipulations were invented to

solve this problem. The concepts of *inflation* where the universe expands very rapidly until the laws of classical physics can take over, and *tunneling* where a particle of smaller energy can penetrate an energy barrier, were introduced.^{xi}

Science writer Eric Lerner articulately opposes the Big Bang theory and the mathematical manipulation that goes with it.

In the quantum world the fundamental idea of rationality that of cause and effect no longer holds. Events can occur without cause, a particle can simply pop into and out of existence magically. And if it is possible for electrons to pop into existence without any cause, why wouldn't a whole universe pop into existence without cause? The difference between a virtual particle and the Big Bang is only one of quantity. Indeed the most

The Hot Big Bang Model

George Gamow proposed the *Big Bang* model in 1948 whereby the cold large low-density universe that we know today commenced from an extremely small hot dense initial state called a “singularity.” We might ask, if the universe is like an expanding balloon, then what is outside the balloon?

recent cosmological theories are based on the quantum causality that the universe, in the theories of Hawking and others, is one gigantic quantum fluctuation.^{xii}

He comments further,

Einstein condemned Heisenberg's concept of particles jumping around of their own free will, yet for Heisenberg and those who followed, the logical absurdities of quantum mechanics were irrelevant: only the mathematical equations were real, everything else was mere appearance. From a fascination with mathematical beauty followed the devaluation of the understanding of the reality mathematics is supposed to describe." [In other words], "It is more important to have beauty in ones equations than to have them fit the experiment."^{xiii}

The Big Bang theory does not answer the question as to what surrounds the singularity and where did the matter-energy comprising it come from. The discovery that the speed of light in a vacuum had a finite limit, of approximately 300,000 kilometers per second or 186,000 miles per second relative to the observer, *no matter how fast one is traveling*, led Einstein to develop the theory of "general relativity." Dolphin Lambert in his book, *Jesus Lord of Time and Space*, writes

Thus it was that Einstein was led into considering space and time as two relative dimensions, variable in function of the state of movement of the observer, the only constant dimension being the speed of light. The latter would everywhere and always be the same, whereas time and space vary in relation to one another: it is as if space could shrink in favour of time, and inversely.... That the movement of light is a fundamental 'measure' of the corporeal world we willingly believe, but why should this measure itself be a number, and even a definite number?... Now, what would happen if the constant character of the speed of light ever came to be doubted and there is every

likelihood that it will be sooner or later so that the one fixed pivot of “Einstein’s theory would fall down? The whole modern conception of the universe would immediately dissolve like a mirage.”^{xiv}

The Sci-Fi Continuum

Einstein considered space as being three dimensions and time the fourth. Thus, “an objects’ history is described by its “trajectory,” a line drawn in four dimensions from the start to the finish of its existence. “The line does not come into existence point by point. It exists in four dimensions, and describes where the particle is in the three spatial dimensions for any value of the fourth dimension time.... For this world real time—time with past, present, and future—does not exist. In this world, Einstein’s world, the entirety of time is laid out like a map in four dimensions. The year one billion BC and one billion AD, as well as 1991, all exist with equal reality. All is predestined.”^{xv}

This time line is the *continuum* of modern space adventure stories where one’s machine, or space ship, hops forwards or backwards on the time line. The irrationality of this becomes obvious. Since all is predestined like a fixed movie, your movement is also predestined; nothing really changes, so in fact, not even free will or the great concept of evolution exists. Moreover if by going back in time events can be changed on the continuum—and they would be—then everyone would want to be as gods—the result is chaos.

The solution to this problem is Everett’s many universes interpretation. A deeper philosophical question then has to be answered, where does all the matter and energy come from to contain the many universes, and why should a new universe suddenly flash into existence just because “I” make a different decision? “The result,” writes Lerner, “as Prigogine [a Russian chemist] emphasizes, is to alienate man from nature. If there is no tendency towards evolution or

progress in nature, then human existence itself is nothing but a meaningless accident, and humans are isolated in an indifferent and incomprehensible universe. In either a timeless or a decaying cosmos, there is no room for anything that has value for humanity, no room for consciousness, joy, sadness, or hope. The universe becomes, in the words of Alfred North Whitehead, “a dull affair, soundless, scentless, colorless, merely the hurrying of matter, endless, meaningless.”^{xvi}

God’s concept of time is that it is irreversible; there is no going back. What is done is done! “*There is only one Lawgiver and Judge, the one who is able to save and destroy.*”^{xvii} “*Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment, so Christ [Yeshua-Jesus] was sacrificed once to take away the sins of many people; and he will appear a second time, not to bear sin, but to bring salvation to those who are waiting for him.*”^{xviii} “*Now there is in store for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, will award to me on that day—and not only to me, but also to all who have longed for his appearing.*”^{xix} “Time, Prigogine argues, is irreversible at all levels—the reversible laws of physics are only approximations. In reality, temporal irreversibility is “built into” the universe from the tiniest particle to the mightiest galaxy. Time is not merely another dimension, it is the history of the universe”^{xx}—it is consequential events, the movement of matter requiring energy happening point by point, coming from an *unformed future*, to a *dynamic now* and on to an *unchangeable past*.

Time has three components past, present and future. The past is blown away in radiant energy, from the singularity event of *now*, while the future is the movement of unformed energy towards the *now*.

A Burning Flame

In simple terms our *now* is like a flame of burning gas, this is our event horizon—singularity. The gas is the unformed energy of the future, which is directed by God, while the light, heat and fumes are the dissipated images of the event horizon, which is the past.

Creation ex-nihilo?

Space contains matter. Eric Lerner comments,

But our universe appears to have a very significant amount of energy tied up in existing matter. Where did that energy come from? Is there more? Cosmology has dodged this question by hypothesizing that this matter-energy comes from the gravitational energy of the Big Bang. However, as we've seen, this requires that omega equal 1—which it clearly is not. [Omega is the ratio of the density of the universe to the density needed to stop expansion; 1 would stop expansion. Omega has been calculated about .01 or .02.] Gravitational energy amounts to between one-hundredth and one ten-thousandth of the energy tied up in observed matter (and there's no reason to assume that substantially more exists). This is wholly insufficient. We simply do not know where the energy in matter derives from, and we do not know whether and under what circumstances it can be captured or released. Until we do know, we cannot set "scientific" limits to the energy available in the cosmos.^{xxi}

The cosmic question of whether the universe is bound (finite) or unbound (infinite) has had its effect upon theology. The idea that God created the heavens and the earth from "nothing" originated with Tertullian, a theologian-lawyer, who converted to Christianity at the beginning of the third century. Augustine, Bishop of Hippo, embraced Tertullian's ideas in his great work, *The City of God*. Some Christians believe that God created the universe from nothing or ex-nihilo, although this is not what the Bible declares. It is likely that there is some confusion between how the material universe came into being and how evil came about. Eric Lerner writes,

To Tertullian, as to the pagan neoplatonists, the material world is evil. But how could an omnipotent and good God have created an evil world? Tertullian's solution was the

doctrine of creation from nothing. The material world is evil, Tertullian argues, because it had a beginning in time the moment of creation. Things that have beginnings necessarily have ends, they are finite and subject to decay, therefore they are imperfect, hence the source of evil. By contrast God, who is eternal and infinite, can be wholly good and divine. His infinitude makes Him divine and separates Him from the finite material world. Creation ex-nihilo [from nothing] was for Tertullian what separated the finite and decaying earth from the infinite and divine heaven.... To Augustine, as to Tertullian, creation ex-nihilo necessitated the unbridgeable gap between heaven and earth, the extreme denigration of the material world “created out of nothing and next to nothing.”^{xxii}

Contrary to these ideas the Bible declares, “*the universe was formed at God’s command, so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible.*”^{xxiii} God is not visible, yet if God created, the invisible energy sustained by God could become visible in space-time as our material universe by Einstein’s famous equation $E=mc^2$. Moreover, the Bible states, Genesis 1:31, “*God saw all that he had made, and it was very good,*” which contradicts Tertullian’s propositions.

A Theistic Universe

It still comes back to the basic question—where is God? We know only too well the feelings of Jonathan Halliwell as we stare at the heavens on a clear night. Can God be big enough to somehow be involved in this cosmological affair? God seems to think so; He states,^{xxiv} “*Am I only a God nearby and not a God far away? Can anyone hide in secret places so that I cannot see him? Do I not fill heaven and earth?*”—an interesting concept—how can God fill heaven and earth? Dr. Nathan Wood in his treatise, *The Trinity in the Universe*, presents a case for a *theistic universe*, a

universe with God in it. The fundamentals of our universe are space, matter and time. This is the trinity of the *outer* or physical universe. He proposes that the *inner* universe, nature, person and personality in man are a reflection of the Godhead Trinity. Dr. Wood writes:

The Trinity of Father, Son and Holy Spirit is the explanation of the universe. It is the answer to those great questions, What is the explanation of the universe? ... What is the principle of the universe? [The answer is] Trinity in the image of the Triune God is the principle and explanation of the universe. It

is the organizing principle of all things. It is the structure and pattern of the universe.... It is a universal principle. It is principle which lies in God's nature. It is trinity in the image of a Triune God. It reveals one vast unity—sheer space, and moving matter, and mysterious time, and wondrous man, and supreme God, bound in one vast unity.”^{xxv}

According to the Big Bang theory, a singularity became space. Nevertheless, what is space, is it nothingness? Where did the matter come from to form the singularity, and did time exist before the Big Bang? The “No Big Bang” alternative also has no explanation for infinite space, matter and time. The space we see as we look out into the universe is not dimensions of nothingness; it has matter in motion, which involves energy and time. It is as if the universe is riding on a great ocean

Universe—Infinite or—Finite?

A theological scholar once asked me if the universe was infinite or finite, as a scientist I suggested that it had the possibility of being infinite, he looked at me with that “Godly” frown and stated only God was infinite. This relates to Tertullian’s conception of sin. However, both scientifically and theologically if the universe is a *theistic universe* then it may very well be infinite and not subject to expansions and collapses.

of hidden energy, a sea of light, (the word light is used for all electromagnetic energy). Dr. Woods continues:

The dimensions which we call space were not primarily then the dimensions of energy. They go further back than that. They were the dimensions of that which produces energy and motion. They were the dimensions of out-spread, universal, omnipresent Creative power, in a universe with God in it.... The attempt to imagine the dimensions of space as the dimensions of nothingness is really an attempt to imagine a time before God existed, and to picture a vast emptiness in which His power was not yet present. But with an eternal God, and a God always omnipresent, and therefore with His power always present everywhere, the dimensions of the universe, which are visibly the dimensions of motion, have always been primarily the dimensions of that Divine outspread power which precedes all energy and motion.

Matter is the name which we give to the tangible, audible, visible ways in which energy makes impact upon the mind through which we call the senses. Greater solidity is simply a greater proportion of particles of energy, of numbers of electrons in each atom, making impact upon your senses.... In the physical universe, time is the successiveness of motion in space. Motion in space occupies one location after another.

Thus even in a theistic universe, history is formed point by point from an *unformed future*, to a *dynamic present* and an *irreversible past*. Dr. Woods has an interesting prospective on the speed of light.

But in a universe with God in it Creative power is the everywhere present reservoir of energy, the source from which latent energy leaps into activity and concentrations everywhere in the universe.... The speed of light is the standard speed at which the

omnipresent creative power of God emerges unhindered into energy and action everywhere in the universe.... In that sublime unvaried rate at which the Divine creative power emerges throughout the universe into unhindered action, and which we know as the speed of light, we find an added meaning in the phrase: "God is light."^{xxxvi}

Science has shown that the speed of light varies as it passes through different materials. Specially designed experiments have been able to trap light and briefly stop it.^{xxxvii} The inference from Dr. Wood's thoughts should not be that God is limited in his actions by the speed of light but that all physical and chemical reactions in our space-time universe are somehow bound by or referenced to the speed of light. That does not mean that faster than light travel in space is impossible. On the contrary, think of light as a type of messenger of information. Mail travels faster by plane than by truck. E-mail is almost instantaneous. Faster than light travel will not change any past actions but will only deliver information faster.

The outcome of this thought has some intriguing implications. Dolphin discusses some theoretical work by two Australian scientists, Setterfield and Norman that the speed of light is slowing down. Mathematically projecting back to time $t=0$ the speed of light would be in the order of 10 million times its present value. He proposes that since "the velocity of light is such an important "constant" of physics that it figures into a large number of fundamental equations," there may have been in the past two event reaction horizons; atomic time where atomic reactions happened millions of times faster, and dynamic time the time we perceive. The result is that millions of years of atomic time, which would affect radioactive dating, would be compressed into thousands of years of dynamic time. Consequently, a radioactive date would give millions of years and a dynamic date inferred from known physical processes would suggest thousands of years.^{xxxviii}

Physicist Gerald Schroeder maintains that the six days of creation were six actual days but they contain the billions of years that are given by our instruments measuring radioactive decay in our common era of slow electromagnetic radiation. It is well known that paleontology has shown that the distribution of fossils in the geological formations match that of the six days of creation described in the book of Genesis.^{xxix} However, the question of billions of years has been the division between science and theology, and between old Earth and young Earth creationists. Mr. Schroeder explains:

Since biblical time takes hold with the appearance of matter, the biblical clock starts at bohu (Hebrew; Both the Tallmud and Nahmanides state that bohu means filled with the building blocks of matter), that instant just after the big bang when stable matter as we know it formed from energy. The age of all matter in the universe dates back to bohu, the moment of quark confinement.

We know the temperature and hence the frequency of radiation energy in the universe at quark confinement. It is not a value extrapolated or estimated from conditions in the distant past or far out in space. It is measured right here on Earth in the most advanced physics laboratories and corresponds to a temperature approximately a million million times hotter than the current 3^0K black of space. That radiant energy had a frequency a million million times greater than the radiation of today's cosmic background radiation.

The radiation from that moment of quark confinement has been stretched a million-millionfold. Its redshift, z as observed today is 10^{12} . That stretching of light waves slowed the frequency of the cosmic clock—expanded the perceived time between ticks of that clock—by a million million.

To measure the age of the universe, we look back in time. From our perspective using Earth-based clocks running at a rate determined by the conditions of today's Earth, we measure a fifteen billion-year age. And that is correct for our local view. The Bible adopts this Earthly perspective, but only for times after Adam. The Bible's clock before Adam is not a clock tied to any one location. It is a clock that looks forward in time from the creation, encompassing the entire universe, a universal clock tuned to the cosmic radiation at the moment when matter formed. That cosmic timepiece, as observed today, ticks a million million times more slowly than at its inception. The million millionfold stretching of radiation since bohu caused that million-million-to-one ratio in this perception of time.

This cosmic clock records the passage of one minute while we on Earth experience a million million minutes. The dinosaurs ruled the Earth for 120 million years, as measured by our perception of time. Those clocks are set by the decay of radioactive nuclides here on Earth and they are correct for our earthly system. But to know the cosmic time we must divide earth time by a million million. At this million-million-to-one ratio those 120 million Earth years lasted a mere hour.... In terms of days and years and millennia, this stretching of the cosmic perception of time by a factor of a million million, the division of fifteen billion years by a million million reduces those fifteen billion years to six days.^{xxx}

And God Said..

Thus, even though the cosmic clock shows 15 billion years, as P.J. Wiseman articulated from his study of the cuneiform tablets, God could have dictated the history of the cosmos to Adam in six days.

The decay of radioactive nuclides can be studied from the pattern of decay. The decay pattern forms like a rainbow around the radioactive particle and leaves a shadow imprint in the material in which it is embedded. These are called radiohalos. Polonium-210 has a half-life of 138 days. Elliptical decay patterns of polonium-210 were found in fossilized logs from the Colorado Plateau of Western USA. These logs had to be fossilized within a four-year period because of the short half-life of polonium-210 of 138 days. Moreover, the radiohalos showed the presence of a large amount of uranium-238, but almost no daughter product—lead-206, which takes millions of years to form by the process of radioactive decay. This implies that the fossilized sediments, which also contain dinosaur bones and footprints, *are thousands of years old not millions.*^{xxx1}

Moreover, *if* the present speed of light is only an interaction boundary, implemented by God, then the spiritual dimension may be separated from the physical world by an *arc of time*. Dolphin writes, “Some psychic researchers claim that psi-phenomena, (that is, “Extra Sensory Perceptions,”) occur because some kind of “leakage” mechanism, presently not known to science, allows signals to cross the boundary from the “no signal” zones into the realm of the observable. This is purely conjecture as far as I know. However, modern physics allows the mathematical invention of hypothetical particles which may or may not later prove to exist.”^{xxxii} These mythical particles called “tachyons” (Sci-Fi uses them all the time) would allow faster than light communication.

Dr. Woods summarizes his thoughts on a theistic universe.

So all-explaining is the light of the Divine Triunity of God in His universe, that even the deeper mysteries of that Triunity cast a revealing light upon the mysteries of the universe. What holds the universe together, so that it works as one immeasurable whole? What holds the stars in their order and harmony? What keeps them in their orbits? What holds the atoms in order? What holds the electrons in their orbits around

the proton in the infinitesimal solar system which we call the atom? The only answer which has ever been given at all is the answer of the Bible, that “in him,”—the second Person of the Trinity, the Son, the Creator,—“all things hold together,” or “consist.”

xxxiii

Scientifically is there any suggestion that an omnipresent God could exist and sustain the whole universe? Mr. Dolphin comments:

One of the perplexing problems of modern physics is how a charged particle, or a mass, communicate over distance. Since there are forces between two charged particles, or between two masses, the motion of one of these objects is “felt” by the other object. Is the signal (informing the second particle that the first has moved) sent by a virtual particle traveling at the speed of light or by a ripple in the fabric of space? The problem can be resolved if one is willing to allow the existence of a spiritual realm permeating the material universe so that information (such as prayers and answers from God) can travel faster than light. Although the mechanism is surely not known to us, instant action-at-a-distance probably does occur by means of linkages between the spiritual and material realms. God can affect two different things, miles apart, at the same instant in time, and He can order the whole by orchestrating each part all at the same time. God is an Omnipresent Spirit, in Him we live and have our being, so all of His sovereign power and attributes are available at every point in time and space.^{xxxiv}

Scientist Nick Herbert in his book, *Quantum Reality*, explains what possibly might be going on between the world that we live in and the other reality that we cannot sense. John Stewart Bell a

theoretical physicist developed a proof known as Bell's Interconnectedness Theorem. Mr. Herbert explains,

It asserts that no local model of reality can underlie the quantum facts. Bell's theorem says that reality must be non-local. ... A gear train is a typical local mechanism. Motion passes from one gear wheel to another in an unbroken chain. Break the chain by taking out a single gear and the movement cannot continue. Without something there to mediate it, a local interaction cannot cross a gap. On the other hand, the essence of non-locality is unmediated action-at-a-distance. A non-local interaction jumps from body A to body B without touching anything in between. Voodoo injury is an example of non-local interaction [mediating malevolent spiritual forces].^{xxxv}

Mr. Herbert continues,

Non-local influences, if they existed, would not be mediated by fields or by anything else. When A connects to B non-locally, nothing crosses the intervening space, hence no amount of interpose matter can shield this interaction. Non-local influences do not diminish with distance. They are as potent at a million miles as at a millimeter.

Non-local influences act instantaneously. The speed of their transmission is not limited by the speed of light. A non-local interaction links up one location with another without crossing space, without decay, and without delay. A non-local interaction is, in short, unmediated, unmitigated, and immediate.

Despite physicists' traditional rejection of non-local interactions, despite the fact that all known forces are incontestably local, despite Einstein's prohibition against superluminal connections, and despite the fact that no experiment has ever shown a case of unmediated faster-than-light communication, Bell maintains that the world is

*filled with innumerable non-local influences. Furthermore, these unmediated connections are present not only in rare and exotic circumstances, but underlie all the events of everyday life. **Non-local connections are ubiquitous because reality itself is non local***.^{xxvi} [*emphasis mine].*

Mr. Herbert comments,

Not all physicists believe Bell's proof to be an airtight demonstration of the necessary existence of non-local connections. But the alternatives these critics offer instead seem to me to be generally obscure and/or preposterous...even to go as far as to actually "deny reality itself" rather than accept Bell's audacious conclusion that quantum reality must be non-local.

He summarizes the dramatic impact of this proof, should you care to comprehend a possibility of reality as follows:

Bell's theorem show that although the world's phenomena seem strictly local, the reality beneath this phenomenal surface must be superluminal. The world's deep reality is maintained by an invisible quantum connection whose ubiquitous influence is unmediated, unmitigated and immediate. Unconfirmed rumor of telepathy and other alleged power of mind aside, our basic computer consciousness appears to be as local as any other classical phenomena. However, if ordinary awareness is a private manifestation of deep quantum reality, Bell's theorem requires our quantum knowledge to be non-local, instantly linked to everything it has previously touched. Since this type of awareness consists of consciousness without content, it is difficult to see what use we could make of such non-local connections. On the other hand, perhaps these

connections are not there for us to “use.” Religions assure us that we are all brothers and sisters, children of the same deity; biologists say that we are entwined with all life forms on this planet: our fortunes rise or fall with theirs. Now physicists have discovered that the very atoms of our bodies are woven out of common superluminal fabric. Not merely in physics are humans out of touch with reality; we ignore these connections at our peril. ^{xxxvii}

Could it be possible that our inner reality of nature, person, and personality, or “mannishness of man” wrapped up in body soul and spirit as pondered by Francis Schaeffer, and the outer reality of space, matter and time are linked in the great underpinning reality, non-local reality of God? Dr. Wood writes,

What is the relation between the mental conception and the outer reality? Does the outer world suggest Space and Time to the mind? Or does the mind project Space and Time upon the outer world? There is a greater answer. The Triune Creator suggests and projects Space and Time upon both the outer world and the mind, and together the outer reality and the inner conception form one operation of the Triune God who forever creates both world and mind in His own triune likeness.... In this is the reason that the forms of reality and the forms of thought exactly fit each other. For He made both in His own likeness. ^{xxxviii}

Purpose—the ultimate question—is there purpose to the universe, to my life? Is there some higher purpose than just being a microdot disseminator of human DNA on a planet that may be

blasted into oblivion by a rogue asteroid, in a random disordered cosmos where all is an accident? In his thoughts on a theistic universe Dr. Wood reasons,

Is the universe as it is because of some special plan which requires that the universe be so? Or is the universe as it is from some inherent necessity? These great questions disappear in the light of an answer deeper and greater than either. It is not simply a special arbitrary plan, chosen out of endless possibilities. Nor is it on the other hand simply a necessity in the nature of the universe itself. It lies far deeper. The universe is as it is because it naturally and inevitably reflects the being of its Maker and Worker. That means indeed a plan for the universe, but not an arbitrary plan. It means a necessity, but a necessity far deeper than anything in the nature of the universe itself.^{xxxix}

The Maker and Worker, God the Divine Triunity of Father, Son and Holy Spirit indeed has a plan, a most majestic higher purpose centered on the ultimate jewel “free will.” The *schism of the cosmos* is part of the outworking of that plan. Dr. Woods concludes:

The Bible declares, in a mysterious passage, that “at the end” “the Son shall deliver up the kingdom to God, even the Father.” This is to be when He, the Son, “shall have abolished all rule and all authority and power.” It alludes to the power of death. “For he,” the Son, “must reign till he hath put all his enemies under his feet. The last enemy that shall be abolished is death.” This evidently means all that force of death and destruction, both in human life and in the universe at large, which negates God’s whole creative purpose and work.

“And when all things have been subjected unto him,” the Son, “then shall the Son also himself be subjected to him that did subject all things unto him, that God may be all in

all.” A profound mystery, but a profound illumination! We see it going on now. The Son, the Creator, Himself enters the life of the universe in a peculiar and personal way. He does it by entering, as a Person, the life of the human race. He becomes man. He overcomes sin. He does this in His own life for thirty-three years. He does it for mankind, the Bible declares, by His personal death and resurrection. Then He works it out, in men and in the universe. He works in men by His Spirit. At last, “at the end,” He brings all things into subjection.

A new-created race emerges, from every tribe and tongue and people and nation. A new universe no longer groaning and travailing in pain. A new heavens and a new earth. Sin and evil and destruction cast out from it all. Then at last all things are in harmony with God. The nature of God at last holds absolute sway in the universe. The redeeming, reorganizing, recreating work of the Son is done. No longer must one of the Three in One make it His work to reclaim the universe from sin and disaster. God, the Three in One, the One in Three, is at last all in all in His universe.^{xi}

This summarizes the concept of a *theistic universe*. Since God says that He exists, and is sustaining the cosmos, therefore the outworking of His plan should be evident in our universe, in Earth’s history and in our daily lives.

Notes:

-
- ⁱ 1 Peter 1:19
 - ⁱⁱ 1 Peter 1:20
 - ⁱⁱⁱ 2 Corinthians 12:2
 - ^{iv} 1 Timothy 5:15
 - ^v Hebrews 11:3
 - ^{vi} Hebrews 1:2-3
 - ^{vii} Colossians 1:15-18
 - ^{viii} Isaiah 45:18

-
- ^{ix} Wood Dr. Nathan, *The Trinity in the Universe*, Kregel Publications, Grand Rapids Michigan, 1978, pg. 36
- ^x Halliwell J., "Quantum Cosmology and the Creation of the Universe," *Scientific American*, December 1991, pg. 83f
- ^{xi} Halliwell, *Ibid*,
- ^{xii} Lerner Eric, *The Big Bang Never Happened*, Times Books, Random House, 1991, pg. 360
- ^{xiii} Lerner, *Ibid*, pg. 359
- ^{xiv} Dolphin Lambert, *Jesus Lord of Time And Space*, New Leaf Press, 1988; Quoted Titus Burckhart, "Mirror of the Intellect: Essays on Traditional Science and Sacred Art," (State University of N. York Press; Albany, 1987), pp. 27-28
- ^{xv} Lerner Eric, *Ibid*, pg. 286
- ^{xvi} Lerner, *Ibid*, pg. 286
- ^{xvii} James 4:12
- ^{xviii} Hebrews 9:27
- ^{xix} 2 Timothy 4:8
- ^{xx} Lerner Eric, *Ibid*, pg. 286
- ^{xxi} Lerner, *Ibid*, pg. 301, Omega pg. 34
- ^{xxii} Lerner, *Ibid*, pg. 79
- ^{xxiii} Hebrews 11:3
- ^{xxiv} Jeremiah 23:23-24
- ^{xxv} Wood Dr. Nathan, *Ibid*, pg. 103
- ^{xxvi} Woods, *Ibid*, pg. 103 ff
- ^{xxvii} Hau Lene Vestergaard, "Frozen Light," *Scientific American* July 2001, pg. 66
- ^{xxviii} Dolphin, *Ibid*, 121-128
- ^{xxix} Young Davis A., *An Alternative To Flood Geology and Theistic Evolution*, Baker Books 1977, pg. 89
- ^{xxx} Schroeder Gerald L., *The Science of God*, Broadway Books New York, pg. 57-58
- ^{xxxi} Taylor, McIntosh, Walker, "The Collapse of geologic time," *Creation* September-November 2001, pgs. 30-33
- ^{xxxii} Dolphin, *Ibid*, pg. 115
- ^{xxxiii} Wood, *Ibid*, pg. 215
- ^{xxxiv} Dolphin, *Ibid*, pg. 118
- ^{xxxv} Herbert Nick, *Quantum Reality*, Doubleday, New York, 1985 pg. 211
- ^{xxxvi} Herbert, *Ibid*, 214
- ^{xxxvii} Herbert, *Ibid*, 249
- ^{xxxviii} Wood, *Ibid*, pg. 201
- ^{xxxix} Wood, *Ibid*, pg. 213
- ^{xl} Wood, *Ibid*, pg. 217

Chapter 11

In The Beginning

“It is the glory of God to conceal a matter; to search out a matter is the glory of kings.”

[Scientists].ⁱ

Even as the question of God is—God is, or He is not, the question of the cosmos is—is it a theistic universe, or is it not? Without an answer to the beginning of the cosmos, the question of the age of the universe is meaningless. Conflicting scientific theories shift the age of the universe back and forth billions of years like a magic wand, so that to the average person, 8 to 16 billion years becomes a meaningless estimate! One could ask—how long did the singularity of the Big Bang sit before it exploded—is it the second remnant of a previously exploded universe, or is it a collapsed universe doing it once again? Based on the size of galaxy structures, such as the great wall, and the calculated movement of their star systems to create these features—Eric Lerner argues that the universe has to be 60 to 80 billion years old.ⁱⁱ Maybe we are only seeing a minute portion of the universe, and it is trillions of years old! Likewise, in the case of the No Big Bang model, where did the sprinkling of matter, or plasma, across this vast expanse come from over the billions of years? Why at this point in time should chaotic matter arrive at its present position of order?

The premise of a theistic universe dumps the whole question in God’s lap—God did it. This would suggest that we sentient beings—do have purpose and meaning in the cosmos, other than

being a “lucky accident” or a “disseminator of DNA” in the universe. A theistic universe would certainly indicate a purpose and a plan on the part of the Divine Trinity. The supporting proof of non-local superluminal connections would tend to indicate the presence of an underpinning spiritual medium—the possibility of a Divine Essence.

The hope of the “God is not” group is that this non-local reality is benign—and is somehow an explainable and controllable, part of the “quantum fuzz” that will lead man on to godhood. The metaphysical dilemma is that there could also be a deceptive non-local malevolent spiritual medium at work that has it’s own agenda. The Bible states this to be the case. There is war in the cosmos; at stake is your “free will”—the jewel of all sentient beings in the universe.

Quantum Fuzz

The region close to singularities describable by known laws of quantum physics, but where notions of time and space of classical physics do not apply.ⁱⁱⁱ

Propositional Truth

The actuality of God and the purpose of man can only be worked out logically, point by point, as we wrestle with concepts of our ontology, human history and the supernatural exposition of the Divine Trinity—the Bible. “The Bible is not a scientific textbook, if by that one means that its purpose is to give us exhaustive truth, or that scientific fact is central theme and purpose,” writes Francis Schaeffer.

We must remember its purpose: It is God’s message to fallen men. The Old Testament gave men what they needed from the Fall till the first coming of Christ. The Old and New Testaments together give all that men need from the Fall until the second coming of Christ. Many other details which we need are also given, but the main purpose is kept central and uncluttered, For example,

angels are touched on many times, but the Bible is not a book on “angelology.” What is told us about angels is true and propositional but always in relation to men. Heaven is the same; we are given factual knowledge concerning what we need to know about heaven but not a great deal of detail. Cosmic creation is included because we need to know these things, which were before the Fall. What the Bible tells us is propositional, factual and true truth, but what is given is in relation to men. It is a scientific textbook in the sense that where it touches the cosmos it is true, propositionally true.^{iv}

The hypothesis of the Big Bang, or No Big Bang is man’s wrestling with various concepts of the universe, which from a theistic viewpoint, God is “outspreading” and “sustaining.” “*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth*” is the first statement made in the Bible, it is a propositional truth; how God did it, is yet to be determined by scientific endeavors. Dr. John Sailhamer, who served on the translation committees for two versions of the Book of Genesis, in his book *Genesis Unbound*, deals with this propositional opening sentence “*In the beginning God created the heavens and earth.*” His interpretation of the Hebrew word *reshit*, for beginning, is a word that defines an indefinite period of time not a specific moment. Therefore, the period “In the beginning” may relate to millions or billions of years. The words “heavens and earth” are the vast array of space, which contains our galaxy, the solar system, and of course, Earth, while the words “earth and heavens” refers to our local sky around Earth.^v

The next propositional statement reads, “*Now the earth was or possibly became formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters.*”^{vi} Both, Dr. Sailhamer and G. H. Pember, M.A.^{vii} from studies of the Hebrew words suggest that *formless* can be translated, *waste* or *ruin* or *desolation*. The word *surface* is *paniyim* in Hebrew

and means “the face (as the part that turns). Now from God’s perspective, this makes an interesting translation. Remember God has said that he “fills heaven and earth” so that dimension to God is meaningless. Moreover, James Reid contends that the word “waters” at this juncture of Gods revealing may very well mean “plasma.”^{viii} The standard Biblical interpretation, before our age of science, is that the Spirit of God is hovering over Earth, which is covered with water.

God’s focus is on Earth where He is about to create man in His image as part of a great cosmic plan. He first sees the universe and the Earth (verse 1), and then the part that turns (our galaxy and/or the Earth), (verse 2). Verses 1 and

Tohu wabohu

Dr. Sailhamer writes, “William Tyndale in 1530 was the first English translator to render the Hebrew phrase *tohu wabohu* in Genesis 1:2 with the expression “void and empty.” Tyndale’s translation has had a lasting effect. The King James Bible (1611) and the Geneva Bible (1560) both rendered it “without form and void.” That basic idea still predominates today with translations such as the NIV’s “formless and empty.”...“Even a quick reading of the Hebrew text reveals an obvious wordplay between the terms *tohu* (“deserted”) and *tob* (“good”). Before God began His work, the land was “deserted” (*tohu*); then God made it “good” (*tob*).”... According to the most natural reading of the Hebrew text, the land was simply an “uninhabitable” or “inhospitable” stretch of “wasteland.”^{ix}

2 could possibly read as follows: “Now the earth became waste, or ruin and empty, and darkness was over the turning of the deep [galaxy or Earth], and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters [plasma].” However, the most probable meaning is likely—“hovering over the water covered rotating earth.” In either case, it is a tremendous cosmological statement.

Pember, in his classic work *Earth's Earliest Ages*, noted that the Hebrew root words for *became waste* and *empty* are used two other places in scripture, and are associated with God's wrath.^x Edom, which is now southern Jordan between the Dead Sea and the Gulf of Aqaba, will suffer God's wrath. "*God will stretch out over Edom the measuring line of chaos and plumb line of desolation.*" This prophetic prediction for the future may take place in our present days. "*Edom's streams will be turned into pitch, her dust into burning sulfur; her land will become blazing pitch.*"^{xi} The burning oil wells in the 1991 Gulf war were a prelude to this prediction.

Even as the destruction of Edom was in the future, Pember believes that the second reference is to the distant past, possibly, to a pre-Adam Earth that God in His wrath made waste, and then restores for His creation of Adam. Pember writes, "There is no possibility of mistaking the meaning of the words in this [first] place, and the second passage is even more conclusive. For, in describing the devastation of Judah and Jerusalem, Jeremiah likens it to the pre-Adamite destruction, and exclaims:" "*I looked at the earth, and it was formless and empty; and at the heavens, and their light was gone. I looked at the mountains and they were quaking; all the hills were swaying. I looked, and there were no people; every bird in the sky had flown away. I looked, and the fruitful land was a desert; all its towns lay in ruins before the Lord, before his fierce anger.*"^{xii}

Fossils

William Kelly, a Bible scholar of the late 19th century in his book, *In The Beginning*, writes, "It is absurd to deny that the petrifications of the strata were once real animals and plants, and to attribute them to a plastic force in the earth, or to overlook the evidence of extremely violent and rapid convulsions before man was made, closing one geological period and inaugurating another with its flora and fauna successively suited to each other in the wisdom and power and goodness of

God.... There are, accordingly, three states with the most marked distinction: original creation of the universe; the earth passed into a state of waste and emptiness; and the renovation of the earth, etc., for man its new inhabitant and ruler.”^{xiii} The plastic force that Mr. Kelly refers to was the belief by some that mud and clays in the earth somehow made these fossils.

Hugh Miller, also a scholastic writer of the 19th century, records, “It was held, for instance, in opposition to the great painter, Leonardo da Vinci, who flourished early in the sixteenth century, and was one of the first who, after the revival of learning, asserted the true character of organic remains, that fossils were formed in the rocks though the planetary influences, or a certain plastic force in nature, and had never entered into the composition of living creatures or plants.” He quotes another writer of his day to illustrate this type of thinking, “Fossils,” says this courageous

Beliefs

We may well chuckle, but is this much different to the beliefs of the “mature creationists” of today, that God instantaneously created an old looking earth, or the belief of enlightened evolutionists that inorganic matter can gain information bits and spiral upwards to form the complex creature—man?

writer, “were not necessarily animated structures:” some of them were in all probability “formed of stone from the first;” others, of inanimate flesh and bone. “The mammoth found under the ice in arctic regions had not necessarily been a living creature: it was created under the ice, and then preserved in that peculiar form of preservation, instead of being transmuted into stone, like the rest of its class.”^{xiv}

The philosophy of uniformitarianism promoted by Hutton, Lyell and Darwin reached a point of almost religious ideology in the 1950s until the rude awaking by Immanuel Velikovsky with the publication of his books *Worlds in Collision* and *Earth in Upheaval*. Donald Patten, a Christian

catastrophist, writes, “During the 19th century, as uniformitarianism expanded rapidly (in biology and geology), humanists were greatly enthused. Catastrophists were both confused and dismayed. So were Biblical theologians. Catastrophism had been deeply interwoven into their theology. Geological catastrophists were becoming a very rare and lonely species. And theological catastrophists could not meet with secular scholars because their basis of theology was deemed insufficient, that is to say, unscientific.”^{xv}

The Differentiation Period

Taking the scientific and theological preposition of a theistic universe, Dr. Francis Schaeffer writes concerning the Biblical description of creation. He refers to chapters 1 and 2 of Genesis as the “differentiation”^{xvi} period of the earth and heavens by God. Should we care to consider God’s perspective, we would look from outside space-time at the “heavens and the earth” (the universe); then at the “earth and heavens” (sky); then focus specifically on Earth as He makes differentiations of various subjects until He arrives at his favorite and principle focus—man, whom He will create in His image.

The first differentiation commences at verse 3, God said, “*Let there be light.*” Here we may have an ignition of plasma into visible matter within the galaxy as opposed to the darkness of space. Plasma and light are first constituents of both the Big Bang and No Big Bang theories. “*God saw that the light was good, and separated the light from the darkness.*”

Next, God focuses on the water covered planet that we know as *Earth*. The second differentiation results in the formation of the oceans and the atmosphere with possibly a thick veil of moisture-laden clouds swirling around Earth. The third differentiation yields dry land. Modern geologists refer to this ancient large flat supercontinent as *Pangaea*. The present continents, at the level of their continental shelves, can be fitted together like a jig saw puzzle. This supercontinent,

Pangaea, is thought to have broken into two subcontinents *Laurasia* and *Gondwanaland*. The former consists of present day North America, Europe, Greenland and Asia. The latter consists of South America, Africa, Australia, India and Antarctica. So now, we have sea and land.

The third differentiation is also noted for the production on the land of unconscious life. “Then God said, “*Let the land produce vegetation: seed-bearing plants and trees on the land that bear fruit with seed in it, according to their various kinds.*” And it was so. *The land produced vegetation: plants bearing seed according to their kinds and trees bearing fruit with seed in it according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good.*”^{xvii}

The fourth differentiation once again looks from space towards Earth. Now, God places, and/or makes visible the stars, Sun and moon that act as time-markers for years, seasons and days. Again, we see the comment by God “*to separate the light from the darkness.*”^{xviii} Up to this point, we have had events in a logical sequence, but now the stars, Sun and Moon come on the scene, on the fourth day—not the first! Mythology of course has the stars, Sun and Moon first because that is *visibly* logical. However, if there were a dense canopy of clouds swirling around Earth from the separation of the waters, then it would take time for the luminaries to become visible. This is a logical progression of events and seems to indicate authentic ancient knowledge.

The interpretation of scientific facts is predicated on ones worldview philosophy. In an ideal world, the facts should be accumulated until they suggest an unbiased hypothesis. Of course, many scientists believe that is what they are doing. However, planet Earth has some mysteries about it, which do not fit the heliogenesis model. Heliogenesis means that the planets in the solar system were somehow formed from the Sun.

Donald Patten, a leading forward thinker in celestial mechanics of this century, writes; “One problem in the assumption of heliogenesis is to explain how the earth-abundant materials are

derived from the Sun. A second problem arises in comparing the other densities of the various planets, ranging from the heaviest (Earth, 5.52) to the lightest (Saturn, 0.71), each issuing variously from the Sun (1.41).”... “It has already been demonstrated that the Sun comprises 99.8% of the mass of the solar system, yet it contains less than 2% of the angular momentum.”^{xix}

The Sun is a yellow G 2 star burning at around 6000 degrees K, which means that it is an early stage metals producing star and could not have created the amount of metals accumulated on Earth. Patten writes, “The composition of the Sun, so far as is known, is primarily of hydrogen (73%) and of helium (25%). Its most prominent metal is iron, at one-sixth of 1%. Iron comprises an estimated 5% of the Earth’s mass. In the Sun’s spectrum, silicon is even more rare, at one fourteenth of 1%. But silicon is the Earth’s second-most abundant element at 26% (next to oxygen) in the Earth’s crust. Uranium may be the most common element in the core of the Earth, and it is not found at all in the spectrum of the Sun.”^{xx} The common explanation is that in the early stages the Sun somehow blew all the light elements away. Yet, how can the Sun, which does not have the correct ratio of elements, selectively blow others away at a point in time when material from the Sun is supposed to be coalescing into planets?

Mr. Steidl, who holds a M.S. in astronomy, writes; “In earth rocks and meteorites there is also a relatively high abundance of lithium. This is somehow supposed to have been created in the early Sun and deposited in the planets during the high solar wind phase. But how can this high solar wind blow away a large portion of the matter in the solar system on the one hand, and at the same time deposit it into rocks on the planets? Another example of a hard to explain element is deuterium, a heavy form of hydrogen. Recall that normal hydrogen has one proton in the nucleus and one electron. But deuterium has an additional neutron in the nucleus, making it twice as heavy as normal hydrogen. In the Sun, and indeed in all the universe, deuterium abundance seems

relatively small. On earth, however, the ratio of deuterium to hydrogen is at least three times higher than in interstellar gas and about 40 times what it is in the Sun.”^{xxi} In November 1999, it was reported in *Nature Magazine* that the December 1995 Galileo probe into Jupiter’s atmosphere, found that the gases nitrogen, argon, krypton and xenon were two to three times more abundant than for a heliogenesis model. Thus, the Sun may have captured them.

Donald Patten follows the *Galactogenesis*,^{xxii} or *Planetary Catastrophe* theory in an attempt to account for problems associated with the heliogenesis theory. In the galactogenesis hypothesis, the Sun as a dark star in its movement in the galaxy captures a complex system of some “30 mutually revolving planets and satellites, some with pre-existing spin rates. The entire collection (or binary) came in on one single plane, now called the “ecliptic plane of the planets.”^{xxiii} The Sun’s immense gravity began to pierce and break the gravitational bonds of these planets as they revolved around each other.” He also postulates that in the course of time a planet called Astra fragmented, plastering the planets with asteroids, and an icy satellite called Glacia broke up as it neared Earth causing the ice age and the Biblical flood of Noah’s day.^{xxiv} Such a theory has credibility since the discovery in the late 1990’s that Jupiter’s satellite, Eruopa, has a watery ocean approximately 160 kilometers deep. So how did Eruopa get blessed with all this water—it is more water than in all of Earth’s oceans.

An Interlude

The fourth day is almost like a commentary interlude because it separates two types of life, unconscious plant life of the third day from conscious animal life of the fifth and sixth days.

Patten continues, “Before the capture of its family of planets, the Sun we propose was a less radiant star and possibly was a dark star.” “With a new family of planets, suddenly the Sun began to experience tides. If the Sun were a cold, crusty body, the tides would be inconsequential. But the Sun is massive, hot and its materials are volatile. The planet-induced tides began to create sunspots, and 11-year (average) sunspot cycles, cycles involving magnetic storms and intense frictions in the volatile solar mass. A frightening degree of turbulence developed. In short, the Sun had an ignition experience. It was something akin to: “And the Lord said, Let there be light, and there was light.”^{xxxvi}

The Shrinking Sun

Patten notes further, “Since its ignition experience, the Sun has been losing energy steadily, by radiation to space and by solar wind blow off. During the same time, the Sun has been cooling, and hence it as been shrinking, or contracting in size. The Sun has been shrinking in our century at a rate of about 4 miles in radius per year, or 60 feet per day.”^{xxxv}

The fourth day turned out to be quite interesting did it not? It would appear that if the galactogenesis hypothesis is correct, or if Earth was first enshrouded in dense clouds, God somehow had to make a statement to scientifically minded man in the 21st century that He knows what He is doing. Otherwise to follow the visibly logical approach of mythology, that the Sun came first, and if this in time is scientifically proven incorrect, then God isn’t really God after all.

The fifth day contains the differentiation of conscious life into life associated with the two seas, the sea of water and the sea of air, “*So God created the great creatures of the sea and every living and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good.*”^{xxxvii} It is at this point in time that God may very well have created the phylum of the dinosaurs. The word dinosaur comes from two Greek words meaning *terrible lizard*. The actual Hebrew for the sentence that has

been variously translated as “great creatures of the sea” is composed of two words *gadowl* and *tanniyn*. *Gadowl* means big, its root word *gadal* can mean a “large body.” *Tanniyn* is translated as a marine or land monster. In the book of Exodus 4:3, the staff of Moses becomes a *nachash* that is a snake. Later in Exodus 7:10 it becomes a *tanniyn*. “The general category for snakes is reptile. Thus Genesis 1:21 translates as: “And God created the big reptiles.”^{xxxviii}

The next differentiation is the creation of conscious life on land, “*God made the wild animals according to their kinds, the livestock according to their kinds and all the creatures that move along the ground according to their kinds. And God saw that it was good.*”^{xxix} The greatest differentiation occurs with the creation of man, a differentiation that concerns “you and me” on our trek to find the meaning of life. “*So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them.*”... “*God saw all that he had made, and it was very good. And it was evening, and there was morning the sixth day.*”^{xxx}

Next comes the special creation—man—made in the image of God! Charles Cochrane explains; “The image (likeness) of God in which man is created is not a quality in man, nor yet the sum of his qualities. There is no biblical warrant for our seeking to identify the image of God in terms of man’s attitudes, attributes, traits, characteristics, capabilities, or potentialities, however noble and praiseworthy these may be, or be thought to be. The image and likeness of God is what man is, by virtue of his having been created by God to be his counterpart and partner. Man is created to correspond to God his Creator. He is a person as God is Person. Accordingly, when God speaks to man He can and does expect a reply—a response. What God and man have in common, by virtue of man being created in God’s image and after His likeness is personhood. The relationship between the Creator and the creature who is made in His image and likeness is therefore “Person-to-person;” and man is in this relationship from his very beginning.”^{xxxi} This

thought raises another question, are humans born with an ingrained concept of eternity? Schaeffer writes,

It is not that God has not made both man and the great machine of the universe, but that he has made man different from the rest of the universe. And that which differentiates man from the machine is that his basic relationship is upward rather than downward or horizontal. He is created to relate to God in a way that none of the other created beings are. It is on the basis of being made in the image of God that everything is open to man. I understand the possibility of fellowship and of personality. I understand that because I am made in the image of God and because God is personal, both a personal relationship with God and the concept of fellowship as fellowship has validity.”... “Consequently, I should be thankful for the comprehension given here in Genesis—that in the flow of history man has been made in the image of God, for it gives an intellectual, emotional and psychological basis to my understanding of who I am.^{xxxii}

What is a Day?

The six days of creation have always caused considerable discussion. Schaeffer addresses this concern:

What does day mean in the days of creation? The answer must be held with some openness. In Genesis 5:2 we read: “Male and female created he them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created.” As it is clear that Adam and Eve were not created simultaneously, day in Genesis 5:2 does not mean a period of twenty-four hours. In other places in the Old Testament the Hebrew word day refers to an era, just as it often does in

English. See, for example, Isaiah 2:11, 12 and 17 for such a usage. The simple fact is that day in Hebrew (just as in English) is used in three separate senses: to mean (1) twenty-four hours, (2) the period of light during the twenty-four hours, and (3) an indeterminate period of time. Therefore, we must leave open the exact length of time indicated by day in Genesis. From the study of the word in Hebrew, it is not clear which way it is to be taken; it could be either way. In the light of the word as used in the Bible and the lack of finality of science concerning the problem of dating, in a sense there is no debate because there are no clearly defined terms upon which to debate.^{xxxiii}

Fiat Creationists take the position that God created the heavens and Earth in six literal days, and rested on the seventh. Paul Steidl writes, “There are certainly many fine Christians who, for a variety of reasons, prefer to accept scientists’ statements that the universe is many billions of years old. But it is much better to accept the word of God that He created it in six days.... There is also enough information given in genealogies of the Bible to indicate that this six-day creation did not take place billions of years ago but thousands.”^{xxxiv}

Dr. Sailhamer takes the position, from his study of the original Hebrew words, that there was an extensive history of some kind in the era, “In the Beginning.”—then, God in six literal 24 hour days created land, indeed a specific land, the garden of Eden, from inhospitable wasteland. Thus, his interpretation of the Hebrew words *tohu wabohu* (formless and empty) in Genesis 1:2 refer to already existing land covered by water that is being made hospitable for human life—Adam and Eve. This land, in his deliberations, is **the land** that is much later in history given to a man named Abraham. This land becomes the Promised Land given to the Israelites. Jerusalem becomes it’s capital city, or Mt. Zion, on which God focuses his attention.^{xxxv}

P.J. Wiseman from his study of ancient Babylonian tablets proposes that the six days are actual twenty-four hour days. He explains, “(1) The six ‘days’ divided from each other by an evening and morning, do not refer to the time occupied by God in his acts and the duration of the processes of Creation. (2) The six days refer to the time occupied in revealing to man the account of Creation. (3) God rested (lit. ceased) on the seventh day not for his own sake but for man’s sake, and because this revelation

Creation in Exodus 20:11

Sailhamer maintains that Moses did not use the merism “heaven and earth,” meaning the universe. A merism is a combined word term like—blackboard. He says there is a distinction between what Exodus 20:11 *appears* to say and what it actually *says*. Exodus 20:11 does not say God *created* “the heavens and earth” (universe) in six days; it says God *made* three things in six days—the sky, the land, and the seas—and then filled them during that same period. (ibid)

about Creation was finished on the sixth day, not because on that day (or period) the creation of the world was finished. (4) The narrative of Creation was probably written on six tablets. Later, it also appears to have become the custom in Babylonia to write the story of Creation on six tablets.” He comments further, “Another significant thing should be noticed. At the time ‘God said’ to man about Creation, he gave names to the things he spoke about. On the first day he called the light ‘day’ and the darkness he called ‘night’.”... “When we see that the names were given for man’s sake still another difficulty which has embarrassed many commentators disappears.”^{xxxvi}

Charles Cochrane puts the discussion of the meaning of the word day into its true perspective, “Those holding the view that a solar day is the correct interpretation at times derided and decried the view of others as being unfaithful to the letter of Scripture. Conversely, those who favor the longer or indefinite period have been known to pour scorn on those who hold to the solar

day. Surely, all of this is as unnecessary as it is unfortunate; and it distracts attention from the essential teachings of Genesis 1: that God is the Creator of the ends of the earth—and of you and me.”^{xxxvii}

The Jewish day begins at six in the evening, a period of darkness, which harkens back to the ancient Scriptures. It would appear that there is a much deeper symbolism than just night and day in relationship to the rotation of the earth. In the first case, God took the darkness of space and made light. Second, He is bringing light to the darkness of a heavenly rebellion. Third, in a parallel sense, the movement is from the physical world to the world of spirit and consciousness—in the grand finale, God made man in the “light” of his image and likeness. God then conferred upon man the Kingship of Earth by giving him unconditional dominion over it. *“So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them. So God blessed them and said to them, ‘Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it. Rule [or have dominion over] the fish of the sea and the birds of the air and over every living creature that moves on the ground.’”*^{xxxviii} Thus, from the cosmological viewpoint of God, Earth is anthropocentric (man centered) because He has created man and instituted him as Regent.

Notes:

ⁱ 1Proverbs 25:2

ⁱⁱ Lerner Eric, *The Big Bang Never Happened*, Time Books, Random House 1991, pg. 24

ⁱⁱⁱ Halliwell J., “Quantum Cosmology and the Creation of the Universe,” *Scientific American* December 1991, pg. 85

^{iv} Schaeffer Francis, *Genesis in Space and Time*, InterVarsity Press, 1972, pg. 36

^v Sailhamer Dr. John H., *Genesis Unbound*, Multnomah Books, Questar Publishers, Inc. 1996, pgs. 38 & 105

^{vi} Genesis 1:2

^{vii} Pember G.H., M.A., *Earth’s Earliest Ages*, (1876). New Edition Kregel Publications, G.H. Lang 1979, pg. 32

^{viii} Reid James, *God The Atom and The Universe*, Zondervan Publishing, Grand Rapids Michigan, 1968, pg. 111

^{ix} Sailhamer, *Ibid*, pgs. 61 & 64

^x Pember, *Ibid*, pg. 31

^{xi} Isaiah 34:9-11

^{xii} Jeremiah 4:23-26

^{xiii} Kelly William, *In the Beginning and The Adamic Earth*, Bible Treasury 1894, reprinted 1970, pg. 18

^{xiv} Miller Hugh, *The Testimony of the Rocks or, Geology in its Bearings, on the Two Theologies, Natural and Revealed*; Boston: Gould and Lincoln, 1857, pg. 396

^{xv} Patten Donald, *Biblical Flood and The Ice Epoch*, Pacific Meridian Publishing Co., 1966, pg. 14

-
- ^{xvi} Schaeffer, *Ibid*, pg. 34
^{xvii} Genesis 1:11-12
^{xviii} Genesis 1:18
^{xix} Patten, *Ibid*, pg. 284
^{xx} Patten Donald, *Catastrophism and the Old Testament*, Pacific Meridian Publishing Co. 1988, pg. 60
^{xxi} Steidl Paul M., *The Earth, The Stars, and the Bible*, Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company, Phillipsburg, New Jersey, 1978, pg. 119
^{xxii} Patten, *Biblical Flood etc.* *Ibid*, pg. 299
^{xxiii} Patten, *Catastrophism etc.*, *Ibid*, pg. 28
^{xxiv} Patten, *Ibid*, pg. 28, 34
^{xxv} Patten, *Ibid*, pg. 29
^{xxvi} Patten, *Ibid*, pg. 29
^{xxvii} Genesis 1:21
^{xxviii} Schroder Gerald L., *The Science of God*, Broadway Books New York 1997, pg. 193
^{xxix} Genesis 1:25
^{xxx} Genesis 1:27 & 31
^{xxxi} Cochrane C. Charles, *The Gospel According to Genesis*, William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1984, pg. 27
^{xxxii} Schaeffer, *Ibid*, pg. 47
^{xxxiii} Schaeffer, *Ibid*, pg. 57
^{xxxiv} Steidl, *Ibid*, pg. 3
^{xxxv} Sailhamer, *Ibid*, 62, 82, 95, 106
^{xxxvi} Wiseman P. J., *Clues To Creation In Genesis*, Marshall Morgan & Scott, London, 1948, pg. 110
^{xxxvii} Cochrane, *Ibid*, pg. 24
^{xxxviii} Genesis 1:27, 28

Chapter 12

The Garden

Will they sleep through the night?

Will they learn to read? Will they get good grades? Will they make the travel team? Will they avoid drugs: Will they be responsible about sex?

Will they get into a decent school?

These are just some of the questions parents ask themselves as their children grow up and move on. But there is one overriding question that parents constantly ask themselves: Will they be good? It is as ageless as the Bible, which differentiates between “children of light” and “children of darkness.”ⁱ

Chapter 1, of the book of Genesis, details God’s viewpoint of the cosmic creation, from the immensity of space, to the galaxy, to the solar system, to planet Earth, through to the creation of unconscious life, to conscious life and finally the zenith of creation—a sentient animal—mankind. In Chapter 2, the setting becomes personal, more specific; God describes the specifics of where and how He did it. He plants a garden in the east in Eden, He appears on Earth; He creates and communicates with man. Later we read of Him “walking in the garden in the cool of the day, He is near, intimate, and solicitous for man’s well-being.”ⁱⁱ It is from this garden, the Garden of Eden or

garden in Eden, that all plant life and animal life will migrate across the continent of Pangaea. From its description, one can almost smell the fresh moist air, the aroma from **the land** of water-laden clay and mud, which has so recently been raised out of the waters. Only someone looking down upon the scene, and personally involved in the action, can give the details of the four rivers; He is the Word—The Son—the second member of the Trinity (Yeshua-Jesus), “*He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made.*”ⁱⁱⁱ

The watching angels must have been enthralled, with a sense of joy and excitement as The One walked on the steaming drying earth and laughingly scattered the seeds that He had so thoughtfully designed. Behind Him, around Him as He scattered they rooted and grew rapidly in the pristine environment.

The principle event to God, in the creation story, is the creation of man. He describes the creation of man and then the details of the garden. In a study on Genesis, Pastor Cochrane comments, “Nevertheless, the purpose in both narratives [Chapters 1 and 2] is the same:

Jonah and the Vine

Much later in time, Jonah, the rebellious prophet had such an experience. As Jonah sat down in the hot sun “*the Lord God provided a vine and made it grow up over Jonah to give shade for his head to ease his discomfort.*” This is the same Jonah that was swallowed by a great whale. Therefore, it is obvious that God can cause plants to grow quickly if He so desires.^{iv}

to show the preeminence of mankind over all other created things. The first story [Chapter 1] does this by presenting the creation of man as the culmination (and crown) of God’s work. The second [Chapter 2] achieves the same effect by placing him first in the order of creation,”^v i.e. the most important creature.

The Creation of Adam

“Now the Lord God had formed out of the ground all the beasts of the field and all the birds of the air.” Subsequently, “The Lord God formed man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and man became a living being.”^{vi} The word ground is translated from the word *adamah*, which means red earth. Red earth is high in iron similar to blood—full of symbolism isn’t it?

Even as God notably created unconscious life separately from conscious life, and even as He also created the animals from the red earth—it is only man that, He “breathed into his nostrils the breath of life.” It would appear that God is emphasizing that man is *of the something more*—he has the *eternal breath* of God. John Medina PhD, a molecular biologist, comments:

I believe what was transferred was divine in origin and thus inescapable in application. God breathed something into us; God breathed His image into us; God did something to us that transmitted value to us. This simple bending of His love toward us gave us all of the worth we possess. Which is infinite, considering who was doing the bending. What we became as a result of that attitude was something of a gift; even in rock bottom carnality, we were transformed into creatures the Bible describes as only a little lower than angels. We became eligible for an eternal glory, a bag of molecules suddenly given the indescribable worth of a collective crucifix. As a race, we were, and indeed are, the recipients of a tremendous degree of value.^{vii}

In today’s society, the humanist has no such philosophical base to validate human worth. “So the Bible tells me who I am. It tells me how I am differentiated from all other things. I do not need to be confused, therefore, between myself and animal life or between myself and the

complicated machines of the second half of the twentieth century,” states Dr. Schaeffer.^{viii} The word *being* or in some translations *soul* is also used of animals. He writes, “Lest we make too much of the word soul, we should note that this word is also used in relation to other living things with conscious life. So in reality the emphasis here is not on the soul as opposed to the body but on the fact that by a specific and definite act God created man to be a living thing with conscious life. God made man in his image by a specific act of creation.”^{ix} A man or a woman is *of the something more*, he or she has personhood just as God is person; in this way we have an I-thou relationship with God. Moreover, that something more of personhood has tremendous implications in the act of free will, and an individual’s eternal destiny.

It is obvious from God’s viewpoint that Adam was created with the ability to communicate and to reason, since his Creator brought before him all the animals to name. Schaeffer reflects,

The universe, therefore, speaks of Being existing. It speaks of order and reason. It speaks of a good and reasonable God, and it speaks of a personal God. The end of man is to stand as a finite, personal being in personal relationship with the infinite, personal God who is there. When we hear the first command of Christ to love God with all our heart soul and mind, we are not faced with just an abstract duty, a devotional exercise separated from all that is reasonable. Rather we have an infinite reference point that gives meaning to all of our finite reference points. This infinite reference point not only exists, but is personal and can communicate with us and we with him, an infinite reference point whom we may love. This is the purpose of man: to love God on a personal not a machine level. ^{x*10}

Feelings of joy and innocent exultation must have been exhilarating to the brilliant first man, Adam. Noticeably however he had no counter part, no alter ego. Cochrane comments,

Up to this point the man is lone, and lonely; and God has pronounced that circumstance “not good” (v. 18)—which means, not in accordance with his will for man. The formation of the woman from the rib of man signifies that she is “of” the man and “for” the man; not in the sense that she belongs to him, but rather that she belongs with him. As the text makes abundantly clear, she is brought before him as God’s gift, not as his possession. And that relationship endures. For the man to regard or to treat the woman as though she had become his property is an obscene violation of the creation ordinance. The woman is a human being in her own right and has her own existence apart from that of man, as one created by God. And in being presented to the man she does not cease to belong to God.^{xi}

The last differentiation (you ladies will love this) was Eve, from man (Adam). In each previous differentiation, there was an increase in order and complexity. “Well” said my wife, “You’ve finally figured it out.” Seriously though, woman is unique even as man (male) is unique. Cristine Gorman writes,

Why Can’t a woman think more like a man? That’s the sort of question one would expect to hear from an unrepentant chauvinist like Shaw’s Professor Higgins. But a growing number of scientists have begun wondering the same thing. Relying in part on advanced brain-scanning techniques, they have amassed tantalizing hints that men and women may use their heads in subtly

distinctive ways. Just last week a new study showed that in science tests, teenage boys who scored in the top 5% outnumbered girls 7 to 1, while girls outperformed boys in reading composition. In general men as a group excel at tasks that involve orienting objects in space—like reading a map without having to turn it so it lines up with the road. Women, on other hand seem to be more adept at communication, both verbal and nonverbal. Readings of MRI scans suggest one reason: women seem to have stronger connections between the two halves (hemispheres) of their brains.^{xii}

Previously the differentiations moved from darkness to light—now is there an increase in spiritual sensitivity? In the “freedom of worship world” there is a subtle suggestion that women are much more active in the search for spiritual meaning. Missionaries in male dominated religious systems report that, generally the woman is the one who first perceives of a deeper spiritual longing.^{xiii} The breath of life flowed into the man, and from the man into the woman. “*The man said, “This is now bone of my bones flesh of my flesh; she shall be called woman”—complete genetic compatibility! “For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and they shall become one flesh.”*^{xiv} In this bright and glorious moment, in the Garden of Eden, the complex sentient biological machines stood before their Creator.

Ape-man

From an evolutionist’s viewpoint, there is no reason for the female to be counterpart to the male. He would be grunting, whacking the trees and animals with his club and possibly smack the female into submission to satisfy his bloated sex drive, and therefore continue the propagation of his healthy-fit DNA into modern man.

The uniqueness of a man and a woman is brought together in the unity of marriage—and the ultimate of love and communication is two individual persons communicating horizontally to each other and vertically to their Creator. Love and communication are of a higher order, a mirror of the love and communication within the Godhead. Dr. Schaeffer writes,

Of course, man is called upon not just to love God but also to love other men. And suddenly, in this setting, this kind of love becomes a sensible statement. Even the unbelieving man or the blasphemer who falls in love testifies, whether he knows it or not, to the fact of what God is. As bare being exhibits the existence of God, as an originally good universe exhibits the moral goodness of God, so the communication of man to man, and one man's loving another (whether in a man-woman sexual relationship or in the relationship of friendship), testify to what is. God can say, "Do you want to know something of what I am like? Look at creation as I made it." The universe is not an extension of the essence of God, but in all its parts, it does speak of him. The man-woman relationship is no longer a mockery, or a curse, as it often is for modern man. We know that God did not make man as an individual to stand alone for very long, only being able to love God. For while loving God was the purpose of his creation, God quickly gave him a counterpart-like himself, yet different—that immediately opened up love and communication on man's own level. Therefore, each time we see a truly loving man-woman relationship or a truly loving friend relationship, while these things have great value in themselves, yet we see something more than just mannishness loving mannishness. Each of these at the same time stands as a testimony of who God is.^{xv}

For an evolutionist, it is quite easy for someone unfamiliar with these things to believe that they just evolved—after all, why not? “Such a belief isn’t based on detailed, sober inquiry into the mechanistic details that produced the organizational marvel before us. Rather, it is based on one’s ignorance of the degree of the miracle necessary to produce the structure in question. An engineer, for example, would never say that an internal combustion engine materialized of its own accord. Yet the heart—a wonder whose mechanical cycle dwarfs the thermodynamic internal combustion counterpart, which on average reliably pumps about two thousand gallons of blood over a period of seventy-two years—is glibly said to have, “just happened.”^{xvi} Not only are the physical characteristics and capabilities of the human body a marvelous conception, there is the innate programming of this sentient machine that makes it function as man—the animal.

Each human being is a new living identity in space-time. In the first twenty-four hours, after the male sperm has penetrated the female egg, (a process called *Mitosis*), a male pronucleus and a female pronucleus are formed like miniature golf balls within the egg. “Then intricate little spindle fibers form like frost over each separate golf ball. When the chromosomal duplication is complete, the outer shells of the golf balls melt away. The chromosomes from each gender are thus exposed, like shy children at a junior-high dance, standing in a line facing each other. Chromosome one of the female soon pairs with chromosome one of the male. Chromosome two of the female pairs with chromosome two of the male. This pairing keeps happening until all pairs are lined up. This is the first joining of two people to produce a third unique entity. [Here is where you get your dad’s curly hair or your mother’s, or even grandmother’s eyes. This union of ninety-two chromosomes then divides into two cells and the preembryo begins.] The developmental program of a fertilized egg carries information about how to construct a human body and how to feed it. Genes are continually being activated and deactivated by the program to implant the preembryo and get it hooked up to

mom.... Identical twins, on the other hand, are just that, genetically identical. They are not formed as the result of two separate fertilizations. They are created as the result of a single fertilization. The splitting event occurs after the embryo has already begun forming. This separation causes two genetically identical humans to be formed from a single fertilized egg. The same is true for identical triplets, quads, and quints.^{»xvii} The breaths of life from two individual beings meet genetically, to form a new unique living being.

The division of the egg into twins does not split the spiritual identity in half, nor does the Creator reach into his storehouse and implant a new soul, in terms of that mysterious essence. Nor does a reincarnated soul pop in from somewhere. It is here—on this planet that unique persons in the image of God are being created by the transmission of the “breath of life.” You are unique in the universe with both a physical and a spiritual dimension of personhood.

Sentient Free Will

Yet, there is something more. “Consciousness” says Antonio Damasio, a neurologist at the University of Iowa, “is a concept of your own self, something that you reconstruct moment by moment on the basis of the image of your own body, your own autobiography and a sense of your intended future.”^{»xviii} A deeper level of programming (in computer programming terms) evaluates subjective experiences called feelings, such as joy, sorrow, pain, and pleasure etc. within the realm of consciousness. How can evolution produce laughter? Yet deeper than this, is the process called “free will,” which must evaluate action and decision with respect to some format or code. Consciousness is not “free will.” For example, let us say that your programmer subtly writes your evaluation code—to never eat an orange. You could consciously go through life happily never eating an orange—unless someone violates your superficial free will and forces you to eat one. However, did you have true free will under the circumstances of your biased programming, which you were

not aware of? When it comes to morality, evolutionists of course would have to say there is no underpinning code, so there can be no appealing to morality because there is no code to define such a concept.

This problem of morality was addressed in a debate “GOD VS SCIENCE” put together by *TIME*, November 13, 2006. The debate occurred between Richard Dawkins of *The Blind Watchmaker* and *The God Delusion*, and Dr. Francis Collins a “forthright Christian,” director of the U.S. National Human Genome Research Institute, who “headed a multinational 2,400-scientist team that co-mapped the 3 billion biochemical letters of our genetic blue-print.”

COLLINS: For you to argue that our noblest acts are a misfiring of Darwinian behavior does not do justice to the sense we all have about the absolutes that are involved here of good and evil. Evolution may explain some features of the moral law, but it can't explain why it should have any real significance. If it is solely an evolutionary convenience, there is really no such thing as good or evil. But for me, it is much more than that. The moral law is a reason to think of God as plausible—not just a God who set the universe in motion but a God who cares about human beings, because we seem uniquely amongst creatures on the planet to have this far-developed sense of morality. What you've said implies that outside of the human mind, tuned by evolutionary processes, good and evil have no meaning. Do you agree with that?

DAWKINS: Even the question you're asking has no meaning to me. Good and evil—I don't believe that there is hanging out there, anywhere, something called good and something called evil. I think that there are good things that happen and bad things that happen.

Michael Lemonick writes, “As neurologists, psychologists and biologists have zeroed in more and more precisely on the physical cause of mental disorders, they have found themselves addressing a much deeper mystery, a set of interrelated conundrums probably as old as humanity: What, precisely, is the mind, the elusive entity where intelligence, decision making, perception, awareness and sense of self reside? Where is it located? How does it work? Does it arise from purely physical processes—pulses of electricity zapping from brain cell to brain cell, helped along their way by myriad complex chemicals? Or is it something beyond the merely physical—something ethereal that might be close to the spiritual concept of the soul?”^{xxix} It is at this juncture that we need to define our terms of reference, what is meant by soul? Scientists use the term loosely to define that something, that energy, that is different than body. Pember writes “in the very beginning of Scripture we are warned against the popular phraseology of soul and body, which has long sustained an erroneous belief that man consists of but two parts.” Man is composed of *body*, *soul* and *spirit*. God has precisely defined these terms for us in his Word.^{xx} “*For the Word of God is living and active. Sharper than any two-edged sword it penetrates even to dividing soul and spirit, joints and marrow (body), it judges the thoughts and attitudes of the heart.*”^{xxxi} “*May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*”^{xxxii} Pember continues,

Now the body we may term the sense-consciousness, the soul the self-consciousness, and the spirit the God-consciousness. For the body gives us the use of the five senses; the soul comprises the intellect which aids us in the present state of existence, and the emotions which proceed from the senses; while the spirit is our noblest part, which came directly from God, and by which alone we are able to apprehend and worship Him. This last, as we remarked

above, can only act upon the body through the medium of the soul: and we have a good illustration of the fact in the words of Mary: “My soul doeth magnify the Lord, and my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour” (Luke 1:46, 47). Here the change in tense shows that the spirit first conceived joy in God, and then, communicating with the soul, roused it to give expression to the feeling by means of the bodily organs.^{xxiii}

The body is the container created by information specifications of the DNA, and by implication “spirits are molded or shaped on earth by flesh,”^{xxiv} which are the decisions of the mind that become physical actions in space-time. This point is critical to understand—it is the eternal spiritual breath of life that God has breathed into man (not animals)—such that the activity of free will decision by the conscious will of the person, will mold their spiritual body and ultimately its eternal destiny. Man has the cognitive capacity of the mind to receive, comprehend and transmit information from the past, through the present and on to the future. He can conceptualize and visualize abstract concepts and “Man alone of all known species within the universe, has this distinctive attribute—the capacity of the “word.””... A “child seems to possess at birth an innate structure that enables a natural understanding of the spoken word. What this means is that the capacity of the “word,” the unique distinction that gives man the faculty of human language, is itself genetically traceable to the information specification along the DNA strand which encodes human life and which, therefore, came into existence at the time human life was created.”^{xxv}

The brain is a tremendously complex biological computer. “Using an MRI scanner, Hanna Damasio has examined the living brains of hundreds of patients, and she and her husband have identified regions they think may serve as convergence zones in the brain’s left hemisphere. An area in the temporal lobe pulls together information about the names of objects, animals and people, for

instance, while another area in the frontal cortex appears to act as the nexus for verbs. A third oversees the task of assembling nouns and verbs into sentences.”^{xxvi}

Man and animals have innate programming called instincts; man alone has the power of reason to deal with the compulsion of his instincts. Two hungry animals will fight for the available food; however, by compassion or empathy you may give to some one in need—an act of self sacrifice; (the act of a mother hen to protect her chicks is a programmed act of sacrifice). The deep under laying

So Why do Apes Sill Grunt?

“A region within the Broca’s area known as Brodmann’s area 44, critical for the power of speech, is larger in the left hemisphere of humans than the right. A study has now found that the same asymmetry exists in other great ape species [note—from an evolutions viewpoint you are an ape]: chimpanzees, bonobos and gorillas.... Researchers conjecture that the area may have originally been associated with the production of gestures and used by apes for communication. This area eventually became used as a source of speech in modern humans.”^{xxvii}

programming of man, possibly in the gray matter of the brain, suggests that the formation of rules of do and don’t and a fear of non-being are possibly an alter form for the concept of eternity. Dr. Gange writes, “Both in behavior and communications, animals live under the tyranny of their instincts. For the most part, man is free of these things; this freedom is the sword that divides human and animal life, and the root that grows a stairway to the stars.”^{xxviii}

Cosmic Automatons

“Will robots inherit the earth,” questions Marvin Minsky? He continues,

“Yes, but they will be our children.” Eventually an artificial body could be built.

“Hearts are merely clever pumps. Muscles and bones are motors and beams. Digestive

systems are chemical reactors.” “With further advances, no part of the brain will be out-of-bounds for attaching new accessories. In the end, we will find ways to replace every part of the body and brain and thus repair all the defects and injuries that make our lives so brief. Needless to say, in doing so we will be making ourselves into machines. Does this mean that machines will replace us? I do not feel that it makes much sense to think in terms of “us” and “them.” I much prefer the attitude of Hans P. Moravec of Carnegie Mellon University, who suggests that we think of these future intelligent machines as our own “mind-children.”^{»xxix}

Mr. Minsky maintains there is no breath of life or spark of life. He writes, “These thinkers refer to this missing essence by various names: sentience, consciousness, spirit or soul. Philosophers write entire books to prove that because of this deficiency, machines can never feel or understand the kinds of things that people do. Yet every proof in each of these books is flawed by assuming, in one way or another, what it purports to prove the existence of some magical spark that has no detectable properties. I have no patience with such arguments.”^{»xxx} Let’s for discussions sake grant Minsky his future world of robot technology. However, he seems to have a problem programming free will, since he continues in his article, “How many people should occupy the earth? What sorts of people should they be? How should we share the available space? Clearly, we must change our ideas about making additional children. Individuals now are conceived by chance. Someday, instead, they could be “composed” in accord with considered desires and designs.” At this point one asks *whose designs and desires?* In speaking of the microfactories that would produce the components to produce the robots he says, “In particular, we must always take care to maintain control over those things (such as ourselves) that might be able to reproduce themselves.”^{»xxxi}

It would appear that in order to make the robot world work we need to eliminate free will out of the programming. Now, what is the purpose of all this—to gain wealth, knowledge or maybe to propagate the universe with robot microfactories? So, whatever happened to eternity—that elusive fear of non-being that is programmed into man? Here we reach the conundrum. Man cannot guarantee, by any means of programming, the physical eternity of his mind-children-machines. Instead of going from dust to dust, he goes from dust to rust.

The Future of God’s Biological Marvel

God, the Creator of the human biological marvel, on the other hand, states that He **can** guarantee eternity. *“For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only begotten Son (Yeshua-Jesus) that whoever believes in him shall never perish but have eternal life.”*^{xxxii} The physical body *“is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. If there is a natural body, there is a spiritual body.... I declare to you, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable.... Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet.”*^{xxxiii}

Our thinking in this modern era is so prejudiced by the philosophy of evolution that it is difficult to grasp God’s description of mankind’s origin. There are many innately brilliant people; for some it is music, others the arts, and others mathematics and science. Is it possible that this kind of brilliance was focused in the genetic makeup of our first parents, and that we as mankind have been degenerating? Did Genesis man conquer space, questions Dr. Emil Gaverluk?^{xxxiv} It is a thought-provoking question. If Earth did suffer a major flood catastrophe (Noah’s flood), and with the prejudiced thinking of today’s intelligentsia towards an evolutionary beginning—how many subtle items from possibly a technologically advanced culture lie buried under rock and dirt, or may have been uncovered in river beds and gone unrecognized?

Gaverluk writes, “I believe this is how God meant man to be: a perfect body covered with glory and power, sustained by the perfect “spirit” within.... Adam’s spirit permeated his physical body. He must have been a gorgeous creature. Eve must have been exceedingly beautiful. Both had everything to begin with in their bodies, minds, and spirits. Somehow the atoms of their bodies effused photons, beams of light energy.”^{xxxv} Is this impossible? —Not according to the Holy Scriptures! Moses’ face shone on Mount Sinai when he came down from the presence of God, and Jesus’ radiated the light of glory when he was transfigured before his disciples. The redeemed of the Lord will shine in the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, at some unknown time in the future.

God placed Adam in the magnificent Garden of Eden, and then created his beautiful soul mate, Eve. “*The man and his wife were both naked and they felt no shame.*”^{xxxvi} Moreover, God, when He first placed Adam in the garden, pointed out a tree with fruit on it, and as we would say today, “looking at Adam eye to eye,” gave him a direct command. “*You are free to eat from any tree in the garden; but you must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, for when you eat of it you will surely die.*”^{xxxvii} One can almost imagine the Lord saying “Trust me; trust me in this small detail.” How many times have you said, “Trust me” to someone, particularly your children?

Adam was also given instructions to look after the garden “to work it and take care of it.”^{xxxviii} The words “care of it” are derived from the Hebrew word *shamar*, which actually means to hedge about, to guard, protect or attend to. The major question is—from what? The Expositor’s Bible Commentary^{xxxix} suggests that there is only a minor difference in spelling of “to work it” or to “worship.” In either case, it requires love, trust and obedience. Adam and his beautiful wife, Eve, bask in the warm sunshine amongst sweet scented flowers being kissed by glittering butterflies, while the trill of songbirds echo in the skies. It is the dawn of creation—light shines in the garden.

Notes:

- ⁱ Coles Robert, "The Moral Intelligence of Children," *TIME*, January 20 1997
- ⁱⁱ Cochrane Charles C., *The Gospel According to Genesis*, William B Eedmans Publishing Company, 1984, pg. 31
- ⁱⁱⁱ John 1:3
- ^{iv} Jonah 4:6
- ^v Cochrane, Ibid, pg. 31
- ^{vi} Genesis 2:19 & 7
- ^{vii} Medina John Ph.D., *The Outer Limits of Life*, Thomas Nelson Publishers Nashville Ten. 1991, pg. 265
- ^{viii} Schaeffer Francis, *Genesis in Space and Time*, Intervarsity Press, 1972, pg. 51
- ^{ix} Schaeffer, Ibid, pg. 39
- ^x Schaeffer, Ibid, pg. 60
- ^{xi} Cochrane, Ibid, pg. 37
- ^{xii} Gorman Christine, *TIME*, July 31, 1995
- ^{xiii} Bowers Ariel, Northwest Baptist Theological College Study
- ^{xiv} Genesis 2:23
- ^{xv} Schaeffer, Ibid, pg. 61
- ^{xvi} Gange Robert Dr., *Origins and Destiny*, World Books, 1986, pg. 107
- ^{xvii} Medina John PhD, Ibid, pg. 94
- ^{xviii} Lemonick Michael D., "Glimpses of the Mind," *TIME* July 31, 1995
- ^{xix} Lemonick, Ibid.
- ^{xx} Pember G.H., *Earth's Earliest Ages*, 1876, Kregel Publications edited by G. H. Lang 1942, pg. 76
- ^{xxi} Hebrews 4:12
- ^{xxii} 1 Thessalonians 5:23
- ^{xxiii} Pember, Ibid, pg. 76
- ^{xxiv} Gange Robert Dr., Ibid, pg. 150
- ^{xxv} Gange, Ibid, pg. 144
- ^{xxvi} Lemonick, Ibid
- ^{xxvii} Mirsky Steve, "Parts of Speech," *Scientific American* February 2002, pg. 28
- ^{xxviii} Gange, Ibid, pg. 128
- ^{xxix} Minsky Marvin, "Will Robots Inherit the Earth?," *Scientific American* October 1994, pgs. 111, 113
- ^{xxx} Minsky, Ibid, pg. 112
- ^{xxxi} Minsky, Ibid, pg. 111
- ^{xxxii} John 3:16
- ^{xxxiii} 1 Corinthians 15:44, 51
- ^{xxxiv} Gaverluk Emil PhD, *Did Genesis Man Conquer Space?* Thomas Nelson Inc. Publishers, Nashville Tennessee, 1974
- ^{xxxv} Gaverluk, Ibid, pg. 27
- ^{xxxvi} Genesis 2:25
- ^{xxxvii} Genesis 2:16-17
- ^{xxxviii} Genesis 2:15
- ^{xxxix} *Expositor's Bible Commentary*, Vol. 2, pg. 47

Chapter 13

The Rebellion

For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.ⁱ

One upon a time, a long time ago, possibly before Earth became waste and empty, a powerful cherub stood defiantly before the council of the Almighty, and was stripped of his authority to govern. The Bible, as we have established, is a supernaturally inspired book. Hidden in its writings are references to ancient cosmic events that have a direct impact on modern microdot man on planet Earth. So how did the civilization of planet Earth become aligned with the cosmic rebellion against the Great Assembly governing the Universe? If it isn't part of the rebellion, then all the death, malicious evil, terror and destruction taking place on this planet is just part of natural selection—the survival of the fittest. Yet, it seems as if the hypothesis of evolution is slowly losing favor with the general public, because it is not answering man's spiritual concerns. Spiritual fears of non-being and the search for "something more," appear to lie at the heart of the rising interest in the paranormal.

The philosophy of evolution is not being defeated by a belief in a beneficial creator—God, but by the concept that life was, or is being, genetically engineered by space aliens who are making subtle contacts with the human race. John Rennie, *Scientific American's* Editor in Chief, writes,

Antiscience has become like “political correctness,” an all-purpose slur that defines the position of the person using the phrase better than it does the thing being described. Are astrology columns, creationist textbooks, television programs about angels and tracts on feminist physics all antiscience? Are they all antiscientific in the same way? Does calling them antiscience do much to explain or refute them?... Alarmed by the public’s continuing enthusiasm for the paranormal, the illogical and the unreasonable, many scientists and skeptics have gone on the defensive. They warn that this wave of irrationalism threatens to engulf society and, in the process, impede science by robbing it of support and brains suitably equipped for the rigors of future research. ...Antievolution movements damage the public’s understanding of all biology and of the incremental nature of scientific progress. That is why we must be prepared to pursue the maddening fight, over and over again, to make sure that evolution is taught in schools. Ridiculous assertions about UFOs and the supernatural need to be answered. In our zeal to defend science, however, let’s not make the mistake of over generalizing or falling into conspiracy-minded thinking.ⁱⁱ

Certainly, the philosophy of evolution is a purge against the paranormal. However, scientists should ask themselves—how many are using so called bio-feed back techniques, eastern meditation, séances and ultra methods of self-enlightenment to enhance their personal lives, their business success, or their scientific prowess? These techniques are gates, or channels, to the paranormal, the

very thing they are deploring. Notwithstanding our scientific age, the Internet media is saturated with reports of the supernatural. Is it a coincidence, or is there a mysterious alien intelligence at work?

A huge face in the Cydonia region of Mars stares silently up at orbiting satellites. In the 1970s and recent 21st century high altitude satellite photographs, the humanoid features are unmistakable. It appears just like a facemask, laid in a sand box. “Just wind created” features said NASA scientists.

Ancient Footprints

On Earth, large human footprints have been exposed in rock formations with dinosaur tracks, such as at Paluxy River Texas (Excellent photographic evidence is shown on web site, www.bible.ca). They are superior to those dated at a uniformitarian age of 3.6 million years found by Mary Leaky in Africa. “And yet the Paluxy evidence is not accepted. Since it cannot be made to fit into the evolutionary scheme without a major revision, most evolutionists prefer either to ignore the evidence, to ascribe it to an unknown animal, or to ridicule the credentials of the discoverers.”^{iv}

The face of Mars and the nearby pyramid like mountains (which may also be of intelligent design) can be easily found on the Internet.ⁱⁱⁱ

The Cosmic Rebellion

There is a remarkable coincidence to the positions of the Mars pyramids and the face of Mars, to the pyramids of Egypt and the ancient island of Tyre that once existed just off of the coast of what is now Lebanon. Look at a present day map of the Middle East. Mentally position yourself as if you are a satellite over Israel or Jordan looking west towards the Mediterranean Sea. Egypt and the pyramids would be on your left; the island of Tyre would be on your right. Now, take the satellite picture of the Mars face looking at the face the right way up. The face is on your right and

again the pyramids on your left. (The distance from the D&M pyramid on Mars to the face is some 20 km and on Earth, the distance from the Great pyramid of Egypt to the island of Tyre is some 550 km.) The particular interest in the ancient Island of Tyre is not that it looks like a face, but that God spoke supernatural judgments against the rulers of Tyre.^v The first judgment was against the physical ruler and the second against the behind the scenes supernatural ruler, described as the “King of Tyre.” Lucifer, the rebel guardian cherub who may have been ruler of the terrestrial planets, is the supernatural ruler. God states, “*Through your widespread trade you were filled with violence, and you sinned. So I drove you in disgrace from the mount of God, and I expelled you, O guardian cherub, from among the fiery stones.*”^{vi} The word *stones* in Hebrew means *built stones*. Built stones may mean stars, or possibly planets that revolve around balls of fire. The implication is that they were *created*.

Many passages in the Bible use the words “mount” or “mountain” as synonyms for government or systems of worship. Satan was possibly the High Priest, through whom came orders, decrees, and worship of Jehovah, the Lord of Hosts. Dr. Barnhouse explains:

So Satan, passing through his hands the merchandise of authority from God above to the creation below, and returning the merchandise of worship from the world of spirit beings to God above, decided that, since he was wise and beautiful to such a degree, he could retain some of the worship for himself and that he could originate some of the authority in himself. Thus, he filled his heart with the violence of rebellion. He had been entrusted with God’s government, priesthood and spokespersonship, but he wanted to act independently of God. He who was prophet—could he not give orders under his own authority instead of being utterly dependent upon the invisible God? He who found himself, as he

was in truth, so magnificent, so beautiful, so filled with power, sealing up the sum—could he not take some of the worship of the multitudes for himself? Was there not worthiness in himself that should be acknowledged? Here is the original sin.^{vii}

The Bible, in Genesis chapter 6, uses the term *Sons of God* to refer to alien beings, angels, who made contact with humanity in the early stages of our civilization. In the opinion of some scholars, they may have been a pre-Adam civilization. Watcher Ministries explain,

Satan was created to lead the angelic hierarchy, the Sons of God or ben Elohim, ruling over physical civilizations of angels on planets, such as the one still in evidence on Mars. After Satan rebelled, the center of his angelic civilization was destroyed “from among the stones of fire,” yet the Bible tells us Satan is still waiting for the time of God’s judgment, Satan is not in hell. He is still allowed audience before God, where he accuses the faithful (Rev.) and he still roams above and within the earth (Job). Since Satan is the most beautiful and powerful cherub, Prince of the powers of the Air, intelligence behind UFO phenomena, the authority over all the aerial regions outward from the earth, why is he so concerned with the planet Earth and the goings on of Humans? Satan knows he and his angels will soon be stranded on Earth, “a place no longer found for them in heaven” (Rev. 12:8), and they must prepare the Earth to welcome them at their arrival.^{viii}

The asteroid belt between Mars and Jupiter is thought by some to once have been a fifth terrestrial planet—Astra or Rahab. “When Satan and his angels rebelled, God destroyed their literal

dwelling places. According to scripture, this destruction was swift and decisive. The fifth terrestrial planet, which God calls “Rahab” (boaster, pride), was obliterated. Job 26:11-13: ‘The pillars of heaven are stunned at His rebuke. He quiets the sea with His power, and by his understanding He shatters (*mawkhats*, dashes asunder), Rahab, by His spirit the heavens were beautiful; His hand forbids the fugitive snake.’ Satan is described as a snake trying to escape the judgment of God, symbolized by the constellation Draconis. Draconis winds itself between the Big and Little Dipper, which represented to the ancients, the “flock of the good shepherd” and the “stronghold of the saved.”^{xix}

Planet Earth may have been the seat of government. Its uniqueness as indicated by ancient geological strata would suggest that it was, as it still is, a gleaming jewel in the heavens. God asks Job “*where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth?*”^x This seems to parallel the first words of the Bible, “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.” It was a time when the ben Elohim sang for joy—then something happened. God’s judgment was swift and decisive against the rebellion. It would appear that Earth also suffered chaos. God describes a scene of judgment when the sea covered the earth and it was wrapped in thick darkness, when the wicked were shaken out of it. “*The wicked are denied their light, and their upraised arm is broken*” (rebellion).^{xi} These thoughts are apparent in the words of Jeremiah that Earth was made waste and empty all its towns were in ruins before the Lord and his fierce anger.^{xii} God would not have a rebellious “will” in the heavens. Barnhouse puts these thoughts into perspective:

We have seen that back in the beginning, God put a curse upon the earth when Lucifer rebelled and it became a ruin, waste and desolate, and darkness covered the face of the deep. Then God withdrew into the majestic silence of His infinite heaven and left Satan to brood over the chaotic mass of earth. All the angelic

hosts were spectators of that horrible scene. What would Satan do with his ruined planet? Little by little, it was seen that he could do nothing. He was utterly powerless before the chaos which had come from a simple word of judgment from the Almighty God. Then there came a stab of light from this same creative Word of God. The devastation was revealed in all its chaos, and for the first time there may have echoed from star to star that laughter of God which shall one day rock the world, “He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision” (Psalm 2:4).^{xiii}

The Great Pyramid and the Sphinx

The Great pyramid and the Sphinx lie almost opposite the city of Cairo in the heart of Egypt. These two features are at the border of Upper and Lower Egypt representing the mountainous and deltaic regions of the country. The ancient Biblical prophet Isaiah wrote about two objects, an altar and a monument that some time in his far future, possibly our immediate future, would be a sign and a witness to the Lord Almighty. “*In that day there will be an altar to the Lord in the heart of Egypt, and a monument to the Lord at its border. It will be a sign and witness to the Lord Almighty in the land of Egypt.*”^{xiv} Both are of an unknown age and have elucidated considerable speculation ever since the late 1800s.

One of these speculations concerns peculiar measurements made of the Great Pyramid. It was found that each side of the base was 365.2422 cubits, the exact number of days in a solar year. The sacred cubit (1/10,000,000 of the earths polar radius) of 25.025 inches was used. The height was 232.52 cubits. It was found that two times the base divided by the height equaled 3.14159 the mathematical constant pi. Mr. Larkin writes; “The angle of the slope of the side is as 10 to 9. That

is, for every 10 feet you ascend up the slope of the Pyramid you rise in altitude 9 feet, and if you multiply the altitude of the Pyramid by 10 raised to the 9th power, you have 91,840,000, which in miles, give the exact distance of the sun from the earth.”^{xv}

In 825 AD, Ali Manoun the Mohammedan Caliph had his workmen dig into the pyramid to find the fabulous wealth reported to be buried there. He commenced from the north side and found an entrance passage, which plunged at some forty degrees under the base of the pyramid. Passages were also found that angled forty degrees upwards into a sloping

Grand Gallery twenty-eight feet high and six feet wide that then flattened out and led into approximately a thirty-five ft. by seventeen ft. chamber called the Kings Chamber. In it was a large stone “coffer” made of a single piece of polished red granite big enough to hold a six ft. person. The Great Pyramid does not appear to be a tomb. The descending entrance passage is thought to have pointed at Alpha Draconis the chief star in the Constellation of the Dragon, or Great Serpent, when it was built. Needless to say, this has prompted much speculation as to the meanings of the passages and their measurements. Larkin writes,

We see that the passageway continues downward to an unfinished Chamber (H), which may be intended to represent “Hell” we see that mankind, marching down

If Mars had Water

Cairo is situated at the head of the Nile delta, a pie shaped wedge that has been deposited as silt by the Nile River as it enters the Mediterranean Sea. In the same way, the D&M pyramid on Mars is at the point of a wedge formed by the other cluster of possible pyramids and city structures, which in a parallel sense, would be along the Mediterranean Sea. There is some speculation that the face on Mars was once surrounded by water, which would put the structures by a shoreline similar to the Nile delta.

that passage, would be under the sign and dominion of the Dragon with “Hell” as their destination. About quarter way down the descending passageway we come to an ascending passage (D). This seems to indicate an upward trend of part of the human race, and is believed by many to represent the period from the Exodus to the Birth of Christ.^{xvi}

“Were the Pyramids remarkable electronic space probes, beacons and communication devices?” writes Dr. Gaverluk. Various pyramids stretch along a line 63 miles long. If they were radio transmitters, they would transmit millions of miles into space. How about just to Mars! “Walter F. Dimmick of Sunnyvale, California, an electronics engineer, theorizes that the great pyramids of Egypt were giant radio transmitters and receivers. The top part of the pyramid would be a radio feed horn. This is the apex. This would be metal. It is now missing.” The bottom of the pyramid would need to be covered with a very thin layer of silver or gold. “The radio transmitting and receiving equipment could have been installed in the Queen’s Chamber.”^{xvii}

The meanings to the passages, their length of measurement and the possible use of the pyramids are pure speculation. However, one would agree with Gaverluk when he writes, “Whatever the real purpose of these remarkable pyramids in Egypt, we feel that a number of things speak boldly to us. Just because we are brainwashed by modern self-centered man to think that all was savagery in the past is no excuse for us not to open our minds to other startling possibilities. If someone could build astonishing giant forms like the pyramids with an engineering capability that defies us today, then we must give them credit for knowing other things that perhaps we have not yet discovered.”^{xviii} Whatever the purpose of the altar and the monument, God says that they will be important witnesses to his Greatness in the later days. Could the discovery of the face on Mars, and the possible massive D&M pyramid be the beginning of more mysteries to come?

The Sphinx on the other hand is much more potent in meaning. Its face has some similarity to the face on Mars. The Sphinx has the face of a woman and the body of a lion. It is recognized by many scholars that the head of the Sphinx is the Sign Virgo, the woman, and the body is the Sign Leo, the lion. The Signs of the Zodiac in our modern era have been polluted by mindless self-seeking astrology. *Zodiac*, meaning *path* or *way*, is a series of ancient pictures along the path that the Sun appears to move amongst the stars in the course of the year, which in astronomical terms is the Ecliptic. There are twelve major pictures called Signs. Each Sign is comprised of three Constellations, each of which is a picture. Thus, the Zodiac forms a story in a circle containing forty-eight pictures. Mr. Bullinger writes, "The figures themselves are perfectly arbitrary. There is nothing in the groups of stars to even suggest the figures.... The picture, therefore, is the original, and must have been drawn around or connected with certain stars, simply in order that it might be identified and associated with them; and that it might thus be remembered and handed down to posterity."^{xix}

God says to Job (written around 2000 BC, or earlier) "*Can you bind the beautiful cluster of the seven stars? (Pleiades) or loose the bands of Orion? Can you bring forth the Constellations in their seasons, or lead out the Bear with its cubs?*"^{xx} Bullinger continues:

If we turn to history and tradition, we are at once met with the fact that the Twelve Signs are the same, both as to the meaning of their name and as to their order in all the ancient nations of the world. The Chinese, Chaldean, and Egyptian records go back to more than 2000 years BC. Indeed, the Zodiacs in the Temples of Denderah and Esneh, in Egypt, are doubtless copies of Zodiacs still more ancient, which from internal evidence must be placed nearly 4000 BC, when the summer solstice was in Leo.

Ancient Persian and Arabian Traditions ascribe its invention to Adam, Seth, and Enoch. Josephus asserts that it originated in the family of Seth; and he says that the children of Seth, and especially Adam, Seth, and Enoch, that their revelation might not be lost as to the two coming judgments of Water and Fire, made two pillars (one brick, the other stone), describing the whole of the predictions of the stars upon them, and that in case the brick pillar should be destroyed by the flood, the stone would preserve the revelation. ^{xxi}

In the ancient temples of Denderah and Esneh in Egypt, the pictures of the Zodiac are on the ceiling like a planisphere. The ancient tower of Babel (in modern day Iraq) was referred to in antiquity, before Nebuchadnezzar's day, as the tower of seven spheres or lights. Thus, the message of the Zodiac must be of major import to humanity. "The word "Sphinx" means, "to bind closely together. It was therefore designed to show where the two ends of the Zodiac were to be joined together, and where the great circle of the heavens begins and ends.... In the Zodiac in the Temple of Esneh in Egypt, a Sphinx is actually placed between the Signs of Virgo and Leo." Bullinger maintains that the Zodiac is a *Heavenly Volume of Divine Revelation* given by God, which shows that God himself (Yeshua-Jesus), in the greatest cosmic battle the universe has ever seen, will defeat the snake that has ensnared mankind. ^{xxii}

Startling computer simulations of the alignment of the pyramids of Giza and the Nile River suggest that they match the alignment of the stars in the belt of Orion and the Milky Way. Egyptologist John Anthony West and two associates, Robert Bauval and Graham Hancock, who conducted the simulations, show that the man-form of the constellation Orion (Osiris) would have appeared to walk on the face of the earth around 10,500 BC. The heavenly Sphinx, which is looking over the horizon, would have looked at itself on the surface around 12,000 BC. They note that the

great pyramid is the most complex of all pyramids, and yet was built first, which does not match the natural order of increasing complexity typical of our modern civilization. Is there a message that is being overlooked by modern man with his evolutionary perspective? The mystery deepens, Robert Bauval and Graham Hancock in an article in the *London Daily Mail* write,

Former NASA consultant Richard Hoagland is convinced there may be a 'terrestrial connection' between Giza and Cydonia - the region of Mars where the mysterious structures are located - perhaps a common source that imparted the same legacy of knowledge and symbolism on both worlds.... On Mars, the D&M Pyramid, contains a variety of functions and constants used in a sophisticated mathematical system known as tetrahedral geometry. Evidence of such mathematics in supposedly natural structures is strongly suggestive of a conscious design.... The most important recurring feature found in the mathematics of Cydonia is the value 0.865 - derived from the ratio of 'e' (an important mathematical constant equal to 2.7) and pi (the mathematical constant of 3.142 used to work out the properties of spheres and circles.... The arc tangent of 'e'/pi gives the value of 40.8 which is the Mars latitude on which both the D&M Pyramid and the NK Pyramid are sited. Amazingly, another trigonometrical function, the cosine of 'e'/pi gives the value of 30 - the exact geographical latitude of the pyramids of Giza on Earth.... One of the key angles of Cydonia, repeated again and again, is 19.5 degrees, this is precisely the latitude (19.5) degrees north) of the mysterious Mexican city of Teotihuacan, 'the place where men became gods', with its three distinctive pyramids

dedicated respectively to the Sun, the Moon and to Quetzalcoatl, the Central American counterpart of Osiris [Orion].^{xxiii}

To some people, the mystery of the Cydonia region of Mars suggests that man is not alone in the universe. Therefore, if these structures are real and are not shadow reflections or even water creations, how did they get there? There are four options:

- 1) They were created by the ben Elohim an ancient angel civilization,
- 2) They were created by an indigenous race of Martians,
- 3) They were constructed by a previous civilization from Earth, (*Did Genesis Man Conquer Space?*), and
- 4) A Galactic visitation, (we are being genetically molded and are now ready to join the federation of planets—under alien supervision of course!).

Are We Alone?

“Where are they?” questions Ian Crawford in an article for *Scientific American*. “Maybe we are alone in the universe after all.” The Fermi Paradox asks, “If extraterrestrials are common-place, where are they?” The failure to find alien radio transmissions (SETI) programs and the lack of evidence that they have ever visited Earth seems to suggest that they are not as commonplace in the universe as once thought. The article gives an illustration:

Colonization of the Galaxy is not as time-consuming as one might think.

Humans could begin the process by sending colonists to two nearby stars, a trip that might take 100 years with foreseeable technology. After 400 years to dig in, each colony sends out two of it’s own and so on. Within 10,000 years, our descendants could inhabit every star system within 200 light years. Settling the

entire galaxy would take 3.75 million years-a split second in cosmic terms. If even one alien civilization has ever undertaken such a program, its colonies should be everywhere we look.^{xxiv}

Maybe God created mankind for a special purpose, as the Bible maintains, and our race is the only biologically based sentient creature in the universe. If they exist, it is likely that those of the heavenly realms are of an interdimensional spiritual nature that we cannot comprehend. Moreover, it is

Space Wars

If you are to believe Sci-Fi, the whole universe is at war. Maybe the UFOs, the abductions and cattle mutations are evidence of malicious alien intent, which we ignore to our peril!

likely that they do not need high-powered radio transmitters to communicate or physical vehicles to travel through the cosmos.

Mankind wants an answer to the question of aliens. Lucifer the angel of light may be obliging soon with all sorts of deceiving wonders. Mankind is being psychologically prepared by the on going fascination with UFOs, the paranormal television shows and science fiction space adventure movies, to accept an alien spaceship landing. "Many are willing to make the "leap of faith" to accept intelligent beings inhabited the Cydonia region of Mars, a view that until recently could be viewed as crazy. Yet, these same "open-minded" people consider it completely outlandish to conclude that the explanation for other intelligent beings, their civilization on other planets, and their current place of residence in the atmosphere and aerial regions outward from Earth has been right in front of us all along ... in the Bible."^{xxv}

Notes:

ⁱ Ephesians 6:12

ⁱⁱ *Scientific American*, January 1997 pg. 6

-
- ⁱⁱⁱ Carlotto Mark J., “Evidence in Support of the Hypothesis that Certain Objects on Mars are Artificial in Origin,” *Journal of Scientific Exploration*, 1997
- ^{iv} Morris, John D. Ph.D., *Tracking Those Incredible Dinosaurs*, Master Books, 1980, pg. 60
- ^v Ezekiel 28:2-19
- ^{vi} Ezekiel 28:16
- ^{vii} Branhuse Donald Grey Dr., *The Invisible War*, Zondervan Publishing House, 1965, pg. 31
- ^{viii} Watcher Ministries, P.O. box 9351 Missoula, MT 59807. <www.mt.net/watchers/mars>
- ^{ix} Watcher, Ibid
- ^x Job 38:4-7
- ^{xi} Job 38:13-15
- ^{xii} Jeremiah 4:23
- ^{xiii} Barnhouse, Ibid, pg. 92
- ^{xiv} The Bible, Isaiah 19:19,20
- ^{xv} Larkin Clarence, *The Greatest Book on Dispensational Truth in the World*, 1918, Clarence Larkin Est., pg. 164, 167
- ^{xvi} Larkin, Ibid
- ^{xvii} Gaverluk Emil Ph.D., *Did Genesis Man Conquer Space?*, Thomas Nelson Inc. Publishers, 1974, pg. 68
- ^{xviii} Gaverluk, Ibid, pg. 70
- ^{xix} Bullinger E. W., *The Witness of the Stars*, 1893, Kregel Publications 1980, pg. 17,
- ^{xx} Job 38:31-32
- ^{xxi} Bullinger, Ibid, 9, 10
- ^{xxii} Bullinger, Ibid, pg. 23
- ^{xxiii} Bauval Robert, Hancock Graham; “The mysterious Structures That May Upstage NASA’S Evidence of Martian Life,” *London Daily Mail* August 17-19, 1996
- ^{xxiv} *Scientific American*, July 2000, pg. 38
- ^{xxv} Watcher, Ibid

Chapter 14

The Attack

“Simply stated, secularism asserts that public life is to be conducted without reference to religion or to any notion of transcendence. This mood, as innocent and even as attractive as it seems in our modern day, has become the first step on the road to unmanageable evil.”ⁱ

Ravi Zacharias, a brilliant writer and gifted thinker of this era, writes; “secularization assumes that this world—the material world—is all that we have.” This worldview leads to a blind-faith belief in science and technology and consequently to a spiritless reality. “Secularization is one of the most powerful conditioning influences in cultural formation today. Virtually every major decision that affects our mind-molding institutions—even in the highest offices of the land—is made on the basis of a secularized world-view. ... Any view that affirms the supernatural is, by definition, considered irrelevant or irrational.”ⁱⁱ Materialism and secularization are propelling Western society into conflict with religiously inspired cultures. Cultures with religious beliefs have a defined morality based on some mode of spirituality. A secular society has no spirituality and therefore no underpinning codes for morality. Granting to evolution any order of moral code

eventually leads to a spiritual concept of some sort, such that the ultimate “Legislator” outside of space-time may come into view, and that is unacceptable. So—what is morality under evolutionary philosophy?

Morality By Evolution

Robert Wright writes,

The premise of evolutionary psychology is simple. The human mind, like any other organ was designed for the purpose of transmitting genes to the next generation; the feelings and thoughts it creates are best understood in these terms. Thus the feeling of hunger, no less than the stomach, is here because it helped keep our ancestors alive long enough to reproduce and rear their young. Feelings of lust, no less than the sex organs, are here because they aided reproduction directly. ... Therefore wanderlust and marital discontent are “natural” and these “fluctuating perceptions of a mate are essentially illusions, created for the (rather absurd, really) purpose of genetic proliferation, and that these illusions can do harm. Thus, men might beware the restlessness designed by natural selection to encourage polygamy. Now that it brings divorce, it can inflict great emotional and even physical damage on their children. ⁱⁱⁱ

Nevertheless, if the evolutionary desire of the male is to spread his genes as far as possible, and the female to be impregnated by the most viral or dominant male—what meaning has wanderlust or adultery? “Daniel Perusse found that single men of high social status (based on income, education and job status) have the busiest sex lives (based on frequency and numbers of

partners).”^{iv} If the cultures that sanction polygamy are doing what is “natural” by what moral order does secularism determine it immoral? Mr. Wright continues,

The danger is that people will take the opposite tack: react to the new knowledge by surrendering to “natural” impulses, as if what’s “in our genes” were beyond self-control. They may even conveniently assume what is “natural” is good. This notion was common earlier in this century. Natural selection was thought of almost as

a benign deity, constantly “improving” our species for the greater good. But evolutionary psychology rests on a quite different view: recognition that natural selection does not work toward overall social welfare, that much of human nature boils down to **ruthless genetic self-interest***, that people are naturally oblivious to their ruthlessness (*emphasis mine).^v

This secular scientist appears to be having problems with the natural order of things—responding as if there is a hidden underlying moral code. If evolution has brought humanity, out of chaos, to the top of animalistic conscious order, why is there the need to *subdue* the “ruthless genetic self-interest,” why is the natural not good? These statements appeal to some higher order, and that is not possible under secularism—so again, what is secular morality?

Darwin’s approach was purely relativistic. “Darwin believed the human species to be a moral one in fact, the only moral animal species. ‘A moral being is one who is capable of

Battling Human Nature

“George Williams, whose 1966 book *Adaptation and Natural Selection* helped dispel the once popular idea that evolution often works for “the good of the group,” has even taken to calling natural selection “evil” and “the enemy.” The moral life, in his view, consists largely of battling human nature.”^{vi}

comparing his past and future actions or motives and approving or disapproving of them.”^{vii}

However, on what foundation or code does one compare their actions? On what bases are they approved or disapproved? On your self-interest, or mine—the implications are immense.

Wright continues, the “impulses of wanderlust, or marital discontent, are not always a sign that you married the “wrong person.” They may just signify that you are a member of our species who married another member of our species. Nor, as evolutionary psychiatrist Randolph L. Nesse has noted, should we believe such impulses are a sign of psychopathology. Rather, he writes, they are ‘expected impulses that must for the most part, be inhibited for the sake of marriage.’”

The words self-control, social welfare, battling human nature, evil, enemy and natural impulses, seem to imply that secularism is having a problem of psychological alignment. Could it be that secularism is struggling against a fundamental moral code dictated by a Holy God? Could it be that marriage was to be a blessed relationship decreed by Creator God? Could it be that at some fundamental level, it is the concept of free will within man that has been perverted? Is the concept of marriage of a **higher code** such that the natural impulses to wanderlust should “be inhibited for the sake of marriage” and the **higher spiritual essence of man**?

Even as we take a moment to pause and reflect—it is God’s story that we have been analyzing. Looking around us we can chose to see design, as a reflection of the designer, or as a colossal accident of nature. We can’t look up at the big window and see God. We struggle with the questions of our existence. “Science has vanquished theology. Reason has embarrassed faith.”^{viii}

However, God is working out his actuality in our real world. Zacharias writes,

If history is seen as a construct of the human mind, then it is ours to love or to hate or even ignore. But if it is seen as the arena of the Creator’s self-disclosure and His love for His creation, then we can be absolutely sure of His purpose and

goodwill as He works in and through His creation, indeed, a creation He loved before it even came to be. By doing so we may see the underlying truth that in the final analysis history is “His story.” *If we miss His story, evil will ever remain a mystery and good will ever remain at the mercy of cultural drift*(*emphasis mine).^{ix}

Deception In The Garden

In that time, of innocent beginning, in the magnificent Garden of Eden, enlightenment, love and communication flowed between the man and his wife, and between them and their Creator. The Divine second person of the Trinity, Creator of heaven and Earth, later to appear in history as Yeshua-Jesus, shared in the excitement of the innocent trusting beings that reflected His image of personhood. One can almost hear Adam ask a similar question to that put to the incarnate Son of God, Jesus, so much later in the great cosmic war—“*Master, which is the greatest commandment in the Law?*”(Adam was not under Mosaic Law). Jesus replied, “*Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind.*”^x

Dr. Schaeffer writes, “Today people constantly ask, “Does man have a purpose?” In some areas of the world man is told that he has meaning only in reference to the state. In other places, he is told that he has meaning only in his sexual life. Elsewhere he is told he has meaning only through affluence. But, all of these turn to sawdust in his hands. The Bible gives us quite a different answer: The purpose of man the meaning of man is to stand in love as a creature before the Creator.” Man the complex biological machine was different than the rest of conscious creation; he could love God out of free will. He stood—an unprogrammed part of creation, unprogrammed chemically or

psychologically—real man in a real history, a wonder in the midst of a world of uniformity of cause and effect.^{xi}

Adam was created of matter and energy, tied to the force of gravity, living moment by moment in space-time, yet sustained by the Holy Spirit; such that his being was likely clothed with radiant light, even as the Eternal One shone with light as they fellowshiped in the garden. Decision by decision Adam was operating in free will. Who he is to be is crystallizing in his innermost genetic programming. To love is to obey, thus there is freedom of choice. Schaeffer continues,

It is perfectly true that in making man as he did God made the possibility of evil. But the bare possibility, is not the actualizing of it. And in making that possibility, God validated choice and validated man as man—a being significant in history. If he had left him without choice, you could speak forever of man being man, man being significant, but it would be only meaningless words. All love man to woman and woman to man, or friend to friend is bound up with choice. Without choice the word *love* is meaningless. And, incidentally, as modern man has lost the concept of choice in the midst of determinism, the word *love* has increasingly become meaningless.^{xii}

The invisible immortal God watched from outside of space-time as Adam and Eve laughed and shared intimate love, both physical and spiritual. There is every reason to believe that the sexual relationship of “high monogamy” was also given as pure essence, such that in our physical world we would, in a sense, feel the love of God. Eyes to see and ears to hear operate on a physical plane, even as compassion and empathy belong to a creature of “higher order.” Yet, even as the God of Love watched, the ache in His heart began.

When God created man the “powers and principalities” in the heavenly realms must have been keenly interested observers. Is this a move against the rebellion of Lucifer? They watch in wonder. Here is a creature—not of spirit being such as they are; yet, there is an eternal spirit-essence within, linking them to the sustaining Spirit of God. Resentment stirs in the heart of Lucifer; what are these puny creatures that they should be made Regents of

The Cunning Serpent

The serpent, before God’s pronouncement against it, was possibly a small fluorescent fiery serpent like a flying dragon. The Bible describes it as cunning. The Hebrew word is *aruwm*, which means cunning in a **bad** context.

Lucifer is referred to as the Great Dragon. The snake is the symbol in the physical world of Lucifer’s future defeat by Yeshua-Jesus.

such a magnificent planet, (one that may have been under his rule in the past). The Bible does not give specific details of who was where when Satan approached Eve. For the sake of narration, we will take the position that Eve was standing near the “tree of the knowledge of good and evil” and Adam was nearby.

We can speculate that as Lucifer surveys the situation he ponders, “If I can somehow get them to disbelieve God, they will become part of my kingdom and I will have their will and their unconditional dominion of Earth.” The man and woman are almost at the center of the garden, for in the middle of the garden are the tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. “Oh yes, there is that crafty serpent hovering nearby—he will do perfectly.”

Lucifer’s strategy is simple and direct. If he had materialized in his powerful spiritual form, Adam would have immediately been alerted because he had been told to “guard the garden.” Lucifer steps through the photon barrier and possesses the crafty serpent hovering nearby. The woman is blissfully glorying in the fragrance of the flowers as she ambles by the beautiful center

tree. The tree “was pleasing to the eye” and the fruit looked like it could be “good for food,” but she and Adam had agreed not to touch it. It is such an unknown.

Eve glances briefly at the tree. What is it that Adam had told her that God had said to him—before she became his loved one? She glows inwardly at the thought of being a loved one. Yes, “*for when you eat of it you will surely die,*”^{xiii} he had said. “To die—that must be for the animals outside of the garden; but she and Adam are different—they are clothed in radiance,” she concludes to herself.

“Did God really say, ‘You must not eat from any tree in the garden’ says a quizzical voice?

Eve turns towards the voice. A glowing serpent hovers near the tree “of the

knowledge of good and evil.” She and Adam had noticed that there was something different about this creature, but what is it—is it something special like her? She steps closer.

“We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden,” she gracefully corrects the serpent. “But God did say, ‘You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden,’ “and you must not touch it,” she adds, “or you will die.”

The sound of his wife’s voice drifts over to Adam—who is she talking to—he walks towards her.

Satan the father of Lies^{xiv}

“Lying seems to be a way of life for many people. Several years ago a survey found that 91 percent of those queried lie routinely about matters they consider trivial; 36 percent lie about important matters; 86 percent lie regularly to their parents; 75 percent lie to their friends; 73 percent lie to their spouses.”^{xv}

The serpent feigns a—“you must be kidding God is holding something back from you look.” Looking intensely at her he said, “You will not surely die, for God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.”

Choice is founded in love, trust and obedience. The powers and principalities of angels held their breath, the Creator waited. The genetic code of free will is crystallizing in the man and the women. Destiny seems to hang suspended in the fragrance of the flowers.

Adam stands by his wife. What did the glowing serpent say? “You will be like God, knowing good and evil?” What did the Creator say, his heart races, “you shall surely die?” He hesitates—his will is forming.

To those watching it is breathtaking slow motion—Eve turns; she

looks at the tree as if she has never seen it before—is there something more that she and Adam

EQ

Modern scientific research on the EQ factor^{xvi} (emotional quotient) tested emotional will power on four year olds. The researcher offered each one, one marshmallow now or two when they came back into the room if they could wait. “Some children grab for the treat the minute he’s out the door. Some last a few minutes before they give in. But others are determined to wait. They cover their eyes; they put their heads down; they sing to themselves; they try to play games or even fall asleep. When the researcher returns, he gives these children their hard-earned marshmallows. And then science waits for them to grow up. By the time the children reach high school, something remarkable has happened. A survey of the children’s parents and teachers found that those who as four year olds had the fortitude to hold out for the second marshmallow generally grew up to be better adjusted, more popular, adventurous, confident and dependable teenagers.”

could have? She sees that it is *good for food* (lust of the flesh), that it is *pleasing to the eye* (lust of the heart), and that it is also *desirable for gaining wisdom* (pride of life)—the three temptations that Satan has ever used to ruin the human race!^{xvii}

Eve reaches and touches the fruit. *Nothing happens!* She eats, and as Adam comes beside her—she passes it to him. He hesitates, he looks at his beautiful wife—the universe watches, motionless in anticipation—he eats, and therefore **willfully** disobeys. A spear of agony pierces the side of the Creator; free will has decided. Instantly there is a flash of darkness—their radiance is gone—the Spiritual link with their Creator is willfully destroyed. They stand as naked animals in the garden; and there is darkness. Their underpinning genetic code is perverted. “Thus, the biblical diagnosis of man’s problems is that he has a

Angels

The Angels of Glory turn away in apprehension and horror. The angels of deception laugh in regimented glee as they obediently congratulate their leader, the Prince of Vanity. In the heavenly realm, there are angels of righteousness and angels of deception. Angels were created individual spirit beings; they do not produce families by having angelic children. In the course of their probation and testing of their wills in the great rebellion, they chose to be either for the Eternal God or against him, their destinies are fixed.

fallen nature that was produced when the flesh, originally designed by the Supreme Intelligence as a container to mold self-giving spirits, became altered to produce self-taking agents with a propensity to satisfy their desire while experiencing the least possible pain.”^{xviii} “*Therefore, just as sin entered the world through one man, and death through sin, and in this way death came to all men.*”^{xix}

The bible never places the blame for the fall on the woman. Satan however “had detached the woman from the word of God, and he had detached her by deception, from the belief in the

goodness of God.” Dr. Barnhouse writes, “The fall of man would not have been complete if Adam had transgressed first. Then Eve could rightly have said to the Lord that she had merely followed that which was inherent in the nature of her creation, namely, to be one with her husband and follow his example. But when Eve transgressed first, in the absolute ignorance of deception, and when Adam followed her, eyes wide open, without any self-deception at all, he was deliberately rebelling against God; and his rebellion was as distinct and specific as was Satan’s original rebellion.”^{xx}

In this great drama of the universe, “in the sin of Adam, where Satan seemed to win a decisive victory there was, as a matter of Scriptural fact, a profound defeat for Satan which is the key to much of the rest of human history.” Satan won man away from confidence in God, the belief in the goodness of God and dependence upon God. “But though Satan won all of these victories, he lost the whole battle in the fact that he did not succeed in attaching man to himself. In the beginning, there had been one will, the will of God, the Creator. After the rebellion of Lucifer, there had been two wills, that of God and the rebel. But now there are billions of wills.”^{xxi} The great prophet Isaiah writes, “*All we like sheep have gone astray, we have turned each one to his own way.*”^{xxii}

Sovereign Wills

“If man’s ultimate role is to rule and reign in the universe, then what better way to begin his schooling for that awe-some responsibility than on earth?” writes Dr. Gaverluk. But what of man’s will? Man is physical. “If he learned to yield his own individual sovereign will to other sovereign wills of his own kind on earth, then he would be sharing his existence with others. All would work together in harmony. This is the law of sovereign wills. There were many lessons that Adam and Eve had to learn on earth before their translation or graduation into space.”^{xxiii}

Mankind has joined the cosmic rebellion can they be salvaged? By plan, God had created the human race on a lower level than the angels. Man is flesh and blood, matter and energy, a complex biological machine with an eternal spirit. “This body is directly related by blood, heredity, flesh, and cells to a preceding set of bodies all the way back to an original couple. The human race is a family unit physically.”^{xxiv} It is man’s spiritual body that is now dead to God. Man is a destroyer. Man as flesh and blood, say the Scriptures, will never enter the kingdom of God.^{xxv}

It is man’s spirit that needs to be changed and made alive—so once and for all into this stream of humanity, in one of the most mysterious events in the Cosmos, God was able to be born (enter) as a real human being—born of a woman. Through His birth, life, death, and resurrection, God effected a way of salvation for every human being. However, the decision to accept or reject again enters the picture—it is a personal decision that can only be made by every man and woman—before biological death. “So like the angelic world, the human race is in the process of being divided into two great groups. Those who accept, who are learning to relate to the whole universe, who say “not my will but thy will be done,” will be welcomed joyously into the universe. The other group, because of their rejection of God’s Way and the assertion of their own way operating on a base of self, are unacceptable to the universe. Since Planet Earth is being despoiled by self-centered man, the prospect is that he would do the same to the universe.”^{xxvi} It is a differentiation of Light from Darkness.

Shame

God created man in his image gave him dominion over the earth and its creatures, communicated with them person to person, and asked only one simple direct request of trust, “do not eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.” Barnhouse writes,

The fruit was the tangible symbol, which God placed in the garden as the sign of man's creaturehood. It was something to impose a restraint upon him, something to remind him of his dependence upon God. What kind of fruit makes no difference at all. ...Many writers—especially a group of Roman Catholic theologians centuries ago—have expressed the thought that the fruit was sex, and have sought to make the union of Adam and Eve the matter of original sin. This suggestion was put forth by many of the protagonists of monasticism who conceived the idea that the married state had in it something which was essentially sinful. How pitiful such an explanation is in the light of God's command that they should be fruitful and develop and replenish the earth. There is, of course, no sin whatsoever in the marital relationship which God declares to have been created as an illustration of the oneness and union of the Church with the Lord Jesus Christ in an eternal fellowship (Eph. 5:32).^{xxvii}

Since their veils of radiant glory are gone, the "naked apes," to quote secularism's derogative term, seek fig leaves as a covering. Pember writes, "But their sin was only made possible by a league of soul and body which destroyed the balance of their being. The overborne spirit was reduced to the condition of a powerless and almost silent prisoner; and, consequently, its light faded and disappeared. Its influence was gone: it could no longer either preserve their bodies from decay, or clothe them in its glory as with a garment. The threat of God was an accomplished fact; the reign of death had commenced."^{xxviii} Why did they seek a covering? It is the same today—the deep order programming of the "mannishness of man" knows there is a missing covering.

The Infinite Personality watches. Is there hope for this creature, how badly is the free will-self-giving program damaged by the self-taking virus—to use modern computer terms. He, in a

human sense draws a deep breath, steps into our cosmos and into the garden calling out to them in compassion, “Adam where are you,” knowing full well they are hiding in the shrubbery, yet, giving them an opportunity to express remorse. Pember notes: “The man and his wife were ashamed; and that fact was the one gleam of hope in their horizon. For had they been dead to the shame of guilt, they would have differed nothing from the evil spirits: their salvation would have been impossible. But the

A cup of Shame

“Don’t you remember on earth—there were things too hot to touch with your finger but you could drink them all right? Shame is like that. If you will accept it—if you will drink the cup to the bottom—you will find it very nourishing: but try to do anything else with it and it scalds.” C. S. Lewis^{xxx}

existence of this feeling showed that the God-consciousness within them, though overwhelmed, was not altogether extinguished. The blaze had dimmed, but the flax was still smoking, and might even yet be fanned into flame again by the Spirit of God.”^{xxix}

“Where are you?”

There is a rustle in the beautiful flowering shrubbery. Adam hesitatingly comes into view with green fig leaves dangling off of his body. Eve follows closely behind him.

“I heard you in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid.”

“Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree that I commanded you not to eat from?”

The man shields his eyes from the glorious radiance and points to his dejected loved one.

“The woman you put here with me—she gave me some fruit from the tree, and I ate it.”

The Radiant One looks at the woman.

“What is this you have done?” He questions.

“The serpent deceived me and I ate” she replies.

The Lord waited patiently, but there was no remorse. The “pride of life” is already taking root. Adam blamed God for giving him the woman, and then blamed the woman. She blamed the serpent. It is a scene that we see played out in one way or another every day in our lives. Secularism has no starting point to define morality—you are what you have always been. However, it is here that morality is defined; it is God himself and his character who is the moral absolute of the universe. The Infinite personal God of Love and Communication, of Grace, of Mercy and Justice from which all things have their being, He is the moral absolute, the reference point.^{xxx1}

In this space-time historic moment, the genetic programming of man—crystallized. Schaeffer states,

There is a discontinuity and not a continuity in man. Man, made in the image of God and not programmed, turned by choice from his proper integration point at a certain time in history. When he did this, man became something that he previously was not, and the dilemma of man becomes a true moral problem rather than merely a metaphysical one. Man, at a certain point of history, changed himself, and hence stands, in his cruelty, in discontinuity with what he was, and we have a true moral situation: morals suddenly exist. Everything hangs upon the fact that man is abnormal now, in contrast to what he originally was.^{xxxii}

Mankind Joins the Cosmic Rebellion

God says, “*The heart is deceitful above all things and beyond cure. Who can understand it?*”^{xxxiii} “*You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father’s desire. He*

was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies.”^{xxxiv} Mankind is now aligned with Lucifer against God! Therefore, “he cannot fulfill the purpose of his existence to love God with all his heart, soul and mind—to stand as a finite personal point before an infinite personal reference point and be in relationship with God himself. When man sinned, the purpose of his existence was smashed. And modern man is right when he says that man is dead. It is not that man is nothing, but that he is no longer able to fulfill his manhood. Genesis 3:23-24 shows this separation between man and God in a real historic sense.”^{xxxv} This alliance with the Prince of Vanity has affected not only the separation of God and man, but man and his wife. “Man has separated his sexual life from its original high purpose as a vehicle of communication of person to person. Sexuality loses its personal dimension; men and women treat each other as things to be exploited. ... At physical death comes the separation of the soul from the body, the great separation of man from himself. ... The third of the great separation is man from man. This is the sociological separation,”^{xxxvi} and is readily apparent in our modern strife ridden world.

The effect of the rebellious alignment with Lucifer has been to dichotomize man’s subliminal programming by breaking the God consciousness spiritual link allowing the sense consciousness, or the natural innate program of natural instincts to dominate. Man became self-taking rather than self-giving. Higher order programming still operates as modern man, even yet, seeks a spirituality of some form for his life as he tries to impose an artificial form of morality in an impersonal secularized universe.

Schaeffer calls this “moral motions.” He writes,

I am talking about the fact that men have always felt that things are right and things are wrong. I am not talking about certain norms being right or wrong. All

men have this sense of moral motions. You do not find man without them anywhere back in antiquity. You do not find the little girl prostitute upon the street without some feeling of moral motions. You do not find the determinist, the behaviorist in psychology, without the feeling of moral motions, even if he says morals as morals do not exist. So we find man cast up with a feeling of moral motions which in reality leads only to a complete cosmic alienation, because if you begin with the impersonal, in the universe as it is there is no place for morals as morals. There is no standard in the universe which gives final meaning to such words as right and wrong. If you begin with the impersonal, the universe is totally silent concerning any such words.^{xxxvii}

Under the principle that God created—the Holy Spirit of God strives to reactivate the God consciousness spirituality of men and women. Man’s free will operates decision by decision; it follows the will of selfish natural desires, or it follows the will of the Holy Spirit. At stake is a person’s eternal destiny, either the light of eternal life, or the darkness of eternal death by separation from God. Secularism offers no other alternative, men are animals and all is natural. There is no higher order. To try and control “natural impulses” or call them “evil” or to “battle human nature” is to try and superimpose an unnatural sociological order on the “ruthless genetic self-interest” of evolution to disseminate DNA into the universe. Wright writes,

The good news is that human beings are designed to fall in love. The bad news is that they aren’t designed to stay there. According to evolutionary psychology, it is “natural” for both men and women—at some times, under some circumstances—to commit adultery or to sour on a mate.” ...“Men are less finicky about sex partners. ...The basic source of this male open-mindedness ...

for a man, each new mate offers a real chance for pumping genes into the future.”... “The relative testes weight of human falls between that of the chimpanzee and the gorilla. This suggests that women, while not nearly so wild as chimpanzee females (who can be veritable sex machines), are by nature somewhat adventurous. If they were not, why would natural selection divert precious resources to the construction and maintenance of weighty testicles?

xxxviii

“The wrath of God is being revealed from heaven against all the godlessness and wickedness of men who suppress the truth by their wickedness, since what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to them. For since the creation of the world God’s invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.

For although they knew God, they neither glorified him as God nor gave thanks to him, but their thinking became futile and their foolish hearts were darkened. Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools and exchanged the glory of the immortal God for images made to look like mortal man and birds and animals and reptiles. Therefore, God gave them over in the sinful desires of their hearts to sexual impurity for the degrading of their bodies with one another. They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served created things rather than the Creator—who is forever praised. Amen. Because of this, God gave them over to shameful lusts. Even their women exchanged natural relations for unnatural ones. In the same way the men also abandoned natural relations with women and were inflamed with lust for one another. Men committed indecent acts with other men, and received in themselves the due penalty for their perversion. Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, he

gave them over to a depraved mind, to do what ought not to be done. They have become filled with every kind of wickedness, evil, greed and depravity. They are full of envy, murder, strife, deceit and malice. They are gossips, slanderers, God-haters, insolent, arrogant and boastful; they invent ways of doing evil; they disobey their parents; they are senseless, faithless, heartless, ruthless, although they know God's righteous decree that those who do such things deserve death, they not only continue to do these very things but also approve of those who practice them."^{xxxix}

The Articles of War

No sooner, had the prideful excuse finished being uttered from the lips of the woman then God immediately confronted the serpent, and the malevolent being possessing it, declaring the articles of war in His terms. Satan

had deluded Eve into a false alliance with himself; but God broke up this confederation otherwise mankind would have automatically been condemned to the "Lake of fire" that has been prepared for the devil and his angels. The serpent was reduced to wriggling in the dust as a symbol of Lucifer's

Empathy or Anger?

Man is a complex biological machine; "emotional life grows out of an area of the brain called the limbic system, specifically the amygdala, whence come delight and disgust and fear and anger. ... Lust grows from the limbic system; love, from the neocortex. ... Like other emotional skills, empathy is an innate quality that can be shaped by experience. Infants as young as three months old exhibit empathy when they get upset at the sound of another baby crying. ... If, on the other hand, the feelings they begin to express are not recognized and reinforced by the adults around them, they not only cease to express those feelings but they also become less able to recognize them in themselves and others." How do you handle anxiety, or anger? Studies have shown that uncontrolled anger "actually increases its power."^{xl}

judgment. Lucifer did not gain the alliance of mankind as he thought. Instead, God put enmity between Satan and the human race, between his seed and hers.^{xli} Furthermore, God clearly stated that—a future *he*, “*will crush your head and you will strike his heel.*”^{xlii} Satan understood all too clearly that somehow, sometime, somewhere in a yet future space-time cosmic event, God is going to redeem this puny creature and condemn him, Satan, to eternal separation in the Lake of Eternal Fire.

This statement by God is His first prophetic declaration of what He will do in a distant future space-time event. It is an operation that can only be conducted by God through his might and power. It is an operation that will reveal to the angels, powers and principalities in the heavenly realm God’s justice, mercy, grace and love. It is an operation that will by God’s love, mercy and grace elevate a segment of humanity to a position higher than the angels. The unfathomable cost is the death of the Second Person of the Trinity. He will take on the form of lowly man in the mysterious virgin birth, the incarnation of the God-man Yeshua-Jesus. His sinless life, as the second Adam, on Earth will be sustained by the power of the Holy Spirit.

War is declared! The Creator immediately set into motion the law of increasing disorder. “*For the creation was subjected to frustration, not by its own choice, but by the will of the one who subjected it, in hope that the creation itself will be liberated from its bondage to decay and brought into the glorious freedom of the children of God. We know that the whole creation has been groaning as in the pains of childbirth up to the present time.*”^{xliii} Barnhouse outlines this war clearly.

The great spiritual warfare is a triangular warfare. Lucifer became Satan, and declared war upon God. God, by nature hating rebellion, sin, unrighteousness and imperfection, immediately manifested His righteousness by judgment and

the conflict was on. For God, of course, it could not have been a mere contest between Lucifer and the Most High. The Almighty does not condescend to enter the lists as the opponent of one of His creatures. There was to be a conclusive test before all the witnesses of the universe in order to demonstrate that no created being could succeed apart from the divine will, or bring order either to the chaos of judged creation or to that of judged mankind. There is only one will in the universe that can provide peace, order, and righteousness, and that is the will of God. ... We see the God of the universe at the top of a triangle with lines emanating from Him toward Satan and toward man. There is a two-way hatred along each of these lines: hatred from Satan against God and from man against God, and oppositely from the holy God against the rebellion and sin in His creatures.... In His first pronouncements after sin entered the heart of man God decreed that there would be hatred in both directions between Satan and man, and that He, God Himself, would put that hatred there.^{xliv}

The harmony of the man-woman relationship was smashed. God, in a sense, had to do some high order reprogramming and bring structure into the human relationship; without such form, freedom would only be chaos. God turned to Eve and said, "*I will greatly increase your pains in childbearing; with pain you will give birth to children.* [See note.^{xlv}] *Your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you.*"^{xlvi} As a result, in the chaos of this world, some societies treat women as economic and sex slaves to propagate the DNA into the universe. However, the Bible is absolutely clear that the woman is to be equal, a helpmate. She is unique even as the man is unique and each stands as finite unique beings, body, soul and spirit before the Infinite Personal Being, "I Am That I Am."

Schaeffer outlines God's viewpoint from the Holy Scriptures.

The Bible makes plain that this relationship is not to be without love. As the New Testament puts it, the husband is to love his wife as Christ loved the Church (Eph. 5:23). In a fallen world, it is not surprising to find that men have turned this structure into a kind of slavery. It is not meant to be slavery. In fact, it is in cultures where the Bible has been influential that the balance has been substantially restored. The Bible balances the structure and the Love. Nevertheless, it is still true: Since the Fall what God says in verse 16 is to be the structure or the form of the basic human relationship—man-woman relationship. It is right that a woman should feel a need for freedom, a feeling of being a “human being” in the world. But when she tries to smash the structure of this basic relationship, finally what she does is to hurt herself. It is like unraveling the knot that holds the string of human relationships together. All other things flow from it—the loss of her own children's obedience and the crumbling of society about her. In a fallen world we need structure in every social relationship.^{xlvii}

God turned to his created son, Adam, and spoke into being the toil of the ages.

“Because you have listened to your wife and ate from the tree about which I commanded you, ‘You must not eat of it,’ ‘Cursed is the ground because of you; through painful toil you will eat of it all the days of your life.

It will produce thorns and thistles for you, and you will eat the plants of the field.

By the sweat of your brow you will eat your food until you return to the ground, since from it you were taken; for dust you are and to dust you will return.”^{xlviii}

Sacrifice of the Lamb Foretold

“The LORD God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife and clothed them.”^{xlix} Life for life—man could not come before a Holy God in a covering of his own making. This was the beginning of the Old Testament sacrificial system. It looks forward to the One, who would crush Satan’s head at the Cross of Calvary and redeem the human race. “It isn’t that sometime, say, around 100 B.C. God said, ‘What shall we do about this?’ and then suddenly the idea of the death of Christ dawned on him. Rather, 1 Peter 1:19-20 and other passages indicate that the death of Christ, *“the precious blood of the Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot,”* was *“foreordained before the foundation of the world.”* Thus the death of Christ in space and time, planned before history began, the solution of man’s rebellion in the light of God’s character of holiness and love, stood in the natural flow of all that had been.”^l

In the center of the garden stood—yet another tree with genetic activating properties—“the tree of life.” It would appear that eating this fruit would have allowed man, even in his fallen nature, to live forever. *“The man,”* said God within his Triune Person, *“has become like one of us, knowing good and evil.”*^{li} Man now knew good and evil, but did not have the Spiritual restraining power of his Creator to sustain him—the spiritual man had died. He must not be allowed to eat from the tree of life. “For to be immortal in his fallen condition would be the greatest of all calamities; to continue in sin for ever would be nothing less than the second death. And it was only by passing through the first death that man could be restored to spotless innocence again,” writes Pember.^{lii}

The Angels of Glory watch in apprehension. What had started out so radiant is now so ugly. What is the meaning of this they ponder? Yet, God obviously loves these complex, now spiritually bankrupt, biological creatures with their perverted high order programming—what will God do? The human pair can’t see Lucifer as he triumphantly takes dominion over Earth, as Usurper ruler of

the kingdom of the air and regions beyond Earth.^{liii} “Hence, after another solemn consultation of the Blessed Trinity, the sorrowful, but no longer hopeless, pair were expelled from the garden of beauty, and driven eastward from the garden into the cold world to seek another home. With heavy hearts they wended their way amid the towering pyramids of green, brilliant with ruddy fruit or sprinkled with thick blossoms, through the bright maze of flowers and verdure, until they had passed the great gate, which immediately closed behind them.”^{liv} Turning around for one last look—brilliance startles them. Powerful cherubim and a flashing sword appear, to guard the Garden of Eden and the way to the tree of life.

Secularism has no reference point to define the morality of man. The only reason it can give for his self-focus, greed and cruelty is the selfish force of natural selection, the survival of the fittest. Therefore, the high order programming of self-sacrifice, love, empathy, compassion and the mysterious disturbing desire to be spiritual—*of the something more*—is only a temporary neurosis as man builds his preprogrammed “mind children” to inherit the earth. God, on the other hand, has stated his position quite clearly—He alone can give eternal life.

Darkness—the black silky veil of death—now enshrouds Earth; Lucifer is now Usurper Regent.

Notes:

ⁱ Zacharias Ravi, *Deliver Us From Evil*, Word Publishing, 1996 pg. 23

ⁱⁱ Zacharias, *Ibid*, pgs. 22-23

ⁱⁱⁱ Wright Robert, “Our Cheating Hearts,” *TIME*, August, 1994,

^{iv} Wright, *Ibid*

^v Wright, *Ibid*

^{vi} Wright, *Ibid*

^{vii} Wright, *Ibid*

^{viii} Zacharias Ravi, *Ibid* pg. 24

^{ix} Zacharias, *Ibid*, pg. 124

^x Matthew 22:37

^{xi} Schaeffer, *Ibid*, pg. 70

^{xii} Schaeffer, *Ibid*, pg. 72

^{xiii} Genesis 2:17

^{xiv} John 8:44

-
- ^{xv} De Haan Martin R. II, *Our Daily Bread*, RBC Ministries, June 18, 2002
- ^{xvi} Gibbs Nancy, "The EQ Factor," *TIME*, October 16, 1995
- ^{xvii} Genesis 3:6
- ^{xviii} Gange Robert Dr., *Origins And Destiny*, World Books, 1986, pg. 148
- ^{xix} Romans 5:12
- ^{xx} Barnhouse Donald Grey Dr., *The Invisible War*, Zondervan Publishing House, 1965, pg. 89
- ^{xxi} Barnhouse, *Ibid*, pg. 91
- ^{xxii} Isaiah 53:6
- ^{xxiii} Gaverluk Emil Dr., *Did Genesis Man Conquer Space?*, Thomas Nelson Inc. Publishers, 1974, pg. 33
- ^{xxiv} Gaverluk, *Ibid*, pg. 61
- ^{xxv} 1 Corinthians 15:50
- ^{xxvi} Gaverluk, *Ibid*, pg. 61-62
- ^{xxvii} Barnhouse, *Ibid*, pg. 87
- ^{xxviii} Pember G.H., *Earth's Earliest Ages*, 1876, Kregel Publications 1979, pgs. 94
- ^{xxix} Pember, *Ibid*, pg. 95
- ^{xxx} Lewis C.S., *The Great Divorce*, (1946) Macmillan Publishing Co. 1948, pg. 61
- ^{xxxi} Schaeffer Dr. Francis A., *He is there and he is not silent*, Tyndale House Publishers, 1972, pg. 33
- ^{xxxii} Schaeffer, *Ibid*, pg. 30
- ^{xxxiii} Jeremiah 17:9
- ^{xxxiv} John 8:44
- ^{xxxv} Schaeffer Dr. Francis A., *Genesis in Space and Time*, InterVarsity Press, 1972, pg. 98
- ^{xxxvi} Schaeffer, *Ibid*, pg. 99
- ^{xxxvii} Schaeffer, *He is there and he is not silent*, *Ibid*, pg. 23
- ^{xxxviii} Wright, *Ibid*
- ^{xxxix} Romans 1:18-31
- ^{xl} Gibbs Nancy, "The EQ Factor," *TIME*, October 16, 1995
- ^{xli} Barnhouse, *Ibid*, pg. 103
- ^{xlii} Genesis 3:15
- ^{xliii} Romans 8:20-22
- ^{xliv} Barnhouse, *Ibid*, pg. 97
- ^{xlv} Rosenberg Karen R. Trevathan Wenda R. "The evolution of Human Birth," *Scientific American* November 2001 pg. 74. [Note a baby is born face to the backbone and must rotate through 90 degrees coming down the birth canal.]
- ^{xlvi} Genesis 3:16
- ^{xlvii} Schaeffer Francis A., *Genesis in Space and Time*, *Ibid* pg. 94
- ^{xlviii} Genesis 3:17-19
- ^{xlix} Genesis 3:21
- ^l Schaeffer, *Ibid*, pg. 106
- ^{li} Genesis 3:22
- ^{lii} Pember, *Ibid*, pg. 106
- ^{liii} John 12:31
- ^{liv} Pember, *Ibid*, pg. 106-107

Chapter 15

The Occupation

Now that he has deviously assumed authority over planet Earth, Lucifer establishes a controlling invisible city network in the solar system. This manipulation gave him the right to attend the Great Assembly, before the throne of God in heaven, as regent for planet Earth. Vainly he prides himself—he will be prime ruler; after all, he is magnificent. His will, will be done, or so he thinks, if not in heaven, most certainly on Earth. However, he was not prepared for some unusual news. A minion flashes into his perspective. “There are three of them down there,” he sputters. “Somehow they make more of them. This one is little.” Adam lay with his wife Eve, she became pregnant and gave birth to Cain. She said, “*With the help of the Lord I have brought forth a man.*”¹ Lucifer looks at this puny creature. What is God doing? Yes, there is eternal spirit in it also, but like the other two—it is insignificant. He will be rid of them sooner or later—no one will crush his head.

Even now, the stars twinkle in the night sky and sunbeams kiss the early morning dewdrops as they did then. Yet, it would appear that neither mankind, the angels of deception or Satan comprehends the hidden deep reality of the Triune God. It is evident from the Garden scene, before the disastrous deception, that though Adam and Eve were spiritually alive—sustained by the Spirit of the Eternal One—they saw only the physical world around them. Lucifer, then and now, though he is of the spiritual realm and can

transpose himself into the universe of matter and energy, chooses, through vanity, to deny the deeper Spiritual aspect of God. He interacts with God as a finite intelligence in the spiritual dimension, only when the Triune God chooses to be present in that dimension.

Man can only glimpse the interdimensional reality of God through His supernaturally inspired scripture. Even though it requires faith, cosmologically aware modern man stands just as accountable as Adam and Eve. The Bible reveals God's deep love for humanity as He works to bring people into a future higher order in the universe. From a Biblical viewpoint, faith is not without reason, because the Personal God designated a higher order to the intelligence arrow of mankind—whereas faith under secularism is only an abstract concept used to manipulate ones self-psychological persuasion.

The scientific aspect of our world is only revealed as a secondary byplay in scripture. Both secular and God seeking scientists delve for scientific truth. Nevertheless, religiously motivated scientists can be just as guilty of a predetermined philosophy as secular scientists by ignoring contrary observations that seem to offend their personal religious framework. Geological studies have shown that sometime in the ancient past, during the age of the monstrous dinosaurs, Earth was a tropical to subtropical paradise with luxurious plant growth and a vast diversity of gigantic animal and insect species. Because the theory of evolution requires millions of years to develop

Sudden Death

Concerned about your immediate future—examine the time chart of mass extinctions published by evolution based scientists. The mass extinctions appear to come in pairs separated by some 55 million years. The last one was 65 million years ago—another one is overdue.ⁱⁱ

the fossilized geological strata, secular scientists believe that intelligent humans could not have been present. Then in the 1950s, the evolutionary premise of uniformitarianism had to be adjusted to the forcibly awakened truth of catastrophism. Even as there was a scientific scramble to evoke catastrophism into the evolutionary Darwinism framework, so now in this early 21st century the archaeological discovery of possible non-linear ancient civilizations, and increasing reports of the paranormal, need to be explained.

Paranormal Lovers

Paranormal events such as out of body experiences, life after death stories, spiritual guides, holistic healing, women who entertain ethereal lovers and “little gray men in UFOs,” do not fit the evolutionary framework.

So we might ask, did mankind attain a highly technical civilization during the early era? The Biblical geological framework built on catastrophism, suggests that events took place in a much-reduced timeframe. The face and pyramids of Mars, the mysteries of the Sphinx and the Great Pyramid, the out of place artifacts (ooparts), fossils in coal beds, and the Biblical Ark are physical evidence that requires more than a simplistic hand waving explanation. Earth’s civilization may be arriving at a point in the great cosmic war, when even more startling discoveries will be made. Do not be surprised if, in the near future, an archaeological discovery is made of a city complex, or structure, that is under a geological formation that has been dated as millions of years old. This does not mean that the structures are millions of years old, but that the evolutionary framework of age dating is in question—resulting in the recognition that civilization is nonlinear, and the necessary time frame for evolution to spawn complex life is not there. The choice then, becomes creation, or an alien genesis bomb—ID did it.

Genealogies

The “little ones” kept coming. In the pristine early Earth when the animals did not yet fear man (God says this takes place after the flood when man becomes omnivorous), and mankind lived to be hundreds of years old, it would not take long to double the population. In fifty years, there could easily be thirty-two people, which is four doublings. If the population doubled every fifty years as we do today, there would be some 16 million people in 1000 years. It is suggested that this beginning may have been some 6000 to 20,000 years ago. Some Biblical scholars consider that the genealogies of the Bible from Adam to Abraham should not be used as a chronology. The importance of genealogy to the ancient writers was to show the family linkage. Thus to be the father of, or to beget someone may also mean that you became the ancestor of someone important by a nameless son, grandson or great grandson in between; also the listing of the sons may not be in their correct birth order. For instance, Matthew records, Matthew 1:1 “*A record of the genealogy of Jesus Christ the son of David, the son of Abraham.*”

Dr. Schaeffer writes:

There is a third reason why it should be quite obvious that these genealogies are not meant to be a chronology. If they were, it would mean that Adam, Enoch and Methuselah were contemporaries, and that just doesn't seem to fit at all. If this were the case the silence of the Bible in regard to these interrelationships would seem curious. But the situation is even more striking after the flood, because in this postdiluvian era if genealogy were chronology, all of the postdiluvians, including Noah, would have still been living when

Abraham was 50 years of age. That would seem to be impossible. Furthermore, Shem, Salah and Eber would all have outlived Abraham, and Eber would still have been living when Jacob was with Laban. The simple fact is that this does not fit into the rest of biblical history.ⁱⁱⁱ

6000 Years?

Some people believe that the Bible says Adam and Eve were created 6000 years ago. “To say that God created the universe at a point in time or in a certain duration of time, whether it be in terms of days or of geological ages, is to make God a creature of time and creation to be something far less than creation. The folly of these attempts may be seen when one carries out the attempt to date creation by some date as 4004 B.C., September 17th, at 6:00 P.M. on a Saturday evening.^{iv}

Dr. Archer concludes, “The creation of Adam and Eve cannot be specifically dated. We can only say, assuming that the theory of gaps in the genealogies is sound, that it occurred thousands of years before the Flood.”^v

Master Your Will

The scriptures were written from God’s viewpoint and not man’s. Genesis chapter 4 starts with the details of Cain and Abel, and the spiritual conflict—not the wonderful technological advances that were being made in the beginning society. It would appear that even as Adam and Eve lived near the garden in view of the flashing sword guarding the way to the tree of life, they understood the meaning of sacrifice and taught it to their children. *“In the course of time Cain brought some of the fruits of the soil as an offering*

to the LORD. But Abel brought fat portions from some of the firstborn of his flock. The LORD looked with favor on Abel and his offering, but on Cain and his offering he did not look with favor. So Cain was very angry, and his face was downcast. Then the LORD said to Cain, ‘Why are you angry? Why is your face downcast? If you do what is right, will you not be accepted? But if you do not do what is right, sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you, but you must master it.’”^{vi}

Pride of life filled Cain’s heart as he sought to bring before his Creator the work of his own hands, which is typical of many religions. God will only accept a contrite heart.^{vii} This early conversation between the Lord and Cain shows the spiritual struggle between the intellectual thought and the will of the heart. People ignore this serious statement by God that “*sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you, but you must master it.*” Far in the future, Jesus was to say to his disciple Peter, “*Simon, Simon, Satan has asked to sift you as wheat. But I have prayed for you, Simon, that your faith may not fail. And when you have turned back, strengthen your brothers.*”^{viii}

Fire From Heaven

Some scholars think that God showed his recognition of Abel’s sacrifice by consuming it with fire as happened several places further along in history. The most dramatic was on Mt. Carmel in support of Elijah against the false gods of Baal when fire came from heaven and consumed a water soaked sacrifice on an altar.

Since the will of mankind is perverted, Satan and his invisible rebel army work to destroy man through the will of the heart—so that an individual does not turn in remorse to the Creator and giver of eternal life—anything but God. We have free will; the spiritual forces cannot violate your free will, you decide your actions. Nevertheless,

sensual pleasure may override spiritual logic. Dr. Gaverluk writes, “One certain thing the spirit world cannot do. It is an absolute barrier. They cannot violate the sovereign free will of man as an individual. They cannot dictate to man’s will. They cannot force it. The spirit world can put thoughts into the center of our stream of consciousness, BUT IT IS UP TO EACH ONE OF US EITHER TO ACCEPT OR REJECT THESE THOUGHTS.”^{ix}

An Evil Civilization

Jealousy and anger festered in Cain’s heart. He killed Abel and then proceeded to lie to the LORD. “*Where is your brother Abel?*” “*I don’t know,*” Cain replied, “*Am I my brother’s keeper?*”^x And so the LORD drove him from His presence near the garden of Eden, and he became a restless wanderer on the earth. It is a time of free will; man did as he pleased. Evil and violence increased, and so did the technological achievements and the arts—it was a time very much paralleling our modern civilization. Jubal was the father of all who play the harp and flute. Tubal-Cain forged all kinds of tools out of bronze and iron. Polygamy and the servitude of women commenced with Lamech who married two women and then proceeded to kill a young man who had offended him.

Contrary to modern evolutionary thought, because of man’s genetic purity and innate intelligence, plus favorable climatic conditions—civilization advanced rapidly. Lucifer is ecstatic as he watches the pitiful scene of Cain and Abel unfold—these puny creatures can kill each other. There will be no seed to crush his head. They are like puppets; their free will programming is obviously bent in his favor. Yes, he is Prince of Earth and they will worship him as God!

People are distraught, with just cause, at the wanton evil, violence and destruction that rampages through our societies. The tendency is to blame God. However, the Bible is

very clear on how this world is ruled. The rebels rule Earth; we are part of the fallen cosmos. *“For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.”*^{xi} Secularism has no basis for morals; yet, people know there is evil. The dilemma is that we judge ourselves by ourselves—which is a contradiction because from within ourselves—we seek the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes (or heart) and the pride of life.

Though God loves humanity deeply, His wrath will be expedited upon those of self-seeking humanism, who reject His love. *“For this is a people without understanding; so their Maker has no compassion on them, and their Creator shows them no favor.”*^{xii} A law of love does not bind God to love people if they willfully defy His moral laws. Arthur Pink comments—*“In the final analysis, the exercise of God’s love must be traced back to His sovereignty, or, otherwise, He would love by rule; and if He loved by rule, then is He under a law of love, and if He is under a law of love then is He not supreme, but is Himself ruled by law.”*^{xiii} God’s Mercy then, is not giving us what we deserve and His Grace is giving us what we do not deserve. *“But love your enemies, do good to them and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High, because He is kind to the ungrateful, and wicked. Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.”*^{xiv} *“The arrogant cannot stand in your presence; you hate all who do wrong. You destroy those who tell lies; bloodthirsty and deceitful men the LORD abhors.”*^{xv}

Why did the Creator not just destroy Adam and Eve when their sentient programming became perverted? —Because He had given them free will, and true love

for God only grows from free will. God loves mankind in spite of their disobedience. On the other hand, the Holiness of God demands justice. How can the Holiness of God and the justice of God be appeased and man reconciled back to God? This becomes the mystery of the Cosmos as to how the Second Person of the Trinity took on the humble form of man, as Yeshua-Jesus to effect God's justice. Jesus was God incarnate and yet wholly man. He redeems those of mankind who will freely accept His provision and empowers them by His Holy Spirit—allowing God to realign their perverted self-taking natures so that they may overcome evil.

The Secret Document

This battle of the cosmos centers on the battle for planet Earth and the eternal spirits of mankind. God supernaturally caused the writing of his Book by the hand of man. It clearly lays out this battle and its outcome. It is about how the LORD is going to effect this rescue operation in our ontology. From the out-working of this battle, God will be given the honour, the glory, and the majesty as King of Kings and Lord of Lords. He will be the one “will” as Ruler of the infinite cosmos and spiritual dimensions of the heavenly realms. The conclusion of this war has already been determined. *“In that day the LORD will punish the powers in the heavens above and the kings on the earth below.”*^{xvi} This is the incredible part. If you think that all you are going to do in the next life is play the harp, think again, we will rule with Jesus from heaven. “For Himself and His Church will then take the place of the High Ones that are on high, while the first rank amongst the Kings of Earth upon the earth will be given to the seed of Abraham according to the flesh.”^{xvii}

In the meantime, Lucifer, as Prince of the world, has other plans for humanity. “And the law of Satan is this:—that we seek all our pleasures in, and fix all our heartfelt hopes upon, this present age over which he presides; and that we use our best endeavours—by means of various sensuous and intellectual occupations and delights, and countless ways of killing time which he has provided—to keep our thoughts from ever wandering into that age to come, which will see him a fettered captive instead of a prince and a god.”^{xviii} Scenes of violence dominate the television and movie medium. Man with his guns, bombs and alluring women, project the pride of life, as if wanton destruction will overcome evil for good.

Ethereal Government

Lucifer’s network of governing angels are involved in the affairs of planet Earth. Pember writes, “To understand it we must glance at the general hints of Scripture concerning spiritual agencies. For, though unseen and little suspected by the rulers of earth, there are also spiritual powers (Eccles. 5:8), all appointed by God, whether they be loyal to Him now or not. Rank above rank these watchers stand, each passing on his account to a superior until it reaches the Most High at the apex of the pyramid.”^{xix} The Biblical book, Daniel, describes this angel warfare. Satan’s princes rule over Earthly kingdoms and will try to stop God’s actions in his rebel territory. A mighty angel who was sent by God visits Daniel, a God fearing captive in Babylon, “*I looked up and there before me was a man dressed in linen, with a belt of the finest gold around his waist. His body was like chrysolite, his face like lightning, his eyes like flaming torches, his arms and legs like the gleam of burnished bronze and his voice like the sound of a multitude.*” He informs Daniel that he was resisted by the prince of the Persian kingdom (an angel

ruler) and was given assistance by Michael (archangel), “*one of the chief princes*” so that he could get to Daniel. The angel then says, “*Soon I will return to fight against the prince of Persia [angel], and when I go the prince of Greece [angel] will come; but first I will tell you what is written in the Book of Truth, (No one supports me against them except Michael, your prince. And in the first year of Darius the Mede, I took my stand to support and protect him).*”^{xx}

The book of Job describes other sons of God (angels) and Satan presenting themselves in Heaven before the Lord. The Lord asks Satan, “*Where have you come from?*” He replies, “*From roaming through the earth and going back and forth on it.*”^{xxi} In a similar scene, Psalms 82 depicts God presiding over the Great Assembly giving judgment among the “gods,”—Satan’s angels, who supervise affairs on Earth.

The angels at the Great Assembly sit in anticipatory silence. A group of the arrogant and defiant from planet Earth is presenting their administration before the Infinite One.

“How long will you defend the unjust and show partiality to the wicked,” He asks them

There’s a defiant silence.

The pronouncement from the One is absolutely clear!

“Defend the cause of the weak and fatherless; maintain the rights of the poor and oppressed. Rescue the weak and needy; deliver them from the hand of the wicked.”

Again, there is a space of anticipatory silence but none of the arrogant wavers, their wills are crystallized.

Once again, He refers to the mortals of Earth. “They know nothing, they understand nothing. They walk in darkness.” But you ... “You are “gods” sons of the Most High, but you will die like mere men; you will fall like every other ruler.”

The pronouncement is final!

Lucifer and his rebel forces create havoc on Earth, and from where we are in examining the opening chapters of the Bible, the final battle and judgment is far in the future—possibly in our 21st century. Pember brings this struggle for the souls of men and women into perspective.

Truly, with such facts as these before us, we might well faint for fear if did we not know that there is a mightier Power above all the hosts of the Prince of Darkness, One Who regards us with feelings of wondrous love, Who is not only able, but yearning, to shield us from the destroyer now, and Who purposes shortly to deliver us altogether from the anxiety, the terror, and the danger, of his assaults. For although the Lord has not yet formally deposed the rebel, and arranged a new government, He does not leave the world entirely to Satan’s mercy. Angels of God penetrate the realms of air, encamp round about them that fear Him, and protect them from the malignant foes to whom they would otherwise fall an easy prey (Psalm 34:7).^{xxii}

The Story in the Sky

Adam and Eve continue to raise a family. She gives birth to Seth, and he has a son named Enosh. The Bible notes that at this time, some men began to call on, or proclaim the name of the Lord. Generations later, the mysterious man, Enoch is born. *“Enoch walked with God; then he was no more, because God took him away.”*^{xxiii} Enoch was a preacher of righteousness to the world of his day. He prophesied about the Lord, and a far-in-the-future battle, *“See, the Lord is coming with thousands upon thousands of His holy ones to judge everyone, and to convict all the ungodly of all the ungodly acts they have done in the ungodly way, and of all the harsh words ungodly sinners have spoken against Him.”*^{xxiv} It may very well be that it was to Enoch that God gave the picture map of history, the Zodiac, as a witness to future generations of mankind.

Bullinger^{xxv} translates this “Heavenly Volume of Divine Revelation.” The Sphinx in Egypt, in the great celestial pictures of the Zodiac, indicates that the beginning of the story starts with the sign of Virgo, depicted as a virgin in all ancient references. She holds a branch in one hand and a sheaf of grain, or corn in the other—representing seed. One of the stars, Al Mureddin, in her arm holding the branch, means, “who shall come down,” or “who shall have dominion.” The body of the Sphinx is that of a lion representing the king that is to come—this is the conclusion of the story depicted by the twelve signs of the Zodiac. The constellation Coma, as shown in the several thousand-year-old Temple of Denderah in Egypt, depicts a woman with a boy child in her lap. “The ancient Egyptian name for this constellation was Shesnu, the desired son!” Shakespeare, in Titus Andronicus, speaks of an arrow being shot up to heaven to the “Good boy in Virgo’s

lap.” This sign would seem to point to the incarnation of God on Earth as the future Seed. Libra, the scale, weighs the conflict, the deficient works of man compared to the sacrifice of the incarnate Son of God. This sign contains the Southern Cross, which was just visible on the horizon at Jerusalem when Yeshua-Jesus, the Christ or Messiah was crucified around 32 AD.

The sign Scorpio illustrates God’s pronouncement to Satan, in the Garden of Eden, of the great cosmological conflict. God would put enmity between Satan’s followers and the Seed of the woman, Jesus Christ, that “He will crush your head and you will strike his heel.” This picture shows a “gigantic scorpion endeavoring to sting the heel of a mighty man who is struggling with a serpent, but is crushed by the man, who has his foot placed right on the scorpion’s heart.” The serpent is struggling to seize a crown above the man’s head. “The contest is for Dominion! It was the Devil, in the form of a serpent, that robbed the first man of his crown; but in vain, he struggles to wrest it from the sure possession of the Second Man. Not only does he fail in the attempt, but is himself utterly defeated and trodden under foot.”

Sagittarius has a bow drawn, and pointed at the heart of the scorpion. Capricorn, the goat with the tail of a fish, may represent the goat of the sin offering in the Old Testament sacrificial system, while the fish tail and the sign of Pisces, the two bound fish, may symbolize the redeemed of both the Old and New Testament ages. Aquarius, the water bearer, is pouring out water, possibly symbolizing the living water of God’s Holy Spirit poured out into His redeemed. Aries would appear to represent the “*lamb that was slain before the beginning of the world.*” Taurus, the Bull, symbolizes a ruler coming in judgment. This sign contains the constellation of Orion. “He is so pictured in the ancient

Denderah Zodiac, where we see a man coming forth pointing to the three bright stars (Rigel, Bellatrix, and Betelgeuz) as his. His name is given as Hagat, which means, “this is he who triumphs.” The hieroglyphic characters below the picture read Oar. Orion was anciently spelt Oarion, from the Hebrew root, which means light. The ancient Akkadian was Urana, the light of heaven.”

The twins, Castor and Pollex of the sign of Gemini would appear to depict the first and second comings of the Messiah—the first as a servant, the first event of Jesus—and the second as a ruler to occupy the throne of David in a yet future event. This two-fold nature of Christ has been a stumbling block to the Jewish people who are looking only for a kingly ruler—whereas God is seeking a way to redeem people of all nations in this great galactic war. Cancer, the crab has stars in Hebrew and Arabic, whose names imply sheltering, hiding-place, assembled thousands and the kids or lambs. This would suggest a place of security, a sheltering of the redeemed. This may well be the situation since the Bible, in the book of Revelation, outlines a great battle when Satan and his rebel angels are cast to Earth and the Lion of Judah defeats the great Dragon.

Bullinger describes the last sign Leo, the lion; “His feet are over the head of Hydra, the great Serpent, and just about to descend upon it and crush it. The three constellations of this Sign complete the final picture: 1. Hydra the old Serpent destroyed. 2. Crater, the Cup of Divine wrath poured out upon him. 3. Corvus, the Bird of prey devouring him. The Denderah picture exhibits all four in one. The Lion is presented treading down the Serpent. The Bird of prey is also perched upon it, while below is a plumed female figure holding out two cups, answering to Crater, the cup of wrath.”^{xxvi}

This great picture story of the heavens carried forward from antiquity, would certainly

suggest that the God of the Bible is in control, and that the movement of events in our space-time world is having major ramifications in the corporeal and spiritual realms.

The Invasion of Alien Angels

Satan—back then and even now—is out to destroy the human race to prevent his court martial, since he knows that somehow a man will defeat him. Some unknown time after Adam and Eve leave the garden, He mounts a major assault against mankind causing man to become totally self-taking, such that “*The Lord saw how great man’s wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time.*”^{xxvii}

The rebel ben Elohim (sons of God) attack! “*When men began to increase in number on the earth and daughters were born to them, the sons of God saw that the daughters of men were beautiful and married any of them they chose.*”^{xxviii} David Flynn writes, “*The Book of the Jubilees* remarks that Jared, an Old Testament patriarch, was so called because in his days the angels descended (Yehred, to descend) on the earth. Origen, translates the word Jordan as (Yardane) “the place of the descent.” Jordan is located in the ancient boundary of Israel. Significantly, Israel is currently a major location for sighting fallen angels, rebel ben Elohim, and their UFO craft. The book of *Enoch* explains that the Sons of God descended first onto the mountain called Hermon, which in Hebrew means desolation, in the land of Jordan the place of the descent. Desolation is exactly what Satan and his angels intended to make the earth by destroying the descendents of Adam. Obviously, to make desolate the earth, not only of man but of God’s influence has been the devil’s goal from the beginning.”^{xxix}

The book of Enoch is an apocrypha to the Bible. Mt. Hermon and the Jordan River, which are in Israel today, may be only reflections of an ancient memory since the Biblical flood would have destroyed the originals. It is also possible that there was a later descent, because Joshua noted that there were descendants of the Nephilim in the land of Canaan.^{xxx} *“The Nephilim were on the earth in those days [before the flood]—and also afterward [the time of Joshua]—when the sons of God went to the daughters of men and had children by them. They were the heroes of old, men of renown.”*^{xxxix}

Nephilim means “Those who fell or ... the fallen ones. The “fallen ones” sought to merge with the bloodline of Adam because of the promise to send a redeemer through Adam’s kinsman. The Hebrew says that the sons of God saw that the women were a “fit extension,” for they sought to extend themselves into this realm from the spirit realm, as well as to extend themselves into the “children of the promise” the lineage of Adam. Satan tried to prevent the eventual birth, in the distant future, of the Messiah.”^{xxxii}

Schaeffer writes,

What has stirred men’s curiosity is that the book of Jude seems to refer to this. Verses 6-7 read, “And angels that kept not their own principality, but left their proper habitation, he hath kept in everlasting bonds under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them, having in

Sci-Fi Sex

The entertainment industry glamorizes alien lovemaking—as being natural between diverse sentient creatures. Are we being psychologically prepared to accept another alien invasion?

like manner given themselves over to fornication and gone after strange flesh (the Greek says other flesh), are set forth as an example, suffering the punishment of “eternal fire” (ASV).

This passage seems to say that there are angels who left their own proper place and are specifically under judgment because they acted like the people of Sodom and Gomorrah. That is, as the people of Sodom and Gomorrah sought “other flesh” in homosexuality, these angels sought flesh that was “other flesh”; they involved themselves with human women in what could be called fornication.^{xxxiii}

The mating of the sons of God and human beings resulted in hybrid creatures, evil spirits with human bodies. The Bible comments, “*Now the earth was corrupt in God’s sight and was full of violence.*”^{xxxiv} Did this alien interference bring advanced technology, questions Gaverluk?

Were there anti-gravity devices or the use of atomic power—possibly devices that we have not even dreamed of yet? “Did Ham, Shem and Japheth actually carry electronic devices from the Ark following the Flood? What were the strange things known as the URIM and THUMMIM? The words mean “Lights and Perfections.” Were they energy devices that produced light and were perfect in their power, strength and purity, and beauty? Were they atomic energy sources? Associated with the twelve great jewels of the high priest’s breastplate, could they produce laser beams flashing off the ephod?” With their long life spans, intelligence and deceptive angelic power

how great may have been the evil and violence of that day. Technology with empty spirituality is symptomatic of our world today.^{xxxv}

The philosophical premise of some Christian commentators is that the sons of God represent the family line of Seth intermarrying with the sons of Cain. The line of Seth is the only family line that is delineated in the Bible, since it leads to Abraham, David and the Messiah (Yeshua-Jesus from the Christian prospective). Serious thought needs to be given as to how intermarriage between the two family lines could produce giants, or men of renown, or fallen ones since all men are in a fallen state. Nephilim were also present after the flood when the human race began again with only eight members of Noah's family. This seems to indicate something more than human lineage. Pember, who believes that the sons of God are angels, writes,

When men, we are told, began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, the sons of God saw the daughters of men (Gen. 6:1,2). Now by "men" in each case the whole human race is evidently signified, the descendants of Cain and Seth alike. Hence the "sons of God" are plainly distinguished from the generation of Adam. Again, the expression "sons of God (Elohim)" occurs but four times in other parts of the Old Testament, and is in each of these cases indisputably used for angelic beings.^{xxxvi}

Gaverluk comments, "Why didn't it say "Sons of Seth" rather than "Sons of God?" Is there an implication here that the "giants" produced were not produced by

ordinary men but by the interference of higher powers? Did other powers deliberately seek genetic control [Raelian cloning?], to produce mutations of mankind that would in effect control the earth completely and destroy God's plan for man? Did the success of this biological experimentation produce monstrosities in human form that were known all over Planet Earth? They were men of renown."^{xxxvii} "The assertion of a similar occurrence after the Deluge agrees with the passage of Numbers where the sons of Anak are said to have been Nephilim, or of the Nephilim (Numbers 12:33); and seems to account for God's command that the whole race of Canaanites should be extirpated. For immediately after the commission of the antediluvian sin, the doom of the world was pronounced: and prophecy intimates that the future confinement of the angels of darkness to earth will be the proximate cause of the great rebellion which will call forth the Lord Jesus in flaming fire to take vengeance (Revelation 12 & 13)."^{xxxviii}

Mythology of ancient cultures is pregnant with the exploits of the gods or those half human and divine. The focus is on sexual conquests. Many ancient temples contain explicit pictures and figurines, which in some mysterious way these ancient human cultures were trying to explain the beginning of the earth and heavens as a sexual exploit of the gods. Gaverluk summarizes the world of that era.

The whole story of Greek mythology is an expanded version of that astonishing verse in the Bible: "The sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose (Gen. 6:2)." The last part of this verse is very significant. Fallen spirit-beings ran rampant in lust, assuming physical bodies to impregnate earthly women. The resulting strange offspring became

giants, who were notorious throughout the ancient world for their awesome size, strength, power, and deeds. The mythology of the past is a startling revelation of the uncontrolled behavior of both spirit-beings and rebellious man. Here is the reason why Almighty God had to destroy that ancient world. It had become completely rebellious, their wills saturated with evil, their deeds governed absolutely by eternal devils, that it was useless to be patient with the human race. They had intermarried into the devil's domain. They had sold their souls forever to the ruler of darkness.^{xxxix}

Jesus Christ stated, *“Just as it was in the days of Noah, so also will it be in the days of the Son of Man. People were eating, drinking, marrying and being given in marriage up to the day Noah entered the ark. Then the flood came and destroyed them all. It was the same in the days of Lot. People were eating and drinking, buying and selling, planting and building. But the day Lot left Sodom, fire and sulfur rained down from heaven and destroyed them all. It will be just like that on the day the Son of Man is revealed.”*^{xl}

Into this early scene of human history a man named Noah was born. We are told that only Noah, found favour in the eyes of God. Noah, his wife, his three sons and their wives were of pure human lineage from Adam through Seth and were not polluted with foreign DNA. It is a sad commentary on the human race that only eight people of that era recognized their Divine Creator. Noah means “comfort.” He was of the line of Seth, the ninth from Adam. Each name has a meaning and when we list the nine descendents of

Adam in order and examine the meaning of their names, just like the signs of the Zodiac, they give a message to rebellious mankind.

<u>NAME</u>	<u>MEANING</u>
Seth	Appointed
Enos	Mortal
Cainan	Sorrow
Mahalaleel	Blessed God
Jared	Come down
Enoch	Teacher or teaching
Methuselah	When he dies, it shall come, or his death will bring it
Lamech	Despairing
Noah	Comfort

The message is to be fulfilled in the distant future. It reads: “Mortals are appointed to sorrow, but the blessed God came down teaching that his death will bring comfort to the despairing.”^{xli} *“Noah found favor in the eyes of the LORD. ... Noah was a righteous man, blameless among the people of his time, and he walked with God. ... The LORD saw how great man’s wickedness on the earth had become, and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time. The LORD grieved that He had made man on the earth, and His heart was filled with pain. So the LORD said, “I will wipe mankind, whom I have created, from the face of the earth—men and animals, and creatures that move along the ground, and birds of the air—for I am grieved that I have made them.”*^{xlii} Accordingly, Noah was instructed to build a large ocean going vessel, an ark, to rescue his immediate family and certain animal species, such that humanity would get a second chance. Lucifer may have watched this scene with devilish delight. It would seem that his plan has succeeded. The human race has been almost totally corrupted. His rebel contingent salutes their prince for his genius. No puny human will ever “crush his head,” none of his rebel angels will ever see judgment.

Notes:

- ⁱ Genesis 4:1
- ⁱⁱ Weinberg Steven, "Life in the Universe," *Scientific American*, October 1994, pg. 46
- ⁱⁱⁱ Schaeffer Francis Dr., *Genesis Man in Space and Time*, InterVarsity Press, 1972. pg. 124
- ^{iv} McCone Clyde R. Dr., "The Origins of Civilization," *A symposium on Creation* 1968 Baker Book House, pg. 89
- ^v Acher Gleason L. Jr. Ph.D., "The Chronology of the Old Testament," *The Expositors Bible Commentary*, Zondervan Publishing House, 1979, pg. 364
- ^{vi} Genesis 4:6
- ^{vii} Psalm 51:17
- ^{viii} Luke 22:31
- ^{ix} Gaverluk Dr., *Did Genesis Man Conquer Space*, pg. 60
- ^x Genesis 4:9
- ^{xi} Ephsians 6:12
- ^{xii} Isaiah 27:11b
- ^{xiii} Pink Arthur W., *The Sovereignty of God*, Baker Book House, pg. 25
- ^{xiv} Luke 6:35-36
- ^{xv} Psalms 5:5-6
- ^{xvi} Isaiah 24:21
- ^{xvii} Pember G.H., *Earth's Earliest Ages*, 1876, Kregel Publications edited by G. H. Lang 1942, pg. 43
- ^{xviii} Pember, Ibid, pg. 38
- ^{xix} Pember, Ibid, pg. 39
- ^{xx} Daniel 10:5-11:1
- ^{xxi} Job 1:7
- ^{xxii} Pember, Ibid, pg. 45
- ^{xxiii} Genesis 5:24
- ^{xxiv} Jude 14
- ^{xxv} Bullinger E.W. *The Witness of the Stars*, Kregel Publications, 1967
- ^{xxvi} Bullinger, Ibid, pg. 163
- ^{xxvii} Genesis 6:5
- ^{xxviii} Genesis 6:1
- ^{xxix} The Watchers Ministries, P.O. box 9351 Missoula, MT 59807
- ^{xxx} Numbers 12:33
- ^{xxxi} Genesis 6:4
- ^{xxxii} The Watchers Ministries, Ibid,
- ^{xxxiii} Schaeffer Dr. Francis, Ibid, pg. 125
- ^{xxxiv} Genesis 6:11
- ^{xxxv} Gaverluk, Ibid, pg. 64
- ^{xxxvi} Pember, Ibid, 130
- ^{xxxvii} Gaverluk, Ibid, pg. 57
- ^{xxxviii} Pember, Ibid, 133
- ^{xxxix} Gaverluk, Ibid, pg. 89
- ^{xl} Luke 17:26-30
- ^{xli} Rusk Roger, *the other end of the world*, Plantation House Inc. 1988, pg. 65
- ^{xlii} Genesis 6: 5-10

Chapter 16

Chaos

The Biblical account of Noah's ark and a worldwide flood of catastrophic proportions is a great dividing line between those who believe that it actually happened, and those who believe it didn't. We live in a world of lightening speed data overload—believing the information that scientists give us—is factual, only to find that the platform of pseudo-scientific knowledge is built, and forcibly maintained—on philosophical premises, (i.e. if one does not agree with the dogma no degree can be granted, research funds become unavailable and papers cannot get published). So to the majority of Earth's citizens, Noah's ark is only an interesting fable. A second division occurs amongst those who accept that a world-class flood did occur. Some believe that the catastrophic deluge was predicted and organized by God, while others maintain that, in particular, the story of Noah's ark resulted from a natural chaotic cosmological disaster or a regional flood. That decision is personal. We wish to determine if there is sufficient evidence that such a deluge, or deluges did in fact occur—and could they be an out-working of God in our ontology.

Catastrophism

Catastrophists and uniformitarianists are diametrically opposing schools of thought regarding Earth's geological history. Catastrophists believe that geological events occur with rapid

destructive force—in a very short time frame. Uniformitarianists believe very long ages of slow geological changes were involved for evolution to be a viable alternative to Biblical Creation, or an alien Genesis bomb. Catastrophists do not necessarily believe in Creation, or intelligent design (ID)—but are trying to interpret anomalous scientific facts in an objective manner—regardless of the philosophical consequences.

The formation of mountain ranges, the concept of continental ice sheets and gigantic deluges are best explained by catastrophic theories. Moreover, worldwide flood legends, including the Biblical story of Noah’s ark, create difficulties for modern uniformitarian ideas of organic evolution. Major physical forces are required to form mountain ranges and to account for other convulsive actions that are evident in the geological record. Understandably, uniformitarianists can provide no such force to cause these convulsions, other than the cooling and shrinking of Earth’s crust. This force is insufficient to explain the over-thrust of many miles of lithologic layers and does not give short time frame causes for rapid worldwide geological events of biological mass extinctions.

Modern catastrophists, commencing with Immanuel Velikovsky in the 1950s and Donald Patten in the 1970s, have been able to show that a planet sized body interacting with the orbit of Earth, would provide the necessary forces to account for these short time frame geological convulsions. Velikovsky postulates that the planet Venus interacted with Earth. Patten maintains that Mars was involved in a catastrophic cycle of near Earth passes. In their well-researched book, *When the Earth Nearly Died*, D.S. Allen

Evidence

Velikovsky writes, “Scientific principles do not warrant maintaining that a force which does not act now, could not have acted previously. Or must we be in permanent collision with the planet and comets in order to believe in such catastrophes?”ⁱ

and J.B. Delair,ⁱⁱ hypothecate that a celestial body, Phaeton, caused great catastrophic destruction in the solar system.

Flood Legends

Flood legends are worldwide and appear to reflect historical memories of an ancient event. The most authentic ancient legends reflect a moral theme—that mankind had become evil—the gods gave warning and then brought on a worldwide flood. A few people were left to repopulate the world. There is no doubt that local floods have also colored the overall flood survival story. Some anthropologists have tried to confuse the issue by maintaining that some tribal flood traditions were

just reflections of Christian missionary efforts. Allan and Delair write “Their geographical distribution reveals the absurdity of the efforts made in some quarters to show that the Deluge traditions were entirely derived from the scriptural story of Noah as disseminated by Christian missionaries. As a general explanation, it fails miserably. Yet the notion of a vast flood was evidently so ingrained in human memory that it could not be forgotten.”ⁱⁱⁱ Immanuel Velikovsky, the father of modern catastrophism, comments,

The answer to the problem of the similarity of the motifs in the folklore of various peoples is, in my view, as follows: A great many ideas reflect real historical content. There is a legend, found all over the world, that a deluge swept over the earth and covered hills and even mountains. We have a poor

Divine Purpose

The God whose reality we are examining created the cosmos, and is outside of our space-time world. Rogue planets and asteroids, as celestial missiles, would then be under His command. A Divinely guided catastrophe from man’s viewpoint would be meaningless unless he can see an out-working of events giving direction to the intelligence arrow of mankind—affirming that there is Divine purpose.

opinion of the mental abilities of our ancestors if we think that merely an extraordinary overflow of the Euphrates so impressed the nomads of the desert that they thought the entire world was flooded, and that the legend so born wandered from people to people. At the same time, geological problems of the origin and distribution of till, or diluvial deposits, are awaiting explanation.^{iv}

Flood legends appear to be of two types, 1) total annihilation and, 2) major devastation with celestial conflagration. The former legends are fewer and appear to be the most ancient. The latter are much broader culturally, and are linked to unusual celestial events. In either case, catastrophic forces of short time duration are involved. The Biblical flood story stands alone as a clearly descriptive observation. Wiseman, as we have previously discussed, maintains that the details were outlined on clay tablets and passed down from father to son. The closest parallel story is the Babylonian Epic of Gilgamesh, which is mythological in its description. Dorothy Vitaliano in her book, *Legends of the Earth*, summarizes some of the principle flood legends. The Babylonian version, the Epic of Gilgamesh, was unearthed at Nineveh in the library of Ashurbanipal (668-633 BC) and centers around a man named Utnapishtim.

Modern Myth

Anthropologists go to great lengths to show that the Biblical story must have been rewritten from the Gilgamesh Epic. This is scientific foolishness. How can you get specific details from a perverted mythical legend? We have a modern illustration. South Sea natives made up mythical legends concerning the great droning birds (planes) flying over the islands in the Second World War. Let's suggest that you are an anthropologist studying these natives—will you discredit the Air Force flight reports in favor of the Islander's legends?

“Enough bits and pieces of older versions have been found in different places to prove that

Ashurbanipal's version in turn is based on a Sumerian story which goes back to about 3400 BC, in which the hero is called Ziusuddu or Xisuthrus. Utnapishtim was a good man who was warned by the sea god Ea that the world was destined to be destroyed by a flood in punishment for the wickedness of mankind.”^v

Allan Millard reviews the Epic of Gilgamesh, which takes up 200 lines of poetry.

The gods in council decided to send the flood, and Ea, the god responsible for creating man, took an oath with them not to tell mankind about it. However, Ea warned Utnapishtim by speaking loudly to his house. “Pull down the house, build a ship! Take the seed of all creatures aboard the ship. The ship you are to build its measurements shall equal each other its width and its length shall be the same.” Utnapishtim hides the facts from his fellow citizens. He eventually loads the ship. “Whatever I had I put aboard it, Whatever silver I had I put aboard it, Whatever gold I had I put aboard it, Whatever living creatures I had I put aboard it. I made my family and relatives board the ship. The domesticated animals and the wild, All the craftsman, I made go aboard ... The fixed time arrived ... I looked at the pattern of the weather. The weather was terrifying to see I boarded the ship and closed the door.”^{vi}

Utnapishtim then describes a great storm, “The god of the underworld tears out the posts of the dam. The warrior-god leads the waters on.” A great darkness came over the land. He then makes an interesting statement, which may relate to the intermarriage of the Sons of God with men as described in Genesis. “The gods were frightened by the flood. They went off up to the heaven of the chief god. The gods cowered like dogs, crouching outside the door.” The flood lasts seven days. He sends out a dove, a swallow and then a raven. “The raven went and saw the waters receding. It ate,

it flew about, to and fro, it did not return.” Utnapishtim presents a sacrifice to the gods. “The gods smelled the sweet savour. The gods clustered like flies around the sacrificer.” Finally, “Following a dispute over the survivor and advice to punish individuals for their sins, the gods ordained immortality for Utnapishtim and his wife.”^{vii}

Deukalion’s deluge of classical Greek mythology is the next best-known example of a worldwide flood. Vitaliano writes,

Deukalion, son of Prometheus, was a king of Thessaly. When mankind fell into evil ways, Zeus decided to destroy the world. Prometheus warned Deukalion, who was a good and pious man, and advised him to build a large wooden chest and stock it with provisions. Nine days and nights it rained, and the waters rose so high that only the top of Mount Parnassus stood above the flood. Deukalion and his wife, Pyrrha floated in safety in their chest, which came to rest on Parnassus as the waters subsided. As soon as they disembarked they gave thanks for their deliverance and prayed to Zeus for help in their loneliness. Zeus commanded them to cast behind them the “bones of their mother.” Interpreting this to mean rocks, the bones of mother Earth, Deukalion and Pyrrha cast behind them stones, which turned into men and women.^{viii}

Flood legends also exist in the northern latitudes. Vitaliano continues:

No biblical influence is apparent in the Norse mythology. One of the myths is set in the days before mankind, in the time of the giants. When the evil Ymir was slain by Odin and his brothers Vili and Ve, the blood gushed forth in a flood which drowned all the frost giants except Bergelmir and his wife, who escaped to Jotunheim and founded a new race of giants. ... The flood traditions of Asia

are very diversified. The Persian myth from the Bundahish, one of the later scriptures of the Parsees, tell how in earliest times the earth was full of malign creatures fashioned by the evil principle Ahriman. The angel Tistar (the star Sirius) descended in three different forms successively—man, horse, and bull—and in each form he caused it to rain for ten nights and ten days. The first flood drowned all the evil creatures, but the seeds of evil remained and poisoned the earth. Before Tistar could return (in the form of a white horse) to send a second cleansing rain, he had to do battle with the demon Apasosha, who appeared as a black horse.

The Hindu flood tradition of Manu is post-Vedic. “It first appears in the Satapatha Brahmana, which goes back to about 600 BC. ... In its earliest version it tells how a man named Manu found a little fish in the water brought for his mornings ablutions. The fish said, “Protect me and I will save you. A great flood is coming which will destroy all creatures. ... On the advice of the fish he built a vessel, and when the flood came, embarked in it. Of all the creatures on earth, only he was saved. The human race was regenerated with the help of a woman whom the gods fashioned out of the sacrifice Manu offered after his deliverance.^{ix}

Gods in the Heavens

Stories of gods at war in the heavens, and of great conflagrations on Earth are much more prevalent and likely reflect more recent secondary events—likely from 7000 BC to 700 BC. The great poet and historian Homer, from the ninth century BC, and a later writer Herodotus of the fifth

century BC, who also had access to ancient documents of the Mediterranean region, provide poetic descriptions of the wars of the gods. “There was a time in the story of Greece during which epic poems were created that have never been surpassed. Verses from the Iliad and the Odyssey, the poems thought to have been written by Homer, were told and retold for generations. These poems describe some of the extraordinary adventures of Greek heroes and tell of early Greek myths.”^x

Our modern era of humanity tends to think of the planets as barely visible specks of light. Many people have no clue as to which dot in the evening sky is a planet. Ancient mythology implies that the planets were powerful forces that somehow shaped their

Planet gods

Donald Patten writes, “The Greeks traded with the Phoenicians. They acquired timber, manufacture[d goods (sic)], and many other things, including the alphabet. In Punic, the Phoenician language, the word for Mars was Baal, sometimes represented as Ba'al. This word was a derivative from the Babylonian word, Bel. In Chaldean, Bel and Ishtar were Mars and Venus. In Phoenician they were Baal and Ashtarte. In Greek they were Apollo and Athena.”^{xi}

cosmos in a way not evident in this 21st century. This mythology affected the Israelites, who committed the sin of astrology. “*The Israelites did evil in the eyes of the Lord: they forgot the Lord their God and served the Baals and the Asherahs.*”^{xii}

The myths and ancient legends can best be understood, if they do possibly describe close encounters of planetary bodies with Earth. Otherwise, how did these ancient Greeks know that the celestial steeds of Mars, Deimos and Phobos, were two in number? Were they close enough to see as they swirled around the terrible red planet? Deimos means great dread or awe, and Phobos is to fear. The ancients must have been sick with fright as this monster approached Earth.

Flashing electrical discharges between the planets accompanied by sonic booms, and the awesome sight of this god of the heavens getting bigger every night until it is much bigger than the Moon, would be emotionally disturbing and of tremendous religious significance. Frightful monsters, Gorgon, Typhon and Phaethon terrorize the mythological skies of Homer. Patten writes “In the opening pages of Homer’s *The Iliad*, the reader will meet two priests of Apollo/Baal. These were Greek priests who reportedly could conjure up the future and read the stars. They seem to have advised Achilles, Agamemnon and Menelaus that March of 809 BC would be another catastrophic occasion, and the celestial wrath of Ares-Apollo would once again fall on Troy in the form of celestial lightning. The metaphor they used to describe the arrival of the expected lightning [the tremendous electrical discharges between the planets] was through the silver bowstring of Apollo Shootafar.”^{xiii}

NASA space probes have detected powerful electrical discharges between Jupiter and its innermost moon Io. “The voltage of this flux tube or aurora has been estimated at 400,000 volts. The amperage has been estimated at 5 million amps. And its wattage has been estimated at 2 quadrillion watts.” This type of discharge would melt and vitrify solid rock, forests would burst into flame and water would boil and vaporize. Patten continues, “We have reason to believe that there were approximately 170 close flybys of Mars in ancient times between 9900 BC and 701 BC.

Has Mars been zapped?

Detailed photographs of Mars by the Mars Surveyor spacecraft show what appear to be metallic like domes with collapse crater features. Are they large discharge sites that have been vitrified by intense electrical discharges? Powerful electrical currents may have caused a mixture of water and carbon dioxide ice to boil thrusting the molten rock skywards. Concave collapse craters of vitrified rock would form after the discharge.

In addition, those flybys occurred in cycles of 54 years, like clockwork in timing. Furthermore, since there is no similar flux tube of electricity from Jupiter to Europa at 415,000 miles, our analysis is that during the Mars-Earth catastrophes, a similar flux tube of charged particles formed at a distance of 85,000 miles, the minimum, but more likely at a distance of 125,000 miles as Mars approached the Earth.^{»xiv}

This recurring cycle of catastrophes was also noted by Velikovsky, “The works of Fernando del Alva Ixtlilxochitl, the early Mexican scholar (circa 1568-1648) who was able to read old Mexican texts, preserve the ancient tradition according to which the multiple of fifty-two year periods played an important role in the recurrence of world catastrophes. He asserts also that only fifty-two years elapsed between two great catastrophes, each of which terminated a world age.”^{xv} Patten cites Apollodorus of the second century BC, (Apollodorus specialized in the history of the Heroic Age of Homer and Hesiod), in giving a description of Typhon:

He has a hundred snaky heads, his eyes flash fire, and he emits strange noises... “all kinds of voices,” bellowings yelpings and hissings. Earth, sea and sky resound with the din of battle. There is thunder, lightning, fire and burning hurricane; the earth seethes, and the sky and sea likewise. Great waves rage along the shore and there is an endless quaking, so that even Hades and the Titans under Tartarus are reduced to trembling.^{xvi}

Patten’s scientific team studied the celestial mechanics of such a flyby and did a computer analysis:

We found that Mars always would make a sunward side flyby, which, when viewed from Polaris, was a clockwise motion. Simultaneously, the Earth’s spin was advancing in a counter-clockwise direction. This led to the production of

much friction between the Earth's crust and its underlying region, the mantle, and the friction was generated into a recharged planetary magnetic field. As mentioned earlier, the geometry of the arrangement dictates that Greece, at a latitude of 45° or so was rotating from west to east at a rate of about 700 m.p.h. Simultaneously, Mars was moving clockwise, at a rate of about 1000 m.p.h. with respect to the sub-point on the Earth's surface directly under Mars. These two rates added to 1700 m.p.h. This was the velocity at which Mars (and its planetary magnetic tail) was sweeping across Eurasia.

Apollodorus described the Silver Bowstring of Apollo Shootafar or Typhon, as advancing on an east-to-west direction. This is correct. He described it as advancing in a marine environment. Its advance began in Phoenicia, and from there it moved past Rhodes and on past Crete to Sicily, where Mt. Etna was erupting. In our model this means that Typhon advanced in a westerly direction across the Mediterranean Sea at a rate of about 280 miles in 10 minutes. It advanced 1200 miles (from Phoenicia to Sicily) in a time span of about 45 minutes. Apollodorus described Typhon's appearance and progress in this manner:

But when the gods saw him rushing at heaven, they made for Egypt in flight, and being pursued they changed their forms into those of animals. However Zeus pelted Typhon at a distance with thunderbolts, and at close quarters struck him down with an adamantine sickle, and as he fled pursued him closely as far as Mount Casius which overhangs Syria. There, seeing the monster sore wounded, he grappled with him. But Typhon twined about him and gripped him

in his coils, and wrestling the sicle (sic.) from him severed the sinews of his hands and feet and lifting him on his shoulders carried him through the sea to Cilicia... Likewise he put away the sinews there also... But Hermes and Aegipan stole the sinews and fitted them unobserved to Zeus.

And having recovered his strength, Zeus suddenly from heaven, riding in a chariot of winged horses, pelted Typhon with thunderbolts and pursued him to the mountain called Nysa, where the Fates beguiled the fugitive... So being again pursued he came to Thrace, and in fighting at Mount Haemus he heaved whole mountains. But when these recoiled on him through the force of the thunderbolt, a stream of blood gushed out on the mountain, and they say that from that circumstance the mountain was called Haemus. And when he started to flee through the Sicilian sea, Zeus cast Mount Etna in Sicily upon him. That is a huge mountain, from which down to this day they say blasts of fire issue from the thunderbolts that were thrown.^{xvii}

The electrical discharges between the planets would create awesome ionic florescence of Earth's atmosphere. Tremendous electrical currents would flow in the mantle [the zone between the crust and the molten core] recharging the electromagnetic dynamo causing Earth's magnetic field. This is likely the cause of the multiple polarity reversals of Earth's magnetic field as indicated by ancient lava flows. The gravitational tidal forces would heave mountains, create great mountain-shaped oceanic tidal waves and rupture Earth's crust causing tremendous volcanic explosions and super lava flows.

What about Mars?

Is it more than a coincidence that the Mars surveyor space probes show it to be a cracked and crater ridden planet? Mt. Nix Olympica is so huge that it can be seen from telescopes on Earth. It is over 500 kilometers wide at its base, and the main volcanic vent is over 65 kilometers wide. Huge cracks split the planets surface. One of these is a super crack ... 4000 km long, over 100 km wide and 6 km deep. Gaverluk comments,

The craters on Mars, plus the existence of the huge volcanoes and giant canyons, speak mutely of earthquakes caused by tidal action in the lithosphere as a bigger mass than this planet goes sweeping by. Mars must have been closer to the earth at one time. The ancient scientists knew about the two tabrants or moons of Mars. Is this what mythology meant by the warring of the gods in the heavens as the peoples on earth gazed up in awe at the startling sights in the skies? In 1726, Jonathan Swift wrote *Guilliver's Travels* 150 years before Asaph Hall discovered the two tiny moons of Mars. Swift wrote, "Certain astrologers ... have likewise discovered two lesser stars, or satellites, which revolve about Mars, whereof the innermost is distant from the center of the primary planet exactly three of its diameters, and the outermost five; the former revolves in the space of ten hours, and the latter in twenty-one and a half ... which evidently shows them to be governed by the same law of gravitation that influences the other heavenly bodies." Did Swift guess, or did he read the Ancients and deduce the existence of Mars's two attendants?^{xviii}

Meteorite ALH84001, which was found on the Antarctica ice field in the late 1990s, and is thought to have originated from Mars, probably came from a close planetary encounter with Earth,

rather than from Mars in its present orbit. Following the Uniformitarian viewpoint, Leon Jaroff writes for *TIME*:

Hurling in from space some 16 million years ago, a giant asteroid slammed into the dusty surface of Mars and exploded with more power than a million hydrogen bombs, gouging a deep crater in the planet's crust and lofting huge quantities of rock and soil into the thin Martian atmosphere. While most of the debris fell back to the surface, some of the rocks, fired upward by the blast at high velocities, escaped the weak tug of Martian gravity and entered into orbits of their own around the sun.

After drifting through interplanetary space for millions of years, one of these Martian rocks ventured close to Earth 13,000 years ago when Stone Age humans were beginning to develop agriculture and plunged into the atmosphere, blazing a meteoric path across the sky. It crashed into a sheet of blue ice in Antarctica and lay undisturbed until scientists discovered it in 1984 in a field of jagged ice called the Allan Hills.^{xix}

Such an explosion of debris is more likely to orbit Mars than to be ejected into planetary space. This debris would follow Mars in its catastrophic orbits with Earth. Donald Patten quotes a section of Homer's, *The Iliad*, which suggests that at one time there were four satellites (celestial steeds) orbiting Mars—Rout, Strife, Strength and Panic.

Meanwhile Athene flung her richly embroidered vesture, made with her own hands, on to her father's threshold, and donned the shirt of Zeus, arming herself for battle. She threw her tasseled aegis about her shoulders, wreathed around with Rout (Deimos) as with a fringe, and on it were Strife and Strength, and

Panic (Phobos) whose blood runs cold; moreover there was the HEAD OF THE DREAD MONSTER GORGON, grim and awful to behold, portent of aegis-bearing Zeus.^{xx}

Patten and his technical team of physicists propose that the years of 701 BC and 699 BC were the last years of the Mars-Earth catastrophic orbits. In these years, Mars made outside passes of the Earth, instead of inside passes (inside passes would have maintained the catastrophic orbits), and gained enough energy to place it into its present orbit. The Earth would lose energy—this should show as a change in the calendar. Remarkably, this era coincides with an adjustment of the world's calendars at that time from 360 days to 365.25 days. He writes,

A historian versed in catastrophism will attest that history finds no more catastrophes after 701 BC. Furthermore, with the coming of the 7th century BC and then the 6th, ancient cultures revised their calendars to shift from the former 360 days to the more accurate 365. Plutarch's discourse on the gambling planets is an illustration, as is the Chinese new intercalendaric "Khe-yeng," the Incan "Allcacanquis," and Hebrew "Veadar," to name but three examples. In each case, 5 days were added, suggesting an expansion of the Earth's orbit, requiring an additional 1½% day-count per year. This matches the contraction of the Martian orbit from the ancient 720 days to the current 687 days.^{xxi}

In the same vein, Immanuel Velikovsky in *Worlds In Collision* details these changes in all the ancient cultures from India through to Egypt. The Temples, Obelisks, shadow clocks and water clocks were all out of alignment.^{xxii}

Did Mars loose several of its mythical steeds, Strife and Strength, sometime during its catastrophic interaction with Earth? It is interesting that Astronomer Paul Wiegert has located “a small asteroid that carries on a delicate, 385 year long gravitational dance with the earth. ... Its elliptical path sees it pass through or near the orbits of Earth, Mar, Venus and Mercury.”^{xxiii} Moreover, asteroids, 2002 AA29 and 3753 Cruithne actually share Earth’s orbit around the sun. *BBC NEWS* reports,

Asteroid 2002 AA29 is only about 100 metres wide and never comes closer than 3.6 million miles to our planet. But it shares the Earth's orbit around the Sun, at first on one side of the Earth and then escaping to travel along our planet's path around the Sun until it encounters the Earth from the other side. Then it goes back again. This puts 2002 AA29 is in the same class as 3753 Cruithne, a similar rocky body in a horseshoe orbit around the Earth.^{xxiv}

These asteroids may very well be the debris of an ancient catastrophic event.

On February 14, 2000 the NEAR Shoemaker spacecraft began orbiting asteroid 433 Eros and mapped this large chunk of rock for almost one and one-half years. The orbit of this potato shaped asteroid crosses the orbit of Mars. Andrew Cheng, a NEAR project scientist, reports that the asteroid is geologically layered. Mr. Cheng comments that Eros could be from “probably a planet sized body that once broke up.”^{xxv} Scientist Dr. Tom Van Flandern, proposes that Mars was once a moon of a large planet between the present orbits of Mars and Jupiter. For some unknown reason this planet exploded. Eros may possibly be a fragment from that exploded planet.^{xxvi}

Celestial Mud and Ice

Allan and Delair note that Earth has suffered unexplained falls of mud, dust, pebbles and ice even into our modern era.

During November 1902 staggering quantities of dust and mud fell over Australia, and fell there again in 1903 - 50 tons of it per square mile. It also fell in stupendous quantities simultaneously over much of Europe and western Russia, and was reported as having also fallen over the Canary Islands, and Barbados in the Caribbean. No less than 10 million tonnes of it is said to have fallen on southern England alone. At the time it was fatuously alleged to be dust and sand whirled up from the Sahara Desert, an explanation still commonly advanced to account for modern falls of similar red dust and mud. Did Earth pass in 1902 and 1903 through part of the great cloud or shell of particles which, as previously argued, formed after the explosive disintegration of one or more once solid bodies over 11,500 years ago - a cloud or shell on an orbit intersecting with that of Earth and perhaps occasionally at that?^{xxvii}

They also note “In 1882, Prof. Schwedoff argued that ice of celestial origin existed and accounted for the bombardment of Earth by curious hailstones and huge chunks of ice which occur from time to time.” Henry Waldner saw a large number of small shining bodies pass at great altitude from East to West in 1863.... In 1849, Sir Robert Inglis watched thousands of brilliant white objects cross a cloudless sky for 25 minutes. A similar phenomenon was watched by Rev. W Read for no less than six hours in 1851; ... The brilliance of these unknown objects suggests that they

were either burning meteors, or were pieces of ice illuminated by sunlight as they passed close to the Earth's upper atmosphere.... In May 1802, a mass of ice 3 ft. long, as many wide, and over 2 ft. thick fell in Hungry. Pieces of ice, a foot in circumference, fell in Derbyshire, England, in May 1811, and in 1828 a lump about a cubic yard in size fell at Candeishe in India. A block of ice weighing 11 lbs. fell at Cette, France, in 1844; while a huge mass, some 20 ft. in circumference fell at Ord in Scotland during 1849.^{xxviii}

Closer to our modern era, January 18, 2000, *BBC News* reported an incident of icefalls that took place for several days over the country of Spain. Remnant chunks as big as basketballs weighing 4kg were found. One of these smashed into a car. Meteorologists ruled out weather as a cause, and the ice lacked the colouring of jet waste. *Globe and Mail*, science news headlines—“Spaceballs vindicate Chicken Little scientist... snowballs raining from the heavens.”

Dr. Lous Frank, University of Iowa physicist, for 11 years “had been the target of scorn because of his theory that snowy cometary

From Whose Womb came the Ice

In the ancient Book of Job 38:29, God asks, “From whose womb comes the ice? Who gives birth to the frost from the heavens when the waters become hard as stone, when the surface of the deep is frozen?” Job lived in the hot desert area of the Middle East. He may have seen ice fall from the heavens because in the rest of God’s questioning He is discussing the celestial, and not the local weather conditions. God continues, “Can you bind the beautiful Pleiades? Can you loose the cords of Orion? Can you bring forth the constellations in their seasons? Do you know the laws of the heavens? Can you set up their dominion over the earth?”

objects with thin carbon shells are raining down on Earth’s atmosphere... His

monomania about cometary objects was the reason Dr. Frank, now 58, had not been elected to the prestigious U.S. National Academy of Sciences.” [Where have we heard that before?] “Using images from the satellite, Dr. Frank and colleague John Sigwarth have compiled compelling evidence suggesting that what are being called “comet-like objects” (CLOs) of about 10 meters in diameter and weighing an estimated 20 to 40 tonnes are hitting the Earth’s atmosphere and spewing nearly pure water as they break apart into large clouds.” Dr. Frank considers his snowballs to be fluffy inside with a “thin protective carbon shell around it.” It would appear that both chunks of ice and snowballs exist in space. A critic, Prof. Donahue, who has now sided with Dr. Frank, “has calculated that if the comet collisions have existed over the 4.5 billion-year history of the Earth, then there should be three times as much water in the oceans as is actually there. However, he suggested that one resolution would be if the hail of CLOs were of geologically recent duration, say over a few hundred or few thousand years.”^{xxix}

Mud and ice water clouds may also hit Mars from time to time. Surveyor spacecraft false color pictures from the area of Elysium show a large area that appears to have been hit by a mud-water bomb. In Canada and the northwest United States, water bombers are used to fight forest fires. The water is mixed with a red fire retardant and can leave large red blotches on a hillside. The Elysium area of Mars looks as if a massive dark mud cloud came in at approximately a thirty-degree angle to the surface and splashed the topography with a mud bath. Clean shadow areas exist behind mountains while the facing sides of craters are filled with dark material.

Other Biblical Catastrophes

Similar to other ancient literature, the Bible contains metaphors in its poetry. Metaphors are meaningless unless readers can mentally relate them to real space-time events. Psalms 114:3-4 is an illustration, it says, “*The sea looked and fled, the Jordan turned back; the mountains skipped like rams, the hills like lambs.*” There is no figurative reason to describe the mountains as skipping, unless the poetry reflects an ancient memory of major earthquakes. Mountains normally should be symbols of stature and strength. The Bible only gives a hint that some major earth shifting event took place when it says, “*Two sons were born to Eber: One was named Peleg, because in his time the earth was divided.*”^{xxx} This may have been an ancient memory of rapid continental drift caused by a major planetary conflict between Mars and Earth. In addition, two mysterious persons “angels from the heavens” came and literally dragged a man named Lot, his wife and two daughters from the wicked city of Sodom. “*Then the LORD rained down burning sulfur on Sodom and Gomorrah—from the LORD out of the heavens.*”^{xxxi}

The Biblical book of Exodus relates the dramatic passage of the Israelites out of Egypt, sometime between the years 1537-1447 BC. Some catastrophic writers have tried to link an assault of a planetary body with Earth to all the plagues of blood, frogs, gnats, flies, boils, hail, locusts, darkness, livestock, deaths of the first born, and to the parting of the Red Sea. There may be some possibility of this being the case, however, God says that He did it, and that He caused a wind that specifically divided the waters so that the people crossed the Red Sea between two walls of water. Moreover, an explanation is required for the pillar of cloud by day and of fire at night that went with them on their wanderings for 40 years—which is much longer than a fly-by of a planetary body.

The Earth Wobbles

The long day of Joshua has been an enigma to Biblical scholars—did God just place his hand on Earth and stop it because Joshua asked him to? Even those of such great faith to believe this, must admit, if they understand the physics of Earth at all, that the physical consequences to Earth would be tremendous. On the other hand, if God did cause something to happen, such as a timely close Earth wrenching fly-by of Mars, the results of the physical effects should be apparent if the Bible has any validity. On this day, when Joshua was battling the Canaanite army, not only was the day lengthened but also celestial debris rained from the sky. *“As they fled before Israel on the road down from Beth Horon to Azekah, the LORD hurled large hailstones down on them from the sky, and more of them died from the hailstones than were killed by the swords of the Israelites.”*^{xxxii} Donald Patten comments “Hailstone in Hebrew is *barad*, which seems to be inadequately translated. Planetary Catastrophists believe *barad* means thunderbolts of electricity, not hail or iceballs.” He cites William Wheston a catastrophist of the 17th century, who translated the works of Josephus an ancient Jewish historian of the 1st century AD “The place is called Bethhoron; where he also understood that God assisted him, which he declared BY THUNDER AND THUNDERBOLTS, as also by the FALLING OF HAIL, larger than usual. Moreover, it happened that the day was lengthened.”^{xxxiii}

In order for the day to be lengthened, something has to happen to the apparent rotation of the Earth, such as a major shift of Earth’s crust. Patten explains:

Normally, the crust is locked on to the mantle, and the two spin together in lock step. On this day, the lock was broken due to crustal flexing. The Earth’s crust containing Eurasia, wanted to follow Mars instead of following the mantle. It compromised. It slowed down. In the latitude of Greece and Palatine of that era,

about 45° N. latitude, normally the crust rotated at a velocity of 700 m.p.h. On this day, between the hours of 2:00 p.m. and midnight, the crust (and Eurasia) sailed eastward, following the planet. How much did it sail eastward? We do not know.... The probability is that the Earth's crust shifted northerly about 260 miles, and it shifted easterly about 2800 miles. This is our guess. Crustal skid (easterly by northeasterly) helps to explain why Jerusalem had a net loss of 10° or 12° of latitude during the October catastrophes, 1500 BC to 701 BC.^{xxxiv}

Isaiah, in the era of 701 to 699 BC, was inspired by God to console the people of Jerusalem that the invading army of Sennacherib of Assyria would be defeated, but not by the hand of a mighty man. *“Assyria will fall by a sword that is not of man; a sword, not of mortals, will devour them.”*^{xxxv} *“The LORD will cause men to hear his majestic voice and will make them see his arm coming down with raging anger and consuming fire, with cloudburst, thunderstorm and hail.”*^{xxxvi} *“Whoever flees at the sound of terror will fall into a pit; whoever climbs out of the pit will be caught in a snare. The floodgates of the heavens are opened, the foundations of the earth shake. The earth is broken up, the earth is split asunder, the earth is thoroughly shaken. The earth reels like a drunkard, it sways like a hut in the wind; so heavy upon it is the guilt of its rebellion that it falls—never to rise again.”*^{xxxvii}

The result of these predictions is that the angel of the Lord mysteriously destroyed the Assyrian army consisting of 185,000 men, and the sundial of Hezekiah was shortened by 10 degrees. Possibly, by divine decree, flux tube discharges struck the army camp and electrocuted the soldiers. Earth reeled like a drunkard as high-speed continental drift went into effect. Patten comments, “The spin axis indeed had precessed once again as Isaiah reported, the equivalent of the North Pole having moved (and the latitude of Jerusalem). It was the Earth, but more precisely the

spin axis of the Earth, which acted like a drunkard, having wobbled for a few hours. Isaiah, in reporting such, was indeed a splendid reporter for Earth history.^{xxxviii}

Research by Allan and Delair indicate that the early Egyptians and Greenland Eskimos believed that the Earth formerly turned over. Moreover, “ancient Chinese and other early traditions describe a time when the stars poured across the heavens and the Earth settled down to a lower position than it had previously occupied.” They also record that the “celebrated Greek philosopher Plato described a similar axial dislocation, caused by a vast flood “which foamed in and streamed out” and made the Earth move irrationally: “forwards and backwards, and again to right and left, and upwards and down-wards, wandering every way in all six directions.”^{xxxix} Such earthquake and flood action may account for the archaeological ruins on the floor of the Black Sea and new discoveries off of the coast of India and China

Putting the Puzzle Together

Catastrophists, Velikovsky, Patten, Allan and Delair have expended considerable research into the physical aspects, cultural histories, and mythical legends of a catastrophic planetary interaction with Earth. Velikovsky proposes that the planet Venus was somehow ejected from Jupiter as a terrible comet, before becoming a new star in the sky.^{xi} It first causes havoc with Mars and both planets interact with Earth. Donald Patten’s team of scientists developed detailed mathematical models of the celestial mechanics involved for Mars to be in a catastrophic resonance with Earth. Allan and Delair have studied the biological, fossil and conflagration evidence for a major world-enveloping deluge. Their Phaeton, a planet sized fragment from a supernova explosion (alias Typhon, Gorgon, Apollo and maybe Medusa), interacted with the solar system. They also question, in detail, the validity of the continental ice sheets so beloved of the uniformitarianists.^{xli}

A synthesis of the various viewpoints and details provided by Velikovsky, Patten, Allan and Delair makes for a very plausible argument that a major catastrophic event did take place. However, certain adjustments need to be made to make the jig saw puzzle fit. Phaeton, let's keep that name for the supernova remnant, could not be the same planetary body that was in a multiple pass catastrophic resonance orbit with Earth from 3000 B.C to 700 BC, as discussed by Velikovsky and Patten. That body is most likely Mars. Venus may possibly be Phaeton, which has been captured by the Solar system. However, the Allan and Delair model of Phaeton's interaction with Venus may possibly account for the present high temperature and the slow retrograde rotation of that planet.

Allan and Delair propose the birth of Phaeton as a remnant of astral matter from a supernova explosion that may have occurred within 45 light years of the solar system some 14,300 to 11,000 years ago. It need travel at only one hundredth the speed of light to arrive at the solar system in less than one thousand years. Their model suggests that the astral matter of Phaeton precipitated a smaller explosion "on coming into confrontation with the combined gravitational and electromagnetic fields of the huge outer planets of the solar system. ... It must surely transcend coincidence that the gamma-ray spectrometer on the Third High Energy Astronomical Observatory satellite (HEAO 3) has lately detected a high concentration or cloud of Aluminium-26 ... in space, surrounding the solar system." They report that theoretical studies show Aluminium-26 is readily produced in supernova explosions. Radioactive isotope Aluminium-26 has a half-life of one million years and decays into Magnesium-26. However, "its decay is not very far advanced and suggests that the cloud may be as young as a mere 10,000 years."^{xlii} One could then speculate that Phaeton may also be the source of the rare element iridium that has been associated with a major meteoritic impact, and the possible extinction of the dinosaurs.

Phaeton, as it proceeded into the solar system, would have created havoc amongst the outer planets. Astra, a planet possibly in orbit between Jupiter and Mars, may have been destroyed and its ice cap, methane layers and rock core blasted into space. All that remains now is the ring of meteoric debris between Mars and Jupiter. Mars, which may have been a moon of this large planet, took a full blast of meteorites and ice, and spun out of resonance into a chaotic orbit with Earth.

“Red Planet flood was real deluge,” read the headlines. Mr. Wilford, in his article on Pathfinder/Sojourner Mars mission, continues, “With each new colour photograph from Mars Pathfinder, scientists are recognizing the awesome magnitude of a deluge that swept over much of the Red Planet billions of years ago, a catastrophe that perhaps only Noah could appreciate. ... Scientists think the highlands are 4.5 to 3.6 billion years old, which is the same period in which life emerged on Earth. The early evidence indicates that the most recent flood at the landing site occurred one billion to three billion years ago.”^{xliii} It will be extremely interesting as to what the uniformitarian scientists are going to say should photographic evidence eventually show that these floodwaters have washed around the face and pyramids of Mars, which may be of artificial origin. That would mean that intelligent life was on Mars one billion years ago—or a catastrophe happened to Mars, possibly around 11,000 BC.

Phaeton then, with a contingent of asteroids and ice-methane debris, made a slow six-month pass around Earth before being sent into a catastrophic orbit with

Venus and then possibly spiraling into the sun. Instead, however, did it gain sufficient energy by the sling shot effect from Venus and the Sun to hurl it into a far reaching orbit in space—maybe soon to

Mars Tidal Model

For those who like detailed information, a well illustrated paper by Ricahard Hoagland and Michael Bara showing how these events may have occurred can be found at www.enterprisemission.com

return with attending, asteroids, meteorites and comets to fulfill the catastrophic prophecies written in the Bible's Book of Revelation?

Phaeton's interaction with Venus would cause tremendous crustal volcanic action as gravitation forces generate heat, literally almost bringing the rocks of Venus to the boiling point. The Magellan spacecraft mapped the surface of Venus from 1990 to 1994 with high-resolution radar. Bullock and Grinspoon who have studied the radar survey, report:

Plate tectonics is not in evidence, except possibly on a limited scale. It appears that heat was transferred, at least in the relatively recent past, by the eruption of vast plains of basaltic lava and later by the volcanoes that grew on top of them. Moreover, millions of impact craters are missing. Somehow impacts from the first 3.7 billion years of the planets history have been eradicated. ... That is the paradox. Most of the Venusian craters look fresh; only 6 percent of them have lava lapping their rims, and only 12 percent have been disrupted by folding and cracking of the crust. So where did all the old ones go, if most of these that remain are unaltered? If they have been covered by lava, why do we not see more craters that are partially covered? And how have they been removed so that their initial random placement has been preserved?^{xliv}

This begs the philosophical question of whether or not Venus is 3.7 billion years old and that it also may have been captured by the Solar system. Allan and Delair may be right; Venus is Phaeton and has been captured by the solar system. Whatever the case, the energy released from this energetic gravitational encounter may have kept the dense atmosphere of Venus glowing for thousands of years, appearing as a very bright foreboding star to the ancients. In this model, Earth suffered major conflagration of celestial discharges and gravitational tides of immense forces.

Glacial debris bombarded Earth. Patten has calculated that sometime in the past, approximately 12 million cubic miles of water have been added to the Earth's oceans.^{xlv} This amount may not have been added all at the same time, as we shall see later. Velikovsky makes a case for the celestial introduction of hydrocarbons into the Earth system from the methane components of the exploded planet.

On Earth, Pangaea, the super continent that lay along the equatorial region would suffer major crustal and oceanic tidal waves. Gravitational forces would initiate high-speed continental drift. Major portions of Earth's crust would be subducted, while other portions buckle and are thrust dramatically skyward into mountain ranges. Enormous oceanic tidal waves (one on each side of the earth) would be like great moving mountains of stones and mud that act as autogenous grinding mills as Earth rotates for six months in the gravitation embrace of Phaeton. Forests may have been flash burned with celestial lightning at the initial approach of Phaeton. Extensive beds of partially charcoaled forests, including animal remains, would be dumped and covered with sediment of all types. Radioactive particles from Phaeton may account for the decay haloes in fossilized wood. Mountains ranges would be ground down as fast as they arose.

If one takes the time to question the physical, cultural and mythical evidence on Earth for a sequence of catastrophic events within the last 12,000 years—one would have to agree with Allan and Delair. They write, “There are therefore, good reasons for supposing that all these seemingly disparate details are actually pieces of the same tremendous drama, one which embraced the entire solar system and left as its legacy after effects that still affect the Earth.”^{xlvi}

Notes:

ⁱ Velikovsky Immanuel, *Worlds in Collision*, Dell Publishing Co. Inc. 1967, pg. 308

ⁱⁱ Allan D.S. & Delair J.B., *When The Earth Nearly Died*, Gateway Books 1995

ⁱⁱⁱ Allan and Delair, *Ibid*, pg. 151

^{iv} Velikovsky, *Ibid*, pg. 308

-
- ^v Vitaliano Dorthy, *Legends of the Earth*, Indiana University Press, 1973, pgs. 142-178
- ^{vi} Millar Allan, *Treasures From Bible Times*, Lion Publishing plc 1985, pg. 42
- ^{vii} Millar, Ibid
- ^{viii} Vitalliano, Ibid, pg. 156
- ^{ix} Vitalliano, Ibid, pgs. 161, 162
- ^x Rogers L.B., Adams F., Brown W., *The Ancient and Medieval World*, Henry Holt and Company, Inc. New York, 1949, pg. 141
- ^{xi} Patten Donald, *Catastrophism and the Old Testament*, Pacific Meridian Publishing Company, 1988, pg. 68
- ^{xii} Judges 3:7
- ^{xiii} Patten, Ibid, pg.68
- ^{xiv} Patten, Ibid, pg.102
- ^{xv} Velikovsky Immanuel, Ibid, pg. 163
- ^{xvi} Patten, Ibid, pg. 75
- ^{xvii} Patten, Ibid, pg. 73
- ^{xviii} Gaverluk Emil, *Did Genesis Man conquer Space*, Thomas Nelson 1974, pg. 102
- ^{xix} *TIME*, Life on Mars, August 19, 1996
- ^{xx} Patten, Ibid, pg. 70
- ^{xxi} Patten Donald, Ibid, pg. 245
- ^{xxii} Velikovsky, Ibid, pg. 333
- ^{xxiii} *The Globe and Mail*, "Earth's dance partner a rock that rolls," June 12, 1997
- ^{xxiv} <news.bbc.co.uk> Monday October 21, 2002
- ^{xxv} *CNN*, February 17, 2000 "An interview with Andrew Cheng"
- ^{xxvi} <metaresearch.org/home.asp>
- ^{xxvii} Allan and Delair, Ibid, pg. 353
- ^{xxviii} Allan and Delair, Ibid
- ^{xxix} *The Globe and Mail*, Thursday, May 29, 1997
- ^{xxx} Genesis 10:25
- ^{xxxi} Genesis 19:24
- ^{xxxii} Joshua 10:11
- ^{xxxiii} Patten, Ibid, pg. 144
- ^{xxxiv} Patten, Ibid, pg. 139
- ^{xxxv} Isaiah 31:8
- ^{xxxvi} Isaiah 30:30
- ^{xxxvii} Isaiah 24:18-20
- ^{xxxviii} Patten, Ibid, pg. 232
- ^{xxxix} Allan and Delair, Ibid, pg. 191
- ^{xl} Velikovsky, Ibid, pg. 182
- ^{xli} Allan and Delair, Ibid, pgs. 174-176
- ^{xlii} Allan and Delair, Ibid, pg. 209
- ^{xliii} Wilford John Noble, "Red Planet flood was real deluge," *Globe and Mail*, Tues, July 8, 1997
- ^{xliv} Bullock Mark A, Grinspoon David H., "Global Climate Change on Venus," *Scientific American* March 1999, pg. 54
- ^{xlv} Patten Donald, *The Bible Flood and the Ice Epoch*, Pacific Meridian Publishing Co. 1966, pg. 114
- ^{xlvi} Allan and Delair, Ibid, 211

Chapter 17

The Deluge

Warm idyllic winds from the superocean Panthalassa gently sift across Pangaea. In those ancient days, the continent with its extensive vegetation and “kinds” of animal life was positioned like an equatorial band round Earth. The celebrated Garden of Eden likely lay next to, or was part of, a range of high mountains. The Bible records that a river, which waters the garden, flows from Eden—this seems to imply that the river has its origin in the nearby mountains, or as springs in Eden—its twinkling crystal clear waters then separate into four parts, the Pishon, the Gihon, the Tigris and the Euphrates. The modern names of Tigris and Euphrates reflect this ancient memory.

Original Information

Usually a river gets bigger by the joining of other streams or rivers. Rivers that separate normally do so at their deltas, where they flow into a body of water. Yet, the river of Eden grows bigger and its four branches water Havilah, Cush and Assur. This may have a spiritual application to the “water of life” in the New Testament, and the river that gushes from the future Messianic temple.ⁱ

The river Pishon, or Pison, waters the land of Havilah, which contains gold. The Bible states: “And the gold of that land is good: there is bdellium and the onyx stone.”ⁱⁱ Onyx, a form of quartz known as chalcedonic quartz forms in the earth under low temperature and pressure in both volcanic and sedimentary rocks. Bdellium may possibly be an ancient name for opal because opal is a complex gem stone form of onyx.ⁱⁱⁱ This makes more sense than to translate bdellium as “aromatic resin or pearls,” since aromatic resin comes from trees growing in the desert and pearls from ocean shellfish.

Gold and quartz have a close relationship as is known by prospectors and miners. The gold in Havilah appears to be associated with the river Pishon suggesting that it is placer gold—that is gold that has been eroded from its original bedrock source by the flowing action of the river. Onyx, opal and placer gold certainly suggest an interesting geological history to the land of Havilah! The

Earth may have had an ancient period of mountain building, erosion, and sedimentation as summarized by God. *“And God said, “Let the water under the sky be gathered to one place, and let dry ground appear.” And it was so. God called the dry ground “land,” and the gathered waters he called “seas.” And God saw that it was good.”*^{iv}

Heavy nightly mists watered the low lands of the continent. Man, animals and the mighty dinosaurs flourished and prospered across the great continent of Pangaea. Based solely on their philosophical beliefs, evolutionists depict ancient

Flat land and Extra Water

It has been estimated that if the topography of the earth were level, two miles of water would cover the surface. Thus, the low topographic relief areas of Pangaea could easily be overwhelmed. The excess water now covering the present continental shelves suggests that sometime in Earth’s catastrophic past, additional water had been added to its oceans.

man as having no technology and most certainly not coexisting with the giant reptiles, the dinosaurs.

Ancient Civilization

Technology was a very early development according to the Biblical historical viewpoint. In its early records of civilization, Jubal developed the harp and flute; Tubal-Cain forged all kinds of tools out of bronze and iron.^v Rhodesian Man, a human fossil found by modern archaeologists, has been dated at 200,000 to 400,000 years ago, yet, he was found in an ancient mine shaft by modern miners in Zambia. Mr. Lubenow comments:

This individual was either mining lead and zinc himself or was in the mineshaft at a time when lead and zinc were being mined by other humans. This smacks of a rather high degree of civilization and technology. It is amusing that

many evolutionists, when reporting on the details of Rhodesian Man, say that he was found in a cave. Technically, I suppose, they are right. A mineshaft is just

Unsolved Mysteries

Earth is filled with mystery. How do tropical plants and animals get frozen in the arctic? Why do we find man tracks and dinosaur prints together? How can there be boulders and glacial striations in the tropics? Why have gold chains, bowls, human fossils and letters carved in stone been found in rocks over 200 million years old? Something is wrong—it is as if mankind is being manipulated on how to view history! Can there be a conspiracy—something existential that has to do with the spiritual realm and the conflict between God and Lucifer?

a cave, of sorts, in the same way that diamonds and emeralds are just pebbles. One wonders if this is a crude attempt to minimize the technical abilities of ancient humans. The Book of Genesis clearly confirms the advanced culture and technology of the ancients, specifically mentioning metallurgy in Genesis 4:22 and music in Genesis 4:21.^{vi}

Did Neanderthal man play the flute? *Scientific American* notes that a flute formed from a bone was found in excavations of the Divje Babe I cave in northwestern Slovenia. According to team member Bonnie Blackwell, a Queens College geologist, “The holes in this bone, between 43,000 and 82,000 years old, are really well rounded and just about the right separation for humans to put their fingers on.”^{vii} Brad Steiger, in his book *Worlds Before Our Own*, cites archaeological evidence from Russia that woven cloth, spindle whorls and patterned fabric designs have been found that are age dated at 80,000 years ago.^{viii}

Hartwig Hausdorf, a German researcher, in his book *Ancient Skies* reports that in 1991 Russian placer miners found unusual spiral metallic objects in their gold recovery operations, which may relate to the creators of the recently discovered mysterious, “Creator Map.” These objects look like small screws and are made of an alloy of tungsten and molybdenum. They vary in size from 3 cm to an incredible 0.003 mm, which is in the range of nanotechnology. They have been found at depths of 3 to 12 meters in placer gravel deposits, and have been dated to 20,000 to 100,000 years ago.^{ix} These discoveries may be difficult to evaluate, but how do we respond to evidence that twentieth century methods of “ultrasonic machining” were used in ancient Egypt to cut and fashion hard granite boxes, measuring 13 ft. long, 7½ ft. wide and 11 ft. high? Christopher Dunn writes,

My mind was racing as I lowered myself into the narrow confines of the entrance shaft and climbed to the outside. The inside of a huge granite box

finished off to a precision that we reserve for precision surface plates? How did they do this? And why did they do it? Why did they find this piece so important that they would go to such trouble? It would be impossible to do this kind of work on the inside of an object by hand. Even with modern machinery it would be a very difficult and complicated task!^x

We might ask, why such precision, what were they used for, when were the boxes built and where are the tools? In what age in the distant past were the pyramids built? Why then is there such a modern prejudice against Noah, sometime in the remote past, having the technical skills and tools to build a large ark?

Noah's Ark

God was grieved^{xi}! One does not think of God being grieved—but the creation and placement of mankind on planet Earth had become an unmitigated disaster—their individual wills were easily subverted. Powerful Nephilim ruled the Earth. Great deeds were being done; they were “heroes of old, men of renown.” Civilization may have even been technologically superior to today’s accomplishments, but it did not focus on mass production factories. God’s heart was filled with pain. “*The Lord saw how great man’s wickedness on the earth had become and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil all the time.*”^{xii} Earth was filled with violence. Man’s God consciousness spirit was dead; self had been deified with technological marvels and the physical manifestation of spiritual power from the dominion of Lucifer, similar to where we are heading in our 21st century.

The Infinite God creator of the vast cosmos, the Triune God within whom is love and communication, was grieved and in pain. The beautiful creature so lovingly molded in His image, and designed for an eternal destiny, had chosen the way of the deceiver and was now useless trash.

Love defiled is pain. Choosing physical manifestations of power from the usurpers kingdom, rather than God's spiritual dimensional unconditional love, individual self-taking wills repeat Adam and Eve's decision on a personal level of daily choice.

Ignored and forgotten is the silently flashing flaming sword of the mighty Cherubim guarding the way to the tree of life. The Garden of Eden, now a tangle of growth, lay silent—a pall of darkness grips the planet.

Lucifer, usurper of Adam's terrestrial domain, with the help of the "sons of God" was close to complete genetic pollution of mankind and defusing God's judgment against him. There was only one problem—Noah. "*Noah was a righteous man, blameless among the people of his time, and he walked with God.*"^{xiv} The Bible records that in this era only Enoch and Noah "walked with God,"—though there may have been many other individuals who believed in God through those early centuries. However, God chose to rescue only Noah and his immediate family from the approaching devastation. One cannot help thinking of the words of Yeshua-Jesus much later in human history,

Hyperdimensional Travel

It is highly speculative but, yes, there may even have been hyperdimensional gates operating between the pyramids of Earth and Mars—this may explain the advanced technology of the granite boxes of Egypt. The renowned Oxford scholar, C.S. Lewis in his allegorical book, *Voyage to Venus*, has his main character Ransom travel by a celestial stone coffin to Venus.^{xiii} The Nephilim may have introduced sophisticated technology to convince mankind that they were "gods."

“For wide is the gate and broad is the road that leads to destruction, and many enter through it. But small is the gate and narrow the road that leads to life, and only a few find it.”^{xv}

God made His decision. He said to Noah,

“I am going to put an end to all people, for the earth is filled with violence because of them. I am surely going to destroy both them and the earth. So make yourself an ark of cypress wood (the meaning of the Hebrew word cypress wood is uncertain); make rooms in it and coat it with pitch inside and out. This is how you are to build it: The ark is to be 450 feet (300 cubits or 140 m) long, 75 feet (50 cubits or 23 m) wide and 45 feet (30 cubits or 13.5 m) high. Make a roof for it and finish the ark to within 18 inches (1 cubit or 0.5 m) of the top. Put a door in the side of the ark and make lower, middle and upper decks. I am going to bring floodwaters on the earth to destroy all life under the heavens, every creature that has the breath of life in it. Everything on earth will perish. But I will establish my covenant with you, and you will enter the ark you and your sons and your wife and your son’s wives with you. You are to bring into the ark two of all living creatures, male and female, to keep them alive with you. Two of every kind of animal and of every kind of creature that moves along the ground will come to you to be kept alive. You are to take every kind of food that is to be eaten and store it away as food for you and for them.”^{xvi}

Lucifer’s usurped dominion is about to be wiped clean. God has stated that He is going to “bring” floodwaters on the Earth. This seems to suggest an extraterrestrial source for the floodwaters. God’s eternal plan will not be thwarted—He will start the human race again with Noah. The Garden of Eden will be obliterated and the Tree of Life withdrawn. No longer will the

sword of the mighty Cherubim flash in the sky. The demigods will be castigated and their monstrous hybrid-human off spring separated from their corporeal forms. Noah knew what an ark, or water borne vessel was—the civilization of that era freely roamed the world’s oceans. (In recent years at least two unusual rock formations have been found, one in Turkey and one in Iran that could be fossilized remnants of these vessels.) Noah did not go out with a rock axe and build a raft; he used metal tools of many descriptions to build a major three-decked barge. His family wealth and influence may have been significant. It took Noah, his sons and likely a crew, 120 years to build this immense ship and stock it with provisions. When the appointed time came, a long trail of animals of all kinds boarded the ark, and then with Noah and his family safely aboard—God closes the door.

Scientist Dr. Edward Blick, a Professor of Aerodynamics, critiques the physical dimensions and carrying capacity of the ark. He notes, “Marine architects who have studied Noah’s Ark and its dimensions tell us that those particular dimensions form a very stable ship.” It is “the size of a modern day ocean liner.” Using the measurement of a cubit as 20 inches instead of 18 inches, he concludes that it is the same capacity as “777 standard stock railroad cars. ... Ernst Mayr (a leading American Taxonomist) estimates the number of land animal species to be, Mammals 3,500, Birds 8,600, Reptiles 5,500: Total = 17,600.” God gave Noah instructions to load 7 clean and 2 unclean of each kind of animal into the ark, this would bring the total to 79,200 animals. Assuming the average animal size to be that of a sheep, all animals would fit into 330 standard stock cars—330 stock cars are 43% ($330/777 \times 100$) of the available volume. This leaves plenty of room for the provisions, now extinct animals and likely some of the smaller more friendly dinosaur family.^{xvii} The Bible seems to indicate that some types of dinosaurs were around after the flood.

A highly technical, but evil civilization was about to be destroyed. Was this a second time for Lucifer? He could do nothing but watch. God would purge Earth and temporarily bar Satan and

his minions from directly interacting with the material realm of humanity. Temporarily, because the Bible indicates that Lucifer will be given the opportunity sometime in future human history to set himself up as God—a time once more in the far future—when the civilization of Earth has become totally self seeking—when the will of each individual deems him or herself to be evolving into a god.

The World Wide Deluge

The whirlwind of chaos smote the planet, “*all the springs of the great deep burst forth, and the floodgates of the heavens were opened. And rain fell on the earth forty days and forty nights.*”^{xviii} Before we write this story off as a local flood story or mythology, let’s analyze what the Bible is depicting. First, the springs of the great deep burst forth. Here is knowledge of subterranean water being released, likely by the contortion of Earth’s crust from gravitational pressure. Second, the floodgates of heaven are opened. This is not a summer drizzle—this is a *floodgate* that goes on for 40 days continuously! Non-terrestrial water is pummeling Earth.

Moon Water

Evidence for this deluge may possibly be found on the moon where it has been hit by blocks of ice. Earth’s atmosphere and the force of gravity would cause small pieces of astral ice to melt. Larger blocks of ice likely impacted Earth.

Have you ever been in an intense tropical downpour where there are huge drops of water? If it rained one tenth of an inch, or 2.5 mm per second, it would amount to depth of 15 feet of water in one hour. In forty days this is would pile up to a height of 14,400 feet, which is 2.7 miles or 4.39 km. At one quarter of this amount, it is still a considerable 0.68 mile (3590 ft.) or 1.09 km high pile of water—and with the volume squeezed out of the subterranean layers (also causing the Earth’s crust to shrink) it may well have been sufficient to overwhelm the low level topographic features of

the continent of Pangaea. This amount of water would have to be largely of extra terrestrial origin—the ocean from a devastated planet, or a satellite like Europa.

How high were the original mountains of Pangaea? We don't know—Noah the scientist records, *“The waters rose and increased greatly on the earth, and the ark floated on the surface of the water. They rose greatly on the earth, and all the **high mountains*** under the entire heavens were covered. The waters rose and covered the mountains to depth of more than 20 feet”*^{xix} (*emphasis mine). Twenty feet would be the water displacement draft of the fully loaded ark. The waters may have covered the highest mountains by hundreds of feet.

Noah records that the *“waters flooded the earth for a hundred and fifty days.”*^{xx} This is five months of 30 days each. It then bumps to a halt on a newly formed mountain—a mountain in the mountains of Ararat in modern day Turkey. For another 4 more months, Noah watches the waters recede as more mountains become visible.

Seeds in the mud, from the flood, begin to germinate in the warmth of the sun. A dove brings back a new Olive leaf. Noah is confined in the ark for another 3 months before God lets him out. A year of 12 months of 30 days each has passed.

Catastrophic evidence for a major worldwide deluge is all around us. It is this evidence that is slowly being accumulated and published by many scientific disciplines—by

Ancient Records?

God would have to be active concerning this abnormal event; being caged up with a barge load of diverse life forms for one year would have been extremely interesting! The only proof of the arks reality is for archaeologists to discover remnants of this grand craft. In it may be documental records of a previously unsuspected advanced civilization that would shatter our modern paradigm.

scientists of both God is and God is not persuasion. How could the physical dynamics of a

worldwide flood take place? What geographical evidence is there for a worldwide deluge and what evidence for an advanced technological civilization is hidden in its geological strata? —Oh the great mystery of it all!

“‘Asteroid,’ and ‘dinosaur’ are encoded together in the Bible,” writes Michael Drosnin in his book *The Bible Code*. He continues, “‘And God created the great Tanin,’ states the first chapter of Genesis. The word means ‘dragons’ or monsters.’ It describes some huge animal that no longer exists. And ‘dragon’ is encoded across ‘dinosaur, just above ‘asteroid.’ With them is encoded the name of the dragon that, according to legend, God slayed before Creation. It is surely intentional that the name of the dragon the Bible says God fought—‘Rahab’—appears in the Bible code exactly where the ‘asteroid’ hits the ‘dinosaur.’ In fact, the full hidden text states, ‘It will strike Rahab.’”^{xxi}

Is it too much of a coincidence that the catastrophic model for the devastation of planet Earth, has the possible planet—Rahab or Astra—that was in orbit around the Sun between the orbits of Mars and Jupiter—being destroyed by the supernova fragment Phaeton? Did this planetary catastrophe create a burst of asteroids, comets and terrestrial continental sized icebergs? Some of these asteroids would have blasted Mars and our terrestrial system. Mars was likely disturbed from its original orbit by Phaeton. Its disturbed orbit would eventually bring it into a series of catastrophic encounters with Earth. To create the correct physical dynamics of a worldwide flood, and the immense gravitational forces required for mountain building, it is postulated that Phaeton with a contingent of asteroids and giant icebergs formed a gravitational lock with Earth for approximately six months. It is this gravitational locking that produced gigantic waves of magma within Earth’s crust and surface oceanic tidal waves. These gravitational forces would release subterranean waters while extraterrestrial waters from the astral ice pour down on Earth for forty days, cooling Earth’s oceans.

Because of Earth's rotation, the magma tidal waves and monstrous oceanic tidal waves circle Earth twice daily. The oceanic tidal waves would act as massive waves of fluidized mud containing huge boulders that grind the geological strata as it buckles into mountain ranges. Liquefaction, acting like quicksand, would hydraulically sort materials according to density creating pseudo sedimentary layering. Violent volcanic eruptions would occur around the planet's circumference. Super heated gases and fluids of cement forming calcium and silica quickly harden mud into layers of rock, trapping fish, plants and animals. In addition, the subterranean waters were likely super saturated with rock forming chemicals. Multiple layers of chemical limestone, potash, mudstone and sedimentary rocks of all descriptions would be deposited. In addition, oil and some coal are now thought by some scientists to be generated abiogenetically and by microbial biogenesis of deep earth methane flowing through igneous rocks, rather than totally from organic remains.^{xxii}

Earth's vegetation would be compacted under tremendous heat and pressure into coal beds interlayered with the rocky sediments. Hydraulic sorting would take place in the ebbing currents behind these waves. Tremendous heat would be released; the mud would be boiling hot cooking the organic material. Billions of watts of electrical

Oil in Meteorites

“Thomas Gold in his book, *Power From The Earth* (Gold 1987), pointed out the now well known fact hydrocarbons are present in meteorites and abundant throughout the solar system, apparently in habitats where life as we see it on Earth is unable to exist. He reasoned that petroleum must be produced without the help of living organisms, i.e. “abiogenically,” another seemingly simple, observable fact.”^{xxiii}

energy would flash between the planets. Scientific studies may yet show that this exchange of electrical energy possibly assisted the cementing of the sedimentary strata. Ancient Pangaea would

be broken up and the smaller continents rafted into new positions. Thousands of feet of geological strata would be formed containing coal beds and oil formations. Mountain ranges would be heaved into position. No life with the breath of life would escape. The unusual technological debris found within these newly formed sediments can now only evidence the great evil civilization of Adam to Noah.

Continental Floods

In order to harmonize the anthropological, astronomical and geological evidence that has been accumulated—several more later flood catastrophes are postulated. These later ones did not flood the total planet, but devastated continent sized areas of the world. It is suggested that the extra terrestrial force required to accomplish these catastrophes was caused by a rogue planet, such as Mars, which interacted with Earth periodically over a span of several thousand years. Zeus mythology, the long day of Joshua, the movement of the sundial of Hezekiah, unusual geological formations plus other flood stories came from these later catastrophic encounters.

Powerful gravitation forces would generate large arcs of mountain ranges around the world, in a very short time period. Continents would skid into new positions along deep thrust plates. The flashing dynamo reversals of Earth's magnetic field would polarize vast sheets of surging lava. Mt. Olympus Mons on Mars was likely formed by welling lava, from its interaction with Earth's tremendous gravitational forces. Are the unusual floodwater topographic features, evident on Mars, caused by a large volume of water from the breakup of Astra? Localized deluges of water and large volumes of red mud may have been transferred periodically to Earth during its close flyby. This may possibly explain some of the unusual layers of red bed sediments around the world, and the bizarre dumps of mud and ice from the sky. Local civilizations on the continental remnants of Pangaea could reach moderate levels of sophistication between catastrophic planetary encounters.

The first time-gap between the Noachian deluge and the catastrophic orbits of Mars may have been greater than 5000 years. If the story of the lost continent of Atlantis, the mysterious reports of flying craft and atomic warfare recorded in the ancient writings from India were not pre Noachian flood, then they likely occurred during this interval. Frozen Mammoths in Siberia, human fossils found with stone tools in gravels under lava beds in California, whale and mastodon bones in gravels in the mid continent United States, and the thick layer of silt found by Leonard Woolley at the excavation of the ancient city of Ur, in the Middle East, speak of later flood events.

Tabulation of various tribal legends around Earth by Velikovsky and by Allan and Delair, suggest that there were eyewitness accounts of gigantic tidal waves, devastating extraterrestrial lightning, earthquakes and mountain uplift. The Bible also reflects these ancient catastrophes. *“The whole land rises like the Nile then sinks like the river of Egypt.”*^{xxiv} Huge mountains of water sweep the Earth—*“He gathers the waters of the sea into heaps.”*^{xxv} The waters of the sea pour out over the land—the sea splits open and huge sea creatures (Leviathan) are dumped on to the desert,^{xxvi} while the mountains fall into the sea and the waters roar and foam.^{xxvii}

Did this all just happen? Not according to God—*“Come and see the works of the Lord, the desolations he has brought on the earth. ... Be still and know that I am God; I will be exalted among the nations, I will be exalted in the earth.”*^{xxviii} *“Fire goes before him and consumes his foes on every side. His lightning lights up the world; the earth sees and trembles. The mountains melt like wax before the Lord, before the Lord of all the earth. The heavens proclaim his righteousness, and all the people see his glory.”*^{xxix}

A Challenge to Uniformitarianism

Even as Velikovsky challenged the establishment with his books on planetary catastrophism in the 1950's, Henry M. Morris^{xxx} Ph. D. and John C. Whitcomb, Jr. Th. D. broke the philosophical

paralyses of uniformitarian geology with their book *The Genesis Flood* in 1961. Considerable documentation is given detailing the huge thickness of the sedimentary strata, buried forests, rapidly buried fish in fossil beds, and the tremendous amount of organic material required to form multiple layers of coal beds. *Speak To The Earth*,^{xxx1} published in 1975, continues with more scientifically documented evidence for a world-encompassing deluge. However, the charge against these catastrophic scientists is that they are “creationists.”

The facts of the big picture are that first, fossils that are indistinguishable from modern humans can be traced all the way back to 4.5 m.y.a., according to the evolution time scale. That suggests that true humans were on the scene before the australopithecines appear in the fossil record.

Second, *Homo erectus*

demonstrates a morphological consistency throughout its two-million-year

Atheistic Sarcasm

Typical of those in the “God is dead” camp is Gary Stix of *Scientific American*. He quotes Mr. Toumey from his book, *God’s Own Scientists; Creationists in a Secular World*. “Creationism, like loyalty to Taiwan or fear of rock music has been more a sideshow,” Mr. Stix then goes on to sarcastically conclude, “In this environment, Morris’s tiny museum near the cowboy bar and the drive-in movie theater may serve as a model for an entire movement that chooses to guard its precious isolation on the outskirts of town.”^{xxxii} Moreover, human fossils do not fit the neatly diagrammed family tree of monkey to man as claimed by evolutionary theory, and portrayed with highly imaginative artistic license. Marvin Lubenow, in his book *Bones of Contention*, estimates that over six thousand human fossils have been found to date. He articulates the situation.

history. The fossil record does not show erectus evolving from something else or evolving into something else.

Third, anatomically modern Homo sapiens, Neanderthal, archaic Homo sapiens, and Homo erectus all lived as contemporaries at onetime or another. None of them evolved from a more robust to a more gracile condition. In fact, in some cases (Neanderthal and archaic Homo sapiens) the more robust fossils are the more recent fossils in their respective categories.

Fourth, all of the fossils ascribed to the Homo habilis category are contemporary with Homo erectus. Thus, Homo habilis not only did not evolve into Homo erectus, it could not have evolved into Homo erectus.

Fifth, there are no fossils of Australopithecus or of any other primate stock in the proper time period to serve as evolutionary ancestors to humans. As far as we can tell from the fossil record, when humans first appear in the fossil record they are human. It is this abrupt appearance of our ancestors in morphologically human form that makes the human fossil record compatible with the concept of Special Creation. This fact is evident even when the fossils are arranged according to the evolutionist's dates for the fossils, although we believe the dating to be grossly in error. In other words, even when we accept the evolutionist's dates for the fossils, the results do not support human evolution. The results, in fact, are so contradictory to human evolution that they effectively falsify the theory. This then is the big picture."^{xxxiii}

Interplanetary Devastation

The intense volcanic activity associated with gravitational flexing of Earth's crust, the rapid emplacement of plutonic rocks, metamorphic action on the host rocks and chemical pollution of the sedimentary strata makes accurate radiometric age dating impossible. One wonders if the radiometric dates obtained more aptly reflect variations in rocks composition, rather than actual ages. Professor Blick Ph.D. reports,

In the few cases where radiometric dating methods were actually used on rocks of known ages, they flunked the test miserably. The Journal Of Geophysical Research, July 15, 1968, contains a remarkable article which indicates that the potassium-argon method predicted ages from 0.16 billion to 2.96 billion years from lava (from Kaupuleho, Hualalai, Hawaii) which was known to be one hundred and sixty-eight years old! Sidney P. Clementson, a British consulting engineer, recently made a detailed study of eighteen rock samples from twelve volcanoes as published in the U.S.S.R. and ten samples from Faial Azores, Tristan da Cuuha, and Mt. Vesuvius. In all cases the calculated uranium-lead ages were millions and billions of years, but the rocks were known to be quite young! If calculated uranium ages are eons too large for rocks which are known to be young, why should they be assumed correct when applied to rocks of unknown ages?^{xxxiv}

The physical activity of huge waves of mud and water grinding Earth's crust can cause all the physical features such as eskers, kanes and boulder fields that have been attributed to continental glaciers.^{xxxv} The back wash of these gigantic waves would swirl through mountain

passes, over ridges leaving sorted gravel beds and thick deposits of fine silts; some of which contain clusters of dinosaurs fossils. The Dinosaur Provincial Park in Alberta, Canada, is one area so laden with fossils that it has been designated a world heritage site. In October 1997, Dr. Currie, head of research at the Royal Tyrrell Museum of Paleontology in Drumheller Alberta, announced the find of a long lost hill of dinosaur bones, which had been originally discovered in 1910 by a prominent American paleontologist, Barnum Brown. Currie found “a hillside that likely contains between 30 and 40 full skeletons of *Albertosaurus*, the smaller, older and equally toothy cousin of the fearsome *Tyrannosaurus rex*.”^{xxxvi} The dinosaurs are thought to have been buried in this pile some 70 million years ago—note the subtle evolutionary assumption, that this genus of dinosaurs is “older.”

“The bones of a dinosaur from Madagascar is changing theories about evolution and how the world physically changed,” writes Scott Sampon of the New York institute of Technology. Fossils of this giant predator, which is related to *Tyrannosaurus rex*, have also been found in India and Argentina. The breakup of the supercontinent, Gondwanaland, is reflected by the various fossil discoveries. It would appear that some 120 million years ago during the Cretaceous period, Madagascar, Africa, India, Antarctica and South America were interconnected. It was also noted that the dinosaur appeared to be buried during a flood.^{xxxvii} Uranium deposits would form in organic material in porous sandstones, from the chemical pollution of the sediments. The author has found radioactive dinosaur bones in sedimentary rock formations of Utah, United States. Kimberlite pipes containing diamonds need rapid emplacement, or the diamonds will dissolve before reaching the surface. The ring of diamond prospects being found in northern Canada around Hudson’s Bay, which is semi-circular, would suggest that it might be an ancient major crater impact site. The grinding of the rock formations by the super floods would leave a trail of tracer minerals from the kimberlites in the sediments similar to the continental glaciation model, and would better account

for the multidirectional movement of the tracer minerals. These tracer minerals have led to the discovery and development of new diamond mines in northern Canada.

The Question of Glaciers

In the localized continental floods, the gravitational pull of the astral visitor, would not only cause crustal skidding, such as the breakup of Gondwanaland, but would also drag huge waves of muddy debris northward. Allan and Delair explain, "Inevitably, the inhabitants of high latitudes experienced the most massive rising of the Deluge waters as they became piled up into a gargantuan 'water mountain' submerging all land. Salvation in 'arks' and other floating refuges was the sole means of escape for those communities, while those in low latitudes, from which much water had been drawn polewards, this was not the case."^{xxxviii} The backwash of these northern water mountains would flow back towards the equator creating apparent (in the northern hemisphere) southward trending glacial striations and glacial outwash features. A second little discussed feature would be a polar hurricane thousands of miles across. The low pressure from the eye of this cyclonic system would suck in the cold vacuum of space supernaturally freezing the land and the waves of debris. Frozen hills of this type of debris have been found in northern Russia.

Moreover, Scientist Donald Patten noted that both the Continental glaciers at the Arctic and Antarctic were centered on the Earth's magnetic poles. This does not make any sense if the ice is a result of natural weather conditions. His theory is that an ice ball fragmented at the Earth's Roche limit, at 11,000 miles. He writes,

Other ice particles and fragments were trapped by the Earth's gravitational field, something like Saturn's rings. The icy fragments gradually turned to icy powder due to the effect of the solar radiation and began to flow in space along field force lines of the geomagnetic field. As extremely cold icy powder, they began

to sift down over the two polar regions, at temperatures around -300° F. Their volume was 12 to 14 million cubic miles of ice.^{xxxix}

The outer northern or southern regions of this ice would mix with the backwashing waves and cool the Earth's oceans. One would have to wonder if the "ice man" got caught in a minor frigid ice dump some 5500 years ago. Contrary to present theories regarding the "warming of the Earth," the Earth has been in an unnaturally cool state for a minuscule period of geological time. Its natural state is tropical to subtropical as indicated by the extensive formations containing tropical and subtropical fossilized plant remains. It is only in the last 5000 to 7000 years that the climate has slowly started warming up from this possible cataclysmic astral ice dump. This frozen ice catastrophe may have been the cause of an era of large inter-connected mountain glaciers—rather than the glaciers being the remnants of a continental ice sheet.

Glaciers push rocks like a bulldozer, yet thick layers of so-called "glacial detritus" are spread over the continents of the Earth—like a blanket. Glacial detritus can be found on high mountains as well as in the valleys. Writers Velikovsky, Allan and Delain, Morris and Whitcomb and Lubenow have noted glacial striations in the tropics, where no glacial ice ages could have existed. Geological researcher Douglas Cox reports,

The layer of drift is the main body of evidence for the glacial theory. When one considers how this material is distributed, considerable difficulties arise in the notion that it has been caused by glaciers. It is not present in many areas where one would expect to find it, and it is present where one would least expect to find it. Thus in the northernmost parts of Greenland, and in some of the islands of northern Canada, no drift is present. But it is found in tropical areas such as

the Amazon jungles. Regarding the tropics, right at the equator, no less an authority than Louis Agassiz, (the father of glaciology) reported: “There were drift accumulations, and scratched rocks, and erratic boulders, and fluted valleys, and the smooth surface of tillite.” The presence of drift has been reported from such places as British Guinea, equatorial Africa, Madagascar, and India.^{x1}

Gigantic grinding mountain sized mud waves are more likely the cause. Evenly distributed sedimentary sequences that contain oil and gas extend far out into Earth’s oceans. Large inland salt basins, such as in the state of Utah, U.S.A., are likely evaporated drainage from these major salt-water ocean waves rather than ancient oceans. The large thickness of interlayered sediments and coal beds with tree stumps and boulders would require the Earth to go up and down like a yoyo, if uniformitarian geology is believed. According to this theory, the salt water would have to drain, fresh water flow in, hundreds of feet of trees and swamp would have to grow and then over millions of years compress into the coal beds. This would have to be repeated in some places over **100 times**. There is no physical mechanism active in Earth’s crust to create this imaginary event.

Ooparts—Out of Place Artifacts

Immanuel Velikovsky, *Earth In Upheaval*, gives a dramatic picture from his research of these northern waves of debris.

A little over a decade ago it was observed that the gold digging hydraulic giants in the Fairbanks District in Alaska, sluicing out miles-long cuts, opened great hecatombs of animals. ‘Their numbers are appalling. They lie frozen in tangled masses, interspersed with uprooted trees. They seem to have been torn apart and

dismembered and then consolidated under catastrophic conditions. Skin, ligament, hair flesh, can still be seen.’ Then human artifacts were found under the mass of torn animals and splintered trees. These artifacts do not differ much from those used only recently by the Indians of the Tanana Valley in Alaska. Mammoths, mastodons, superbison, lions and horses were found among the animals.^{xli}

The author has scrimshaw made from mastodon ivory that came from one of these deposits. Before it was buried and fossilized, it had been fashioned into a beveled edge with a groove to attach a handle. Moreover, all types of fossil animal and plant remains are found perfectly preserved in the coal and lignite beds, this suggests rapid deposition. To complicate matters, human fossils and artifacts have been found in rocks that date over 200 m.y.a. Mysterious items identified with civilized man have been found in Earth’s rock strata and unconsolidated sand, mud and gravel beds, totally out of place from an evolutionary viewpoint. Ed Conard^{xlii} has located human fossils, dinosaur bones and possibly tools in an old open pit coal mine near Shenandoah, Pennsylvania U.S.A. The rocks are from the Carboniferous era, dated at 300 million years ago. Several—100 million year old—human skeletons buried some 15 feet deep, were exposed by a bulldozer at the Big Indian Copper mine located in the Dakota sandstone of Cretaceous age.^{xliii} Work at this site recovered human skeletons encased in green malachite (oxidized copper) from depths of 50 to 100 feet in sandstone—figurines of dinosaurs have also been found in sediments at Acambaro, Guanajuato, Mexico.^{xliv}

In 1912, a small iron pot fell out of a large chunk of coal being smashed with a sledgehammer. The coal was traced to the Wiburton Mine in Oklahoma.^{xlv} Authors Allan & Delair,^{xlvi} Cremona, Thompson,^{xlvii} and Brad Steiger^{xlviii} have researched and documented many

strange discoveries, some of which are in lithologic units dated over 300 million years old. Copper coins and figurines were found when drilling water wells. An iron chain was found in sandstone. A metal bell shaped with a floral design was blasted out of solid rock near Dorchester Massachusetts. A gold necklace was found embedded in a lump of coal. An iron nail was found in sandstone in Scotland, a metal spike in a silver mine in Peru. Walls, polished concrete blocks and slabs of rock with letters and designs have been found, deep in coalmines in the central United States.

Ancient Anomalies at about.com¹ gives a list of curious artifacts, including a model airplane, ancient batteries and a planetary computer. One of these is a geode found near Olancho California. Fossil shells encrusting the surface are stated to be at least half a million years old. Inside the geode was a shiny metal object enclosed in porcelain like material. X-rays showed the object to be an artificial device similar to a contemporary sparkplug. This object is known as the Coso Artifact. Unfortunately, it cannot now be found. It is uncertain whether or not it was encased in a true geode or an iron oxide ball of hardened clay—research has since shown that it has a remarkable similarity to a 1920's era Champion spark plug—and thus may be debris from those years.

Mysterious screw in Rock

Lanzho Morning News, China, June 26, 2002 reports that geologist and physicists have examined an 8 x 7 cm hard rock in which is embedded a 6 cm screw. Mr. Zhilin Wang found it on a field research trip to the Mazong Mountain area located on the border of Gansu and Xijiang provinces. No evidence of human technology or fraud could be detected. Researchers conclude that it needs further study, since it may be from a prehistoric civilization or from an extraterrestrial one.^{xlix}

Dr. Carl E. Baugh maintains a museum with several remarkable finds. His Web Museum^{li} shows two objects found in Texas. A six-inch metal hammerhead, of unusual steel, was found in a lump of rock from the Cretaceous Kimball formation, on a rock ledge in a stream valley. Thus, it is possible that it too may be a rock hard accretion, which has formed naturally over the last several hundred years. However, a more difficult to explain spectacular find in 1980, from a road quarry in the Cretaceous Walnum Formation of the Comanche Peak limestone, was that of a—three inch long fossilized finger which would have required rapid burial. C.T. scanning shows the fingernail, skin, bone and tendons. Dr. Baugh comments “Either dinosaurs had humanlike fingers, or a prehistoric shellfish developed internal and external structures identical with a human finger, or humans were present during the Cretaceous times.” The discovery of any such objects should be carefully documented, even more so than one would for any other archaeological find, since they are highly contentious objects.

Certainly, ooparts are difficult to explain and could lend credence to the nonlinearity proposition for the technological development of human civilization. One would have to wonder if the central U.S.A. is not part of the lost continent of Atlantis. In 1924, Samuel Hubbard curator of archaeology at the Okland Museum made a trek into the Havasuapi Canyon in northern Arizona,^{lii} to verify the petroglyph image of a sauropod dinosaur. Not only was the image documented, but was also found to be associated with human and elephant petroglyphs. The book of Job describes a monstrous dragon like animal whose mouth is ringed with fearsome teeth, and its back has rows of shields, “*His snorting throws out flashes of light*” his chest is hard as rock and “*when he rises up the mighty are terrified they retreat before his thrashing.*”^{liii} One can only conclude that dinosaurs and man at one time, in the possibly not so distant past, were contemporaneous.

Major catastrophic events have shaped the face of this planet. As radical as it may seem, the evidence shown to date would suggest that there are more discoveries of an ancient advanced civilization yet to be made. In the very near future startling archaeological discoveries could possibly be made in Antarctica, Greenland and the Arctic Islands of northern Canada, of dinosaur fossils (these have now been found after this was written), human fossils and artifacts evidencing a technologically advanced ancient human civilization. Somewhere around the world, a coal seam, a volcanic lava flow, a tuff deposit or a sedimentary sequence of some sort may hide the remnants of the evil civilization—of whom God said, *“I will wipe mankind, whom I have created, from the face of the earth—men and animals, and creatures that move along the ground, and birds of the air—for I am grieved that I have made them.”*^{liv}

The Legions of Doom

It is evident that Earth has suffered a major worldwide deluge as depicted in the Bible. However, what is disconcerting is that God, the author of the Bible, says that He created and He destroyed. Why, because this ancient civilization became evil, snubbing the laws of the Legislator, and willfully aligning themselves with the rebels, the Legions of Doom. At this point, we must conclude that—either God is a liar and there was no creation, no ancient civilization, no flood and no purpose to our existence, or that—Satan is a liar, usurper of man’s dominion and is using the philosophy of evolution as his manipulated delusion to deceive the souls of men. It is a self-appealing delusion that we are evolution’s gods; a delusion to keep us from our eternal inheritance, and instead, to follow Satan to his already condemned eternal banishment.

What does Yeshua-Jesus say about this subject? *“You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father’s desire. He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar*

and the father of lies.”^{lv} The rebellion in the cosmos, in “the beginning”, must have been a very messy affair! However, the fundamental question that we are trying to answer is—can we discern and *prove* the physical activity of God in our ontology?

Quite frankly, the answer is—no, we can’t. First, God is not measurable—He is infinite outside of our physical space-time dimension. Second, if we as cognitive individuals at a stage in history of space-time cosmic awareness—refuse to attribute to God the intricate design and symphony of the cosmos, the Earth and our biological being—then neither will we understand the physical manifestations of His interdimensional spiritual power. God speaks clearly concerning His viewpoint on how we should understand these space-time events. “*For since the creation of the world God’s invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.*”^{lvi} One would have to question that—even though God himself should stand in our midst and perform miracles before our very eyes, would we believe?

If the evidence to design (teleology) is not acceptable—then the only proof that can possibly show that God exists—must be His working out in our ontology a sequence of prerecorded chronological events that are statistically humanly impossible to complete. Remarkably, there are an amazing series of prerecorded events that will predict the future movement of history, reveal His deep love for His creation, such that He would physically enter the battle, die, and come to life again—to effect a rescue of us from the Legions of Doom.

Notes:

ⁱ Ezekiel chapter 47

ⁱⁱ Genesis 2:11, 12, (K.J.V)

ⁱⁱⁱ Wright Ruth V. Chadbourne Robert L., *Gems & Minerals of the Bible*, Keats Publishing Inc., 1970, pg. 96

^{iv} Genesis 1:9-10

^v Genesis 4:21, 22

^{vi} Lubenow Marvin L., *Bones of Contention*, Baker Book House 1993, pg. 85

-
- vii *Scientific American* September 1997, "Neanderthal Notes," pg. 28
- viii Steiger Brad, *Worlds Before Our Own*, New York Berkley Publishing Group, 1979
- ix George Sasson <mystae.com/streams/science/russcrew.html>
- x Dunn Christopher P., "Advanced Machining in Ancient Egypt," Web (laualee.com/chrisdunn/index.htm), 1997
- xi Genesis 6:7
- xii Genesis 6:5
- xiii Lewis C.S., *Voyage to Venus*, Pan Books 1953
- xiv Genesis 6:9
- xv Matthew 7:13
- xvi Genesis 6:13-21
- xvii Blick Dr. Edward, *A Scientific Analysis of Genesis*, Hearthstone Publishing Ltd. 1991, pgs. 104-109
- xviii Genesis 7:11
- xix Genesis 7:19,20
- xx Genesis 7:24
- xxi Drosnin Michael, *The Bible Code*, Simon & Schuster, 1997, pg. 148
- xxii Uranium Power Corporation, "Anhydride Theory," <www.apioil.net/s/anhydrideinfo.asp>
- xxiii Uranium Power, *Ibid*, pg. 5
- xxiv Amos 9:5-6
- xxv Psalms 33:7
- xxvi Psalms 74:13-14
- xxvii Psalms 46:2-3
- xxviii Psalms 46: 8,10
- xxix Psalms 97:3-6
- xxx Whitcomb Jr., Morris Henry M., *The Genesis Flood*, Baker Book House Grand Rapids Michigan, 1961
- xxxi Howe George F. Editor, *Speak To The Earth*, Creation Studies in Geoscience, Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Company, 1975
- xxxii *Scientific American*, January 1997, pg. 98
- xxxiii Lubenow Marvin L., *Bones of Contention*, Baker Book House, pg. 178
- xxxiv Blick, Ph.D., *Ibid*, pg. 95
- xxxv Cox Douglas E., "Problems in the Glacial Theory," <sentex.net/~tcc/#index>
- xxxvi *Globe and Mail*, Friday October 17, 1997
- xxxvii *Globe and Mail*, Friday May 15, 1998
- xxxviii Allan and Delair, *When the Earth Nearly Died*, Gateway Books. pg. 302
- xxxix Patten Donald, *Catastrophism and the Old Testament*, Pacific Meridian Publishing Company, 1988, pg. 35
- xl Cox Douglas E., "Problems in the Glacial Theory," *Creation Research Society Quarterly*, 13(1):25-34, June 1976. (Additional papers, Web <sentex.net/~tcc/#index>
- xli Velikovsky Immanuel, *Earth in Upheaval*, Dell Publishing Co. 1968, pg. 261
- xlii Connard Edward, "Petrieved human/hominid and Other Large Animal Bone in Carboniferous Strata," Web (access.digex.net/~medved/conrad/conmain.html)
- xliii Burdick Clifford L. M.S., Hon. Ph.D., "Discovery of Human Skeletons in Cretaceous Formation," *Speak to the Earth*, *Ibid*, pg. 127
- xliv <bible.ca>
- xlvi Burdick, *Ibid*, pg. 131
- xlvi Allan and Delair, *Ibid*, pg. 334-338
- xlvii Cremo, Thompson *Forbidden Archeology*, Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing, Inc., pg. 795-815
- xlviii Steiger, *Worlds Before Our Own*, New York Berkley Publishing Group, 1979
- xlxi <http://www.clearwisdom.net/emh/articles/2002/6/29/23603.htm>
- l <paranormal.about.com/msub3.htm?once=true&>
- li <creationevidence.org>
- lii "The Hava Supai Expedition and the Brontosaur Pictograph," Web <access.digex.net/~medved/supai.html>
- liii Job chapter 41
- liv Genesis 6:7
- lv John 8:44
- lvi Romans 1:20

Chapter 18

Melchizedek

Does the ark really exist? The three monotheistic religions of the world, the Muslim, the Jew and the Christian, believe so. The Qur'an—Surah 11:44 records, “And it [the Ark] settled on al Judi,” the Bible—Genesis 8:4 records, “the ark came to rest on the mountains of Ararat.” Mt. Ararat is considered by most modern scholars to be located in the Araxes River basin in Turkey, near its borders with Russia, Iraq and Iran. This historical position goes back in history to the time of St. Jerome around 385 AD. Cummings comments, “In Turkish the mountain is called Aghri Dagh. ...However, the Judi Dagh Mountain must also be examined as a possible runner-up, since in ancient times it might conceivably have been included in the farthest southern reaches of the Ararat Mountains.”ⁱⁱ Judi Dagh (or Jebal Djudi) is about 150 miles south of the main peak of Mt. Ararat and is considered by Muslims to be the main

Ararat

Eryl and Violet Cummings spent 26 years tracking down and recording every mention of the ark. The details are articulately presented in their book *Noah's Ark: Fact Or Fable?* They note that the name Ararat means the removal of the curse, or in Hebrew, “mountain of descent.”ⁱ

contender. In either case, the region around both mountains abounds with ancient legends of Noah.

The most authentic stories of ark discoveries are associated with Mt. Ararat in the Araxes River basin. Several Turkish soldiers were reported to have climbed Mt. Ararat, or one of its side mountains, near the end of World War I and viewed the ark. In the 1950s, Fernand Navarra a French explorer recovered a piece of hand-tooled timber from a deep ice crevasse. Cummings writes, “And his eventual recovery of hand-tooled timber from a deep crevasse has set off a controversy that still rages in civilized countries around the world.”ⁱⁱⁱ In recent years, there have been reports of the outline of a possible ark like vessel buried in a valley near Mt. Judi Dagh. This does not conform to the ancient legends, or the Bible account, and is apparently a natural rock formation—though if it does prove to be artificial,

Myth or Reality

The real question to be answered is not which mountain does the ancient ark rest on, but does it really exist? In all of the ancient world it is this one small 150 mile diameter area that contains authentic “ark legends.” Since the ark is a main event in the Muslim, Jewish and Christian religions, it would behoove them to put aside their “location differences” and get on with systematically attempting to discover this archaeological treasure, which most of the world’s peoples consider a figment of their imagination.

it would certainly lend credence to the high technology and seafaring ability of the people of Noah’s era. However, the revealing of the ark, if it still exists, will be done in God’s timing as a witness to the peoples of Earth.

The Significance of the Ark

Noah, his wife, his three sons and their wives packed up their belongings, and with a great parade of animals set off to replenish the world with diverse land dwelling life forms. It is interesting is it not, that the ark is thought to be resting under ice on a mountain at a level of some 13,000 feet above sea level? To position such a huge barge at that level is a major feat of some sort, without the type of flood described in the Bible. It defies all logic to maintain that ancient writers would have created such a myth. If it was a local flood, there had to be at least 13,000 feet of water. A single gigantic tidal wave is not going to gently deposit a large barge on top of a mountain without smashing it. Another method is to maroon the barge on a shallow hill and let the buckling continental plates form a mountain, but when—several million years ago? The legend of the ark creates an interesting philosophical problem. It is not just an archaeological object of great antiquity sitting on an ice-covered mountain—it is a symbolic truth to the verification of the reality of the Divine Eternal Being—God.

The significance of finding the ark would be immense. Its discovery would imply a historical truth to the God inspired scriptures, and take the Bible beyond a book of ancient legends, to be a document validating creation as a space-time reality—and that man is morally accountable to the Legislator- Creator of the Universe. This is not likely to be deeply contemplated by many of Earth's citizens. Moreover, the physical presence of the ark would stand in stark contrast to the hypocritical Jesus Seminar group, evolutionists of our era, who unwittingly, or maybe even deliberately, act for the Legions of Doom, in their attempts to discredit the supernatural feats of the God-man Yeshua-Jesus in space-time history.

Civilization Begins Again

Before Noah departs Mt. Ararat, he offers a clean animal sacrifice to God thanking Him for his mercy, and the preservation of his family and the multitude of animals throughout this eclectic ordeal. The rainbow becomes a symbol to God and man, that God will not devastate the whole earth again with a worldwide deluge. If this did not actually happen, then a historical writer of long ago was very clever in creating a simple but very symbolic belief for the rainbow. The Bible is not some mystical book of mythology, it tells a very human story of real people in this battle of the cosmos. In this case, Noah gets drunk. Yes drunk, and while he lay naked in his tent, his youngest son Ham, the father of Canaan, observes him. It is interesting that in all cultures, most people cover their sexual organs one way or another as if at a subliminal level there is an awareness of a loss of covering. Shem and Japheth back into the tent with a garment and cover their father. This event provokes Noah (once he has sobered up) to utter a divinely inspired prophetic curse that forecasts the alignment of nations far into the future. Yes, even into our period of history.

The ancient cuneiform tablets of Shem, Japheth and Ham record this prediction. *“Cursed be Canaan! The lowest of slaves will he be to his brothers ... Blessed be the Lord, the God of Shem! May Canaan be the slave of Shem. May God extend the territory of Japheth; may Japheth live in the tents of Shem, and may Canaan be his slave.”*^{iv} Thus, ultimately God will govern the world’s civilizations through the line of Shem. However, the nations from the sons of Japheth will for a time dominate in world history while the nations of Ham though powerful, would be in rebellion and conflict subservient to their brother’s clans.

Genesis chapter 10 is called the Table of Nations. It is the earliest ethnological table known in ancient literature, and shows amazing knowledge of tribal migration over land and sea. Chapter 11 is a parenthesis, and takes place before the listing of the Table of Nations. It explains the reason for the dispersion of the rapidly multiplying peoples. If ancient legends are correct, the initial small group settled around Mt. Ararat and then slowly migrated through the Judi Dagh Mountains until they came to the plains of Mesopotamia, the large fertile valley of the Euphrates River. Archaeologists refer to this area as the cradle of civilization.

The tablet of Shem records that on this great plain, in modern day Iraq, the people said to one another “*Come, let’s build ourselves a city, with a tower that reaches to the heavens, so that we may make a name for ourselves and not be scattered over the face of the whole earth.*”^v This ancient inscription is fascinating in light of what our modern civilization is attempting to do with spacecraft and radio telescopes. To say that the poor dumb people thought they could reach heaven with a great pile of tar-cemented bricks is predicated on the philosophical premise of evolution.

How grand the tales of former deluge days must have seemed as they were told by Japheth, Shem, Ham and their wives to their children. Stories of powerful aliens from the heavens and their great deeds inspired the minds of the technological elite. We will make a name for ourselves, we will reach the heavens, somehow we will contact these beings, became the self-seeking cry. After the flood it would appear that since mortal man is too easily deluded by interdimensional spiritual power, the majority of the Legions of Doom are restricted in their dealings with mortals—they can’t directly assume material form. To

be salvaged, the individual human will must come to the point of understanding who he or she is, in relationship to his or her Holy Infinite Creator.

The Lord stepped into the Tower scene, and with the pain still heavy in his heart He pronounced—“*If as one people speaking the same language they have begun to do this, then nothing they plan to do will be impossible for them.*”^{vi} Humanity is a brilliant malignant race; of each individual God has said, “*every inclination of his heart is evil from childhood.*”^{vii} Modern man has already built devices that could destroy this planet. What would he do with Star Ships unimpeded in space? The Triune God spoke again, “*Come let Us go down and confuse their language so they will not understand each other.*”^{viii} Consider this amazing event—here is biological programming power by the Lord, the Creator and sustainer of life—that night the speech recognition faculties of all humanity were reprogrammed. It is very likely that adaptive programming was also instituted—allowing languages to drift into diverse dialects.

Each language was likely a variant of the protolanguage. This rapid reprogramming would be confusing to modern linguist specialists, since it would give a false appearance of time, making it appear as if longer intervals were involved. Colin Renfrew writes,

For more than 200 years, linguists have recognized that some languages have such similarities in vocabulary, grammar, the formation of words and the use of sounds that they seem to stem from a common ancestor. These ancestral alliances they termed language families. The most famous early classification of this kind was undertaken in 1786 by Sir William Jones, a British judge at the High

Court in Calcutta, who observed relationships between Sanskrit, Greek, Latin, Gothic and Persian. Common words and grammatical features suggested to Jones that the languages had “sprung from some common source.” This family is now known as Indo-European.^{ix}

The sons of Shem and Ham traveled southward. The clans of Ham concentrated across our modern Middle East from the Euphrates River to northern Africa eventually founding the powerful ancient Hittite empire. Mizraim an ancestor of Ham settled Egypt. The progeny of Japheth spread northward over land and oceans (became a maritime people). They also advanced eastward and westward along with sons of Shem. Japheth was the ancestor of Magog, Tubal and Meshech, whose peoples settled around and northward of the Black and Caspian Seas. Research by Chuck Missler has identified the Scythians, who inhabited this area, as descendants of Magog. The Scythians were ruthless warrior nomadic tribes from the Russian steppes.^x The Bible foretells that they will attack Israel far in the future—which is our modern event horizon. Mr. Missler writes,

Noah repopulated the earth after the flood through his three sons: Ham, Shem and Japheth. Egypt originally descended from Mizraim, a son of Ham. Iraq is the current term for the plain of Shinar, Babylon, and the first world empire established by Nimrod, the son of Cush, also a son of Ham. Libya originally descended from Phut, another son of Ham. Syria derives from Aram, one of the five sons of Shem. Iran (Persia) descends from Elam, another son of Shem (although some ethnologists

regard them as non-Semitic Caucasians.) Notice that while both Aram and Elaim are descendants of Shem, Abraham descends from Arphaxad, a different son of Shem. Turkey (Meshech and Tubal) originally descended from Japheth, along with the Greeks.^{xi}

Astrology

Lucifer, the mighty cherub, watches the motley band of mortals settle the plains of Shinar. He is pleased with himself, he had so deftly thwarted the Great One—too bad that flood had occurred—it had been vainly satisfying to be worshiped as a god. Walking unseen amongst the mortals with several of his obedient commanders, he pauses beside Nimrod a descendent of Ham; here is a man of his liking, a man of his own heart, a mortal with strong willful pride. “Yes,” says Lucifer, “I will start with him, he will have power I will be worshiped as God.” Josephus, the great Jewish historian records: “Now it was Nimrod who excited them to such an affront and contempt of God. He was the grandson of Ham, the son of Noah, —a bold man, and of great strength of hand. He persuaded them not to ascribe it to God as if it was through his means they were happy, but to believe it was their own courage, which procured that happiness. He also gradually changed the government into tyranny, seeing no other way to bring them into a constant dependence upon his power.”^{xii}

The Bible records that Nimrod grew to be a mighty warrior on the Earth, a hunter of men. Satan wasted no time in attacking the line of Shem from whom God had promised the one, “He who would crush his (Satan’s) head,”

Science

Modern science is the new god of prosperity—and tyrants, to hold onto power, use its technical accomplishments.

would come. Barnhouse renders Genesis 10:8-12 as follows, “And Cush begat Nimrod; he began to be a mighty despot in the land. He was an arrogant tyrant, defiant before the face of the Lord; wherefore it is said, ‘Even as Nimrod, the mighty despot, haughty before the face of the Lord’. And the homeland of his empire was Babel, then Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar. From this base, he invaded the Kingdom of Asshur, and built Nineveh, and Rehoboth-Ir, and Calah, and Resen between Nineveh and Calah. These make up one great city.”^{xiii}

Satan and his Legions of Doom set up headquarters in Babylon. Clarence Larkin writes: “To this centre the “forces of Evil” gravitated after the Flood, and “Babel” was the result. This was the origin of nations, but the nations were not scattered abroad over the earth until Satan had implanted in them the “Virus” of a doctrine that has been the source of every false religion the world has ever known. ... It was the seat of the first great Apostasy. Here the “Babylonian Cult” was invented, a system claiming to possess the highest wisdom and to reveal the divinest secrets.” Here the religion of astrology had its roots.^{xiv}

Barnhouse draws attention to one illustration pertinent to modern history. Apparently, a king of Babylon built a bridge across the Euphrates River and gave himself a special title of the great bridge builder “Pontifex Maximus.” This title was later

transferred to a king in Asia Minor and then acquired by the Roman Caesars and, “finally fell to the Popes who boast in it today.... The survival of Hamitic practices in the Roman Church is astonishing to one who meets it for the first time. It should not surprise us, however, to realize that Satan, the god of Ham, still defies the true people of God as he has done through all ages.”^{xv} The powerful Hittite and Egyptian empires, clans of Ham, ruled over the clans of Shem for centuries. Barnhouse continues,

How they and Satan must have gloated in the light of the fact that God had said they were to be slaves! And here they were the masters! But God does not count history in minutes.... Since we can treat in a phrase the last branch of the Hamitic people, those of Canaan’s coast who survived and fought against Shem and Japheth, let us realize that Tyre and Sidon were cities of Ham, and that their Phoenician sailors who roamed the Mediterranean founded Carthage, the great outpost city on the northern coast of Africa, from which they continued to battle against the divinely appointed nations until Carthage was destroyed. Cato in the Roman senate ended every debate, whether on taxes, food supplies, army movements, or whatnot, with the famous phrase, “Carthage must be destroyed.” Though he almost certainly was unaware of the divine impetus that was behind his words, there was the movement of God in the Punic wars. It is interesting to remember that as the name of God is found in the last syllable of Israel, the name of Baal is to be found in the last syllable of the name of the Carthaginian leader, Hannibal. Only with the destruction of

Carthage was the age of Japheth established upon the history of Europe and the world.^{xvi}

This battle by Satan to defy God's curse continues into this 21st century when one realizes that the mainstream anti-Semitic cry is from the Muslims, sons of Ham, against the Jews who are from the lineage of Shem. It is interesting that Japhetic peoples interwoven with races from Shem and a minor portion from Ham largely populate the powerful "West".

God Picks His Man

After the Tower of Babel calamity, the century's drift by; Satan continues to manipulate mankind's affairs. His sophisticated religious system of worshipping the Sun, Moon, Planets and Stars is in full sway. Yet, God works quietly through the prophesied line of Shem. The Biblical Genesis record continues until it reaches a man named Abram, a descendent of Shem through his son Arphaxad. The period is sometime around 2000 BC. Abram and his family are living at Ur, which would be in modern day Iraq near the Persian Gulf. They migrate some 900 km northwestward to Haran, which would be in modern day Syria.

The time has come in the great battle of the cosmos to begin the defeat of Lucifer, usurper of Adam's domain. Just as Satan handpicked Nimrod, a servant of violence, to implement his religious system of control through mysticism and astrology, God picks Abram, a God fearing man of faith through whom the One, the Seed, the He of truth, righteousness, love, mercy and justice would eventually come. God calls Abram—His

friend and renames him Abraham. Through God's promises to Abraham, the nation of Israel came into being. They are to be a witness to the world that—"I Am That I Am"—God-Jehovah exists.

God becomes personal and speaks to Abram, *"Leave your country, your people and your father's household and go to the land I will show you. I will make you into a great nation and I will bless you; I will make your name great, and you will be a blessing. I will bless those who bless you, and whoever curses you I will curse; and all the peoples on the earth will be blessed because of you."*^{xvii} Abram was seventy-five years old when he eventually reached the area of modern day Israel, which was then occupied by the Canaanites, descendents of Ham. *"The Lord appeared to Abram and said, "To your offspring I will give this land."* Abram built an altar, offered an animal sacrifice to the Lord, and *"called on the name of the Lord."*^{xviii}

Mistakenly, our modern age tends to think of Abram as nothing but a poor Bedouin moving his sheep, goats and camels from oasis to oasis. In fact, he was very powerful, the Bible records, *"Abram had become very wealthy in livestock, silver and gold."*^{xix} He, and his nephew Lot, with their extensive herds and servants must have been like small moving cities. Eventually to prevent quarreling between the two families, Lot takes the low road and Abram the high road, so to speak. Lot settles in the fertile Jordan Valley near the wicked cities of Sodom and Gomorrah (from which come the words sodomy and gonorrhea) while Abram pastured his herds in the surrounding hills.

The power of Abram's household is evident when a group of four kings raid the area of the fertile Jordan valley, now the hot dry desolate area of the Dead Sea. In that era, it was the home of five cities. The raiders carry off Lot and his possessions. Abram, with his private army, and his Amorite allies attack the raiders, rout them, rescue Lot, and recover all the stolen goods. Upon their return something mysterious happens—an unknown king, Melchizedek of Salem meets Abram with bread and wine, "*he was priest of God Most High.*" He blesses Abram on behalf of "*God Most High, Creator of heaven and earth.*" Abram gives him a tenth of everything therefore substantiating Melchizedek as a priest.^{xx} Melchizedek means "*King of righteousness,*" also, "*King of Salem*" means "*king of peace.*" "*Without father or mother, without genealogy, without beginning of days or end of life, like the Son of God he remains a priest forever.*"^{xxi}

In 1947, the Melchisedic scroll was found in the Dead Sea Caves surrounding Qumran. In his book *The Handwriting of God*, Grant Jeffrey states, "I believe that this scroll reveals an astonishing teaching about Melchizedek that parallels exactly the teaching of the New Testament, in which the king of Salem is identified with the Messiah, the Son of God." He quotes from the scroll, "And Melchizedek will avenge the

A Theophany

Now what is mysterious about this is that many Bible scholars believe Melchizedek was a theophany of the second person of the Trinity, God the Son, or the Angel of the Lord. The act of theophany means that God, the Son, superficially appeared at times as a mortal before His incarnation as the God-man, Yeshua-Jesus, the Messiah-Christ. Similarly just as Melchizedek offers Abram bread and wine, Jesus at the last supper broke bread and shared wine with his disciples.

vengeance of the judgments of God ... and he will drag them from the hand of Satan and from the hand of all the spirits of his lot.... And your Elohim is Melchizedek, who will save them from the hand of Satan.”^{xxii} Who, then, is this Elohim-Melchizedek that will intervene in this cosmic conflict?

The discovery of the hidden code within the Hebrew text of the Old Testament verifies who this mysterious person is. Yacov Rambsel and Grant Jeffrey, using powerful computers, discovered that the name Yeshua and Messiah or Mashiach, appear at very low equidistant letter sequences in association with each other in the Messianic prophecies.^{xxiii} The Bible codes show who God is as He deals with Abram, establishes covenants with him and implements His battle plan to defeat the Prince of Darkness and his Legions of Doom.

Notes:

ⁱ Cummings Violet M., *Noah's Ark: Fact Or Fable?* Creation-Science Research Center, 1972, pg. 43

ⁱⁱ Cummings, Ibid, pg. 40

ⁱⁱⁱ Cummings, Ibid, pg. 176

^{iv} Genesis 9:25-27

^v Genesis 11:4

^{vi} Genesis 11:6

^{vii} Genesis 8:21

^{viii} Genesis 11:7

^{ix} Renfrew Colin Prof., “World Linguistic Diversity,” *Scientific American* January 1994, pg. 116

^x Missler Chuck, *The Magog Invasion*, Western Front Ltd, 1995 pg. 51

^{xi} Missler Chuck, Ibid, pg. 131

^{xii} William Whiston translator, *The Works of Josephus*, Hendrickson Publishers Inc. 1987, pg. 35

^{xiii} Barnhouse Donald Grey, *The Invisible War*, Zondervan Publishing House Grand Rapids Michigan, 1965, pg. 193

^{xiv} Larkin Clarence, *The Greatest Book on Dispensational Truth in the World*, Clarence Larkin Est., 1918, pg. 140

^{xv} Barnhouse, Ibid, pg. 194

^{xvi} Barnhouse, Ibid, pg. 195-196

^{xvii} Genesis 12:1

^{xviii} Genesis 12:7,8

^{xix} Genesis 13:2

^{xx} Genesis chapter 14

^{xxi} Hebrews 7:2

^{xxii} Jeffrey Grant R., *The Handwriting of God*, Frontier Research Publications Inc. 1997, pg. 179

^{xxiii} Jeffrey Grant R., Ibid, pgs. 167-170

Chapter 19

Abraham

Miracles and the supernatural are synonymous with the Bible. The Jewish people are a miracle; they are symbolic of life from the dead. Mankind became as good as dead when Adam and Eve made the choice to deify themselves in the Garden of Eden. Likewise, God chose someone as good as dead to show his power to the watching host in the universe. Abraham was one hundred years old and Sarah ninety-one when Isaac was born to them—a miracle performed by God. Abraham, his son Isaac, his son Jacob and his twelve sons are the patriarchs of the nation Israel.

Once again God appears to Abram in a vision saying, *“Do not be afraid, Abram. I am your shield, your very great reward.... Look up at the heavens and count the stars if indeed you can count them. So shall your offspring be.”* The Bible states, *“Abram believed the Lord and he credited it to him as righteousness.”* God also said to him, *“I am the Lord, who brought you out of Ur of the Chaldeans to give you this land to take possession of it.”*¹ Verse 2 Chronicles 20:7 ties God, the land of Israel and Abraham together. *“O our God, did you not drive out the inhabitants of this land before your people Israel and give it forever to the descendants of Abraham your friend?”*—Why was Abraham a friend of God? It was because he trusted in the goodness of God, and was obedient and faithful from his heart. Yacov Rambsel conducted ELS hidden code studies on the verse in which God told Abram to leave Ur—*“I will make you into a great nation and I will bless you; I will*

make your name great and you will be a blessing,”ⁱⁱ Yacov found a coded future verification of who God is, and what He would do. This verse contains the hidden words Yisrael (Israel) and Mashiah (Messiah). Who then is the Messiah? In the 2 Chronicles 20:7 verse, are hidden words “ha’rav Yeshuah, which means, The Great Yeshuah,” thus implying that God Himself is somehow connected with the Messiah.ⁱⁱⁱ

The One Way Covenant of “The Land”

Sometime around the era of 2000 BC, the Great Yeshuah (as a theophany) and Abram stood by the trees of Mamre at Hebron where Abram had built an altar to the Lord. They looked out over the land of the Canaanites. Abram spoke, “*O, Sovereign LORD, how can I know that I will gain possession of it?*” So the LORD said to him, “*Bring me a heifer, a goat and a ram, each three years old along with a dove and a young pigeon.*” The Great Yeshuah was about to perform the rite of an ancient sacrificial covenant, or promise, to Abram—one that only He (God) could fulfill. Abram cut the animals in two, except the birds, and “*arranged the halves opposite each other.... Then birds of prey came down on the carcasses, but Abram drove them away.... As the sun was setting Abram fell into a deep sleep, and a thick and dreadful darkness came over him. Then the*

Struggles in The Land

The modern, Israel – Palestine conflict has its roots in the war of the cosmos. God states **the land** will be occupied by the sons of Abraham through Isaac – Satan says it will not, because it moves him one step closer to eternal banishment. Thus, as hate festers on both sides Satan is satisfied he is winning, yet, this hate will eventually bring the sudden attack against Israel of Muslim nations aligned with Russia. The devastation will be horrific with the Palestinians being destroyed by their own brothers—moving one step closer to God’s declaration.

Lord said to him, "Know for certain that your descendants will be strangers in a country not their own, and they will be enslaved and mistreated four hundred years. But I will punish the nation they serve as slaves, and afterward they will come out with great possessions. You, however, will go to your fathers in peace and be buried at a good old age. In the fourth generation your descendants will come back here, for the sin of the Amorites has not yet reached its full measure." (This last sentence gives a statement to ponder upon; it would appear that God measures the sin of a nation and eventually brings judgment against it.)

When the sun had set and darkness had fallen, a smoking firepot with a blazing torch appeared and passed between the pieces. Symbolically the Light walked in the darkness amongst the dead. On that day the Lord made a covenant with Abram and said, *"To your descendants I give this land, from the river of Egypt to the great river Euphrates."*^{iv*6} The sons of Shem, through Abram's descendents, were to be enslaved in Egypt for four hundred years by the sons of Ham and the Legions of Doom. At the end of the 400 years, Egypt was to be punished. The universal law of retribution says, *"Do to others what you would have them do to you."*^v Egypt in the future would somehow be in servitude for 400 years.

Ten years go by, Sarai grows impatient, where is the child of promise, and like Eve in the Garden of Eden, she takes the matter into her own hands. She says to Abram, *"Go sleep with my maidservant; perhaps I can build a family through her."* When Hagar, their Egyptian maidservant, finds that she is pregnant, she despises her mistress bringing mistreatment from Sarai. Hagar runs away. The angel of the Lord (Yeshua) finds her by a desert spring and has compassion for her. *"Go back to your mistress and submit to her. I will so increase your descendants that they will be too numerous to count. You are now with child and you will have a son. You will name him Ishmael (God hears), for the Lord has heard your misery."*^{vi}

Another 13 years pass—where is God—why isn't something happening—where is the promised son? Then, when Abram is ninety-nine years old God appears to him and says, *"I am God Almighty [El-Shaddai], walk before me and be blameless. I will confirm my covenant between me and you and will greatly increase your numbers. ... No longer will you be called Abram [exalted father], your name will be Abraham [father of many], for I have made you the father of many nations ... As for Sarai your wife, you are no longer to call her Sarai; her name will be Sarah. I will bless her and will surely give you a son by her so that she will be the mother of nations; kings of peoples will come from her."*^{ix} Abraham fell facedown; he laughed and said to himself, *"Will a son be born to a man a hundred years old? Will Sarah bear a child at the age of ninety?... If only Ishmael might live under your blessing."* Then God said, *"Yes, but your wife Sarah will bear you a son, and you will call him Isaac. I will establish my covenant with him as an everlasting covenant for his descendants after him. And as for Ishmael, I have heard you: I will surely bless him; I will*

Light and Darkness

Light and Darkness strive for the souls of men. Earth lies enshrouded with the curse of physical and spiritual death. *"See, darkness covers the earth and thick darkness is over the peoples, but the LORD rises upon you and his glory appears over you."*^{vii}

The vultures that descended upon the sacrifice represent the Legions of Doom, which fly as birds of prey in the thick and dreadful spiritual darkness of the world attacking the promises of Yeshua. *"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made, without him nothing was made that has been made. In him was life, and that life was the light of men. The light shines in the darkness, but the darkness has not understood it."*^{viii}

make him fruitful and will greatly increase his numbers. He will be the father of twelve rulers, and I will make him into a great nation.”^x

The Covenant of Circumcision

“Then God said to Abraham, *“As for you, you must keep my covenant, you and your descendants after you for the generations to come. This is my covenant with you and your descendants after you, the covenant you are to keep: Every male among you shall be circumcised. You are to undergo circumcision, and it will be the sign of the covenant between me and you.... Any uncircumcised male, who has not been circumcised in the flesh, will be cut off from his people; he has broken my covenant.”^{xi}* To this day, in the 21st century, both devote Jewish and Muslim males are circumcised.

Jerusalem the City of Destinies

A dramatic ELS hidden code discovery by Mr. Rambsel, reveals that God hid in this binding covenant of circumcision, the name of the city that would be the focal point of the great cosmic battle. He explains, “hidden in the phrase, “between Me and you, bai’ni uvai’nai’kem,” is the name of the great city “Jerusalem, Y’rushala’yim.”^{xii} It is in Jerusalem that “the final ratification of the covenant would take place.” Yeshua ratified the covenant by the sacrifice of his life at Jerusalem in 32 AD. In that year, the forces of evil men and the Legions of Doom stood arrayed against the gentle prophet from Galilee. He stood looking over this great city, and cried out, *“O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kill the prophets and stone those sent to you, how often I have longed to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, but you were not willing.”^{xiii}*

Jerusalem is not just another city; it is a swirling spiritual vortex standing between time and eternity, where the contest of good and evil has been won. God has said *“On that day, when all the*

nations of the earth are gathered against her, I will make Jerusalem an immovable rock for all the nations. All who try to move it will injure themselves.^{xiv} Yet, there has to be something deeper. Why should Abraham be sent to this region on the Earth? Why did God later cause King David to make it his capital city? Moses writes, *“It is a land the LORD your God cares for; the eyes of the LORD your God are continually on it from the beginning of the year to its end.”*^{xv} There is no proof, but it is very likely that Jerusalem

Jerusalem

There are some who believe that Salem, home to Melchisedic, was Jerusalem, however, Salem was likely a small town in the Jordan River valley. Abram could not have gone to remote Mt. Moriah if it was in a village. Some 500 years after Abram, Mt. Moriah was an Amorite settlement and by 1000 B.C., it was a well-fortified Jebusite community called the fortress of Zion that king David captured and made his capital city.^{xvi}

stands over the point in the Garden of Eden where mankind forfeited the dominion of Earth to the angel of deceit, Lucifer. It is no coincidence then, that the testing of Abraham by God—asking him to sacrifice his son Isaac on Mt. Moriah—has tremendous significance, since Mt. Moriah is either Mt. Calvary or the area of the “Temple Mt.” in modern Jerusalem.

Sodom and Gomorrah

What would you think if you were sitting at the door of your tent in the heat of the day, when suddenly three celestial visitors appear out of nowhere? Abram recognizes one of them as the Lord. Abram, Sarai and servants quickly prepare a meal of bread, curds, veal and milk for their visitors. After some discussion concerning the future birth of Isaac, the Lord turns to the two accompanying angels and asks, *“Shall I hide from Abram what I am about to do?”* The Lord then

explains, *“The outcry against Sodom and Gomorrah is so great and their sin so grievous that I will go down and see if what they have done is as bad as the outcry that has reached me.”*

God calls sodomy, homosexuality and lust, a grievous sin. Abram knew that his nephew Lot was living in Sodom and pleads with the Lord, *“Will you sweep away the righteous with the wicked?”* It appears that God is making a deliberate point to Abram that He judges wickedness. People and nations are held accountable

for their actions. God was merciful and respected Abram’s intercession. He agreed to withhold his wrath if only 10 righteous people could be found. ^{xvii}

Ziggurats, (mountain peak)

In 2000 BC, the Mesopotamian cities of Ur, Nineveh, Babylon, Harran and Ebla were highly advanced societies as evidenced by their jewelry, cuneiform writing and building structures. Great stepped tower platforms, with a temple on top where the god would live, dominated each city. Astrology was practiced from the ziggurat temples as the population prostrated themselves before the Sun, Moon, stars, comets and the forces of nature. Lesser cities spread down the Mediterranean coast towards Sodom and Gomorrah.

Lucifer has established a hierarchy of rulers from the Legions of Doom to excite the willful souls of mankind into spiritual and physical prostitution. The Angels of Glory aren’t welcome and are considered meddlers in his dominion of Earth. Centuries of Earthly time have passed without any obvious Godly interference. Lately, however, there have been several unexplained ripples in the space-time envelope, and now, a mysterious perturbation has appeared in space over the region of Sodom and Gomorrah.

“Its’ Him,” states a commander as he comes into Satan’s presence. Satan knew only too well, who Him is. “There are two of them with Him,” he continues. We couldn’t drive them back. What are two Angels of Glory doing with Him, Satan wonders? Satan did not have to ask where they were, he already knew. There is only one annoyance in his domain and that is the Spiritual force field around that old man—Abram. What is so special about that old man he ponders?

The Legions of Doom become extremely agitated as the two Angels of Glory walk up to the gates of Sodom. Lot, who hates the wickedness around him, intercepts the new comers at the gate and forcibly persuades them to spend the night at his home. Word spread quickly amongst the immoral, that new flesh is in town. Men, young and old, surround Lot’s house, “Where are the men who came to you tonight? Bring them out to us so that we can have sex with them.” Lot argues with them “Don’t do this wicked thing. Look I have two daughters who have never slept with a man Let me bring them out to you, and you can do what you want with them.”

Virgin females weren’t good enough. “Get out of our way, this fellow came here as an alien, and now he wants to play the judge! We’ll treat you worse than them” the Sodomites respond.^{xviii}

Darkness, pervasive demonic lust driven madness prevails as they start to push Lot aside to break down the door. It opens; swiftly the angels reach out and pull Lot back into the house. Zap, in a split second the sex mob is struck with blindness so that they can’t find the door. The angels turn to Lot and quietly ask, “Do you have anyone else here—sons-in-law, sons or daughters, or anyone else in the city who belongs to

you? Get them out of here, because we are going to destroy this place. The outcry to the LORD against its people is so great that he has sent us to destroy it.”

Lot slips out later that night to warn his future sons-in-law. Typical of the Godless, they think that Lot is joking. With the coming of the dawn, the two angels grab the hands of Lot, his wife and his two daughters and drag them out of the city. “Flee for your lives,” they shout forcefully. “Flee to the mountains or you will be swept away.”^{xix}

The Holy Scriptures solemnly state: Genesis 19:24, *“Then the LORD rained down burning sulfur on Sodom and Gomorrah—from the LORD out of the heavens. Thus he overthrew those cities and the entire plain, including all those living in the cities—and also the vegetation in the land.”* When Abram looked down over the valley the next morning *“he saw dense smoke rising from the land, like smoke from a furnace.”*

In our modern age, homosexuality is called *gender confusion*. The unnatural physical act of sodomy is glossed over. The term oral sex is glibly used to hide the gross misuse of the human body. Neither sexual activity furthers the philosophical high cause of evolution, and the genetic continuation of the human species into the universe. Such sexual activities define only one thing, lust of the flesh—sexual gratification at all cost. Same sex couples make a farce of biological parenthood, mocking the statues of societies that promote the continuation of the human species. In the 1960s, God was dead—free love, condoms and unisex were in. Bibles and prayers were out (until of course there is a national tragedy). “Not enough, not enough” screeched the Legions of Doom, Church and Sunday school are out; gang rapes, teenage pregnancies and television violence are in. “More, more” snarled the demons of lust and violence—and spiritual blackness like a deadly pall seeps into the hearts and minds of the self-deified. Road rage, swinging, coming out, lying,

cheating, adultery, fornication, drugs, murder, astrology, spiritualism and self-delusion are in. Love, kindness, trust and faith are out. Nations rot from the inside, and so are destroyed.

Philosophically as an evolutionist, there is no basis for what God defines as sin, nor is there a foundation upon which to establish “right or wrong.” Degenerate mutations and hormone altering chemicals may possibly affect the biological human machine somewhat, since scientists say there is a case for gender confusion. However, when a teenager barely past puberty says that they are coming out, which means, “I’m homosexual,” one would have to wonder just how much is sociological mind manipulation by the uninhibited of natural sexual urges into sexual self-gratification at all costs. Tribal groups over the ages have had some sort of social order to prevent unwanted births. However, evolutionary modern man has misused contraceptives for sexual freedoms resulting in the loss of social accountability, yielding escalating welfare systems and economic disparities. The evolutionary excuse would seem to be—that all sexual activities should be uninhibited, regardless of the social consequences, as it is the necessary drive to reproduce. At that base level—man is only an animal driven by uncontrollable basic instincts. So, at what point in society does murder, lying, cheating or stealing become uncontrollable basic instincts?

If evolutionists were true to their beliefs, they would disconcertingly realize that homosexuality is a divergence from the spread of the human genome, that youth are being subverted out of the great river of DNA dissemination. The power of evolution is continually personified as Mother Nature, Mother Earth or Gaia, such that it is this pantheist force that has brought humanity to the top of the genetic pyramid. So—how will this personified force react to this increasing selfish diversion of the human genome? God, the Holy God of the Bible, on the other hand is absolutely clear as to His position on the subject. He supernaturally rains burning sulphur on the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah. Yacov examined these verses in Genesis 19:23-26 in his ELS

studies. He writes, “We have an insight that gives us one of the reasons why G-D judged Sodom and Gomorrah so severely. Starting with the last number in verse 26, counting 60 letters three times from left to right, spells na’tzah, which means, to blaspheme (G-D). I wonder if the 60-letter count may allude to the 6,000th year when G-D judges the nations with fire and brimstone?”^{xx}

In due time Sarah gave birth to Isaac, “*and when his son Isaac was eight days old, Abraham circumcised him, as God commanded him.*” Abraham was one hundred years old and Sarah ninety-one. It is no wonder that Sarah said, “*God has brought me laughter, and everyone who hears about this will laugh with me.... Who would have said to Abraham that Sarah would nurse children? Yet I have borne him a son in his old age.*” The day Isaac was weaned Abraham held a great feast.^{xxi}

Futuristic Word Pictures

God paints pictures, yes word pictures. Even as the signs of the zodiac are thought to be ancient word pictures foretelling the destiny of our cosmos, and the defeat of the great serpent Satan by the God-man—the scriptures give detailed word pictures portraying future space-time actions of the God-man Yeshua-Jesus, the Christ (Messiah). This study is called Typology. God’s testing of Abraham that he should sacrifice his son Isaac on Mt. Moriah is one of these forward-looking word pictures. In symbolism, Isaac is the promised son of destiny, a gift from God. The word picture of the sacrifice of Isaac depicts the future actual sacrifice of Jesus on the cross outside the walls of Jerusalem at the place of the skull, Golgotha, on Mt. Calvary.

God stood at the threshold of time surveying the darkness. It is time for the final test of His friend Abraham. Does Abraham trust Him with his whole heart? Does Abraham trust in His goodness, regardless of the circumstances? In a sense, it is a parallel scene to the one that had taken place so long ago in the Garden of Eden and

because of it, the beautiful orb of Earth is now entangled in a horrible spider web of spiritual darkness. Fluorescent cobwebs flicker around the majestic sphere spreading into space like streamers of static electricity. In the course of time, millions of self-willful humans have perished like useless trash, their eternal spirits confined to the abode of the dead, Hades, awaiting judgment along with the still free, marauding, Legions of Doom. For a moment, His heart is heavy as He looks into the future at what He has written. His Word will stand, prophecy will be fulfilled; the Seed of the woman will crush the head of the serpent! He speaks.

“Abraham!”

“Here I am,” the old man replies.

“Take your son, your only son, Isaac, whom you love, and go to the region of Moriah. Sacrifice him there as a burnt offering on one of the mountains I will tell you about.”^{xxii}

The old man with his son, now likely a teenager, and two trusted servants with their donkeys, set out on a three day journey to the distant mountain. Abraham and Isaac climb the mountain while the servants stay behind with the donkeys. Isaac carries the wood for the burnt offering while Abraham brings the fire (usually consisting of hot coals in an insulated container) and a knife.

“Father?”

“Yes, my son?” Abraham replies.

“The fire and wood are here,” Isaac said, “but where is the lamb for the burnt offering?”

Abraham answers, “God himself will provide the lamb for the burnt offering, my son.”

And the two of them continue on together. When they reach the place God had told him about, Abraham builds an altar and arranges the wood on it. He binds his son Isaac and lays him on the altar, on top of the wood. As he reaches out, knife in hand, to slay his son the angel of the LORD calls out to him from heaven,

“Abraham! Abraham!”

“Here I am,” he replies.

“Do not lay a hand on the boy.

Do not do anything to him.

Now I know that you fear God, because you have not withheld from me your son, your only son.”

Abraham looks up, and there in a thicket he sees a ram caught by its horns. He takes the ram and sacrifices it as a burnt offering instead of his son. So Abraham called that place The LORD Will Provide. And to this day it is said, “On the mountain of the LORD it will be provided.”

The angel of the LORD called to Abraham from heaven a second time and said, “I swear by myself, declares the LORD, that because you have done this and have not withheld your son, your only son, I will surely bless you and make your descendants as numerous as the stars in the sky and as the sand on the seashore. Your descendants will take possession of the cities of their enemies, and through your off-spring all nations on earth will be blessed, because you have obeyed me.”^{xxxiii}

This word picture unfolds it’s meaning in events far into the future from this point in time. Abraham in type is God the Father and Isaac, the son, is Yeshua-Jesus. Even as Isaac submitted to

the will of his father, to the point of being sacrificed, so Yeshua submitted to the will of the Father and was sacrificed as the substitute lamb, on the cross of Calvary to redeem our lost willful self deluded souls. Isaac carried the wood even as Jesus bore the wooden cross. For three days, Isaac was under the sentence of death even as Jesus Christ was in the grave under the sentence of death for three days. At the end of three days, Jesus Christ once again took up his life even as He had laid it down, so Isaac was given his life from the sentence of death.

*The Great Yeshua stands just behind the curtain of time watching the old man, his friend, and son journey back down the mountain—neither one truly understanding the powerful significance of the moment. As the Infinite One watches, His own words echo in his heart ... “you have not withheld from me your son, your only son.” And in that moment as He holds time in its dimensional perspective, the scene like a rippling reflection on a pond in the still of an early morning, changes. Now it is not a barren mountain; on it stands a walled city—a city filled with dark and viperous violence—men and the Legions of Doom are shouting “crucify him, crucify him.” For a brief moment, He feels the incarnate mortality that He will assume—sharp jabbing pains scorch his body as He is thrust upon the wooden cross to the sound of the screeching scorn of the self-righteous mob. **Enough, it is not yet time!***

Like a ripple on the pond once again, a magnificently beautiful woman stands where the city once was—His bride. Clothed in radiant white garments, her hair throwing glints of light in the warm breezes, she walks gracefully to meet him. The mountain shakes with triumphant singing—Hallelujah He is King of Kings and Lord of Lords and He shall reign forever. He almost starts towards her in excitement, for many

*are the people, His people that He has ransomed from Earth. Victory is His, Satan, the Legions of Doom and their cohorts the willful self-deluded humanity have been banished to the Lake of Eternal fire. **Enough, it is not yet time!***

The book of Genesis continues with the stories of Isaac, his son Jacob and in particular Jacob's son Joseph. The interwoven tapestry of word picture events, as lived by actual people and described in the books of Genesis and Exodus, is a prophetic allegory of later real space-time history. This space-time history is shaped moment by moment by the Infinite Creator as He ransoms a people that seek him. He will eventually incarcerate the malevolent archangel Lucifer, the Legions of Doom and the spirits of willful mankind, thus ending the cosmic rebellion. Only an Infinite Creator could describe and then implement these events. The writer of the book of Hebrews, in the New Testament portion of the Bible, encapsulates the meaning of the Easter (death and resurrection of Jesus Christ) space-time event of the Great Yeshua. The writer, in particular, is addressing the Jewish people who were uncertain that Jesus was the long awaited Messiah. He writes:

But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, now crowned with glory and honor because he suffered death, so that by the grace of God he might taste death for everyone. In bringing many sons to glory, it was fitting that God, for whom and through whom everything exists, should make the author of their salvation perfect through suffering.

Both the one who makes men holy and those who are made holy are of the same family. So Jesus is not ashamed to call them brothers. He says, "I will declare your name to my brothers; in the presence of the congregation I will sing your praises." And again, "I

will put my trust in him.” And again he says, “Here am I, and the children God has given me.”

Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death—that is, the devil—and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by their fear of death.

For surely it is not angels he helps, but Abraham’s descendants. For this reason he had to be made like his brothers in every way, in order that he might become a merciful and faithful high priest in service to God, and that he might make atonement for the sins of the people. Because he himself suffered when he was tempted, he is able to help those who are being tempted.^{xxiv}

The tapestry of word pictures continues with the story of Abraham sending his trusted servant to a far country to get a bride for his son Isaac. In typology, Isaac is the son, in a sense, raised from the dead. Abraham is God the father, and the servant is the Holy Spirit. This story foretells the Church age, or age of grace that we are now in, when by the power of the Holy Spirit many people of all tribes and nations are being spiritually called to be a Celestial bride to Jesus, the Lion of Judah, who was resurrected from the dead. It is interesting that Isaac is not mentioned again after his Mt. Moriah experience with his father until the servant is sent to get his bride. Some Bible commentators relate this as a parallel to the “rapture,” where the Church, the Bride of Christ is taken to Heaven by the power of the Holy Spirit.

In the course of time, both Abraham and Sarah die and are buried by Isaac and Ishmael in the cave of Machpelah, which is at the modern day city of Hebron. The book of Genesis records that God appears to Isaac and later to his son Jacob confirming with them the covenant made with His friend Abraham. In a dream Jacob sees a “*stairway resting on the earth, with its top reaching to*

heaven, and the angels of God were ascending and descending on it.” The Lord speaks to Jacob from the top of the stairway. The dream is so powerful that Jacob considers the place where he is laying “*is the gate of heaven.*”^{xxv} This same Lord, Yeshua-Jesus, some 1800 years later was to stand upon Earth and declare to His disciples, “*I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.*”^{xxvi} Jacob travels to his uncle’s household at Paddan Aram, modern northern Syria, where he works for 14 years. He weds Rachel whom he fell in love with, and Leah to whom he is tricked into marrying first, as she is the eldest daughter. Eventually they return to the land of the Canaanites. On the way back to **the land**, Jacob is met one night by the Angel of the Lord and wrestles with Him. The Angel tells him, “*Your name shall no longer be Jacob, but Israel, because you have struggled with God and with men and have overcome.*”^{xxvii}

Through Leah, Rachel and their maidservants, Jacob has twelve sons who father the twelve tribes of Israel. The symbolism of Jacob, Israel, marrying the two sisters is reflected in the far future; Israel would divide into two parts. The tribes of Judah and

Israel versus Egypt

Israel became a nation when they sojourned in the land of Egypt for four hundred years. Israel is symbolic of a people called apart to serve God, whereas Egypt represents the nations in general ruled by the prince of the world—Lucifer.

Benjamin occupy the area of Jerusalem while the remaining 10 tribes occupy the land to the north. Rachel, the beloved wife, has two sons and in turn, two tribes settle the beloved city Jerusalem. Rachel dies giving birth to her youngest son Benjamin. Joseph, her eldest son, in typology is figurative of Christ. Yeshua, in His dealings with the life of Joseph, paints a symbolic picture of future events that only He could bring to pass in the dance of Earth’s molecules. Now as you read this, you may say to yourself, “Oh sure” in the sense that you believe this prophetic symbolism is

too far fetched. However, we have asked the question, “Does God exist?” Philosophically you may have chosen to discredit architectural design, as evidence for His existence, which is why we are examining His divinely inspired scriptures for any evidence of prophetic implementation in our space-time world. Such action would bring credence to the statement “God exists” and meaning to the intelligence arrow of mankind. Therefore, what tapestry of pictures did God depict in the life of Joseph to later reflect in the life of Jesus?

Genesis chapters 37-50 tell the story of Joseph. Joseph’s father Jacob is a symbol of God the father, for it is through God’s covenant with Jacob’s father Abraham that the nation of Israel came to be, and it is through the nation Israel that the Seed of the woman would come to defeat the Prince of Darkness. Jacob’s favorite son, Joseph, was born to him by his beloved Rachel. In a parallel scene far into the future, God the father was to say of Jesus, *“This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased. Listen to him!”*^{xxviii} Jacob made Joseph a special coat of many colors; as a result of this favoritism, his brothers hated him. What was even more infuriating was that Joseph dreamt that they would bow down to him, a sign of acknowledgement of his lordship over them.

“A coat of many colors;” this is a unique statement and doesn’t occur anywhere else in the Bible. The coat of many colors was a special gift given out of a father’s love for his son. In a parallel sense, this is typified by the word “grace”, which means unmerited favor. Joseph is truthful to his father and reports evils that his brothers were doing—and they hate him. Furthermore, they hate him because of the beautiful coat of many colors, and they hate him because of his dream that he would rule over them.^{xxix} In symbolism, whom did they hate? Yacov Rambsel found the answer in the words “and they hated, va’yis’nu.” The secret code reveals that it is none other than “ach Yeshua, Brother Yeshua.”^{xxx} In the future Jesus was to say, *“But this is to fulfill what is written in their Torah: They hated me without reason.”*^{xxxi}

Does God exist? Is Yeshua operating in our ontology? The secret code suggests that the words were inspired by Yeshua and then acted out in our ontology some 2000 years later. However, there is still the question of the coat of many colors—what is its full meaning? The coat of many colors was a gift of unmerited favor, “grace;” also, Joseph is depicted as a man of “truth.” The apostle John, under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, wrote about Jesus, *“The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the One and Only, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth.”*^{xxxii} Grace and truth are the very words that typified the life of Joseph. However, is there something more? Jesus came as the Lamb of God, a gift of unmerited favor to redeem fallen mankind. Is it possible that the coat of many colors, which is totally unique in the scriptures, represents the one thing that Yeshua had to provide as the second Adam in the virgin birth as Jesus the Messiah? Is it possible that the coat of many colors, even in its shape, is symbolic of the genetic code of the “Y” chromosome?

Joseph’s 11 brothers were far from home finding pasture for their flocks of sheep. Seeing Joseph coming towards them wearing his coat of many colors, they conspired against him to kill him. His elder brother Reuben intervened and instead they threw him into an empty water cistern. *“Judah said to his brothers, ‘What will we gain if we kill our brother and cover up his blood? Come, let’s sell him to the Ishmaelites and not lay our hands on him; after all, he is our brother, our own flesh and blood.’ His brothers agreed.”* The Ishmaelites sold him as a slave into the land of Egypt.^{xxxiii} Why a caravan of Ishmaelites? Is this symbolic of the future misunderstanding of Islam over the significance of Jesus? Moreover, is it any more remarkable that far into the future, Judas, one of the special 12 apostles, was to betray Yeshua-Jesus for a sum of money? To hide their crime Joseph’s brothers killed an innocent kid (young goat) and splattered his coat of many colors with

blood. The coat of many colors was covered with blood, which is a direct parallel to the death of Jesus on the cross of Calvary.

A mathematically inclined skeptic might conclude, at this point, that given enough time the life of someone sooner or later would appear to fit these events. However, the more specific events there are, the less probable is the fulfillment of each specific event. Under the laws dictated to Moses by God, a prophet whose predictions did not come true was stoned to death. That would certainly eliminate the psychics of today. (Ah—but there in is the catch—an illusion of foreknowledge is power to those deluded by vanity.) Just to make sure of the statistical impossibility of an impostor there are more events that are specific. Yeshua continues to direct the life of Joseph

The Man from Heaven

The apostle Paul writes about Yeshua-Jesus as the last Adam, or the second man, in his first letter to the Corinthian church. *“So it is written: “The first man Adam became a living being”; the last Adam, a life-giving spirit. The spiritual did not come first, but the natural, and after that the spiritual. The first man was of the dust of the earth, the second man from heaven. As was the earthly man, so are those who are of the earth; and as is the man from heaven, so also are those who are of heaven. And just as we have borne the likeness of the earthly man, so shall we bear the likeness of the man from heaven. I declare to you, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable.”^{xxxiv}*

like a living paintbrush. Potiphar, captain of the guard for Pharaoh, buys Joseph. God blesses Joseph in all that he does and also prospers Potiphar’s business. Likewise, Jesus brought miraculous healing to Jews and gentiles and several times fed multitudes of people. Powerful temptation comes

from the lustful eyes of Potiphar's wife. Joseph does what we should all do when tempted—flee. Jesus was tempted directly by the prince of this world, Satan, and refuted him with the word of God.

There is nothing so terrible as a woman scorned. Joseph is falsely accused and locked up in Pharaoh's jail. Even there, God prospers all that he does. The warden puts him in charge of the jail. In due time the chief wine cupbearer and the baker to Pharaoh, are imprisoned for unknown circumstances. Sometime later, they each have a confounding dream. Joseph credits God

God's Purposes

Even though, as in the Life of Joseph, bad things happen to Believers, God is with them and uses these circumstances, for His own purposes.

with the interpretation that he is able to give. In three days, the cupbearer would be restored to his position and the baker would be hanged.^{xxxv} A parallel scene occurred on Mt. Calvary, one thief believed in Jesus and went into Paradise and the other scorned him and went to Hades. Jesus died and was raised to life three days later.

Pharaoh eventually has several dreams^{xxxvi}—more like nightmares—he sees seven ugly lean cows eat seven fat ones and seven thin heads of grain consume seven full ones. The dreams confound Pharaoh's magicians (psychics) or wise men. The cupbearer remembers Joseph and tells his master about the

Bad Teeth

In writing this chapter, it reminded me of a documentary I watched on Egyptian archaeology, a mummified Pharaoh was being exhumed and studied. It would appear that he must have had one continuous tooth ache as his teeth were ground away. Scientific studies showed that his baked goods must have been made with flour containing a high portion of very fine grit. It is no wonder that the baker got hung and the wine cupbearer restored to his position.

successful interpretation of his dream. Joseph is called into the presence of Pharaoh. Once more Joseph gives God credit for the successful interpretation. He informs Pharaoh that God has foreordained that there will be seven years of plenty followed by seven years of dreadful famine. Joseph suggests a grain storage plan, and is made governor under Pharaoh; all must bow before him except only Pharaoh. *“Then Pharaoh said to Joseph, “Since God has made all this known to you, there is no one so discerning and wise as you. You shall be in charge of my palace, and all my people are to submit to your orders. Only with respect to the throne will I be greater than you.”^{xxxvii}*

Famine spread over all the Middle East. Joseph’s brothers eventually come to Egypt seeking to purchase grain. Joseph was overjoyed to see them. However, he did not

Every Knee Shall Bow

So what about Jesus? The prophet Isaiah writes, Isaiah 9:6 *“For to us a child is born, to us a son is given, and the government will be on his shoulders. And he will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace.”* It is written in the book of Romans 14:11 *“As surely as I live,’ says the Lord, ‘every knee will bow before me; every tongue will confess to God.’”*

make himself known to them until the second time they returned. In an emotional scene, he forgives them for all they had done to him, explaining to them that it was for God’s greater purposes that this had happened. This is a direct painting of the situation with the Israelites of the past and today. Jesus was not recognized as the Messiah by the Jews of His day. They were looking for a conquering king, not a suffering servant. Joseph is first a servant and then a ruler. Likewise, Jesus came as a suffering servant and is yet to come as the Conquering King, the Lion of Judah. The greater purpose of the life, death and resurrection of the God-man Jesus Christ is to bring forgiveness to all who would seek him, to bring light into the world of darkness—then Jesus will

turn his attention to Israel. Even as Joseph's brothers wept for forgiveness, and he forgave them: MAYBE SOMETIME SOON, "*On that day I will set out to destroy all the nations that attack Jerusalem. And I will pour out on the house of David and the inhabitants of Jerusalem a spirit of grace and supplication. They will look on me, the one they have pierced, and they will mourn for him as one mourns for an only child, and grieve bitterly for him as one grieves for a firstborn son.*"^{xxxviii}

At the request of Pharaoh, the sons of Shem, the family of Abraham, move to Egypt the land of Ham. Jacob, the last of the Patriarchs, just before he dies calls his sons together, and as was the custom of the day, pronounces a futuristic blessing on each of them. He calls his son Judah a lion's cub and prophesies that a great King would come through his clan who would rule the nations. "*The scepter will not depart from*

The Lion of Judah

Jesus is called the Lion of Judah in fulfillment of this prophecy. He was born of the lineage of Judah through King David. His mother, Mary, was from David's son Nathan, and His stepfather Joseph from another son, King Solomon.

Judah, nor the ruler's staff from between his feet, until he comes to whom it belongs and the obedience of the nations is his."^{xxxix} In contrast, Jacob says of Dan, "*Dan will be a serpent by the road-side, a viper along the path, that bites the horse's heels so that its rider tumbles backward.*"^{xl}

The suggestion that Dan is associated with a serpent has led students of the Bible to speculate that the future Antichrist, depicted in the book of Revelation the last book of the Bible, will come from the tribe of Dan. An unusual prediction was also made for his youngest son Benjamin, "*Benjamin is a ravenous wolf; in the morning he devours his prey, in the evening he divides the plunder.*"^{xli} What is particularly interesting is that the tribes of Judah and Benjamin occupied the area of Jerusalem. The Messiah is to come from the tribe of Judah. Is it possible that the future False Prophet, who is

associated with the Antichrist, is to come from the tribe of Benjamin? After Jacob dies, over the next four hundred years in Egypt, the tribes of Israel would grow into a nation as God had foretold to Abraham.

This is the cosmic war—the Light will transcend the darkness, and the King of Light will come and will rule the nations.

Notes:

-
- ⁱ Genesis 15:5-7
 - ⁱⁱ Genesis 12:2
 - ⁱⁱⁱ Rambsel Yacov, *YESHUA*, Frontier Research Publications Inc, 1996, pg. 23
 - ^{iv} Genesis 15:9-18
 - ^v Matthew 7:12
 - ^{vi} Genesis 16:11
 - ^{vii} Isaiah. 60:2
 - ^{viii} John 1:1-5
 - ^{ix} Genesis 17:15
 - ^x Genesis 17:20
 - ^{xi} Genesis 17:23
 - ^{xii} Rambsel, *Ibid*, pg. 24
 - ^{xiii} Matthew 23:37
 - ^{xiv} Zechariah 12:3
 - ^{xv} Deuteronomy 11:12
 - ^{xvi} Joshua 10:1 and 2 Samuel 5:6
 - ^{xvii} Genesis 18:17-32
 - ^{xviii} Genesis chapter 19
 - ^{xix} Genesis 19:1-17
 - ^{xx} Rambsel, *Ibid*, pg. 26
 - ^{xxi} Genesis 21:6-8
 - ^{xxii} Genesis 22:1-2
 - ^{xxiii} Genesis 22:7-18
 - ^{xxiv} Hebrews 2:9-18
 - ^{xxv} Genesis 28:17
 - ^{xxvi} John 14:6
 - ^{xxvii} Genesis 32:28
 - ^{xxviii} Matthew 17:5
 - ^{xxix} Genesis 37:1-6
 - ^{xxx} Rambsel, *Ibid*, pg. 52
 - ^{xxxi} John 15:25
 - ^{xxxii} John 1:14
 - ^{xxxiii} Genesis 37:28 & 36
 - ^{xxxiv} 1 Corinthians 15:45
 - ^{xxxv} Genesis 40:12-18
 - ^{xxxvi} Genesis chapter 41
 - ^{xxxvii} Genesis 41:39-40
 - ^{xxxviii} Zechariah 12:9-10
 - ^{xxxix} Genesis 49:10
 - ^{xl} Genesis 49:17

^{xli} Genesis 49:27

Chapter 20

Who Is God?

Every jolt of the chariot increases his anger as it bounces along the bleak sand swept southern caravan route through the Red Sea Wilderness. It is anger so deep and consuming that he feels like part of the unnatural darkness ahead of him. The towering billowing black clouds and loud electrifying rumbling are like echoes from his soul. It is an inner revengeful blackness that can only take pleasure in death.

“Master” cries a forceful desperate voice from out of the swirling dust, the din of clanging armor and pounding feet. He responds with a look.

“They have backtracked from Etham and are headed for Pi Hahiroth and appear to be wandering around trapped by the desert,” the voice continues.

Even as the chariot bounces on the rocky terrain Pharaoh staggers to his feet and with a shake of his fist screams, “Follow them!”

In swift obedience, the elite charioteers surrounding Pharaoh turn from the edge of the desert and head towards the eastern arm of the Red Sea. The might of Egypt, six hundred elite chariots, thousands of regular chariots and over one-half million foot soldiers march in deadly unison

towards the towering dark clouds and pillar of fire on the distant horizon. This is no ordinary enemy; ahead of him are six hundred thousand armed escaping slaves. They have plundered the wealth of their masters, articles of silver, gold and clothing. Why hadn't the Hebrews taken the northern road he ponders to himself? At least then, they would have encountered the Philistines along the Gaza Strip. Instead, they have taken the southern trade route towards Arabia and Ezion Geber at the head of the eastern arm of the Red Sea. He clutches the side of the rocking chariot. How could he have been duped into letting them go to worship their God? Six hundred thousand male slaves plus women and children were a large work force.ⁱ They had recently completed building the grain storage cities of Pithom and Rameses.

“Pharaoh Thom,”ⁱⁱ as he repeats his name to himself the fierce anger of pride and vanity surge within. Yet, like a stabbing dagger the bitterness of sorrow cuts into his thoughts. His nation is in ruins; his cattle and grain fields destroyed. A deeper despair gnaws at his soul.

“Master,” a pleading voice penetrates his thoughts. The voice holds a tone of terror.

“There is a large pillar of fire towering into the heavens between us and them, but they are trapped in the mountain valley leading to the Sea.”

“Follow them,” is his automatic response.

Despair sweeps over him until there is nothing but the scene of his favorite prince, his firstborn dancing in his heart, now he's dead. The high-pitched wailing of his people echoes as a piercing scream in his brain as he pictures the death of all the firstborn, the firstborn of his family, his friends, his enemies and slaves—dead in one night. For a moment, a thread of doubt winds its way into his innermost being. The frogs, the flies, the locusts, the boils and the unnatural bloody waters of mother Nile—where were his gods? Is there an Almighty God, this God of the Hebrews?

Why were his magicians helpless, where was their power? Doubt like a small flicker of light touches his soul. No! The force of darkness tastes bitterly sweet—hardening his heart once more.

The old man trudges in front of the motley throng, his brother Aaron keeping step beside him. Both are in their eighties. Yet, Moses is lean and strong from tending his father-in-law's sheep in the desert of Midian in Arabia. The two million strong of men, women, children and endless animals have passed the Egyptian fortifications at Succoth near the head of the western arm of the Red Sea and are now in the Red Sea wilderness. They travel swiftly as if on Eagle's wings with a phalanx of the young and strong tossing boulders and stones aside ahead of the flood of people. His thoughts dampen the sound of the bleating sheep, wailing women and children, creaking carts and stomping feet of the six hundred thousand armed men. His position as a prince in Egypt; the adopted son of Pharaoh's daughter is long past. He had heard the story many times; how he was placed in a basket amongst the reeds of the Nile, later to be found by Pharaoh's daughter. That life, son of Pharaoh's daughter had been so brief, yet he had been fully schooled as one of the princes.

For a moment, the stomping feet and wailing sounds break through his thoughts, and like a dream, they feed the memories of an event that had changed his life. Though he had lived the life of a privileged Egyptian prince, and tried to ignore his background, he knew that he was the son of a Hebrew slave woman. The Pharaoh demanded more and more production from the Hebrew slaves. One fateful day, agitated at the abuse his people were receiving, he killed one of the Egyptian taskmasters and fled to the desert of Midian in Arabia. Moses pauses, his thoughts broken by a jumble of terrified voices announcing, "they are behind us, the Egyptian army is after us!" He has followed God's instructions and led the people through an 18 mile wide mountain pass at Migdol to the broad beach of Pi Hahiroth on the eastern arm of the Red Sea. Towering in the distance across the Gulf of Aqaba stands the large storm clouded mountain of Baal Zephon. Now they are trapped!

“Was it because there were no graves in Egypt that you brought us to the desert to die? What have you done to us by bringing us out of Egypt?” the voices wail.

“Didn’t we say to you in Egypt, ‘Leave us alone; let us serve the Egyptians’? It would have been better for us to serve the Egyptians than to die in the desert!” they whine.

Moses answers, “Do not be afraid. Stand firm and you will see the deliverance the LORD will bring you today. The Egyptians you see today you will never see again. The LORD will fight for you; you need only to be still.”ⁱⁱⁱ

Moses looks ahead towards the angry blue of the Red Sea and the pillar of fire towering into the heavens, then behind at the endless throng of people and flocks of animals, all wailing and bleating, as they hurry in panic onto the broad beach. In the distant shimmering light of the setting sun, the advancing Egyptian cavalry, like a flickering mirage, enter the mountain pass of Migdol—Pharaoh, his elite charioteers and marching army will not be far behind. The old man, his white hair and beard almost glistening red in the setting sun, turns toward the glowing pillar of fire where he knows the Angel of God is present. Raising his arms, staff in hand, he pleads, “Oh God, God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.” Even as his voice resounds to the Almighty, his thoughts lapse back in time to the beginning of this episode in the lonely desert wilderness of Midian. He had been tending the sheep of the prophet Jethro, his father-in-law, when suddenly a nearby bush started to burn. The haunting image still flickers in his mind. Strangely, it is burning, yet, there is no smoke and it is not being consumed. Curious—he had moved towards it—then a powerful voice spoke.

Yeshua watches the man approach His presence in the burning bush. His covenant with Abraham, Isaac and Jacob occupies His thoughts. It is now almost four hundred and thirty years that

the sons of Shem have been in bondage to the sons and gods of Ham. He knows their misery and his heart aches for them. These are the sons of his friend Abraham. These are His people, “*not by might, nor by power but by my Spirit*”^{iv}—the battle for Adam’s inheritance and the souls of men will continue against Lucifer and his Legions of Doom. Yet, there are awesome events that He will have to undertake if the Seed of the woman is to crush Lucifer’s head as He has prophesied. The man approaches—He speaks,

“Moses, Moses.”

Startled by the powerful resonance of his name the old shepherd steps backwards,

“Here I am,” he hears himself respond.

“Do not come any closer, ... take off your sandals, for the place where you are standing is holy ground. I am the God of your father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob.”

What has his curiosity gotten him into by approaching this strange talking bush? Fear surges through his veins! In a flash, he remembers his real father, mother, sister Miriam and slightly older brother Aaron. He is of the tribe of Levi. Yes, his real family worships an invisible God, not the multitude of gods in the temples of his Egyptian family. He hides his face—what does this God want from him? The voice continues,

“I have indeed seen the misery of my people in Egypt. I have heard them crying out because of their slave drivers, and I am concerned about their suffering. So I have come down to rescue them from the hand of the Egyptians and to bring them up out of that land into a good and spacious land, a land flowing with milk and honey—the home of the Canaanites, Hittites, Amorites, Perizzites, Hivites and Jebusites. And now the cry of the Israelites has reached me, and I have seen the way the Egyptians are oppressing

them. So now, go. I am sending you to Pharaoh to bring my people the Israelites out of Egypt.”^v

An uncertain fear wells up inside as he looks at the burning bush, he is an old man of eighty, a shepherd in the desert of Midian, and he is to confront the mighty Pharaoh?

“Who am I that I should go to Pharaoh and bring the Israelites out of Egypt,” he asks humbly.

“I will be with you. And this will be the sign to you that it is I who have sent you: When you have brought the people out of Egypt, you will worship God on this mountain.”^{vi}

says the resonant voice from the burning bush.

Moses remembers his thoughts as if it were yesterday. Bring the Israelites here? Several million people, all their goods, cattle, sheep and goats, here to the desert of Midian in Arabia! Preposterous! He hesitantly questions,

“Suppose I go to the Israelites and say to them, ‘The God of your fathers has sent me to you,’ and they ask me, ‘What is his name?’ Then what shall I tell them?”

“I Am Who I Am. This is what you are to say to the Israelites: ‘I Am has sent me to you.’ ... ‘The LORD, the God of your fathers—the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob—has sent me to you.’ This is my name forever, the name by which I am to be remembered from generation to generation.”^{vii}

“Oh God Almighty,” he hears his pleading voice cry as the din behind him brings his thoughts back to reality, but only for a moment; as he thrusts his hand with his staff in it towards the pillar of fire his thoughts whirl back to the scene of the burning bush and the staff appears to shimmer like a snake. God had told him to assemble the elders of Israel, that they would listen to

him. God had then taken his staff and turned it into a snake, and then back to a staff. His hand had been made leprous and then healed. The powerful voice had continued.

“I know that the king of Egypt will not let you go unless a mighty hand compels him. So I will stretch out my hand and strike the Egyptians with all the wonders that I will perform among them. After that, he will let you go. And I will make the Egyptians favorably disposed toward this people, so that when you leave you will not go empty handed. Every woman is to ask her neighbor and any woman living in her house for articles of silver and gold and for clothing, which you will put on your sons and daughters. And so you will plunder the Egyptians.”^{viii}

Even as Moses stretches his arm, staff in hand, upwards toward the pillar of fire, Yeshua looks down at the old man and his brother Aaron. His heart responds in love for the old shepherd with his staff stretched towards him. Trembling before him at the burning bush, the old man had uttered that he was *“slow of speech and tongue.”* Yeshua had looked at this creature of the dust, to whom He had given the breath of life, and replied *“Who gave man his mouth? Who makes him deaf or mute? Who gives him sight or makes him blind? Is it not I, the LORD? Now go; I will help you speak and will teach you what to say.”* *“Oh Lord please send someone else to do it”^{ix}* the old man had pleaded. Yeshua had known this would be Moses’ response, yet He had given him freedom of choice. He had already caused Aaron the old man’s brother to start on his way to join him in the desert of Midian. Yeshua had spoken again.

“What about your brother, Aaron the Levite? I know he can speak well. He is already on his way to meet you, and his heart will be glad when he sees you.”

You shall speak to him and put words in his mouth; I will help both of you speak and will teach you what to do. He will speak to the people for you, and it will be as if he were your mouth and as if you were God to him.

But take this staff in your hand so you can perform miraculous signs with it.”^x

“Oh God Almighty I Am That I Am” came the old man’s voice directed towards the pillar of fire. Yeshua looks down at the orb of Earth and the celestial chaos that He has brought to bear in the physical dimension. What the old man can’t see is the angry Prince of Darkness and his Legions of Doom inciting the armies of Egypt, creatures of dust, in an attempt to defeat the curse of God. Yeshua turns and looks far into the distance across the Arabian Peninsula where Lucifer is also mobilizing a second army of shepherd kings, a violent cruel people who are being displaced by tsunamis flooding the Middle East. They look like a vast horde of ants. Nearby are two more swarms, one of which is His. There will be justice and mercy. He speaks to Moses.

“Why are you crying out to me?

Tell the Israelites to move on. Raise your staff and stretch out your hand over the sea to divide the water so that the Israelites can go through the sea on dry ground.

I will harden the hearts of the Egyptians so that they will go in after them. And I will gain glory through Pharaoh and all his army, through his chariots and his horsemen.

The Egyptians will know that I am the LORD when I gain glory through Pharaoh, his chariots and his horsemen.”^{xi}

Then with a great swirl of flashing light the great pillar of fire moves between the fleeing slaves and the mighty army of Egypt. The setting sun shines through a dense haze of dust like a ball

of blood. Pharaoh Thom is anxious to recapture the fleeing slaves. However, it is becoming unnaturally dark. The pillar of fire has changed into a deep void of dense radiating blackness. A powerful cyclonic wind is blowing from the Red Sea wilderness, swirling the desert sand like an unseen hand into their faces. The mighty army is held motionless by the darkness. Brilliant strobes of lightning more intense than the sun at midday fork through the gloom; silhouetted in the flashing bolts of lightning his army look like frozen ghosts. Sleets of icy hail with hammering fists of thunder shake his chariot. A stealthy cold hand of fear grasps his heart as he remembers the immense hail storm with its flashing eyes of lightening and dooming voices of thunder that had devastated Egypt's grain crops. Where are his gods?

Yeshua watches the mighty army of Pharaoh, motionless in the carnival of lights; vengeance is in His heart as His Spirit searches the unrepentant thoughts of each man. The sons of Ham are in alliance with the Prince of Darkness. Humanity considers themselves so brilliant and progressive in their self-deluded vanity, yet, they do not recognize that they are but pawns in the hands of the dark rebel of the cosmos, Lucifer. Don't they realize that their "*struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms*"?^{xii} He looks across the Red Sea wilderness to the devastated Nile delta and its crumbled temples at the dark flickering spider web that Lucifer had erected over the land of Egypt. Lucifer had given affluence and knowledge to these creatures of dust in turn for their worship. Yeshua had informed Moses, "*On that same night I will pass through Egypt and strike down every firstborn—both men and animals—and I will bring judgment on all the gods of Egypt. I am the LORD.*"^{xiii} Lucifer had personally directed the counter attack against Yeshua in a vain attempt to forever dissipate the sons of Shem and evade the judgment against him. Yeshua remembers his words of long ago—"*How you have fallen from heaven, O morning star, son of the*

dawn!” Even as He looks at the dark devastated land of Egypt, it is like a minor reflection of the chaos that burst forth at Lucifer’s initial rebellion. *“You said in your heart, “I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God; I will sit enthroned on the mount of assembly, on the utmost heights of the sacred mountain. I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High.”*^{xiv}

He had created this magnificent archangel. Lucifer had been given the responsibility of a prophet to speak for God, the office of a priest to bring the worship of all creatures in the universe to God, and the office of King to rule for God.^{xv} Now as the Dark Prince, he is usurper of mankind’s dominion and controls the kingdoms of men. The watching universe will see that Lucifer is nothing but a false pretender. Once more Yeshua’s attention focuses on the crumbled stone temples and their toppled idols. How trite are these images, yet, Satan uses them to control people. Now that they are destroyed, the people have an opportunity to consider that there is an Almighty God. *“They exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served created things rather than the Creator—who is forever praised.”*^{xvi} He had created Egypt to be a beautiful land watered by the Nile River with almost continuous blue sky, and all this beauty is attributed to the gods. Yeshua laughs to himself and scoffs at their foolishness.^{xvii}

He had judged the gods of Egypt and the satanic force behind them. Poor deluded Pharaoh Thom, where is Osiris mighty god of the Nile and agriculture? Where is his companion Isis and their child Horus, where are the many gods with heads of beasts birds and reptiles? He had said to Moses, *“Tell Aaron, ‘Take your staff and stretch out your hand over the waters of Egypt—over the streams and canals, over the ponds and all the reservoirs’—and they will turn to blood. Blood will be everywhere in Egypt, even in the wooden buckets and stone jars.”*^{xviii} Yet, He was merciful and the underground water remained pure. The stench of dead fish fills the air. Where is Nu, god of life

in the Nile? The second plague struck a week later. Frogs, frogs, slimy frogs everywhere, even in Pharaoh's bed. Where is Hekt who has the body and head of a frog—after all she is wife of the creator of the world? Yeshua smiles sadly to himself. Satan through his magicians had duplicated these events such that Pharaoh Thom had believed in the power of his gods and hardened his heart against the Hebrews. Next came fleas and swarms of flies, possibly hordes of the dung rolling scarab beetles so worshiped by the Egyptians that they are carved from precious stones. But Geb, god of the earth, could do nothing and neither could the magicians. A rapidly spreading contagious disease struck the domestic animals. Apis, the bull god and Hathor the cow headed god could do nothing. Even the sacred temple bulls died. In all these plagues the Hebrews in the land of Goshen were unaffected. He had instructed Moses to go to the sacred temple furnace, to take the ashes of blessing and to toss them in the air—festering boils then broke out on the Egyptians and their animals. Where is Thoth, the ibis-headed god of intelligence and medical learning? An immense tempest of rain, hail and lightning surged over the land killing cattle and destroying the grain crops. Where is Shu the wind god and Nut the sky goddess? A vast plague of locusts descended on the land. Where is Nepi the grain god and Ermutet the goddess of childbirth and crops?^{xix} Pharaoh's officials came to him pleading, "Let the Hebrews go our land is destroyed." Yeshua had looked into Pharaoh's heart and strengthened his resolve to not let the slaves go to worship their God. Since you, Egyptians, love your spiritual darkness, thought Yeshua, then you shall have darkness. A thick and dreadful darkness then spread over the land, yet, Ra, god of the sun was powerless, but in the territory of Goshan, home of the Israelites, there was light.^{xx}

The last plague was an act of retribution and a powerful symbol of future events. The Egyptians had killed many of their Hebrew slaves. Pharaoh had given this order to all his people: "*Every boy that is born you must throw into the Nile, but let every girl live.*"^{xxi} Yeshua ponders for a

moment, He had instructed Moses to have the people take an innocent perfectly formed lamb into their homes for two weeks. It would be hard not to love an innocent little lamb. Then on a certain day on the full of the moon, they were to slaughter their little lambs and sprinkle blood on their doorposts. The lambs were then to be roasted whole and eaten with unleavened bread. The people were instructed to be ready to leave at a moments notice. Then, *“On that same night I will pass through Egypt and strike down every firstborn—both men and animals—and I will bring judgment on all the gods of Egypt. I am the LORD.”* The homes with blood on their doorposts were passed by. Pharaoh had then relented momentarily and let the Israelites go. Many other people went up with them, as well as large droves of livestock, both flocks and herds.^{xxii} But the people do not truly understand this powerful symbolism of blood on the doorposts, thought Yeshua. It will take time to mold them into His people.

From the towering pillar of fire, Yeshua can see the future site of Jerusalem and in that moment like an unborn dream, He can see Himself, Jesus, in an upper room with twelve men. The smell of the unleavened bread, the roasted lamb, the bouquet of the wine and the companionship of his disciples bring a flood of emotions. It is full moon, Passover. He is about to be betrayed by the man with the dark brooding face across the table. He looks at his friends; his friend John reclines close to his shoulder. Deep in perspective thought Yeshua looks into the temple. The High Priest is gloating. They have paid the man with the brooding face, Judas, thirty pieces of silver to betray Him. Do these men really understand who He is and what is about to happen? He, Jesus, will solemnly take the unleavened bread and say, “This is my body given for you; do this in remembrance of me.” He will take the cup of wine and say, “This cup is the new covenant in my

*blood, which is poured out for you.”^{xxiii} They did not yet understand that He is the innocent Passover lamb. It is the great crossroad in the war of the cosmos; Lucifer will be defeated and no longer have the rights to the souls of men. Planet Earth will be His; but, **it is not yet time.***

Yeshua turns and looks towards the old man about to wave his staff at the Red Sea (Hebrew *Yam Suph* Sea of Reeds), He has other work to do. Even as Yeshua moves towards the Red Sea He glances across the Arabian Peninsula, Agog the Amalekite king is moving his people into position at Rephidim. Yeshua laughs as He steps into the water. The 8-mile (13 km) path across the Red Sea lay before Him. He had already prepared it in the geological past. From the beach at Pi Hahiroth, (modern day Nuweiba),^{xxiv} the path leads through the waters. It is several miles wide (3-5 km) and some 328 –787 ft. (100 – 240 m) deep beneath the sea surface in the middle. On each side of the path, the trench of Aqaba slopes to depths of over 3000 ft. (916 m). As Yeshua strides through the waters; all that Moses and the Israelites can see is a howling cyclonic wind and 300 ft. high glassy walls of water. “*The surging waters stood firm like a wall; the deep waters congealed [froze] in the heart of the sea,*”^{xxv} as they are cooled by the fierce desert winds. Yeshua laughs again. “*I am the LORD, your Holy One, Israel’s Creator, your King.*”^{xxvi} Ballads will be sung of Him for ages to come.

Sea of Reeds?

1 Kings 9:26 records that King Solomon had his seaport on the Red Sea near Elath at the head of the Gulf of Aqaba. The Gulf of Aqaba is on a deep fault rift. In the time of Moses, it may have had extensive reeds along the shore. Centuries of downward movement may have occurred along this rift, since the Dead Sea in Israel is some 1200 feet (365 m) beneath sea level.

Was it not you who dried up the sea, the waters of the great deep, who made a road in the depths of the sea so that the redeemed might cross over?^{xxvii}

The waters saw you, O God, the waters saw you and writhed; the very depths were convulsed. The clouds poured down water, the skies resounded with thunder; your arrows flashed back and forth. Your thunder was heard in the whirlwind, your lightning lit up the world; the earth trembled and quaked. Your path led through the sea, your way through the mighty waters, though your footprints were not seen. You led your people like a flock by the hand of Moses and Aaron.^{xxviii}

He who made a way through the sea, a path through the mighty waters, who drew out the chariots and horses, the army and reinforcements together, and they lay there, never to rise again, extinguished, snuffed out like a wick.^{xxix}

Pharaoh Thom stands on his chariot and stares. It is early morning; the howling winds have ceased during the night. Now the pillar of fire and darkness that had separated him from his quarry has suddenly withdrawn. He stares down the dry river valley towards the Red Sea. Never has he seen anything like this. The army stands staring, motionless with shock. The last of the escaping slaves are almost through an immense canyon glistening with dancing sparkling rainbow colors, which stretches across the Red Sea towards the early morning sun. An avenue, one to two miles wide, with 1000-foot high walls of glistening solid water stretches before them. Two thirds of the escaping slaves are already on the other shore. The frozen and dried sandy bottom is like a paved highway. Pharaoh Thom reacts. His priests are screaming “follow them our gods will protect you.” “Follow them, follow them,” he shouts. The thunderous response of the cavalry is instantaneous followed by careening charioteers. The pent-up fear of that night gives a surge of adrenaline to

pharaoh's foot soldiers. They run, screaming waving their swords and spears, down the gentle slope from the shore into the glistening canyon.

"Hurry, hurry," cry the last of the slaves as they drive their animals up the gentle slope even as the thunder of the pounding Egyptian horse hooves, the grinding of the chariots as their wheels spin off and the screaming of the army reverberate from the canyon walls like booms from a colossal cannon. Moses turns and stretches his staff back towards the glistening canyon as the last Hebrew steps ashore—"Now" says Yeshua calmly. Immediately the huge walls crumple creating a deafening roar and a blast of air that surges over the Israelites, dwarfing the din of Pharaoh's stampeding army.

Moses and Aaron stare! The people stare. Massive surging waves disdainfully toss bodies and debris of the Egyptian army up onto the shore. The chariots and armaments sink like lead. The imploding walls of congealed water smash and drown the foot soldiers. Slowly settling silt drifts over Pharaoh's army like a blanket of death. If silence can have an echo, it hung suspended in time. Two million people stare. Then suddenly, like a thunderclap smashing against Baal Zephon a spontaneous joyous shout resounds to the heavens. Miriam and all the women take tambourines and begin to dance and sing:

"Sing to the LORD, for he is highly exalted. The horse and its rider he has hurled into the sea."

"Who among the gods is like you, O LORD? Who is like you—majestic in holiness, awesome in glory, working wonders?"^{xxx}

Yeshua smiles gently, for He knows the travails that are yet to come.

Agog the Amalekite leader sits on his specially woven mat before his tent feasting on roasted lamb. His clan is only one of the many bands of Amalekites that are migrating westward

from the Arabian Peninsula, past the end of the eastern arm of the Red Sea towards Egypt and the Great Sea. Over the years, the Egyptians had built a line of desert fortress, such as Succoth, to protect their advanced culture from these desert marauders. A scout informs him that a mysterious group of people has unexplainably emerged by the Red Sea and is migrating across the deserts of Shur and Sin with their droves of flocks and herds. He smiles to himself—more slaves, concubines and a wealth of cattle, sheep and goats. He frowns, pausing in thought, these are troublesome times with floods, earthquakes, storms and ominous signs in the heavens; but tomorrow he will attack.

Yeshua watches as Moses, Aaron and Hur climb a hill near Rephidim. In the valley below Joshua is leading a counter attack against Agog and the invisible Legions of Doom. He looks over to the Israelite camp. Would His people trust Him? He has already made the bitter waters of Marah sweet and all He can hear is grumbling. They have miraculously received their freedom from 400 years of bondage to the Egyptians and all they can complain about is that they have no meat to eat. He has already provided a feast of quail and would supernaturally provide angels food, “*manna*,” every morning for six days a week for 40 years. Would they ever become His “*treasured possession, a kingdom of priests and a holy nation*”?^{xxxix} He watches the flashing swords below. Even as his servant Moses trusts him and is holding his shepherds staff in the air, as He had instructed, He is faithful in His mercy. Joshua defeats the Amalekites. Then the LORD said to Moses, “*Write this on a scroll as something to be remembered and make sure that Joshua hears it, because I will completely blot out the memory of Amalek from under heaven.*”^{xxxix} Agog moves his army westward joining other Amalekite bands; they would easily subjugate the unprotected devastated land of Egypt. Moses moves the grumbling Israelites eastward to Mt. Sinai to meet their God. The journey from Egypt though the Red Sea to Mt. Sinai has taken three months.

Just a Biblical Myth?

So, what are you thinking—it never happened? Walls of water—impossible! That is the problem with the Bible; it demands a belief in miraculous events. God said that He would show his power to the Egyptians and the Israelites in the parting of the Red Sea. Can we prove that it happened? No, not unless archaeologists find underwater evidence of the destruction of Pharaoh's army. No evidence was found in the digging of the Suez Cannel from the Mediterranean Sea to the Gulf of Suez. The Cannel cut through a series of shallow lakes that supposedly the Israelites could have crossed. Therefore, the Red Sea crossing had to be through the depths of the Gulf of Suez or the Gulf of Aqaba. Helena, mother of Constantine the Great, around the 4th century A.D. when she converted to Christianity, chose a mountain that she called Mt. Sinai in the area we know as the Sinai Peninsula. Needless to say, this has created historical confusion. Consequently, the shallow lakes at the head of the Gulf of Suez are thought to be where the Hebrews crossed the Red Sea—because walls of water are considered impossible. Modern Biblical maps and charts depict this unfounded viewpoint. Names of the various deserts described in Exodus and Numbers have also been given a best fit on the Sinai Peninsula, which is really the Red Sea Wilderness mentioned in the book of Exodus. The desert of Midian where Jethro the prophet lived cannot be made to fit into this area. What does the Bible say as the inspired word of God? The apostle Paul, sometime before the destruction of the Jewish Temple in 70 AD writes, “*Now Hagar stands for Mount Sinai in Arabia.*”^{xxxiii} The present area known as the Sinai Peninsula is not Arabia. Moreover, the Bible records that after the death of his wife Sarah, Abraham took another wife, Keturah. Her sons, including Midian, moved eastward into what is now Arabia. Therefore the ancient Mt. Sinai must be somewhere in modern Saudi Arabia. The land of Midian is recorded on some Bible maps as being east of the Dead Sea in the modern countries of Jordan and Saudi Arabia.

A Logical Sequence of Events

Let us consider the sequence of events that have unfolded. The Hebrews are slaves in Egypt. Egypt is smitten with a number of terrible calamities. Moses leads two million people to freedom out of the devastated country of Egypt. Now if Moses is to lead his people back to the land of Canaan—why would he lead them down the western shore of the Gulf of Suez, which is towards Ethiopia? Nor would he lead them along the Gaza strip that is along the Mediterranean Sea, which is home to the armed Philistines. Thus, the southern trade route across the Red Sea Wilderness, between the two arms of the Red Sea, towards modern Elaiith into modern Jordan, is the logical escape route out of the influence of the Egyptian Empire. In Numbers chapter 33, the escaping slaves are described as leaving the area of Rameses traveling past Succoth to Pi Hahairoth (modern day Nuweiba), where they cross the Red Sea. After crossing the Red Sea, they then ask the King of Edom to let them pass through his territory.^{xxxiv} He refuses. We know that the lands of Edom and Moab are east of the Arabah rift valley containing the Dead Sea, the Jordan River and the Sea of Galilee (Sea of Kinnereth). Now if they are to the west of Edom they did not need to pass through his land, but could go westward and proceed northwards between the Mediterranean Sea and the Arabah rift valley, therefore they are trying to come from the east, westward into the Arabah valley. Jephthah, a mighty Gileadite warrior, gives us a brief description of Israel's movements. He says that the Israelites "*traveled through the desert, skirted the lands of Edom and Moab, passed along the eastern side of the country of Moab, and camped on the other side of the Arnon,*"^{xxxv} which is east of the Arabah rift. Essentially, they came from the Red Sea by crossing the Gulf of Aqaba into Saudi Arabia then went northward through modern Jordan. "*They left the mountains of Abarim and camped on the plains of Moab by the Jordan across from (east of) Jericho.*"^{xxxvi}

If we read the scriptures carefully, we see that the escaping slaves reach the desert of Sin six weeks after they have fled Egypt. It is likely that God parted the Red Sea thirty days after the full moon of Passover, which would symbolically fit the practice of immersion baptism. Immersion baptism symbolizes death to an old life by going under the water, to the beginning of a new life in coming back up out of the water. The distance from Egypt to the proposed Red Sea Crossing of Aqaba is some 210 miles. This requires a progress of some seven miles per day, or a little less than one mile an hour for ten hours per day for thirty days. The land of Egypt is devastated. It would take time to bury the dead, sort through the fallen rubble and put some order back into the country. It would probably take Pharaoh some three weeks to do this and organize his army. A rapid march of one week across the Red Sea Wilderness would bring him to the escaping slaves thirty days after the Hebrews had departed Egypt.

Circumstantial Evidence

What other evidence is there that this event may have taken place? Ron Wyatt an amateur archaeologist^{xxxvii} and his team of researchers found chariot wheels and human remains in shallow waters off of the beach of modern Nuweiba on the Egyptian side of the Gulf of Aqaba. If this is true, preserved debris likely exists in deeper waters from the backwash of the walls of water. This could easily be substantiated with a deep-sea video submersible. The Bible records that the chariots and army sank like lead; thus their debris likely exists in the deep waters on each side of the underwater bridge. A carved column has been found on the southern end of Nuweiba beach (the Egyptian side). Its inscriptions were defaced or eroded. Later an identical column was discovered at Baal-zephon on the opposite shore (Saudi Arabia side). Its inscriptions, which are intact, say it was erected by King Solomon in honor of Jehovah, and dedicated to the miraculous crossing of the Red Sea by Moses and destruction of the Egyptian host.^{»xxxviii}

Emmanuel Velikovsky uncovered circumstantial evidence for the Exodus as recorded in his book, *Ages in Chaos*. Velikovsky takes the position that the papyrus *Ipuwer* found in the early 1800's in Memphis Egypt likely near the pyramids of Saqqara, "is a script of lamentations, a description of ruin and horror." "In 1828 the papyrus was acquired by the Museum of Leiden in the Netherlands and is listed in the catalogue as Leiden 344."

PAPYRUS 2:5-6 Plague is throughout the land. Blood is everywhere.

2:10 The river is blood. Men shrink for tasting - human beings, and thirst after water.

EXODUS 7:19 The LORD said to Moses, "Tell Aaron, 'Take your staff and stretch out your hand over the waters of Egypt—over the streams and canals, over the ponds and all the reservoirs'—and they will turn to blood. Blood will be everywhere in Egypt, even in the wooden buckets and stone jars."

EXODUS 7:24 And all the Egyptians dug along the Nile to get drinking water, because they could not drink the water of the river.

PAPYRUS 4:14 Trees are destroyed.

6:1 No fruit nor herbs are found... hunger.

6:3 Forsooth, grain has perished on every side. 10:3-6 Lower Egypt weeps... The entire palace is without its revenues. To it belongs (by right) wheat and barley, geese and fish.

EXODUS 9:25 Throughout Egypt hail struck everything in the fields—both men and animals; it beat down every-thing growing in the fields and stripped every tree.

9:31 (The flax and barley were destroyed, since the barley had headed and the flax was in bloom.

9:32 The wheat and spelt, however, were not destroyed, because they ripen later.)

PAPYRUS 4:3 and 5:6 Forsooth, the children of princes are dashed against walls.

6:12 Forsooth, the children of princes are cast out in the streets.

6:3 The prison is ruined.

EXODUS 12:29 At midnight the LORD struck down all the firstborn in Egypt, from the firstborn of Pharaoh, who sat on the throne, to the firstborn of the prisoner, who was in the dungeon, and the firstborn of all the livestock as well.

xxxix

The parallel descriptions of the devastation of Egypt by hail, disease and darkness are remarkably similar; even magical spells, gold and jewels are mentioned.” ““Men ventured to rebel against the Uraeus” (the emblem of royal authority) and that magical spells connected with the serpent are divulged (6:6-7 to 7:5-6), that gold jewels “are fastened on the neck of female slaves” (3:2-3; compare with Exodus 11:2: “and let every man borrow of his neighbour, and every women of her neighbour, jewels of silver, and jewels of gold.”) The collapse of stone structures, the dead and wounded in the debris, the fall of many status of the gods, inspired dread and horror; all these were looked upon as acts of the God of the slaves.” Velikovsky records that a monolith of black granite inscribed with hieroglyphics was found around 1860 at el-Arish near the modern day Gaza Strip. This monolith describes a time of dense darkness and unnatural disturbances when Pharaoh

Thom went to battle against Apopi, the fierce god of darkness. The Pharaoh and his army never returned they perished in a great whirlpool. Mr. Velikovsky writes,

The march of the Pharaoh with his hosts is related amidst the description of the great upheaval in the residence and the tempest that made the land dark. He arrived at a place designated by name:

His Majesty -- [here words are missing] finds on this place called Pi-Kharoti.

A few lines later it is said that he was thrown by a great force. He was thrown by the whirlpool high in the air. He departed to heaven. He was no longer alive The explanation of the translator of the text concerning this geographical designation of "Pi-Kharoti" is: ...is not known except in this example.

Here attempted identification of the subject of the two versions, the Hebrew and the Egyptian, is not incorrect if the locality where the pharaoh perished was a place by the Sea of Passage.

EXODUS 14:9 But the Egyptians pursued after them, all the horses and chariots of Pharaoh...and overtook them encamping by the sea, beside Pi-ha-hiroth [Khiroth].

Pi-Kharoti is Pi-Khiroth of the Hebrew text. It is the same place. It is the same pursuit. It is erroneous to say that the name is met nowhere except on the shrine.^{x1}

Upheavals occurred over the Arabian Peninsula, home of the Amalekites. Velikovsky showed in his research that: "The Islamic historians consider Amalek as one of the most ancient of the Arab tribes. Abulfeda, an Arab scholar of the thirteenth century wrote: "Shem [son of Noah] had several sons, among them Laud, to whom were born Pharis, Djordjan, Tasm, and Amalek, thus

ascribing to these tribes a primeval existence. But there are other Moslem historians who declare this Arabian tribe to have been of Hamite stock, and give its ancestral line correspondingly.” It was a time of tumult and disorder, “Masudi (d. about 956) also relates the tradition of this catastrophe and tells of “swift clouds, ants, and other signs of the Lord’s rage,” when many perished in Mecca. A turbulent torrent overwhelmed the land of Djohaninah, and the whole population drowned in a single night.” The fleeing fugitive bands of Amalekites head westward towards the Red Sea and Egypt. Masudi records that the Amalekites enter Egypt and ravage the country. Josephus, the famous Jewish writer of first century A.D. quotes Manetho, a much earlier historian, that the “[Hykosos] savagely burned the cities, razed the temples of the gods to the ground, and treated the whole native population with the utmost cruelty.” Velikovsky concludes that this is the reason that there is no mention of Egypt in the Bible from the period of the Exodus to King Saul, a period of some 400 years. Moreover, during this period of 400 years the Israelites were in continual conflict with marauding Amalekites.^{xli}

It is the dawn of a new day. Moses and the people stand before the mountain of God, as God had instructed him from the burning bush.

Notes:

ⁱ Exodus 12:37

ⁱⁱ Velikovsky Immanuel, *Ages In Chaos*, Abacus Edition, Sphere Books Ltd. 1973, pg. 38

ⁱⁱⁱ Exodus 14:11-14

^{iv} Zechariah 4:6

^v Exodus 3:7-10

^{vi} Exodus 3:12

^{vii} Exodus 3:13-15

^{viii} Exodus 3:19-22

^{ix} Exodus 4:11-13

^x Exodus 4:14-17

^{xi} Exodus 14:15-18

^{xii} Ephesians 6:12

^{xiii} Exodus 12:12

^{xiv} Isaiah 14:12-14

^{xv} Barnhouse Dr. Donald Grey, *The Invisible War*, Zondervan Publishing, Grand Rapids Michigan, 1965, pg. 223

^{xvi} Romans 1:25

-
- xvii Psalms 2:2
xviii Exodus 7:19
xix Barnhouse, *Ibid*, pgs. 201-212
xx Exodus 11:23
xxi Exodus 1:22
xxii Exodus 12:38
xxiii Luke 22:19-20
xxiv Jonathan Grey, Web <www.biblebelievers.org.au/bb971126.htm> For details see ref. #37
xxv Exodus 15:8 Note: The author takes the position that the waters were frozen, and there were strong winds.
xxvi Isaiah 43:15
xxvii Isaiah 51:10
xxviii Psalms 77:16-20
xxix Isaiah 43:16-17
xxx Exodus 15:11 & 21
xxxi Exodus 19:5-6
xxxii Exodus 17:14
xxxiii Galatians 4:25,
xxxiv Numbers 21:18
xxxv Judges 11:26
xxxvi Numbers 33:48
xxxvii Moller Lennart Dr., *The Exodus Case*, Scandinavia Publishing House, Copenhagen Denmark, 2002, pgs 173 -195
xxxviii biblebelievers.org.au/bb971126.htm
xxxix Velikovsky, *Ibid*, pg. 20
xl Velikovsky, *Ibid*, pg. 37
xli Velikovsky, *Ibid*, pg. 62

Chapter 21

Treasured Possession

Philosophically so far, we can't say that God exists. If submersible video pictures from the ocean depths of the Gulf Aqaba show a great pile of debris from the ancient Egyptian army, then one might conclude that the story of the Red Sea Crossing has some form of meaning. To the believer, Jew, Christian or Muslim, it would inscribe truth to the Scriptures; to the agnostic it would still be an event of unknown cause that has been amplified to mystical proportions. On the other hand, the Jewish people do exist as an undeniable reality in our modern world. What is their relationship to this Almighty God? Does their existence have form and context in the battle of the cosmos into our modern era? Speaking to this question, Pastor David Fairbrother writes,

Do you ever find it a struggle to believe in God? Or which God to believe in. While the majority of Canadians claim to believe a God exists, it is a minority who seek to understand and obey God. Believing in God can be characterized as a struggle of commitment and obedience. I believe the Bible is God's inspired record revealing Himself to help us in our struggle to come to a place of confidence and certainty in our relationship with God. Part of the source of our struggle is to make sense out of what is happening to us and around us.

Is life leading somewhere and is there any evidence that will help me have faith in God and his purpose. Is there something that I can grab hold of that will put life in the right perspective? I believe there is. One of the ways we can understand God's purpose is to trace the history of Israel. God has recorded for us how he worked in bringing about a nation; teaching and disciplining and preserving that nation against all odds to accomplish his purpose for us. If we can understand how God has worked, if we will accept that he is still working with the same purpose, it will give meaning and direction to all that we struggle with.ⁱ

Grand R. Jeffrey in his book *Messiah* describes the history of Israel as follows:

Throughout human history, civilizations have arisen, prospered and finally died. This pattern was followed by ancient kingdoms such as Babylon, Greece, Rome, and Egypt. However, one nation has refused to follow the blueprint: The nation of Israelites. Any historian will tell you that the three greatest influences on world culture have been the Romans, Greeks, and Jews. Yet, the original Greeks and Romans are lost to history. Only the Jews can trace their unbroken lineage back four thousand years to Abraham. Only Israel has resurrected her ancient "dead" language and uses it today. No other nation can equal the glorious and tumultuous history of the Jews. They have survived against the most impossible odds. Nations persecuted them, wars ravaged them, and a holocaust diminished their number. They were cut off from their land and exiled throughout more than a hundred different countries for two thousand years. Yet they have endured as a

distinct people to raise the Flag of David on the walls of their ancient Jerusalem.ⁱⁱ

The Sinai Covenant

The records for this early period of Jewish history are found in the Biblical books of Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy. To continue our quest, the Israelites are camped in the desert in front of Mt. Sinai. We use the word “desert” liberally since some 3500 years ago, the area was probably cooler, and the area around Mt. Sinai was likely an extensive cover of grasslands. At least one stream flowed down the mountain because the book of Exodus mentions that Moses threw gold dust from the pulverized golden calf into it. In addition, grasslands can be inferred since the Hebrews lived in this area for over a year with their extensive flocks and herds.

The human mind cannot fathom the infinite Creator of the universe being present in a moment of time, in this space-time dimension. Yet, it would appear that God in His triune form as Father, Son and Holy Spirit appears to Moses and the Hebrew people as Glory, Present Essence and Spiritual Power. Previously He appeared to Abraham as the Lord—a Present Essence visible in human form (a theophany) as the Second Person of the Trinity, Yeshua, Creator and sustainer of the universe. Now, He again appears at Mt. Sinai in Present Essence in that He talks with Moses face to face and meets with 70 elders. In this awesome event, *“Moses and Aaron, Nadab and Abihu, and the seventy elders of Israel went up and saw the God of Israel. Under his feet was something like a pavement made of sapphire, clear as the sky itself. But God did not raise his hand against these leaders of the Israelites; they saw God, and they ate and drank.”*ⁱⁱⁱ God physically writes on tablets of stone, which He gives to Moses as the Ten Commandments. In the presence of the Glory of God, Moses’ face becomes so radiant that the people could not look at him. Radiant light is also

associated with powerful angels throughout the Bible. Jesus, in the New Testament, in His moment of transfiguration becomes “*bright as a flash of lightning*” in the presence of God the Father.^{iv}

Yet, as God the Father when Moses asks to see His Glory, the Lord says, “*I will cause all my goodness to pass in front of you, and I will proclaim my name, the LORD, in your presence. I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. But,*” he said, “*You cannot see my face, for no one may see me and live.*”^v The Power of the Spirit is evident when the Lord says of Uri, “*and I have filled him with the Spirit of God, with skill, ability and knowledge in all kinds of crafts.*”^{vi}

Nevertheless, in this war of the cosmos, what is this meeting with God and the Hebrews at Mt. Sinai all about? We find that it is the establishment of a covenant between God and a people descended from His friend Abraham. He tells Moses, “*Now if you obey me fully and keep my covenant, then out of all nations you will be my treasured possession. Although the whole earth is mine, you will be for me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation. These are the words you are to speak to the Israelites.*” And what did the people answer? The people all responded together, “*We will do everything the LORD has said.*” Moses brought their answer back to the LORD and so the covenant was established.^{vii}

The Israelites Meet Their God

God instructs Moses to consecrate the people and have them wash their clothes because on the *third day* He would come down on Mt. Sinai in the sight of all the people. Then, “*On the morning of the third day there was thunder and lightning, with a thick cloud over the mountain, and a very loud trumpet blast. Everyone in the camp trembled. Then Moses led the people out of the camp to meet with God, and they stood at the foot of the mountain. Mount Sinai was covered with smoke, because the LORD descended on it in fire. The smoke billowed up from it like smoke from a*

furnace, the whole mountain trembled violently, and the sound of the trumpet grew louder and louder. Then Moses spoke and the voice of God answered him.”^{viii}

The people stood at the foot of Mt. Sinai in fear and trembling at the thunder, lightning, billowing smoke, quaking ground and the sound of a loud trumpet. This powerful manifestation of physical forces is to attest to the presence of God. Yeshua is making a strong point; He is not a God to be held in contempt. Critics have tried to portray Mt. Sinai as a volcanic mountain that Moses used for clever showmanship. This would be deceitful, totally against the Spirit of God and the Godliness of Moses. Instead, let us consider that we are dealing with a cosmic war, that God is advancing His plan to defeat Satan

Have Two Prophetic Days Passed?

Several times in the Scriptures it is mentioned that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years.^{ix} God told the people to wash themselves for He is coming down to them on the *third day*. The prophet Hosea cries out, “*Come, let us return to the Lord... After two days he will revive us; on the third day he will restore us that we may live in his presence.*”^x The washing with water at Mt. Sinai is symbolic of spiritual cleanliness, which comes from the forgiveness of sins. The perfect washing came through the cleansing blood of Jesus Christ, the sacrificial Lamb of God. The period from the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ to His future second coming is known as the Age of Grace, or Church Age, “*that if you confess with your mouth, “Jesus is Lord,” and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved.*”^{xi} Is the Lord, on Mt. Sinai speaking prophetically to Moses of His second coming as the God-man Jesus Christ, Yeshua, to revive the Israelites sometime in this 21st century—the beginning of the third day after His death and resurrection?

and his rebel force. The Kingdom of God exists in the heavenly realms. Satan, the rebel archangel is usurping the dominion of planet Earth. With this perspective in view, we realize that God has a lot of work to do to impact His treasured possession, His kingdom of priests, His holy nation.

God's Laws and Regulations

Now what does it mean to be a holy people? God is holy. He says, "*I am the LORD your God; consecrate yourselves and be holy, because I am holy;*"^{xii} to be Holy means to be set apart in purity of being.^{xiii} The Ten Commandments, written in stone, that God gave to Moses are ten fundamental precepts for holy living. These form the basis of law for the Israelite nation.

- 1) "You shall have no other gods before me".
- 2) "You shall not make for yourself an idol in the form of anything in heaven above or on the earth beneath or in the waters below. You shall not bow down to them or worship them; for I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, punishing the children for the sin of the fathers to the third and fourth generation of those who hate me, but showing love to a thousand generations of those who love me and keep my commandments."
- 3) "You shall not misuse the name of the LORD your God, for the LORD will not hold anyone guiltless who misuses his name."
- 4) "Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it holy Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is a Sabbath to the LORD your God. On it you shall not do any work, neither you, nor your son or daughter, nor your manservant or maidservant, nor your animals, nor the alien within your gates. For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but he rested on the seventh day. Therefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day and made it holy."

5) “Honor your father and your mother, so that you may live long in the land the LORD your God is giving you.”

6) “You shall not murder.”

7) “You shall not commit adultery.”

8) “You shall not steal.”

9) “You shall not give false testimony against your neighbor.”

10) “You shall not covet your neighbor’s house.

You shall not covet your neighbor’s wife, or his manservant or maidservant, his ox or donkey, or anything that belongs to your neighbor.”^{xiv}

God continues to dictate to Moses extensive laws, procedures of worship and feast days. The feast days are centered on the Passover lamb, when God rescued the people from the land of Egypt. They continue throughout the year to measure the seasons and times. In essence, the commandments and laws pertain to physical cleanliness, to governmental law with an emphasis on justice and mercy, to genetic purity in sexual relationships, and to spiritual purity in relationship to the Holiness of Lord God Almighty.

God gives Moses an elaborate set of instructions as to how to build a mobile place in which to worship Him. The Tabernacle is a pattern of tent walls, which eventually form the design of the Temple in Jerusalem. The innermost tent wall is called the Most Holy Place, which contained the Ark of the Covenant. It is a most Holy place, symbolic of where God dwells in justice and mercy. Outside of this enclosure is a golden altar of incense, a golden lamp stand with seven lamps and a table overlain with gold that is to hold the “bread of Presence” at all times. The space between an outermost wall and this inner wall is called the outer court. It contains a large washbasin and an altar on which are offered animal blood scarifies. The sacrifices are to atone for the sins of the

people. The people are to bring prescribed animals with no spot or blemish to be sacrificed for the forgiveness of their sins. The priest sacrifices the animal, sprinkles some of its blood on all sides of the altar, which lay outside of the Most Holy Place, and then burns the sacrifice on the altar. To enter the Most Holy Place as an advocate for the people before God, the Father, the priest must burn a specific formula of incense that fills the Most Holy Place. *“He is to take a censer full of burning coals from the altar before the LORD and two handfuls of finely ground fragrant incense and take them behind the curtain. He is to put the incense on the fire before the LORD, and the smoke of the incense will conceal the atonement cover above the Testimony, so that he will not die. He is to take some of the bull’s blood and with his finger sprinkle it on the front of the atonement cover; then he shall sprinkle some of it with his finger seven times before the atonement cover.”^{xv}*

If the Israelites were to be a kingdom of priests, a holy nation, then they are to reflect God by obeying His commandments. Since it is impossible for rebellious man to reflect God’s Holiness, the commandments and laws of God clearly reveal man’s degenerate spiritual condition and his need for forgiveness, grace and mercy. If the Israelites are to be a kingdom

Jesus—the Lamb

Jesus Christ gave Himself as the perfect Lamb of God who was sacrificed once, for all the sins of everyone who ever lived. An individual has to choose to accept this perfect provision for their sins and ask Jesus for forgiveness. Jesus is then the eternal priest who has entered heaven’s Holy of Holies as our advocate before God the Father. The Commandments are a mirror of who God is, reflecting His purity, justice and mercy.

of priests, it can only mean then, that they are to be involved in the war against Satan and his Legions of Doom as advocates for Almighty God to the nations of the world.

Spiritual Considerations

The war of the cosmos is not about physical manifestation of power, but of spiritual essence. Moreover, the war has no meaning—unless there is a great consequential action. Satan hates mankind with all his being, because the great consequence of this war in the cosmos is that spiritually regenerated mankind will rule as priests and kings in the heavenly realms, both spiritual and material, while he and his Legions of Doom will be cast forever into the eternal lake of fire. This

A New Spirit

The Ten Commandments can be seen as an external remedy to man's deviant programming. If every decision were referenced to the Ten Commandments, there would be peace on Earth. Somehow, the inner being of each individual has to be reprogrammed. Each individual must recognize their sinful nature, come before Almighty God, and want to be spiritually refurbished. God says, "*I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit in you.*"^{xvi}

might sound like a fairy tale, but our pursuit has been to find meaning to our lives. We are only too aware of evolution's motto; eat, breed and feed such that life's spores will be disseminated into the heavens and the fittest most powerful shall inherit the earth.

The first two commandments given to Moses are about God and gods. The gods are part of Satan's worldly worship system. He and his Legions of Doom have set up sensual religious practices to fulfill the self-deluded vanities of mankind, such that they direct their worship to him. These sensual practices center on free love, heterosexual and homosexual, with no moral inhibitions—in direct opposition to Gods commands. Infinite Creator God states emphatically, do not make cast idols^{xvii} or images of silver or gold.^{xviii} or anything, do not worship the sun, moon, or stars.^{xix}, and do not seek spiritualists or mediums. Mediums are people who willingly open their

wills to alien ethereal forces, permitting these forces to communicate through them. This is known as channeling in today's New Age terminology. The Bible is clear, do not practice sorcery or divination for it is an abomination to the Lord your God.

Satan and his Legions of Doom are active in our modern world with religions of self appeasement that teach through astrology, mysticism, fortune telling and New Age Humanism—that because I am, then I am god. World paranormal news reports seem to indicate that UFO sightings, contacts, channeling and alien walk-ins (body possession by an alien) are increasing with the view of preparing the world for a spiritual paradigm shift and the visitation of aliens. God clearly stated that He would judge the gods of Egypt and did so with plagues. Now should you think that this was some fictitious battle of ancient mythology consider this. Richard Hoagland, a respected science reporter, and others at Web (enterprisemission.com) are concerned that weird symbolic events that happened with the NASA space program in the late 1990s are continuing into the dawn of the 21st century. It appears there is a hidden agenda to worship the ancient gods of the Egyptians. They write:

On Wednesday, June 24, 1998, at 7:16 p.m., EDT, the Solar and Heliospheric Observatory (SOHO), a joint NASA/ESA spacecraft, mysteriously went “off-line.” This unlikely event occurred just weeks after a series of sensational observations that literally shook the world of astronomy to its core. Given the nature of the observations this “loss of contact” immediately rang alarm bells to TEM researchers, and led to the usual checks of the “ritual pattern” NASA and JPL have repetitively used in numerous prior mission milestones. Within a few days, we had established that SOHO had not merely malfunctioned, but had actually been “taken out,” by the powers in charge at the Goddard Space flight

Center in Greenbelt, Maryland. As we had seen so many times before, the event had in fact been timed to coincide with the passage of the stars—the gods themselves to the ancient Egyptians. The Goddard team had apparently waited for Osiris, God of Resurrection and the Underworld, to pass through the symbolic 19.5° “tetrahedral” latitude (below the horizon) before “killing” the \$1 billion dollar probe.^{xx}

The gods of the Egyptians are represented by signs of the zodiac, which is Satan’s attempt to obliterate the true message in the stars. Paranormal discussion groups seem to indicate that there is an increase in UFO sightings and experiences with aliens with slanted eyes, known as “grays.” The modern world is becoming fascinated with the paranormal. Are the Legions of Doom once again gaining access to our physical time-matter-energy realm? Have they set up a base on Mars or even the Moon? Will Satan once again try to set himself up as God? The Scriptures state, *“The Spirit clearly says that in later times some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and things taught by demons”*^{xxi} (intelligent alien energy forces).

Spiritual Adultery

God emphatically informed Moses at Mt. Sinai, about spiritualism. *“I will set my face against the person who turns to mediums and spiritists to prostitute himself by following them, and I will cut him off from his people.”*^{xxii} *“A man or woman who is a medium or spiritist among you must be put to death. You are to stone them; their blood will be on their own heads,”*^{xxiii} and *“Let no one be found among you who sacrifices his son or daughter in the fire, who practices divination or sorcery, interprets omens, engages in witchcraft, or casts spells, or who is a medium or spiritist or who consults the dead. Anyone who does these things is detestable to the LORD, and because of*

these detestable practices the LORD your God will drive out those nations before you.”^{xxxiv} Here then is the key to the bloody battles that are to follow. We noted earlier that God tells Abraham that the time is not right to fully occupy **the land**—as the wickedness of the peoples has not yet reached fullness. **The land** is now full of detestable practices. Spies sent to search out **the land** find descendants of the Nephilim—“*We saw the Nephilim there (the descendants of Anak come from the Nephilim). We seemed like grasshoppers in our own eyes, and we looked the same to them.*”^{xxxv} From this observation we can postulate that that possibly the Nephilim that escaped the flood (Epic of Gilgamesh, “went up to the home of the chief god”) have returned, or the fallen angels are once more trying to extend themselves into the human race. Some of the giants were over 10 feet tall with six digits on their hands and feet. This was not a war against flesh and blood but against powers and principalities, against Satan and his Legions of Doom. God is emphatic on what His kingdom of priests must do:

You must destroy all the peoples the LORD your God gives over to you. Do not look on them with pity and do not serve their gods, for that will be a snare to you. You may say to yourselves, “These nations are stronger than we are. How can we drive them out?” But do not be afraid of them; remember well what the LORD your God did to Pharaoh and to all Egypt.

You saw with your own eyes the great trials, the miraculous signs and wonders, the mighty hand and outstretched arm, with which the LORD your God brought you out. The LORD your God will do the same to all the peoples you now fear. Moreover, the LORD your God will send the hornet among them until even the survivors who hide from you have perished. Do not be terrified by them, for the LORD your God, who is among you, is a great and awesome God.

The LORD your God will drive out those nations before you, little by little. You will not be allowed to eliminate them all at once, or the wild animals will multiply around you. But the LORD your God will deliver them over to you, throwing them into great confusion until they are destroyed. He will give their kings into your hand, and you will wipe out their names from under heaven. No one will be able to stand up against you; you will destroy them.

The images of their gods you are to burn in the fire. Do not covet the silver and gold on them, and do not take it for yourselves, or you will be ensnared by it, for it is detestable to the LORD your God. Do not bring a detestable thing into your house or you, like it, will be set apart for destruction. Utterly abhor and detest it, for it is set apart for destruction. Be careful to follow every command I am giving you today, so that you may live and increase and may enter and possess the land that the LORD promised on oath to your forefathers.^{xxvi}

The Israelites were to be a holy people, worshiping only the Infinite Lord God Almighty. If they did not—if they held the Lord their God in contempt—then He will deal with them harshly.

If in spite of these things you do not accept my correction but continue to be hostile toward me, I myself will be hostile toward you and will afflict you for your sins seven times over. And I will bring the sword upon you to avenge the breaking of the covenant. When you withdraw into your cities, I will send a plague among you, and you will be given into enemy hands. When I cut off your supply of bread, ten women will be able to bake your bread in one oven, and they will dole out the bread by weight. You will eat, but you will not be satisfied.

If in spite of this you still do not listen to me but continue to be hostile toward me, then in my anger I will be hostile toward you, and I myself will punish you for your sins seven times over. You will eat the flesh of your sons and the flesh of your daughters. I will destroy your high places, cut down your incense altars and pile your dead bodies on the lifeless forms of your idols, and I will abhor you. I will turn your cities into ruins and lay waste your sanctuaries, and I will take no delight in the pleasing aroma of your offerings.

I will lay waste the land, so that your enemies who live there will be appalled. I will scatter you among the nations and will draw out my sword and pursue you. Your land will be laid waste, and your cities will lie in ruins. Then the land will enjoy its Sabbath years all the time that it lies desolate and you are in the country of your enemies; then the land will rest and enjoy its Sabbaths.... Yet in spite of this, when they are in the land of their enemies, I will not reject them or abhor them so as to destroy them completely, breaking my covenant with them. I am the LORD their God. But for their sake I will remember the covenant with their ancestors whom I brought out of Egypt in the sight of the nations to be their God. I am the LORD.^{xxvii}

Michael the Prince

The courts of Heaven are buzzing with an excitement of anticipation amongst those seated in the Great Assembly. A host of angels has gathered from across the material and spiritual dimensions. Even Lucifer and his entourage from planet Earth are present. Angelic rumor indicates that a significant post of authority is to be declared. That Yeshua challenged Lucifer on planet Earth by destroying his gods of Egypt and showed

His supernatural powers in the physical dimension with the parting of the Red Sea had not gone unnoticed. They know that Yeshua's preoccupation with this mortal group of Israelites has something to do with His pronouncement in the Garden of Eden, "that he will crush your head, and you will strike his heel."

A loud trumpet blast sounds: the moment has arrived. Lord God Almighty appears, and with one accord in deep adoration the echoes of Holy, Holy, Holy Lord God Almighty resound in the Great Assembly, all except for Lucifer and his entourage who stand defiantly.

Yeshua prepares to speak.

The Great Assembly is stilled with a silence of holy respect and breathless expectancy, who will get the posting, what is the posting, nothing like this has happened, it seems, for eons.

"Michael," said Yeshua, and the whole gathering even Lucifer turn towards Michael. Michael, a powerful archangel, had remained faithful to Yeshua in the great cosmic deviation lead by Lucifer.

"Michael," continues Yeshua, "you are to be Prince of my people the Israelites on planet Earth for My name is in you."^{xxviii}

The Great Assembly thunders with applause. There is now an official presence for the Kingdom of God on planet Earth. Lucifer storms from the Great Assembly in a furious rage.

Wandering in the Desert

A year has passed since the Hebrews arrived at Mt. Sinai. Skilled craftsmen have built the Ark of the Covenant with its Cherubim facing each other, the golden altar of incense, the golden

lamp stand with seven lamps, the table overlain with gold that is to hold the “Bread of Presence,” and they have sewn the tabernacle and all the priestly garments as God instructed Moses. The mysterious Urim and the Thummim are placed in the Breastplate amongst the extensive pattern of precious jewels, so that they are over Aaron’s heart whenever he enters the presence of the Lord. *“Thus Aaron will always bear the means of making decisions for the Israelites over his heart before the LORD.”*^{xxxix} When the Ark and Tabernacle were ready, the stone tablets containing the Ten Commandments were placed in the Ark and *“then the cloud covered the Tent of Meeting, and the glory of the LORD filled the tabernacle. Moses could not enter the Tent of Meeting because the cloud had settled upon it, and the glory of the LORD filled the tabernacle. In all the travels of the Israelites, whenever the cloud lifted from above the tabernacle, they would set out; but if the cloud did not lift, they did not set out—until the day it lifted. So the cloud of the LORD was over the tabernacle by day, and fire was in the cloud by night, in the sight of all the house of Israel during all their travels.”*^{xxx}

The twelve tribes are organized in divisions with standards; the tribe of Judah is to lead and the tribe of Dan to be the rear guard. The day arrives, blasts from the silver trumpets signal the order of departure. However, it is only a matter of days before grumbling is heard; in response, Yeshua sets a large fire on the outskirts of the camp. Next, they grumble for meat to eat—Yeshua sends a wind that dumps quail around the camp—then the people are stricken with a severe plague. A short time later, they reach the boundary of Canaan. Twelve spies explore **the land** for 40 days and bring back a great cluster of grapes on a pole that has to be carried by two men. Only two of the spies, Joshua and Caleb, have confidence in the Lord and recommend taking **the land**. The other ten spies are filled with fear and gave a bad report—whining that *“the land devours those living in it ... all the people are of great size ... the people are powerful and the cities are fortified ... and we saw the*

Nephilim there, we seemed like grasshoppers in our own eyes.” Caleb and Joshua plead, “do not rebel against the Lord ... do not be afraid of the people ... their protection is gone ... but the Lord is with us.”^{xxxix} Even though Yeshua has done great miracles, the people have returned to their slave mentality and have not put their trust in the goodness of God. Yeshua appears as a fire of Glory at the Tent of Meeting, His anger burns within. Moses stands before him interceding for the people. Yeshua speaks.

“How long will these people treat me with contempt? How long will they refuse to believe in me, in spite of all the miraculous signs I have performed among them? I will strike them down with a plague and destroy them, but I will make you into a nation greater and stronger than they.”

Moses replies, “Then the Egyptians will hear about it ... and say, ‘The LORD was not able to bring these people into the land he promised them on oath; so he slaughtered them in the desert.’ In accordance with your great love, forgive the sin of these people, just as you have pardoned them from the time they left Egypt until now.”

The LORD answers, “I have forgiven them, as you asked. Nevertheless, as surely as I live and as surely as the glory of the LORD fills the whole earth, not one of the men who saw my glory and the miraculous signs I performed in Egypt and in the desert but who disobeyed me and tested me ten times—not one of them will ever see the land I promised on oath to their forefathers. No one who has treated me with contempt will ever see it.”^{xxxix}

The ten doubting spies are struck with a plague and die, and because of this lack of trust, every fighting man except Joshua and Caleb will die during the next 40 years of wandering in the desert—one year for each day that the spies had explored the Promised Land. Eventually Miriam

and Aaron die and the people stand once again at the borders of the Promised Land. Moses, however, can't enter the Promised Land. In a moment of anger, he had defiled the symbolic instructions of Yeshua. The people had been camped at Kadesh in the Desert of Zin and were once again complaining—there is no water. Yeshua instructs Moses to gather the people before a large rock and “*speak to it,*” and it will bring forth refreshing water. Moses, however, strikes the rock twice and it gushes forth water. The LORD said to Moses and Aaron, “*Because you did not trust in me enough to honor me as holy in the sight of the Israelites, you will not bring this community into the land I give them.*”^{xxxiii} This event is another word picture—in the future Yeshua will be incarnated as Jesus and His Kingdom will be symbolized as a rock cut without hands. Moses is to speak to the rock, not strike it. Thus, we are to speak to the living rock to ask for the living water of eternal life. However, in a prophetic sense, Moses by striking the rock symbolizes the death of Jesus Christ at Calvary. It is because of His death that the living waters of purification for the forgiveness of sins will flow to all who accept this atoning work. All who accept this living water are given eternal life and enter heaven. This is symbolized by the Israelites entering the Promised Land.

It is time for Moses to die. He gathers the people together. Joshua will assume leadership. Moses then proclaims God's prophetic blessings and cursings to this holy nation, this kingdom of priests this treasured possession. There is a reverent silence as the voice of Moses thunders over their heads:

If you fully obey the LORD your God and carefully follow all his commands I give you today, the LORD your God will set you high above all the nations on earth. All these blessings will come upon you and accompany you if you obey the LORD your God.^{xxxiv} But if your heart turns away and you are not obedient, and if you are drawn away to bow down to other gods and worship them, I declare to you this day that you will

certainly be destroyed. You will not live long in the land you are crossing the Jordan to enter and possess.^{xxxv}

The LORD will bring a nation against you from far away, from the ends of the earth, like an eagle swooping down, a nation whose language you will not understand, a fierce-looking nation without respect for the old or pity for the young. They will devour the young of your livestock and the crops of your land until you are destroyed. They will leave you no grain, new wine or oil, nor any calves of your herds or lambs of your flocks until you are ruined. They will lay siege to all the cities throughout your land until the high fortified walls in which you trust fall down. They will besiege all the cities throughout the land the LORD your God is giving you.^{xxxvi}

When all these blessings and curses I have set before you come upon you and you take them to heart wherever the LORD your God disperses you among the nations, ... then the LORD your God will restore your fortunes and have compassion on you and gather you again from all the nations where he scattered you.... The LORD your God will circumcise your hearts and the hearts of your descendants, so that you may love him with all your heart and with all your soul, and live.^{xxxvii}

Even as the admonition to the people by Moses ends, the pillar of cloud appears at the Tent of Meeting and Yeshua speaks to Moses. *“You are going to rest with your fathers, and these people will soon prostitute themselves to the foreign gods of the land they are entering. They will forsake me and break the covenant I made with them. On that day, I will become angry with them and forsake them; I will hide my face from them, and they will be destroyed. Many disasters and difficulties will come upon them, and on that day they will ask, ‘Have not these disasters come upon*

us because our God is not with us?’ And I will certainly hide my face on that day because of all their wickedness in turning to other gods.”^{xxxviii}

Moses climbs Mount Nebo and Yeshua shows him **the land** that He promised on oath to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob to give to their descendants. Moses dies. Michael the archangel stands quietly beside the body of Moses. Suddenly a snarling cold ethereal form appears beside him and demands the body as his right of death on planet Earth. Michael looks at this once beautiful powerful archangel, Lucifer, against whom he is in battle, (Michael and his Angels of Glory are defeating the Legions of Doom within the Promised Land in preparation for the Israelites to enter). Michael speaks without accusation, “*The Lord rebuke you!*”^{xxxix} Michael then takes the body of Moses—there is no Scriptural record if he buries Moses or translates his body into heaven.

The stiff-necked people, under the leadership of Joshua, prepare to enter **the land** of promise.

Notes:

ⁱ Sermon at Emanuel Baptist Church Vernon, B.C., November 22, 1998,

ⁱⁱ Jeffrey Grant R., *Messiah*, Bantam Books 1992 pg. 112

ⁱⁱⁱ Exodus 24:9-11

^{iv} Exodus 34:29 Transfiguration Luke 9:29

^v Exodus 33:19-20

^{vi} Exodus 31:3

^{vii} Exodus 19:5-8

^{viii} Exodus 19:16-19

^{ix} Psalms 90:4, 2 Peter 3:8

^x Hosea 6:1-2

^{xi} Romans 10:9

^{xii} Leviticus 11:44

^{xiii} *Unger’s Bible Dictionary*, Moody Press 1973, pg. 494

^{xiv} Exodus 20:3-17

^{xv} Leviticus 16:12-14

^{xvi} Ezekiel 36:26

^{xvii} Exodus 34:17

^{xviii} Exodus 20:23

^{xix} Deuteronomy 4:16-19

^{xx} “Oh my God – They killed SOHL” <http://www.enterprisemission.com/oh_my_god.htm>

^{xxi} 1 Timothy 4:1

^{xxii} Leviticus 20:6

^{xxiii} Leviticus 20:27

-
- xxiv Deuteronomy 18:10-12
 - xxv Numbers 13:33
 - xxvi Deuteronomy 7:16 - 8:1
 - xxvii Leviticus 26:23-44
 - xxviii Exodus 23:20
 - xxix *Exodus 28:30
 - xxx Exodus 40:34-38
 - xxxi Numbers 13:31-33
 - xxxii Numbers chapter 14
 - xxxiii Numbers 20:9-12
 - xxxiv Deuteronomy 28:1-2
 - xxxv Deuteronomy 30:17-18
 - xxxvi Deuteronomy 28:49-52
 - xxxvii Deuteronomy 30:1
 - xxxviii Deuteronomy 31:16-18
 - xxxix Jude 9

Chapter 22

The Stiff-necked People

Upon the death of Moses God appoints Joshua, one of the faithful spies, to lead the extended family of His friend Abraham into **the land**. It is harvest season and the Jordan River is in flood. Again, something mysterious happens—as the priests carrying the ark step into the floodwaters they miraculously pileup—up upstream, so that as the waters below drain away the multitude of people and animals cross over its bed safely. The local population is in fear and awe of God, and the Israelite multitude of over 2 million people. Joshua approaches the city of Jericho to study its defenses. A man stands before him with a sword in his hand. Yeshua watches Joshua approach.

“Are you for us or our enemies,” asks Joshua.

“Neither,” replies Yeshua, *“but as commander of the army of the Lord I have now come.”*

Joshua fell facedown in reverence. *“What message does my Lord have for his servant?”*

he questions.

“Take off your sandals, for the place where you are standing is holy” and Joshua did

so.

“See I have delivered Jericho into your hands, along with its king and fighting men. March around the city once with all the armed men. Do this for six days. Have seven priests carry trumpets of ram’s horns in front of the ark. On the seventh day, march around the city seven times, with the priests blowing the trumpets. When you hear them sound a long blast on the trumpets, have all the people give a loud shout; then the wall of the city will collapse and the people will go up, every man straight in.”ⁱ

In the invisible world of powers and principalities, Michael and his army have driven the Legions of Doom from their stronghold of Jericho. The mortal population can only sense fear as voiced by Rahab, the prostitute, to the two Israelite spies. *“When we heard of it, our hearts melted and everyone’s courage failed because of you, for the LORD your God is God in heaven above and on the earth below.”ⁱⁱ*

Joshua implements the instructions of Yeshua. It is now the seventh day that the Israelites have marched around the city walls—they are completing the last and seventh cycle. Michael and his Angels of Glory position themselves along the inner wall of Jericho and wait. The trumpet sounds, the Israelites shout, the angels shove, the walls of Jericho fall outward and the Israelite army advances inward from all around the defenseless city. Not a person is spared except Rahab and her family, because she believed and trusted in God of heaven above. Archaeologists blame an earthquake for the backing up of the Jordan River and the collapse of the city’s walls, however, it is unusual for thick city walls to fall outwards all around the city.

Michael, the Angels of Glory and the band of mortals move forward into the land purging it of idols and demon worship. Satan is furious at this advance into his territory, but waits patiently. Mortals-wills are bent in his favour; desiring physical and spiritual power, they are easily tempted with sexual lust, covetness, and mysticism. He consoles himself with a fiendish laugh, there will be

no Seed of the woman to crush his head—he will destroy or vanquish this motley band of individual wills. Michael will be disgraced as well—he, Lucifer, will yet be—as God.

King David

The visible and invisible battles rage for the next 400 years. The Israelites are ruled by a series of judges and priests and never fully conquer **the land**. Eventually the people want a king and beseech Samuel the high priest to request God for one. Saul, a tall handsome man, is anointed the first king of Israel. In his vanity, he chose to do things his way rather than following God's specific instructions. David, a shepherd boy, is secretly anointed to be the next king.

Eventually Samuel, the priest, a strong spiritual leader dies and the nation once again seeks other gods. As the Philistine army advances against Israel, Saul secretly consults the witch of Endor in defilement of Lord God Almighty, even though he has dispelled mediums and spiritualists from **the land**. Then as the witch enters a trance and begins to seek her spiritual guide—suddenly at God's direction a large spiritual energy flux brings the real Samuel from the spirit dimension. The witch trembles in terror. Samuel informs Saul that because of all these things, "*the Lord has torn the Kingdom out of your hands and given it to one of your neighbours—to David.*"ⁱⁱⁱ

Saul and his sons are killed in the battle with the Philistines and David becomes king. Idolatry is driven from **the land** as he defeats all his enemies and unifies the 12 tribes of Israel into a powerful kingdom—sometime around 1,000 BC. Great are David's victories as long as he trusts in the Lord. Yet, in the height of his power he commits evil by seducing his top commander's beautiful young wife, and then places his loyal commander on the front lines where he is killed in battle. David confesses his sin to God in deep remorse and is forgiven.

Prophecies of the Messiah

King David, the son of Jesse of the clan of Judah, and his son Solomon are the two most famous kings of Israel. David must have been intelligent, physically strong and yet of a sensitive spiritual nature since many of the Psalms are attributed to him. In his youth, he killed a lion and a bear that attacked his father's sheep. His faith in God was so great that as a young man (likely a teenager) he slew the armed giant Goliath with a sling stone. Bible teachers like to study his life because it becomes apparent that God is not bound by man made rules, regulations and cultural traditions, but seeks those who seek Him with their whole heart (sincerity of spirit). After he became king, the Lord gave him this promise,

through the prophet Nathan, *"Your house and your kingdom will endure forever before me, your throne will be established forever."*^{iv}

God is saying forever, not just a few years. How will this be accomplished? We get our answer from the prophet Isaiah. Yeshua-Jesus will be born in the lineage of David of the clan of Judah and in some mysterious way he is God—*"For to us a child is born, to us a son is given, and the government will be on his shoulders. And he will be called Wonderful Counselor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there will*

The Church Age Foretold

In spite of these "forever" promises, the prophet Micah tells us by God's inspiration that during a mysterious interlude Israel would be abandoned for a time, *"while she who is in labor gives birth and the rest of his brothers join the Israelites."*^v We now know that "his brothers" means that Christians whether freeman, slave, Jew or Gentile will receive God's forgiveness and blessing and be part of God's celestial administration.

be no end. He will reign on David's throne and over his kingdom, establishing and upholding it with justice and righteousness from that time on and forever. The zeal of the LORD Almighty will accomplish this."^{vi} In the ancient custom of blessing his sons the patriarch Jacob, upon his deathbed in Egypt some 800 years earlier, made the following prediction about the tribe of Judah—"The scepter will not depart from Judah, nor the ruler's staff from between his feet, until he comes to whom it belongs and the obedience of the nations is his."^{vii} This prediction indicates that Israel, sometime in the future, will be head of all the nations. The prophet Micah predicts that this ruler of the nations will be born in Bethlehem; "*But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are small among the clans of Judah, out of you will come for me one who will be ruler over Israel, whose origins are from of old, from ancient times.*"^{viii} This mysterious person, who sometime in the future will rule on the throne of David, will be someone whose origins are of ancient times, "one who lives forever"—thus, he can't be mortal.

Isaiah describes this person: "*A shoot will come up from the stump of Jesse; from his roots a Branch will bear fruit. The Spirit of the LORD will rest on him—the Spirit of wisdom and of understanding, the Spirit of counsel and of power, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD—and he will delight in the fear of the LORD. He will not judge by what he sees with his eyes, or decide by what he hears with his ears; but with righteousness he will judge the needy, with justice he will give decisions for the poor of the earth. He will strike the earth with the rod of his mouth; with the breath of his lips he will slay the wicked. Righteousness will be his belt and faithfulness the sash around his waist.... In that day the Root of Jesse will stand as a banner for the peoples; the nations will rally to him, and his place of rest will be glorious.*"^x

Fear

This type of fear means to have a deep reverent trust in God.^{ix}

Isaiah also gives a prediction about this mysterious child's birth—“*Hear now, you house of David! Is it not enough to try the patience of men? Will you try the patience of my God also? Therefore the Lord himself will give you a sign: The virgin will be with child and will give birth to a son, and will call him Immanuel.*”^{xi} Immanuel means God with us. This child will be born of a virgin, which is the Greek word, *parthenos*. The understanding of this verse is that this woman is a young marriageable maiden who conceives a child without sexual intercourse. This child is to fear the Lord and will slay the wicked on the Earth. In contrast to this reverent fear, are those who reject the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ—they will fear the Lord as a terrified fear as they are condemned to the Lake of Fire at the last judgment day.

The First Temple

King Solomon, a son of David, built the magnificent first temple that awed the ancient world. If it had not been destroyed by fire, it would have been one of the great wonders of civilization. However, the age of glory for the Israelite nation lasted only twenty years. Solomon did all the things that God had told Moses that a future king should not do—and did not do the one thing that he should have done. He married many wives, accumulated wealth including horses and chariots. Worse still, in his later years he worshipped false gods. Moses told the people:

The king, moreover, must not acquire great numbers of horses for himself or make the people return to Egypt to get more of them, for the LORD has told you, “You are not to go back that way again.” He must not take many wives, or his heart will be led astray. He must not accumulate large amounts of silver and gold.

And what should he do?

When he takes the throne of his kingdom, he is to write for himself on a scroll a copy of this law, taken from that of the priests, who are Levites. It is to be with him, and he is to read it all the days of his life so that he may learn to revere the LORD his God and follow carefully all the words of this law and these decrees and not consider himself better than his brothers and turn from the law to the right or to the left. Then he and his descendants will reign a long time over his kingdom in Israel.^{xii}

Spiritual Idolatry

As the decades drift by, Lucifer masquerades as a great spirit of light—idolatry increases—sexual prostitution becomes part of the religious ceremonies. Michael and his army battle relentlessly, yet, men seek physical and spiritual sensuousness to their own destruction. God will not be patient forever. His word will stand—as He forewarned through Moses, the nation will be destroyed and scattered if they persist with their spiritual idolatry in contempt of Lord God Almighty. It became a time of evil and good kings. The nation grew weaker as it declined morally. Soon it is divided into two groups resulting in civil war. The tribes of Judah and Benjamin occupy the southern portion of the country around Jerusalem, and the remaining ten tribes the area north of Jerusalem towards Damascus. The two factions became known as Judah and Israel respectively. Yet, Yeshua is patient and brings forth prophets Elijah and Elisha to warn the Nation of its need to repent. Historically this is around the eighth century BC.

Elijah informs the evil king Ahab, who is killing anyone who believes in the Lord, that there will be no rain for a long time—resulting in a serious drought throughout **the land**. This leads to a contest on Mt. Carmel as to who is god, or God. The 450 prophets of Baal (the Canaanite god of rain and storm) go first. They prepare their bull for sacrifice, but do not light the fire. Next, they

shout, chant and pray for Baal to light the fire—there is no response. Elijah taunts them: “*Shout louder!*” he said. “*Surely he is a god! Perhaps he is deep in thought, busy, or traveling. Maybe he is sleeping and must be awakened.*”^{xiii} So they shout louder and slash themselves with swords and spears. Midday passes, they continue their frantic prophesying until the time for the evening sacrifice. But there is still no response, no one answers, no one pays attention.

Elijah then calls the people over to him and repairs the altar to God using 12 stones, one for each of the tribes of Israel. He cuts his bull into pieces and lays it on the wood. To make sure the offering and wood are

A Serious Contest

This had to be a serious contest of major consequences for this amount of water to be made available in this time of severe drought.

good and wet and will not easily burn—four large jars of water are dumped three times over the wood until the trench around the altar is full of water. He then prays to Lord God Almighty.

“O LORD, God of Abraham, Isaac and Israel, let it be known today that you are God in Israel and that I am your servant and have done all these things at your command. Answer me, O LORD, answer me, so these people will know that you, O LORD, are God, and that you are turning their hearts back again.” Then the fire of the LORD fell and burned up the sacrifice, the wood, the stones and the soil, and also licked up the water in the trench. When all the people saw this, they fell prostrate and cried, “*The LORD—he is God! The LORD—he is God!*” The false prophets of Baal are then seized, brought down to the Kishon Valley and slaughtered.^{xiv}

Elisha is chosen by God to walk with Elijah and later to succeed him. One can only imagine the transparent battles that take place between Michael and his forces, and Satan and the Legions of Doom. In another multidimensional scene involving the death of king Ahab, we are given a look at

the transparent world involving a lying spirit from the Legions of Doom. Micaiah, a man of God, tells what he saw.

“I saw the LORD sitting on his throne with all the host of heaven standing around him on his right and on his left. And the LORD said,

‘Who will entice Ahab into attacking Ramoth Gilead and going to his death there?’ One suggested this, and another that. Finally, a spirit came forward, stood before the LORD and said, ‘I will entice him’.

‘By what means?’ the LORD asked.

‘I will go out and be a lying spirit in the mouths of all his prophets,’ he said.

‘You will succeed in enticing him,’ said the LORD. ‘Go and do it.’”^{xv}

In the resulting battle even though Ahab tries to disguise himself, an arrow pierces a crack in his armor and he bleeds to death. In another instance, Elisha reveals this transparent spiritual world to his servant. Once when physical horses and chariots surround them, Elisha said to his servant *“Those who are with us are more than those who are with them.”* He then prays to the Lord that the servant’s eyes be opened and that he will see the unseen. When the servant looks, he sees that the hills are full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha.^{xvi} The prophets continue to warn Israel and Judah that if they do not turn back to the covenant and worship the Lord their God, they would be destroyed as a nation.

Elijah, now an old man, knows that this phase of his prophetic ministry is coming to an end and that something mysterious is about to happen. He tries to dissuade Elisha from following him, but Elisha is loyal to his master. *“As they were walking along and talking together, suddenly a chariot of fire and horses of fire appeared and separated the two of them, and Elijah went up to heaven in a whirlwind* [like Enoch in the pre-flood era, he is translated into another realm]. *Elisha*

saw this and cried out, 'My father! My father! The chariots and horsemen of Israel!' And Elisha saw him no more. Then he took hold of his own clothes and tore them apart." Fifty prophets who are nearby spend three days looking for Elijah, in case the Spirit of the Lord had dumped him somewhere, but he is not to be found.^{xvii}

This is an interesting point, since it appears that men of God might possibly have been supernaturally transported at times, even though there is little mention of these events. Obadiah, Ahab's servant, makes a comment to Elijah, "*I don't know where the Spirit of the LORD may carry you when I leave you. If I go and tell Ahab and he doesn't find you, he will kill me. Yet I your servant have worshiped the LORD since my youth.*"^{xviii} An actual event of this nature is recorded around 33 AD when Philip, a disciple of Jesus, baptized the Ethiopian eunuch. "*When they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord suddenly took Philip away, and the eunuch did not see him again, but went on his way rejoicing. Philip, however, appeared at Azotus.*"^{xix}

The March into Captivity

The northern 10 tribes of Israel are the first to fall. The prophet Amos, a shepherd who is symbolically calling the lost sheep of Israel, pleads with the Nation to return to the Lord. Through him Yeshua makes a strong pronouncement, "*O people of Israel—against the whole family I brought up out of Egypt: You only have I chosen of all the families of the earth; therefore I will punish you for all your sins.*"^{xx} They worship idols, on the hilltops along with sacred stones and Asherah poles; they make cakes of bread for the Queen of Heaven. They practice divination, sorcery and bow down to Baal, the Sun, Moon, planets and stars. They sacrifice their sons and daughters and consult with mediums,^{xxi} consequentially, Tiglath-Pileser King of Assyria captures and deports the northern Kingdom around 720 BC.^{xxii} Lucifer and his Legions of Doom can sense victory. What does Yeshua say about His treasured possession? "*But they would not listen and were*

as stiff-necked as their fathers, who did not trust in the LORD their God. They rejected his decrees and the covenant he had made with their fathers and the warnings he had given them. They followed worthless idols and themselves became worthless. They imitated the nations around them although the LORD had ordered them, “Do not do as they do,” and they did the things the LORD had forbidden them to do.”^{xxiii}

Prophets Isaiah, Jeremiah, Hosea, Micah and Zephaniah continue to cry out against the spiritual adultery that the Israelites of the southern kingdom are committing, but Judah lasts only another 100 years until 606 BC. The Lord says through the prophet Jeremiah—“*Have you seen what faithless Israel has done? She has gone up on every high hill and under every spreading tree and has committed adultery there. I thought that after she had done all this she would return to me but she did not, and her unfaithful sister Judah saw it. I gave faithless Israel her certificate of divorce and sent her away because of all her adulteries. Yet I saw that her unfaithful sister Judah had no fear; she also went out and committed adultery. Because Israel’s immorality mattered so little to her, she defiled the land and committed adultery with stone and wood.*”^{xxiv}

Supernatural Code

Satan, as Prince of planet Earth and ruler of local space,^{xxv} can see that no mortal man will ever be able to defeat him. He becomes less concerned about the Lord’s proclamation made in the Garden of Eden, “He will crush your head and you will strike his heel,” and is not paying very careful attention to what Yeshua is saying through His prophets—in supernatural code. Yeshua inspires the great prophet Isaiah to write about His incarnation as the Messiah as follows:

See, my servant will act wisely; he will be raised and lifted up and highly exalted. Just as there were many who were appalled at him—his appearance was so disfigured beyond that of any man and his form marred beyond human likeness—so will he

sprinkle many nations, and kings will shut their mouths because of him. For what they were not told, they will see, and what they have not heard, they will understand. Who has believed our message and to whom has the arm of the LORD been revealed?

He grew up before him like a tender shoot, and like a root out of dry ground. He had no beauty or majesty to attract us to him, nothing in his appearance that we should desire him. He was despised and rejected by men, a man of sorrows, and familiar with suffering. Like one from whom men hide their faces he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely he took up our infirmities and carried our sorrows, yet we considered him stricken by God, smitten by him, and afflicted.

But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was upon him, and by his wounds we are healed. We all, like sheep, have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed and afflicted, yet he did not open his mouth; he was led like a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is silent, so he did not open his mouth.

By oppression and judgment he was taken away. And who can speak of his descendants? For he was cut off from the land of the living; for the transgression of my people he was stricken. He was assigned a grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death, though he had done no violence, nor was any deceit in his mouth.

Yet it was the LORD'S will to crush him and cause him to suffer, and though the LORD makes his life a guilt offering, he will see his offspring and prolong his days, and the will of the LORD will prosper in his hand. After the suffering of his soul, he will see the

light of life and be satisfied; by his knowledge my righteous servant will justify many, and he will bear their iniquities.

Therefore I will give him a portion among the great, and he will divide the spoils with the strong, because he poured out his life unto death, and was numbered with the transgressors. For he bore the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.^{xxvi}

Yeshua stands invisible outside of time beside the old prophet as he is writing these words under the power of the Holy Spirit. Yeshua's heart is heavy within. He looks upon the horizon of time and it seems like tomorrow is almost upon Him, even though it is yet 700 years into the future.

A moment of time opens like a ripple in his infinite perception. There is an eerie darkness, and the sound of taunting defiant laughter. "I offered my back to those who beat me, my cheeks to those who pulled out my beard; I did not hide my face from mocking and spitting. Because the Sovereign LORD helps me, I will not be disgraced. Therefore have I set my face like flint, and I know I will not be put to shame."^{xxvii} His mother Mary, her sister Salome, Mary wife of Cleophas, Mary Magdaleine, his favorite apostle John and a few others huddle sorrowfully nearby. Elite Roman soldiers in their metal armor with long sharp spears stand guard. Unseen by the mortals is a defiant archangel standing majestically with his arms folded gloating with satisfaction while his Legions of Doom dance like flickering shadows around the cross that He, Yeshua, is hanging on. The heaviness of sinful affliction is crushing His divine essence—the gate of Hades is opening.

Four hundred years previous to this moment, when He stands beside Isaiah, He had inspired King David to describe His future death scene in greater detail. “All who see me mock me; they hurl insults, shaking their heads. ‘He trusts in the LORD; let the LORD rescue him. Let him deliver him, since he delights in him.’ Yet you brought me out of the womb; you made me trust in you even at my mother’s breast. From birth I was cast upon you; from my mother’s womb you have been my God.

Do not be far from me, for trouble is near and there is no one to help. Many bulls surround me; strong bulls of Bashan encircle me. Roaring lions tearing their prey open their mouths wide against me. I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint. My heart has turned to wax; it has melted away within me.

My strength is dried up like a potsherd, and my tongue sticks to the roof of my mouth; you lay me in the dust of death. Dogs have surrounded me; a band of evil men has encircled me, they have pierced my hands and my feet. I can count all my bones; people stare and gloat over me. They divide my garments among them and cast lots for my clothing. ^{xxviii}

*The ripple closes; **it is not yet time.***

Students of the Bible have long recognized that these words describe the Messiah, but who is the Messiah? Just as in the story *Contact*, by Carl Sagan, when the mathematician is looking for a deeper reality in the physical constant pi, there is a deep hidden reality in these verses of divinely inspired scripture. Let me explain—pi describes the world of the physical, it is an observable physical law in our world of space-time—this is the first level. The deep level computer analysis of pi (in the story) shows a circle, which indicates design to the physical laws of the universe—this is

level two and it has to be derived from, and be descriptive of level one. In the inspired scriptures of Isaiah and Psalms quoted above, there is a first level that we read. It communicates to us real space-time information. What the ELS codes have revealed is that the level two information yields descriptive details that validate the level one space-time reality.

Yacov Rambsel, in his book *His Name is Jesus*, has broken the code of these sections of scripture. Stunning detailed descriptive level two events have been revealed. These events were fulfilled in detail in 32 AD some 600 years after they were written. In the Isaiah chapter 53 portion of the scriptures, the code states “Yeshua Shmi [**Jesus is my name**].” It then goes on to describe the two high priests involved in His murder, “Caiaphas and Annas,” his twelve disciples, the three Marys, his friend John and that Jesus was a “Nazarene” from “Galilee.” “Rah eer Romi” spells out “the evil Roman City.” The words “cross,” “Passover,” “hell” and “death” are also there. Satan should have been paying attention; his destiny is also foretold with the words “neutralize Lucifer.” Mr. Rambsel writes: “Isaiah 53:8, starting with the sixth word [six is associated with worldly events, my comment] and counting every forty-eighth letter from right to left spells

ELS Code Levels 1 and 2

Critics of the ELS code in the Bible have said that you can find words in any written works. This is true, given enough computer power and equidistant sequencing it is likely that any word or even some connected word sequences may be found. Some may even be of a negative connotation. However, that is not the point. The point is to find interconnected descriptive meaning on levels one and two. Again, let me illustrate. An author would have to write an introduction to his or her book in general terms, which is level one; then in level two in some sort of hidden code provide specific details to all the level one events.

“Satan.” The adjacent letters spell “bind up” and “weighed.” The second passage in Psalms states “the ram of His cross bitterly cursed” followed by “the great hades (hell)” and the word “Yeshua.” The words of the code inform us that Satan will be judged because of Yeshua’s death on the cross and be sentenced to Hades, the lake of eternal fire.^{xxix}

It is the amount of second level detail within a passage of scripture, such as Isaiah 53, that lends credence to the hypothesis of divine inspiration. If people do not believe in the message presented in level one then they most certainly are not likely to accept any validation in level two. Such has ever been the “higher criticism” of the spiritually dead intelligentsia.

The Judgment of Nations Foretold

As the time of pending judgment approached, God sent Jeremiah, the prophet of doom and lamentation, to His the stiff-necked people. King Jehoiachin (also called Jeconiah) of the line of Judah was told “*none of his offspring will sit on the throne of David or rule anymore in Judah.*”^{xxxix} By the word of the Lord, Jeremiah informed the people of Judah that they would be in captivity for 70 years.^{xxxii} The nation of Judah went into captivity in 606 BC. When the vassal king rebelled in 587 BC,

Satan Thrilled

Since God cannot lie and He has said, “*I have sworn to David my servant ‘I will establish your line forever and make your throne firm though all generations,*”^{xxxix} then how can the line of Judah continue since it has been broken with Jehoiachin? Satan must have been thrilled—now the Seed of the woman would never crush his head. So, what mystery plan does Yeshua have in mind?

King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon sacked Jerusalem and burnt the magnificent temple in 586 BC. Eventually in the end times, wrote Jeremiah, the Cup of God’s Wrath would encompass all nations. “*The tumult will resound to the ends of the earth, for the LORD will bring charges against the*

nations; he will bring judgment on all mankind and put the wicked to the sword.^{»xxxiii} All the nations of Earth are in rebellion against God. Thus, as God issues judgments through the prophets against His chosen nation, He enlarges His pronouncement against all the peoples on the Earth that are in alliance with Satan and his rebels. There will possibly come a time (now in the 21st century?) when Earth will welcome the rebel angels, disguised as Galactic aliens, in total rebellion against God. This will initiate the great war of Armageddon.

Notes:

ⁱ Joshua 6:3-5

ⁱⁱ Joshua 2:9

ⁱⁱⁱ 1 Samuel 28:17

^{iv} 2 Samuel 7:16

^v Mich 5:3

^{vi} Isaiah 9:6-7

^{vii} Genesis 49:10

^{viii} Micah 5:2

^{ix} *Unger's Bible Dictionary*, Moody Press 1973, pg. 348

^x Isaiah 11:1-5,10

^{xi} Isaiah 7:13-14

^{xii} Deuteronomy 17:16-20

^{xiii} 1 Kings 18:25 & following

^{xiv} 1 Kings 18:30-40

^{xv} 1 Kings 22:19

^{xvi} 2 Kings 6:17

^{xvii} 2 Kings 2:11-12

^{xviii} 1 Kings 18:12

^{xix} Acts 8:39

^{xx} Amos 3:1-2

^{xxi} 2 Kings 17:7-17

^{xxii} 2 Kings 15:29

^{xxiii} 2 Kings 17:14-15:

^{xxiv} Jeremiah 3:6-9

^{xxv} Ephesians 2:2

^{xxvi} Isaiah 52:13 - 53:12

^{xxvii} Isaiah 50:6-7

^{xxviii} Psalms 22:7-18

^{xxix} Ramsel Yacov, *His Name is Jesus*, Frontier Research Publications Inc, 1997, pgs. 29-47

^{xxx} Psalms 89:3-4

^{xxxi} Jeremiah 22:30

^{xxxii} Jeremiah 25:11

^{xxxiii} Jeremiah 25:31

Chapter 23

Powerful Angels At War

In the sixth century BC, in fulfillment of God's dictation to Moses—Israel, God's treasured possession His kingdom of priests, has committed spiritual idolatry and adultery and have been deported to Babylon as slaves. Ezekiel, a captive priest, and Daniel, a slave boy who is promoted to the position of an elite bureaucrat, serve as prophets to the Hebrews during this 70-year period of captivity. Ezekiel lived during the first part and Daniel through to the end. Both prophets receive supernatural visions from God foretelling the future of Earth's civilizations as they relate to the nation Israel. Both prophets see and communicate with powerful angels. Ezekiel experiences a supernatural event that is still debated today. Shortly before the destruction of Jerusalem, he is in the countryside by the Kebar River (in modern day Iraq) when he sees something that would perplex anyone. He encounters an immense cloud with flashing lightning surrounded by brilliant light.¹ Did he see a highly technological UFO controlled by the Angels of Glory, or is it the penetration of Glory into space-time?

Satan felt uneasy; all has been going too well, his latticework of spiritual darkness controls planet Earth—maybe from bases on the Moon? UFOs piloted by his Legions of Doom occasionally flash in the sky in their hyperdimensional activities. Tribes of

people around Earth are killing one another, eating one another, sacrificing each other and participating in sensual sexual worship before his gods. The demons are excited. They are, at last, able to possess human bodies, crushing their initiate's spirits as they gain control. The poor duped humans prostrate themselves before statues of wood, metal and stone waiting for oracles. Satan laughs to himself; Michael is a troublesome nuisance; there are still a few deluded God believers. He pauses deep in interdimensional thought, the spiritual vibrations are not right, he feels pensive—as if something more is about to happen—but what?

Suddenly, hyperdimensional vibrations from the superluminal begin to surge. They increase with blazing intensity. Sky quakes resound around Earth. A commander flashes into his presence. “Our force-field is vibrating, there is a quantum gap breach,” he shouts! Massive electrical discharges emanate from a focal point one Earth diameter from its surface. There is no time to react—the shockwave hits them as Glory penetrates space-time. They stare aghast—never before have the Seraphim and Cherubim, who attend the throne of the Infinite one, and the whirling wheels interconnecting the dimensional lattice of time and eternity—localized in the material realm. Satan and his commander hastily withdraw to a safe distance in horror as the brilliance of Holiness sears their malevolent spirits.

A massive orb of brilliant light, like glowing metal, appears. Within it are living creatures, with wings and faces, and whirling sparkling wheels intersecting one another. A powerful roaring sound like the thunder of rushing waters shakes Earth. An awesome expanse opens in the vacuum of space like a hole. It moves into position over Iraq. A large sapphire throne containing a figure like that of a man glistens in the expanse.

Brilliant light surrounds him like a rainbow. Terrified, Ezekiel lays prostrate on the ground. Yeshua speaks to the mortal, “Son of man stand up on your feet and I will speak to you,” Ezekiel is lifted to his feet.

Yeshua gives Ezekiel a commission,ⁱⁱ “Son of man, go to the house of Israel and speak my words to them... Do not be afraid of them or terrified by them, though they are a rebellious house.” With “a loud rumbling sound,” a powerful Spiritual force then picks Ezekiel up and somehow he is transported to Tel Abib further along the Kebar River. In shock, he sits overwhelmed for seven days.

God Departs From Jerusalem

Yeshua instructs Ezekiel to make a model of Jerusalem and symbolically lay on his side before it—390 days for Israel and 40 for Judah,ⁱⁱⁱ each day representing one year, (later on we will see how this foretold when modern day Israel would be formed). Yeshua still has more for Ezekiel to do. Ezekiel writes: A fiery figure, like that of a man, stretched out his hand “*and took me by the hair of my head. The Spirit lifted me up between earth and heaven and in the visions of God took me to Jerusalem.*”^{iv} Here is powerful imagery, as good as any modern Sci-Fi. Ezekiel is taken forward in the cone of space-time and is given a holographic vision of what will happen in future real-time. Ezekiel sees Yeshua standing in the inner court of the temple in Jerusalem. The Lord speaks:

“Son of man, look toward the north.” So I looked, and in the entrance north of the gate of the altar I saw this idol of jealousy.

“Son of man, do you see what they are doing—the utterly detestable things the house of Israel is doing here, things that will drive me from my sanctuary, but you will see things that are even more detestable.”

“Son of man, have you seen what the elders of the house of Israel are doing in the darkness, each at the shrine of his own idol?”

He then brought me into the inner court of the house of the LORD, and there at the entrance to the temple,

between the portico and the altar, were about twenty-five men. With their backs toward the temple of the LORD and their faces toward the east, they were bowing down to the sun in the east.

“Have you seen this, son of man? Is it a trivial matter for the house of Judah to do the detestable things they are doing here? Must they also fill the land with violence and continually provoke me to anger? Look at them putting the branch to their nose!

The Spaceships of Ezekiel

Josef F. Blumrich, former Chief of the Systems layout Branch of NASA, who helped develop the Skylab and Saturn V rocket comments, about Ezekiel, “A man describes the takeoff and terrestrial flight of a spacecraft, without excitement, in sober, matter-of-fact words, 2500 years before our time.” Blumrich, using Ezekiel’s description, postulates that a shiny *top-like* object some 18 m. or 60 ft. in diameter with four downward projecting legs with retractable helicopter blades and multidirectional wheels would satisfy the technological criteria. The pointed bottom of the *top-like* craft would contain a thruster style reactor engine, which is still slightly advanced of our present 21st century capabilities. He maintains that the commander of this craft communicates with Ezekiel and transports him in it.^v

Therefore I will deal with them in anger; I will not look on them with pity or spare them. Although they shout in my ears, I will not listen to them.”^{vi}

Say to them, ‘As surely as I live, declares the Sovereign LORD, I take no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but rather that they turn from their ways and live. Turn! Turn from your evil ways! Why will you die, O house of Israel?’^{vii}

The result of this scene is that Yeshua calls forth six powerful angels each with a weapon in his hand, and a seventh clothed in linen with a writing kit. The angel in linen then marks all the people in Jerusalem who grieve and lament over all the detestable things. The six angels are instructed to go and slay all who are not marked. The seventh angel is given coals of fire from among the wheels of the cherubim. He scatters the burning coals over the city. The glory of the Lord then departs from over the threshold of the temple and moves above the cherubim as the sapphire throne and the cherubim in the expanse depart from Jerusalem. The glory of the Lord, known as the Shekinah Glory, departs the temple through the eastern gate and is never seen again in the temple. The Lord has now officially divorced both Israel and Judah. *“Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests.”*^{viii}

The Shekinah Glory has departed eastward from the Most Holy Place from above the Ark of Covenant in the magnificent temple in Jerusalem, thus, the eastern gate to the city of Jerusalem is sealed awaiting the Messiah who is supposed to enter through it. In real-time, in 586 BC, the armies of Nebuchadnezzar slaughter the unmarked people and flames of fire burn the city destroying the First Temple, built by king Solomon. The prophet Micah recorded that in the future, *“Zion will be plowed like a field, Jerusalem will become a heap of rubble, the temple hill a mound overgrown with thickets.”*^{ix}

The Statue Of Nations

In that era, the City of Babylon was one of the wonders of the world with its lavish beautifully terraced gardens. One night the Lord God Almighty gave King Nebuchadnezzar an awesome dream in living Technicolor that deeply troubles him. He calls in his magicians, enchanters, sorcerers and astrologers and informs them; *“This is what I have firmly decided: If you do not tell me what my dream was and interpret it, I will have you cut into pieces and your houses turned into piles of rubble.”*^{xi} “Oh but tell us the dream,” whine the Legions of Doom through their human

Colored Thrones

There is a seldom-noticed correlation that shows the uniqueness of a single person, the Holy Spirit, Who has inspired the scriptures. It has to do with the throne. In all its appearances in the Old Testament, when the expanse of heaven opens up and Yeshua is visible, the throne is sapphire blue. Blue is associated with purity, heaven, infinity and the Son of God. The next major throne scene occurs at the beginning of chapter 4 in the book of Revelation, the last book in the New Testament portion of the Bible. Here the throne is jasper and carnelian, which is blood red, symbolizing the shed blood of the eternal Lamb of God, Jesus Christ. The third throne scene is at the end of the book of Revelation. Here the throne is white, symbolizing that only through the shed blood of Christ will anyone be made pure to enter eternity. Isaiah wrote, *“Come now, let us reason together,” says the LORD. “Though your sins are like scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they are red as crimson, they shall be like wool.”*^x

channels. However, God reserves to Himself the inner heart of man and there is nothing that Lucifer can do to help his dupes. How many seers, fortune-tellers and astrologers could pass that test today? Daniel, a young Jewish slave, worships the Lord. In the matter of wisdom and understanding, he has

been found ten times better than the magicians and enchanters in the whole of Nebuchadnezzar's kingdom. Daniel prays to Lord God Almighty and is given the nature of the dream and its meaning. In his dream, King Nebuchadnezzar saw an "enormous dazzling statue" that symbolizes future world kingdoms—yes into our 21st century. Nebuchadnezzar's kingdom is the head of gold. The chest and arms of silver represent a weaker kingdom that will come next. The belly and thighs, made of bronze, represent a kingdom that is to rule over a much larger region. Lastly, the legs are made of iron and the feet comprise a mixture of iron and clay. This fourth iron kingdom is a strong kingdom that conquers many nations but degenerates over time into a weak mixture of national groups. The whole statue is then smashed by a Rock cut without hands out of a mountain.^{xii} The mountain symbolizes God and Yeshua is the Rock. Yeshua will set up a kingdom that will never be destroyed. Thus, the rock that Moses struck with his staff symbolizes Yeshua.

Satan is agitated. "Kill them," he shouts at his commanders, "more Hebrews are turning back to Him."

"We tried," they whine. "We had Nebuchadnezzar build a large statute and when Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego would not worship it, we had them thrown into a blazing furnace, but Michael (some Bible scholars think that it may have been Yeshua) stood in the fire with them and rescued them. Then Nebuchadnezzar made a law that everyone had to worship the God of Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego, now we are worse off than before! Later we had Daniel thrown into the lion's den because he prays all the time."

"What do you think I'm complaining about" snaps Lucifer, "Babylon is my kingdom."

“Well,” continues the angelic prince of Persia, “many of our mediums were killed because of Michael and Gabriel. Michael withstood us while Gabriel shut the lion’s mouths. Daniel was then rescued and our mortals were tossed into the lions den.”

He looks at the powerful rebel archangel and adds, “The demons are upset at the loss of the corporeal bodies as they were well positioned as rulers throughout the kingdom. This conflict has resulted in the mortal king Darius aligning his will with that of Michael and the Israelites.”

“I hate mortal wills,” snarls the Prince of Darkness.

Powers and Principalities

Now at this point you may well be asking—yes I can understand good angels (Angels of Glory) and fallen angels (Legions of Doom) but—who are demons and what are UFOs? In the mysteries of, “In the Beginning,” God created angelic beings of various ranks. The book of Revelation records that in the great divergence of vanity by Lucifer, one third of the angelic order aligned with him in rebellion.^{xiii} Demons appear to be of a lower order than fallen angels. It has been postulated by some Bible scholars that they are possibly spirit-beings that lost their bodies in Satan’s rebellion against God. Others believe that they are disembodied spirits from crossbreeding between the Sons of God and the daughters of men. In either case, particularly in the New Testament, when demons are in conflict with Jesus they are always seeking a body for a home, which supports the—body in the past hypothesis. Many demons, as intelligent spiritual energy forces, can dwell in one human body.

Both the apostle Peter and Jude, the brother of Jesus, wrote in their letters to the church that a group of angels are being held in gloomy darkness, bound with everlasting chains until the great

judgment day for abandoning their own home and consorting with human women.^{xiv} This suggests that they could have, or can take on human form. Some may be very human looking and others more like the mystical “grays.” It would appear that after Noah’s flood the Legions of Doom are no longer able to freely assume corporeal form, while angels faithful to God can, and do interact with men in their service to God. There are many stories of people being helped by glowing angels and angels in human attire. There is no substantial proof, but circumstantial evidence suggests that spirit beings may also interact with our space-time world as small highly energetic spots of light. Two photographers in Africa saw a flash of light as a demon was cast out in an exorcism.^{xv} In a documentary on ghosts, a TV crew in the U.S.A. filmed a high-speed speck of light that opened a gate. An author in his book on angels said they told him that they were sometimes visible as specks of light. Some unexplained sources of light can be a manifestation of interdimensional energy. The two most awesome examples are the pillar of fire that was present with the Israelites in their travels, and the Shekinah Glory. The Shekinah Glory entered the new temple built by king Solomon confirming God’s presence. Ezekiel sees the Shekinah Glory lift up above the Cherubim and depart eastward signaling the departure of Gods presence.

Bright lights have accompanied Christian conversions^{xvi} and near death experiences (NDE). Lucifer, formally known as an angel of light, may also be able to duplicate true “light” events. Several books on human near death experiences report that people in a NDE hear a roaring noise, go through a tunnel where they see a bright light and encounter a benevolent being of light who seems to indicate that repentance is not necessary—that everyone is headed for heaven.

The Bible confirms this deception of Satan and his Legions of Doom, “*Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. It is not surprising then, if his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness.*”^{xvii}

The Bible confirms this deception of Satan and his Legions of Doom, “*Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light. It is not surprising then, if his servants masquerade as servants of righteousness.*”^{xviii}

The introduction of electronic CPR technology in the 1970s literally snatched people back through death’s door, resulting in multitudes of near death recoveries. Dr. Maurice Rawlings, a specialist in sudden death retrieval, author of *To Hell and Back*, recorded many terrifying NDE where the individuals had gone to Hell (hades). He maintains that there are just as many negative events as positive ones, but they are so horrible that the mind refuses to remember them for very long. He writes regarding this deceptive being of light:

The Omega Point Religion

The westernization of reincarnation (where one keeps coming back in the flesh until they get it right) has altered the karma (the totality of one’s acts in each state of existence) such that one’s life is an upward experience into nirvana (a state of oneness where identity is lost forever). The conundrum becomes, why then is the world not steadily getting better and the population decreasing as souls are absorbed into nirvana. Where are the new souls coming from? Since the true eastern religion of karma is cruel, unmerciful and unforgiving this new “heavenly tunnel” and loving being of light have developed into a new modern religion by the New Age movement. Reincarnation and karma have been bypassed for the “Omega Point” where there is no accountability, no religion, no beliefs – it is humanities right—you get it right the first time.

While hell is just plain hell and offers no possibility of deception, the Christian must be wary of the wonderful reports so eagerly claimed in the majority of near-death experiences. The experience may give false assurance, the survivors

having no opportunity to make theological inquires. The impostor, of course, would be the one who denies Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, but the figure of light many be non-committal on the subject or cleverly avoid any self-identification at all (1 John 2:22). Yet the ministers say those who know Christ now will also know him then.

In what other ways could you detect the fraudulent? “Unconditional love” is something uniformly dispensed by this light, says researcher Elisabeth Kubler-Ross. “God is love,” we are told by Christian teaching. But God is sinless. He unconditionally loves the sinner but punishes the sin. What is sin? The ministers say that rebellion against God is sin. To me, a layman, it seems that sin would also include thumbing your nose at God, “God-damming” this or that, or maybe just turning your back on God as if he never existed.

In this context, would a God-sent angel of light see no sin in each passerby? Would the true angel of God consider unrequested absolution as everyone’s humanistic right? Isn’t repentance a vital part in receiving Christ’s atonement? Would the non-Christian get a pat on the back or would he receive specific admonitions? Of course, we don’t know the destiny of those who did not return to receive another chance at life.

But other faiths also see the light at the end of the tunnel. They assume it is one of many messengers of gods of their own faith. For instance, the Hindu often assumes the light to be the “Yamdoot” or death spirit. But it seems remarkable to me that the figure of light never identifies itself as Brahma, Vishnu, Shiva, Krishna, Buddha, Allah, Matreya, or any one of the other deities. The Jew may

identify the figure as one of Jehovah's angels or prophets. The Christian may be sure the light is Christ himself. Some have seen Christ on the cross and feel a surge of spiritual confirmation that encourages their purpose in life.^{xix}

These occurrences of positive and negative NDE were also known in past history, the most famous of which is the painting *The Ascent into the Empyrean* by Hieronymus Bosch around 1500 AD. It depicts the heavenly "tunnel of light." Gustave Dore, in the late 1800s, engraved a tunnel of light whose walls were composed of myriads of flying angels. UFOs would appear to be hyperdimensional manifestations of photon energy commanded by the Legions of Doom. A very interesting coincidence occurred in the 1950s before the age of cloning. One of the first abductees claims that she was taken into a UFO. She saw an alien creature with a large needle about to take a specimen from her navel. This is particularly interesting in that biologists have shown that this part of the body is a rich source of stem cells (cells with all the genetic code to form another body). Dr. Rawlings addresses this increasing paranormal problem:

Another shocking negative problem is also obvious: humanoid and alien coupling for the alleged purpose of birthing and hybridization to improve the human race. There are several reported hints at this ungodly perversion.

One woman, who vividly recalls when she was abducted by an alien craft when she was five years old, states the aliens placed her on a table for examination "with much time spent around my genitals." Another, also then at age five, recounted instruments being "inserted vaginally and rectally," before she returned to her own bed at home "screaming," then finding it difficult to sleep for the next fifteen years. A man, recalling a UFO abduction at age ten, said one

of the aliens was a “dark green woman” who manipulated him into sexual orgasm.

Adults seemed equally involved. A thirty-one-year-old college graduate said her kidnapping aliens, showed her “no compassion” for experiments that were dreadful, terrifying.” At age thirty-six a man claimed the aliens had two hands checking on his genitals. Do these sound like good, godly experiences? Or do these sound like the alien spiritual entities could be demons out of hell?”^{xx}

The mysterious findings of mutilated animals for their body parts and the weird forms of the aliens encountered by abductees would circumstantially suggest that the Legions of Doom have been trying to extend themselves into our corporeal world. The Bible does not indicate that fallen angels are any different in form than the holy ones; it is just that at present they can only assume ethereal form in our space-time world. They may not have long to wait; a paradigm shift is about to occur. This startling event may happen suddenly when all the people who have regenerated spirits, through their belief in Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour, are translated (raptured or snatched away) from this space-time dimension. At that point in time, the fallen angels will once again be able to assume corporeal form. They are very likely to appear as handsome helpful space travelers thus perpetrating the greatest deception ever to face modern man in his blind desire to become part of the great cosmos.

A Holographic Vision of the Future

Do you really want to know what is going to happen in our cosmos? Tabloids of this 21st century are fascinated with the 16th century predictions of Nostradamus, where generalized statements are morphed into prophecies of past and modern world events. Yet 2,500 years ago,

ancient King Nebuchadnezzar's God inspired vision of a huge statue that outlined the historical progression of Gentile nations as they relate to Israel has been 100 per cent accurate to date. The future kingdom, symbolized by a Rock cut without hands, is to be instituted by God. Though other powerful Gentile kingdoms exist, and have existed, around the world, the statue does not depict them since they are not central to God's plan for His covenant nation—Israel.

Daniel, who was told several times by a powerful angel that he was highly esteemed by God, was given several three dimensional futuristic snapshots giving further details about the nations depicted by Nebuchadnezzar's statue. Daniel sees four beasts representing four powerful nations traversing the spectrum of time. The first was a lion; the second a bear, with three ribs in its mouth, the third a leopard with four wings and the fourth beast was "*terrifying and frightening and very powerful. It had large iron teeth; it crushed and devoured its victims and trampled underfoot whatever was left. It was different from all the former beasts, and it had ten horns,*" (horns represent kingdoms or rulers). Daniel sees a throne set up in the interdimensional realm and God, described as the Ancient of Days, judging space-time "end time's" activities happening on Earth.^{xxi}

Daniel is given additional information in another holographic supernatural experience near the Ulai Canal. He sees a ram with two horns, one shorter than the other, standing on the canal. Suddenly, a goat with a prominent horn between its eyes swiftly attacks the ram in great rage shattering its' two horns. The goat becomes very powerful and at the height of its' power, the prominent horn is broken off and replaced by four large horns. Out of one of them comes a little horn. This horn, or ruler, dominates the area around modern day Lebanon and Syria. Satan gives this despicable ruler supernatural power and because the Jewish people are still rebellious, worshipping idols in Jerusalem, Michael and his host are driven out and the daily sacrifice in the temple is defiled and cancelled.^{xxii} While Daniel is meditating by the Canal desperately trying to

understand what is being depicted, he hears a voice say, “*Gabriel, tell this man the meaning of the vision.*” Immediately a powerful angel, in the form of a man, materializes and comes toward him. Daniel is petrified and falls face down in the dirt. Gabriel lifts the terrified human to his feet and explains the meaning of the ram, the goat and the ruler. Daniel is still to be given more details; he dresses in sackcloth and ashes, fasts, prays and pleads before the Lord for forgiveness for his sins and the sins of the rebellious nation of Israel. Gabriel appears to him again as he is praying and gives a clear insight as to what would happen in the next 490 years commencing with a decree to restore and rebuild Jerusalem—Artaxerxes Longimanus gave this decree on March 14, 445 BC. Gabriel tells Daniel, “*Seventy ‘sevens’ (490 years) are decreed for your people and your holy city to finish transgression, to put an end to sin, to atone for wickedness, to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal up vision and prophecy and to anoint the most holy.*” When 69 ‘sevens’ (483 years) expire Yeshua will come as the anointed one, and “*be cut off and will have nothing.*” This happened in 32 AD when Jesus was crucified, then “*The people of the ruler who will come will destroy the city and the sanctuary.*” In fulfillment of this prediction by Gabriel, the Roman Army under Titus destroyed Jerusalem in 70 AD. The seventieth week is still to be completed.^{xxiii}

The angelic prince of Persia is adamant in his statement to his Legions of Doom. “He has to be stopped” he exclaims again. The hyperdimensional latticework of darkness was pulsating again over the Media-Persian kingdom. A powerful archangel with a body glowing like chrysolite, his face like lightning, his eyes like flaming torches and his arms and legs like the gleam of burnished bronze is struggling to break through into the lattice structure of time. “He is trying to break through to contact that mortal Daniel,” snarls the prince. Just then, a second glowing archangel flashes into the

quantified photon boundary. In an instant, Gabriel penetrates the arch of time “Its Michael” shout the Legions of Doom almost in one voice. Further resistance is futile.

The dimensional shockwave strikes fear into the men with Daniel, though they can see nothing on the bank of the Tigris River, they are hiding in terror. Daniel, deathly pale and feeling helpless, stands alone facing the powerful gleaming angel. Gabriel describes to Daniel, without naming specific names, the movement of armies and national intrigues in the period between Darius the Mede 539 BC to the death of Antiochus Epiphanies in 164 BC.^{xxiv} Yeshua wants this information to be so precise such that in its’ fulfillment, people will pay attention to the prophecy of the “end times.” The “end times” are yet to come and may possibly come early in this 21st century. The movement of prophecy in our ontology is proof of God’s existence. Even though scholars have confirmed the 530 BC era of the writing of the book of Daniel, critics have tried to disprove it because of its historical detail. Dr. Walvoord writes,

Interestingly enough, it was the eleventh chapter of Daniel with its detailed prophecy of about 200 years of history that prompted the heathen philosopher Porphyry (third century AD) to attack the book of Daniel as a forgery. In his study, Porphyry established the fact that history corresponded closely to the prophetic revelation of Daniel 11:1-35, and the correspondence was so precise that he was persuaded that no one could have prophesied these events in the future.^{xxv}

Daniel is horrified by the powerful beast of the fourth kingdom with its large iron teeth and ten horns. This kingdom remains in existence until the “end times”; he continues to describe what he saw,

While I was thinking about the horns, there before me was another horn, a little one, which came up among them; and three of the first horns were uprooted before it. This horn had eyes like the eyes of a man and a mouth that spoke boastfully.

As I looked, thrones were set in place, and the Ancient of Days took his seat. His clothing was as white as snow; the hair of his head was white like wool. His throne was flaming with fire, and its wheels were all ablaze. A river of fire was flowing, coming out from before him. Thousands upon thousands attended him; ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him. The court was seated, and the books were opened.

Then I continued to watch because of the boastful words the horn was speaking. I kept looking until the beast was slain and its body destroyed and thrown into the blazing fire. (The other beasts had been stripped of their authority, but were allowed to live for a period of time.)

In my vision at night I looked, and there before me was one like a son of man, coming with the clouds of heaven. He approached the Ancient of Days and was led into his presence. He was given authority, glory and sovereign power; all peoples, nations and men of every language worshiped him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion that will not pass away, and his kingdom is one that will never be destroyed.^{xxvi}

Note—that this son of man is worshiped—only God can be worshiped. He therefore must be God, the second person of the Trinity, who is incarnated as a man in future history (after the time of Daniel).

Historical and Future Fulfillment of the Visions

When we tie all these hyperdimensional visions together, we get a complete overview of—what will happen on Earth concerning the war of the cosmos between the King of Light and the Prince of Darkness. King Nebuchadnezzar’s dream of the dazzling statue outlined the spectrum of kingdoms that would occur in our material space-time dimension. The head of gold, or the Lion kingdom, was his kingdom (area of Iraq). Next came the kingdom of silver, the kingdom of the combined might of Media and Persia (area of Iran) symbolized by the bear and the ram with two horns. The swiftly flying leopard and charging goat was the kingdom of Greece. The powerful horn symbolized Alexander the Great, who rode a white horse into battle and whose brilliant military strategies rapidly conquered that area of the world, from Macedonia to Africa and eastward to India. Upon the death of this dynamic ruler, at the age of 33 (the same age as Jesus), his kingdom was divided between his top four generals illustrated by the four wings on the leopard and the four horns on the goat. Antiochus Epiphanies, the despicable ruler, reigned in Syria from 175-164 BC. He blasphemed God, contemptuously sacrificed a pig on the altar in the temple at Jerusalem, and massacred thousands of Jews. He is symbolic of yet another ruler to come in the “end times” at the later stages of the fourth kingdom.

The fourth kingdom is a kingdom that exists for a long period of time, which is depicted by legs of iron extending to feet of iron and clay. God’s viewpoint is that it is a powerful terrifying destructive beast with large iron teeth that crushes and devours its victims trampling them underfoot. This fourth kingdom commenced with the Roman Empire—it has survived for 2000 years as “western civilization” and it thought to be revived again in might and power in these “later times” as the European Common Market Group of nations. The time gap between 32 AD and the final last seven years may be coming to a close. Gabriel describes the in between time as a time of

war and desolations, then the end will come quickly like a flood.^{xxvii} The start of the last seven years (the remaining week of Daniel’s vision of 70 weeks of years) will be signaled by a covenant between the nation Israel and a powerful ruler from the revived Roman Empire. Gabriel informs Daniel that—*“The king will do as he pleases. He will exalt and magnify himself above every god and will say unheard of things against the God of gods. He will be successful until the time of wrath is completed, for what has been determined must take place.”*^{xxviii} In the middle of the seven years, this vain powerful ruler will put an end to the newly instituted sacrifices in the temple. He will set up an idolatrous statue of himself and proclaim that he is God.^{xxix}

Let’s take a moment and dwell on this—if the first portion of the detailed prophecy, as outlined by the archangel Gabriel, was meticulously fulfilled—then the last portion will take place. The last portion addresses the future of our modern civilization. The holographic vision given to Daniel, of the beasts proceeding across the spectrum of time before the Ancient of Days, is History encapsulated for us. Daniel sees a futuristic vision of the throne of the Ancient of Days being set in place near Earth in the interface between time and eternity. The throne is flaming with fire; its wheels (possibly symbolizing

The False Trinity

Gabriel informs Daniel that a paradigm shift will occur (sometime future in our modern world) when the prince of Darkness will rule as a false trinity. Lucifer desires to be as God. In a repeat of his prime divergence, he gives two rulers, the antichrist and the false prophet, supernatural powers to cause the citizens of Earth to worship him—the ruler will worship a god of fortresses and attack the mightiest fortress with the help of a foreign god, a god unknown to his fathers. This prediction implies the use of supernatural or alien forces. The ruler will give positions of power to those who follow him.^{xxx}

spiral galaxies in the material universe) are ablaze. Then the court will be seated and the books of judgment opened. All eyes will be directed towards Earth.

The terrible cosmic war that has raged in the cosmos will now be quarantined to Earth. Daniel's holographic vision indicates that the later stages of the kingdom of the fourth beast will be in place. A powerful boastful ruler will be in control.^{xxxii} Michael and his army will have driven Satan and the Legions of Doom from the heavens likely resulting in hyperdimensional UFO sightings, alien contacts and supernatural activity on Earth.^{xxxiii} A Satanically energized being with supernatural powers will be in control of the world's economy.^{xxxiii} A worldwide war will take place. However, the holocaust that he causes will end when the "son of man" defeats him at Jerusalem. Satan and his two rulers are captured. Then one like a "son of man" is given authority, glory and sovereign power, all peoples, nations and men of every language worship him. His kingdom (the Rock or Stone kingdom) is an everlasting kingdom that will never be destroyed.

The Resurrection

"At that time" continues Gabriel, "*Michael, the great prince who protects your people, will arise. There will be a time of distress such as has not happened from the beginning of nations until then. But at that time your people—everyone whose name is found written in the book—will be delivered. Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake: some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt.*"^{xxxiv} Gabriel explains that there is to be a resurrection of the dead to eternal life some time future. Job who lived around the time of Abraham also states, "*I know that my Redeemer lives, and that in the end he will stand upon the earth. And after my skin has been destroyed, yet in my flesh I will see God; I myself will see him with my own eyes—I, and not another. How my heart yearns within me!*"^{xxxv} Isaiah declares, "*But your dead will live; their bodies will rise. You who dwell in the dust, wake up and shout for joy. Your dew is like the dew of the*

morning; the earth will give birth to her dead.”^{xxxvi} Finally, Gabriel tells Daniel, “*As for you, go your way till the end. You will rest, and then at the end of the days you will rise to receive your allotted inheritance... Close up and seal the words of the scroll until the time of the end. Many will go here and there to increase knowledge.*”^{xxxvii} One can only conclude from these Biblical statements that if God exists, for the atheist death by evolution may be a bitter pill to swallow.

Israel and The End Times

God had more to say to Ezekiel concerning the nation of Israel in the centuries to come—

I will take the Israelites out of the nations where they have gone. I will gather them from all around and bring them back into their own land. I will make them one nation in the land, on the mountains of Israel. There will be one king over all of them and they will never again be two nations or be divided into two kingdoms. They will no longer defile themselves with their idols and vile images or with any of their offenses, for I will save them from all their sinful backsliding, and I will cleanse them. They will be my people, and I will be their God. My servant David will be king over them, and they will all have one shepherd. They will follow my laws and be careful to keep my decrees. They will live in the land I gave to my servant Jacob, the land where your fathers lived. They and their children and their children’s children will live there forever, and David my servant will be their prince forever. I will make a covenant of peace with them; it will be an everlasting covenant. I will establish them and increase their numbers, and I will put my sanctuary among them forever. My dwelling place will be with them; I will be their God, and they will be my people.^{xxxviii}

God has made some very bold statements about events in our cosmos. It would appear that not only would Job and Daniel come back to life but King David as well. God will also put his sanctuary amongst the Israelites forever, which means that He will dwell there. Contrary to the emptiness of evolution, God Almighty states that He has a master plan that He is undertaking in our universe. Ezekiel describes a future major war against Israel when they are in a time of peace. This sudden attack is led by Gog of the lands of Magog, Meshech and Tubal, which are ancient names associated with modern Russia countries around the Caspian and Black Seas. Modern day Iran, Syria, Iraq and Libya will also be part of the army. God declares that when this large consortium of nations attacks Israel, His anger will be aroused. A powerful devastating earthquake will occur overturning mountains and crumbling cliffs. There will be torrents of rain, hailstones and burning sulphur. The soldiers will turn on each other; likely religious or national groups within the army attack each other. Nuclear weapons may be involved.^{xxxix}

Biblical scholars are divided as to whether this war initiates the “end times” or is possibly a description of the final battle of Armageddon. In any case, God states that He will bring all nations to the land of Israel for judgment. It will be a terrifying time for the world. National groups will have formed a visible alliance with Lucifer and his Legions of Doom. Satan and his aliens will promote humanistic enlightenment—the quantum leap of the metaphysical will confound the true scientific mind. The average man will rush into this spiritual holocaust to the peril of his eternal soul.

Prophets Isaiah, Ezekiel and Joel forewarn of unusual things that will happen in the heavens, when the Sun and Moon will be darkened and turn blood red. There will be fire and billows of smoke, which may describe the atomic bomb. We may possibly see things that will make the space age science fiction space ship battles become startlingly real. This battle of angelic beings is written

in the Bible in clear understandable statements—religion is about who is worshiped, God the Creator or Lucifer the deceiver. God states through Isaiah, “*I have commanded my holy ones; I have summoned my warriors to carry out my wrath—those who rejoice in my triumph.*”^{xli} “*In that day the LORD will punish the powers in the heavens above and the kings on the earth below. They will be herded together like prisoners bound in a dungeon; they will be shut up in prison and be punished after many days.*”^{xli} “*And there was war in heaven. Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon and his angels fought back. But he was not strong enough, and they lost their place in heaven. The great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil, or Satan, who leads the whole world astray. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him. ... Therefore rejoice, you heavens and you who dwell in them! But woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has gone down to you! He is filled with fury, because he knows that his time is short.*”^{xlii} It appears that modern man in his fascination with aliens is being psychologically prepared by Satan to accept his army of fallen angels, when they are driven from realms of the cosmos.

One of the wicked things that humanity can do—is atomic warfare. Zechariah, a prophet, in the sixth century BC, was also given detailed angelic visions. A powerful angel shows him a lead basket and in it was a woman who represents wickedness. The basket is symbolically flown to Babylon in Iraq.^{xliii} It would be very unusual to have a basket with a lead cover unless it symbolizes something unusual—such as something radioactive. Is this something meaningful for our generation? Since Iraq, in 2003, did not appear to be harboring nuclear weapons, this implies that they will be in the area, possibly in Iran, which was ancient Mede and Persia, or that the future world dictator headquartered in Babylon will acquire them. Zechariah describes what will happen to the armies that are gathered around Jerusalem bent on destroying it. “*This is the plague with which*

the LORD will strike all the nations that fought against Jerusalem: Their flesh will rot while they are still standing on their feet, their eyes will rot in their sockets, and their tongues will rot in their mouths....“A similar plague will strike the horses and mules, the camels and donkeys, and all the animals in those camps.”^{xliv} This is an exact description of the effects of a neutron x-ray bomb. Zechariah tells us that there will be a mysterious day. *“On that day there will be no light, no cold or frost. It will be a unique day, without daytime or nighttime—a day known to the LORD. When evening comes, there will be light.”* He tells us further that at that time *“the Lord my God will come and all the holy ones with him.”*^{xlv} Yeshua, looking forward in time as Jesus the suffering servant, says, *“And I will pour out on the house of David and the inhabitants of Jerusalem a spirit of grace and supplication. They will look on me, the one they have pierced, and they will mourn for him as one mourns for an only child, and grieve bitterly for him as one grieves for a firstborn son.”*^{xlvi}

Even as Daniel was given a holographic picture of the throne of the Ancient of days and the son of man coming in triumph before him, Isaiah through the inspiration of the Holy Spirit gives further insights to events of history. Isaiah chapters 24 to 27 reveal God’s viewpoint of what will happen in our cosmology in the “end times.” Lucifer’s kingdom of darkness, which now permeates the spiritual realm around the Earth, may once again be manifested in the physical domain of man. Natural and hyperdimensional will coexist with the possible return of the Nephilim (also called Anunnaki by modern writers). The overview of the “end times” begins at chapter 24 where the Lord says that He is going to lay waste Earth and scatter its inhabitants. Its people have defiled Earth, they have disobeyed the laws and violated the statutes. *“Therefore a curse consumes the earth.”*^{xlvii} This statement appears to reflect man’s technological impact on the environment as well as his spiritual defilement. Jesus states in the book of Revelation that He will *“destroy those who destroy the earth.”*^{xlviii} It will be a time when all nations are in turmoil as Michael and the Angels of Glory

drive Satan and his Legions of Doom out of the heavens. Joy has turned to gloom. Cities lie desolate, houses are guarded and barred. *“Terror and pit and snare await you O people of the earth.”* It will be a time when *“the Lord will punish the powers in the heavens above and the kings on the earth below.”*

Yet there will be shouts of joy by a group of people from the east to the west, *“from the ends of the earth we hear singing; “Glory to the Righteous One.”*” These people are spared from God’s wrath. Then *“the Lord Almighty will reign on Mount Zion and in Jerusalem, and before its elders gloriously.”*^{xlix} *“On this mountain the LORD Almighty will prepare a feast of rich food for all peoples, a banquet of aged wine—the best of meats and the finest of wines. On this mountain he will destroy the shroud that enfolds all peoples, the sheet that covers all nations; he will swallow up death forever. The Sovereign LORD will wipe away the tears from all faces; he will remove the disgrace of his people from all the earth. The LORD has spoken.”*¹ Chapter 26 gives further details about the people from the ends of the earth that are singing, *“Glory to the Righteous One.”* There will be a resurrection, *“But your dead will live; their bodies will rise. You who dwell in the dust, wake up and shout for joy. Your dew is like the dew of the morning; the earth will give birth to her dead.”* Simultaneously this group of living and resurrected ones is taken out of the earthly sphere—*“Go, my people, enter your rooms and shut the doors behind you; hide yourselves for a little while until his wrath has passed by.”*^{li} Jesus spoke to his followers about this time in the future. *“Do not let your hearts be troubled. Trust in God; trust also in me. In my Father’s house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with me that you also may be where I am.”*^{lii}

On Earth, the Lord's wrath will be executed on rebellious mankind and Satan's kingdom. *"See, the LORD is coming out of his dwelling to punish the people of the earth for their sins. The earth will disclose the blood shed upon her; she will conceal her slain no longer. In that day, the LORD will punish with his sword, his fierce, great and powerful sword, Leviathan the gliding serpent, Leviathan the coiling serpent; he will slay the monster of the sea."*^{liii} Leviathan is a symbol for Satan, the sign of the serpent in the Zodiac.

The Lord Will Bring Salvation

Israel rejected the Lord their God, and He gave them a certificate of divorce.^{liv} They have never fulfilled their role as a treasured possession, a kingdom of priests to the nations of the world. Yet in these "end times" there were untold multitudes singing *"Glory to the Righteous One,"* where did they come from? Isaiah, reflecting prophetically on the nation Israel, writes; *"We were with child, we writhed in pain, but we gave birth to wind. We have not brought salvation to the earth; we have not given birth to people of the world."*^{lv}

The major question now becomes, who then will bring salvation to the world. Who is going to crush Satan and take back mankind's right to dominion of planet Earth? Isaiah tells us that God will do it. *"He saw that there was no one, he was appalled that there was no one to intervene; so his own arm worked salvation for him, and his own righteousness sustained him. He put on righteousness as his breastplate, and the helmet of salvation on his head; he put on the garments of vengeance and wrapped himself in zeal as in a cloak."*^{lvi} It is also written in the book of Psalms *"Sing to the LORD a new song, for he has done marvelous things; his right hand and his holy arm have worked salvation for him. The LORD has made his salvation known and revealed his righteousness to the nations."*^{lvii} Yeshua Himself, by His own arm, would step into time to effect a plan of salvation in our ontology, for those who will believe. After that, He will come in judgment.

“Let them sing before the LORD, for he comes to judge the earth. He will judge the world in righteousness and the peoples with equity. The LORD reigns, let the nations tremble; he sits enthroned between the cherubim, let the earth shake.”^{lviii}

It is time.

Notes:

ⁱ Ezekiel 1:4-28

ⁱⁱ Ezekiel 2:1 & following

ⁱⁱⁱ Ezekiel 4:4-9

^{iv} Ezekiel 8:3

^v Blumrich Josef F., *The Spaceships of Ezekiel*, Bantam Books, 1974, quote pg. 91, technical data pgs. 149-172

^{vi} Ezekiel 8:5-18

^{vii} Ezekiel 33:11

^{viii} Hosea 4:6

^{ix} Micah 3:12

^x Isaiah 1:18

^{xi} Daniel 2:5

^{xii} Daniel 2:31-45

^{xiii} Revelation 12:4

^{xiv} 2 Peter 2:4 and Jude 6

^{xv} “Exorcising Demons,” *TIME*, September 9, 1996, pg. 63

^{xvi} Boa Kenneth & Proctor William, *The Return of the Star of Bethlehem*, Doubleday & Company, Inc., Garden City, N.Y 1980 pg. 130

^{xvii} 2 Corinthians. 11:14-15

^{xviii} 2 Corinthians. 11:14-15

^{xix} Rawlings Maurice S., M.D., *To Hell and Back*, Thomas Nelson Publishers Nashville, 1993, pg. 60

^{xx} Rawlings, *Ibid*, pg. 222

^{xxi} Daniel chapter 7

^{xxii} Daniel chapter 8

^{xxiii} Daniel chapter 9

^{xxiv} Daniel chapters 10 & 11

^{xxv} Walvoord John Dr., *Daniel The Key To Prophetic Revelation*, The Moody Press Bible Institute 1971, pg. 252

^{xxvi} Daniel 7:8-14

^{xxvii} Daniel 9:26

^{xxviii} Daniel 11:36

^{xxix} Daniel 7:27

^{xxx} Daniel 11:39

^{xxxi} Revelation chapter 13

^{xxxii} Revelation chapter 12

^{xxxiii} Revelation chapter 13

^{xxxiv} Daniel 12:2-3

^{xxxv} Job 19:25-27

^{xxxvi} Isaiah 26:19

^{xxxvii} Daniel 12:13

^{xxxviii} Ezekiel 37:21-27

^{xxxix} Ezekiel Chapter 38

^{xl} Isaiah 13:3

^{xli} Isaiah 24:22-22

-
- xlii Revelation 12:7-9,12
 - xliii Zechariah 5:7-11
 - xliv Zechariah 14:12, 15
 - xlv Zechariah 14:5-7
 - xlvi Zechariah 12:10
 - xlvii Isaiah 24:1-6
 - xlviii Revelation 11:18
 - xlix Isaiah 24:14-23
 - l Isaiah 25:6-8
 - li Isaiah 26:19-20
 - lii John 14:1-3
 - liii Isaiah 26:21-27:1
 - liv Jeremiah 3:8
 - lv Isaiah 26:18
 - lvi Isaiah 59:16-17
 - lvii Psalms 98:1-2
 - lviii Psalms 98:9-99:1

Chapter 24

It Is Time

It is early morning in the little hill top town of Nazareth. The sweet scent of flowers drifting amongst the trees and the trilling songbirds are hardly noticeable to the young maiden walking home from the water fountain with a jug of water on her head. Several days have passed since her morning had been so unusually disrupted. Suddenly, out of nowhere a glowing angel appeared. She had been momentarily terrified, but there was an air of peace and tranquility about him. Mary pauses as several laughing children run by. Her face forms a quizzical frown as she remembers her troubled reaction to the angel's dramatic opening words, "*Greetings, you who are highly favored! The Lord is with you.*" What kind of greeting was that? Her heart races as she remembers the angel's Earth shattering words,

"Do not be afraid, Mary, you have found favor with God.

You will be with child and give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus.

He will be great and will be called the Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his father David, and he will reign over the house of Jacob forever; his kingdom will never end."

"How will this be," Mary asked hesitantly, *"since I am a virgin?"*

The angel answered, *“The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you. So the holy one to be born will be called the Son of God.”ⁱ*

What is happening in these times she wonders, and unconsciously catches her balance as the jug of water almost tips off her head? Her cousin Elizabeth, an older woman, who has never been able to have a child—is now pregnant, and her husband Zechariah, a priest, had been confronted by the same angel, Gabriel, near the altar of incense in the great temple at Jerusalem. Gabriel had informed him that he would have a son—his name is to be John, and that the boy would be great in the sight of the Lord.

The Incarnation of The Son

There was love and communication within the Godhead of Father, Son and Holy Spirit. Yeshua speaks with a heavy heart,

“It is time.”

“You will no longer be Omnipotent, Omnipresent or Omniscient,” says the Ancient of Days compassionately.

“I shall be sustained by the Holy Spirit,” He replies.

“Here then” are the words of the Father, “Take this coat of many colors and your sword of truth for We shall be with you always.”

Then in a moment of superluminal nonlocal action by the power of the Holy Spirit, time begins—a miracle occurs! The

Yeshua’s Mystery

In the virgin birth, Yeshua defies the curse of Jehoiachin. Jesus is born of Mary in the line of Judah through Nathan, a son of David, while Joseph, also of the line of Judah through Solomon, is of the regal line. Thus, Jesus inherits the legal title to the throne of David.

pulsing roar is deafening in the cavernous tunnel. It is almost dark. A hot mist is blowing from the direction in which He must proceed. That means that it is coming. He moves slowly forward on the rubbery floor, coat about Him with sword in hand. His heart is pounding. Now—He can hear the swish as it comes towards Him. Apprehensively He moves forward—there! There before him almost upon Him, is a towering semiluminescent ball glowing with corona radiata. He knows what He must do—quickly he rushes forward and strikes a slit in the towering ball with the sword of truth, then, with graceful agility, steps through the slashed opening into a magnificent orb of rainbow flashing lights—a powerful voice speaks.

“What have you brought?” says king Mitosis.

“I have brought my coat of many colors and my sword of truth” responds Yeshua with determination.

“That is enough,” pronounces king Mitosis, “then it shall begin.”

Suddenly, great colored spindle like bolts of lightning radiate the glob fastening upon He who is Divine and that, which is mortal. The Spirit of Life meets the image—the breath of life, and the great biological machine that He had created begins the process of weaving form and context of mortality around His eternal Spirit. Yeshua will be wholly God and wholly man. He will be Jesus, the Seed of the women. He will be the God-man, the Son of God, the son of man, a sinless second Adam, the Lamb of God, the suffering servant, and the Lion of Judah. He will be the ultimate contesteer against Satan for the lives of mankind and dominion of planet Earth. He will be King of Kings and Lord of Lords for all time and Eternity—but first the battle of the ages must be consummated.

C.S. Lewis, who was a professor at Cambridge University, discusses this miracle of Immaculate Conception in his book *Miracles*.

The early Christians believed that Christ was the son of a virgin, but we know that this is a scientific impossibility. Such people seem to have an idea that belief in miracles arose at a period when men were so ignorant of the cause of nature that they did not perceive a miracle to be contrary to it. A moment's thought show this to be nonsense: and the story of the Virgin Birth is a particularly striking example.

When St. Joseph discovered that his fiancée was going to have a baby, he not unnaturally decided to repudiate her. Why? Because he knew just as well as any modern gynaecologist that in the ordinary course of nature women do not have babies unless they have lain with men. No doubt the modern gynaecologist knows several things about birth and begetting which St. Joseph did not know. But those things do not concern the main point—that a virgin birth is contrary to the course of nature. And St. Joseph obviously knew that. In any sense in which it is true to say now, “The thing is scientifically impossible,” he would have said the same: the thing always was, and was always known to be, impossible unless the regular processes of nature were, in this particular case, being overruled or supplemented by something from beyond nature.

When St. Joseph finally accepted the view that his fiancée's pregnancy was due not to unchastity but to a miracle, he accepted the miracle as something contrary to the known order of nature. All records of miracles teach the same thing. In

such stories the miracles excite fear and wonder (that is what the very word miracle implies) among the spectators, and are taken as evidence of supernatural power.ⁱⁱ

It is late afternoon as Joseph, a gentle man with the callused hands of a carpenter, walks slowly towards Bethlehem leading a donkey carrying his most treasured possession, his young wife Mary. He looks at her with a deep love in his heart. She is very pregnant; he is deeply worried as they travel slowly with friends and relatives. Caesar Augustus has issued a decree that a census should be taken of the entire Roman world. Joseph sighs—just at the wrong time for Mary—they are forced to go to Bethlehem to register, as he and Mary are from the kingly lineage of David of the tribe of Judah. They hope to stay with relatives. He gently leads the donkey to the side of the road as several Roman soldiers push by.

Mary returns his smile. She is tired and uncomfortable; her face is drawn in pain—at least they will be in Bethlehem by nightfall. His name will be Jesus he thinks to himself, smiling in worried anticipation. Only he and Zechariah know the gender of their unborn children and their names. The boy will be his adopted son, as he has had no sexual union with Mary. He had been startled and deeply depressed when Mary had come to him and told him that she was pregnant. She is such a gentle God-fearing girl; her story was so extraordinary, he had not known what to say. She had been so intense as she looked at him with those deep reflective eyes that he knew the words were coming from her soul.

He looks ahead. They are almost there. Soft pinkish wisps are forming on the distant clouds. The sun, like a golden ball, will soon set. He feels uncertain, yet, at peace—something bigger than he can ever imagine must be happening. His upset regarding her pregnancy had vanished when he had received that dream. It was so dynamic that he still is not sure if it was real or a vision. An

angel of the Lord had appeared and said, “*Joseph son of David, do not be afraid to take Mary home as your wife, because what is conceived in her is from the Holy Spirit. She will give birth to a son, and you are to give him the name Jesus, because he will save his people from their sins.*”ⁱⁱⁱ How will this mysterious child save his people from their sins, he ponders, as they take the last steps into Bethlehem?

The little village is bustling with visitors, no room—no room is all he hears. Not only had the census been called but also the feast of Tabernacles is underway. At last, one kind innkeeper, or relative^{iv}*4 settles them in his animal shelter. Light from the flickering torches dance on the walls, Joseph paces as the agony of childbirth wracks the body of the woman he loves. According to the custom of the time, a midwife likely helps with the birth, wraps the baby in swaddling cloths and lays him in a manger. As the birth-cries stop His little fingers open and close. His dark eyes can sense the light. His body can feel the cloth. His ears can hear sounds, yet, still unseen are the two awestruck parents as they look down on this miraculous wonder. The Son of God, the embodiment of love, has come into the world. Light has penetrated the darkness.

Satan is content, as he looks down from his throne in the celestial web of darkness at the slowly rotating planet. Jerusalem is in the firm grip of his legions. The Jews have shunned his attempts at idolatry. The Roman Empire has killed tens of thousands of them in an attempt to make them bow to the gods of Caesar. However, they have become so steeped in their religious rules that they can't bring light to themselves or the Gentiles. No God fearing prophet has caused trouble for some 400 years. Satan smiles vainly to himself; Yeshua must now recognize that he, Lucifer, will never be crushed. Just then, the hyperdimensional defense network system over Persia and Israel

screams a triple A alarm, his commanders scramble into action—a large star like ball of radiant energy, the Shekinah Glory has penetrated space-time over Persia, from where it had departed centuries ago, and is heading slowly towards Israel. The Prince of Persia and his hyperdimensional UFOs flee from its radiant Glory. “What is the anticipated arrival time in Israel,” shouts Satan. “Twenty four months” responds the Prince of Persia. Why so slow wonders Lucifer?

“What is happening in Israel?” he demands of its’ ruler. “There is singing” comes the reply. “Singing” repeats the dumfounded Prince of Darkness. He moves into position to observe this ridiculous situation. A quantum gap has opened up from heaven into space-time. A group of mortals, whom he recognizes as shepherds, are huddled on a small hill absolutely terrified staring at a choir of angels standing just Earth-side of the quantum gap. The angels are joyfully singing, “Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace to men on whom His favor rests.” Suddenly, the quantum gap closes and they are gone. “What is that all about?” mutters the Prince of Darkness as he contemptuously repeats the words “on whom His favor rests.” However, of greater concern is the Shekinah Glory positioned over Persia.

The silence is so still for several brief moments when the quantum gap closes that not even a bleat from any sheep disturbs it. Then the shepherds begin talking all at the same time. “Let’s go to Bethlehem and see this thing that has happened, which the Lord has told us about.”

So they hurried off and found Mary and Joseph, and the baby who was lying in the manger. When they had seen him, they spread the word concerning what had been told them about this child, and all who heard it were amazed at what the shepherds said

to them. But Mary treasured up all these things and pondered them in her heart. The shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things they had heard and seen, which were just as they had been told.^v

It is one of those crystal clear nights over the land of Persia. Magi, great masters of learning, are standing on a high place observing the stars. They are sure that the appointed time is almost at hand. The stars did not twinkle—they glow like bright lights in a dark ceiling. “I can almost reach out and touch one,” thought one of the Magi whimsically.” Suddenly a large star-like glowing ball explodes into the nighttime sky. The Magi gape in wonder at the large ball of radiant light, which is unlike anything that they have ever seen. It seems like it is suspended between Earth and space at a low altitude, and appears to be heading slowly westward towards Jerusalem. The Shekinah Glory is returning. They have the eyes to see it—and they know that they must follow it.

Unlike the Arabians and Babylonians, whose main religious interest was astrology, the Persian faith centered on a belief in Zoroaster, an ancient Persian prophet whose origins are uncertain, but whom some historians have identified as the founder of the Magi caste around 1000 BC Kenneth Boa and William Proctor in their book, *The return of the Star of Bethlehem, Comet, Stellar Explosion, or Signal from Above?*, write,

At the time of Christ’s birth, Zoroastrian priests in Persia taught that there was one supreme god, and they kept no altars or statues in their temples. They believed there were two creators in the universe, one good and one evil, and these two forces were in continual conflict. The good spirit was expected to win

this battle, but before the triumph, the forces of evil would rally and it would be necessary for the good spirit to send a Savior or Sosiosh to achieve the final victory. This Savior, the Zoroastrians believed, would be born supernaturally of a virgin, heal the world of all its strife and then reign a thousand years. From this brief summary of Zoroastrianism, it's obvious that there were many similarities between the Persian expectations of a Savior and the actual coming of the Hebrew Messiah. So if the "wise men" in the Gospel were actually Persian Magi, they could very naturally move into an acceptance of Jesus as the Savior of the world.^{vi}

The census brought the parents of Jesus to Bethlehem, and since it is only several miles from Jerusalem, they were able to fulfill, in the great temple in Jerusalem, the law regarding his birth and circumcision on the eighth day after He was born. A dramatic moment occurs, as they are about to enter the magnificent second temple built by Herod the great.

Simeon is in his late seventies, the light that reflects from his aging growth of white hair, eyebrows, beard and white cloak makes people pause briefly and watch him as he walks in the brilliant sunshine. Today he is deeply moved. It has been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he would not die before he has seen the Lord's Christ.^{vii} The Spirit of God surges within. A song of joyful excitement bubbles in his heart—today is the day. Never has there been such anticipation, amongst those seeking righteousness that the time for the Messiah is near. The 69 weeks forecast by Daniel is almost fulfilled. "And here is a beautiful temple to welcome the Messiah," he thinks to himself as he climbs the stairs to the courtyard. It is then that it happens.

The surge of joy within him is almost uncontainable. Immediately in front of him is a middle-aged man with his young wife carrying her new born infant son held close to her heart.

Moved by the Holy Spirit Simeon gently takes baby Jesus from Mary. *“Sovereign Lord, as you have promised, you now dismiss your servant in peace. For my eyes have seen your salvation, which you have prepared in the sight of all people, a light for revelation to the Gentiles and for glory to your people Israel.”* Then Simeon blessed them and said to Mary, *“This child is destined to cause the falling and rising of many in Israel, and to be a sign that will be spoken against, so that the thoughts of many hearts will be revealed. And a sword will pierce your own soul too.”*^{viii} At that moment, an elderly lady who has worshiped continually in the temple for years also came up to them. She gave thanks to God and spoke about the child to all who were looking forward to the redemption of Jerusalem. Mary and Joseph look at each other and at the little one cradled in Mary’s arms, marveling at what has just taken place. They then travel home to Nazareth.^{ix}

Two years later, (it is estimated that the Magi visit the baby Jesus in a time frame of around two years after He was born), the Magi, with distinctive pointed hats, and their few attendants arrive in Jerusalem. They are hardly noticed by the cosmopolitan crowd milling back and forth through the city gates. What did attract attention, causing an unsettling disturbance, was their persistent question *“Where is the one who has been born King of the Jews? We saw his star in the east and have come to worship him.”*^x It’s not long before they came to the attention of King Herod.

Satan is perturbed. The Shekinah Glory has proceeded slowly from Persia and is now over Jerusalem. Since it is Spiritual Glory it is not visible to everyone, “but who is there that can see it, and what is its significance,” he ponders to himself. He did not have long to wait for the answer. His ruler of Jerusalem flashes into his presence.

“I was standing behind King Herod when Magi, from our prince of Persia’s kingdom, were brought into his audience” he reports excitedly, (like someone who has discovered something incredible).

“They wanted to know, “Where is the one who has been born king of the Jews? We saw his star in the east and have come to worship him.”

“WHAT!?” Explodes Satan with such force that the startled ruler hesitates. “That caused a considerable commotion,” he continues, “until it was determined by the priests that the ancient prophetic scroll of Micah recorded, “‘But you, Bethlehem, in the land of Judah, are by no means least among the rulers of Judah; for out of you will come a ruler who will be the shepherd of my people Israel.’”^{xi}

“I have instructed Herod to have the Magi return and tell us where this mortal is. He must be less than two years old since this is when they first saw the star. We will have the child killed,” the ruler concludes.

The Magi with their new information leave Jerusalem and start southward towards Bethlehem. However, the star turns and leads them northwards towards Nazareth and in faith they follow as they have done for two years. The star continues until it stops over the house where Joseph, Mary and Jesus are living. They go in and worship Him, giving Him gifts of gold, incense and myrrh. Several days later, the Shekinah Glory disappears. Matthew records that the Magi were warned in a dream about Herod and returned back to Persia by another route. The Magi had likely traveled westward from Arabia to Jericho and then to Jerusalem on a route north of the Dead Sea. Thus, they were able to continue northeastward from Nazareth towards Damascus, in what is now Syria, and quickly escape from Herod’s territory. When they had gone, an angel of the Lord

appeared to Joseph in a dream. *“Get up,” he said, “take the child and his mother and escape to Egypt. Stay there until I tell you, for Herod is going to search for the child to kill him.”*^{xii} Joseph immediately packed up his family, their meager belongings, the gold, incense and myrrh to sustain them and departed that night. This is an interesting logistical move, since Joseph and family would have traveled southward along the coastline of the Mediterranean Sea to Egypt. Thus, if Herod’s men were trying to track the Magi northward to Nazareth and Joseph’s house, Joseph had long since gone in the opposite direction.” Satan, realizing that he has been outwitted, has Herod kill all the boys up to two years old in Bethlehem. “No one would crush his head!

The Star of Bethlehem

There has been considerable debate about the Star of Bethlehem. Most people look for some natural phenomena. However, this is not likely since the movement of the star does not fit natural explanations. It appears, it moves slowly westward towards Jerusalem, it stops, turns northward to Nazareth and then shines specifically on the house where Jesus lives. All people or astronomers of that day do not see it. Therefore, its cause is most likely supernatural even as the birth of Jesus was supernatural. Symbolically the Shekinah Glory returned from the east, the direction that it departed when Ezekiel saw it leave the temple. Thus, the return of the Shekinah Glory to Jerusalem represents the coming of the Messiah as a Spiritual Light to this dark world. The Light is manifested to both the Jews and the Gentiles. The shepherds represent Israel, and the Magi the Gentile nations.

Prophetic Proof

Several years after Joseph and his family escaped to Egypt, King Herod dies. An angel informs Joseph that he can return to Israel. The family settles again in Nazareth. Eleven prophecies in the Old Testament are fulfilled from the birth of Jesus through to his return to Nazareth. He is

from the seed of Abraham, the tribe of Judah, the line of Jesse, the house of David, born of a virgin, born in Bethlehem, called a Nazarene, called as a son out of Egypt, the weeping in Bethlehem (Rachel) at the slaughter of the children and He shall be Immanuel-God with us. It has been shown that the writing of the Bible has been supernaturally inspired. The proof for the existence of God is His prophetic activity in formulating history. Thus, for us to believe that Jesus is God, His birth, life, death and resurrection must be prophetic actions that are strictly and specifically implemented in our real space-time world—there can be no morphed prophecies. It is statistically amazing that “322 distinct predictions were literally fulfilled in Christ.”^{xiii} There is a higher probability of hitting the moon with a bow and arrow than for all these predictions to be fulfilled in one man. Added to this, are the fulfilled prophecies concerning the temple, the nation of Israel and the judgment of the nations.

This one man, then, must be of a Divine nature such that the implementation of these prophesied events were predestined to be completed in our ontology. In fact, Jesus, after his resurrection, would say to the two men on the road to Emmaus; “*How foolish you are, and how slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! Did not the Christ have to suffer these things and then enter his glory?*” Then beginning with Moses and all the Prophets, he explained to them what was said in all the Scriptures concerning himself.^{xiv}

Jesus is God

Who is this innocent helpless baby in Mary’s arms? Can He really be “Immanuel-God with us?” God has left us no uncertainty to this question. John, the apostle of Jesus, tells us that “*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*”^{xv} Jesus accepted worship that is reserved for God. His disciples worshiped Him, a leper adored Him, a man born blind adored Him and Thomas, his disciple, exclaimed “*My Lord and my God.*”^{xvi} Jesus states

clearly; *“I and the Father are one.”* The Jews picked up stones to stone him, but Jesus said to them, *“I have shown you many great miracles from the Father. For which of these do you stone me?”* *“We are not stoning you for any of these,”* replied the Jews, *“but for blasphemy, because you, a mere man, claim to be God.”*^{xvii} This is a fundamental question—is Jesus God? He is either Lord, liar or lunatic, says Lewis,

I am trying here to prevent anyone saying the really foolish thing that people often say about Him: ‘I’m ready to accept Jesus as a great moral teacher, but I don’t accept His claim to be God.’ That is the one thing we must not say. A man who was merely a man and said the sort of things Jesus said would not be a great moral teacher. He would either be a lunatic—on a level with the man who says he is a poached egg—or else he would be the Devil of Hell. You must make your choice. Either this man was, and is, the Son of God: or else a madman or something worse.

You can shut Him up for a fool, you can spit at Him and kill Him as a demon; or you can fall at His feet and call Him Lord and God. But let us not come up with any patronizing nonsense about His being a great human teacher. He has not left that open to us. He did not intend to.^{xviii}

It might be argued, by some, that the statements from his apostles concerning His Deity are out of the New Testament—so is there any way to go back to the Old Testament and find out if Jesus is who He claims to be—God? If the Bible is the inspired word of God, and Jesus is the Creator and sustainer of our universe, then, He may very well have authenticated His presence as the man Jesus Christ in prophetic code in the Old Testament, such that there would be no excuse not to believe in His Deity. Yacov Rambsel has uncovered this level 2 code in the Scriptures. It

authenticates that Jesus Christ is God. Ramsel writes, “There is a magnificently splendid insight that gives absolute proof that Jesus (Yeshua...) is none other than the Lord (Jehovah ...) and Creator. We need not look too far nor go beyond the boundaries of the Word of God to receive His awesome truth. Truly, He has put His signature throughout His divinely inspired written Word.”^{xxix} A few of the hidden codes discovered by Ramsel are as follows. Clear level 1 and 2 meanings are given in Leviticus 9:2-3. Level 1 discusses the sin offerings for Israel. Level 2 code says, “Yah Yeshua El” which means “Lord Jesus” and “God.”^{xxx} In Exodus 12:27, level 1 discusses the Passover sacrifice. Level 2 code gives the words for lamb, Messiah and Yeshua. In Exodus 15:27 where it talks about twelve springs of water and seventy palm trees, the words “Jehovah Yeshua” meaning ‘Lord Jesus’ were encoded. Genesis 49:18 contain the encoded words “Yeshua Jehovah.” Lewis stated that Jesus did not leave us in doubt that He claimed to be God; Ramsel echoes these thoughts,

Can we ever doubt that Jesus really is Jehovah, our Lord God? It is no wonder why the world hates His name so much. It brings us to a place of ultimate decision—to accept Him or reject Him on the basis of the scientific information available. In Yeshua we have a sure foundation.^{xxxi}

Jesus is a man of history. F.F. Bruce, a professor of Biblical criticism and exegesis, writes, “Some writers may toy with the fantasy of a ‘Christ-myth’ but they do not do so on the ground of historical evidence. The historicity of Christ is as axiomatic for an unbiased historian as the historicity of Julius Caesar. It is not historians who propagate the ‘Christ-myth’ theories.”^{xxxii} Outside the Church Fathers, Polycarp, Eusebius, Irenaeus Ignatius, Justin and Origin to name a few, there are many non-Biblical sources for the historicity of Jesus—such as Cornelius Tacitus (born AD 52-54), Seutonius (AD 120), Plinius Secundus (AD 112), Tertullian (AD 197), Thallus (AD 52)

and Flavius Josephus (born AD 37) all refer to Jesus in their writings.^{xxiii} Flavius Josephus, a famous Jewish historian who wrote at the time of the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 AD, writes,

Now, there was about this time Jesus, a wise man, if it be lawful to call him a man, for he was a doer of wonderful works a teacher of such men as receive the truth with pleasure. He drew over to him both many of the Jews, and many of the Gentiles. He was (the) Christ; and when Pilate, at the suggestion of the principal men amongst us, had condemned him to the cross those that loved him at the first did not forsake him, for he appeared to them alive again the third day, as the divine prophets had foretold these and ten thousand other wonderful things concerning him; and the tribe of Christians, so named from him, are not extinct at this day.^{xxiv}

Jesus as a Youth

It is now twelve years since Jesus was born. The evening sun is low on the horizon and the family groups are starting to camp along the roadway back to Nazareth. Passover is always an exciting time in Jerusalem. The long trek of some 120 kilometers from Nazareth to Jerusalem is dusty and tiring. They have made a good start of 10 kilometers. "Joseph have you seen Jesus" asks Mary? "No, isn't he with your sisters children," comes the reply. Mary turns to her young sons James and Simeon "Have you..." she starts to say, as two little voices respond, "no mommy." "Maybe He is with Zechariah, Elizabeth and his cousin John," says Joseph hopefully. Frantically they search amongst their relatives, and when He can't be found, they leave the other children with them and fearfully head back towards Jerusalem. They have made this trip for a number of years, ever since their return from Egypt. Nothing like this has ever happened before. Mary clings to

Joseph's arm as they hasten along the dusty track back towards Jerusalem in the full moon light. It is now the second night and He is nowhere to be found. Mary weeps quietly on Joseph's shoulder. "He will be alright honey," says Joseph as he holds his distraught wife. "Trust in Jehovah, He must be alright because of all the things that have happened; remember the angels," he comforts her and concludes, "Tomorrow we will try the temple area." The early morning sun is just peaking into the temple courtyard as Mary and Joseph hasten onto its broad expanse. On the far side, a group of teachers are talking to someone. They hurry over to the group. Just as they are about to speak, the "someone" looks their way—Jesus. Mary's heart jumps with joy and falls with reproach. Taking His hand and trying not to embarrass her young son before the teachers she says tensely, "*Your father and I have been anxiously searching for you.*"

"Why were you searching for me?" he asks quizzically as he looks up at the concerned watery eyes of his mother.

"Didn't you know I had to be in my Father's house?"

But they did not understand what he was saying. Jesus went back to Nazareth with them and was obedient to them. His mother treasured all these things in her heart. Jesus grew in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and men.^{xxv}

Notes:

ⁱ Luke 1:35

ⁱⁱ Lewis C.S., *Miracles*, Collier Books Macmillan Publishing Company New York, 1947, 1960, pg. 47

ⁱⁱⁱ Matthew 1:20

^{iv} Discovery Channel, "Jesus: The Complete Story," Note: No room in the Inn has been suggested to mean –no room upstairs in the relatives house, thus they had to sleep on the ground floor with the animals.

^v Luke 2:16-20

^{vi} Boa Kenneth, Proctor William, *The Return of the Star of Bethlehem*, Doubleday & Company, Inc. Garden City, N.Y. 1980, pg. 17

^{vii} Luke 2:26

^{viii} Luke 2:29-35

^{ix} Luke 2:39

^x Matthew 2:2

^{xi} Matthew 2:6 (Micah 5:2)

^{xii} Matthew 2:13

-
- ^{xiii} McDowell Josh, *Evidence That Demands a Verdict*, Campus Crusade for Christ Inc. 1972, pg. 181
- ^{xiv} Luke 24:25-27
- ^{xv} John 1:1
- ^{xvi} John 20:28
- ^{xvii} John 10:30-33
- ^{xviii} Lewis C.S., *Mere Christianity*, Fontana Books, Williams Collins Sons & Co. Ltd. Glasgow 1987, pg. 52
- ^{xix} Rambsel Yacov, *His Name is Jesus*, Frontier Research Publications Inc. 1997, pg. 117
- ^{xx} Rambsel, *Ibid*, pg. 125
- ^{xxi} Rambsel, *Ibid*, pgs. 117-119
- ^{xxii} McDowell, *Ibid*, pg. 83
- ^{xxiii} McDowell, *Ibid*, pg. 84
- ^{xxiv} Whiston William, *Translation The Works of Josephus*, Hendrickson Publishers Inc. 1987, pg. 480. (The Antiquities of the Jews Book 18, chapter 3, section 3.)
- ^{xxv} Luke 2:49-25

Chapter 25

Jesus

A number of writers portray that Jesus was from an extremely poor family. However, it is more likely that He was from a normal family, struggling to survive—like anyone else’s family of that time. The former viewpoint is usually based on the statement in the book of Luke that Mary and Joseph followed the law of the Lord (Leviticus 12:8) by offering in the temple for his birth, a pair of doves or two young pigeons, which is a poor person’s offering. There is reason to believe that He was born in the month of October at the Feast of Tabernacles rather than in December. Helena, mother of Constantine, chose the December date later in history; it coincides with a Roman pagan feast day honoring the goddess of heaven. With both the Tabernacle feast, in October, and the census occurring at the same time, the price of lambs would be inflated due to the volume of people and the commercialism being conducted in the temple courts. Later Jesus made a point of driving this business from the outer courts saying that this area was a place of prayer for all nations. Moreover, because of the birth of Jesus, Mary and Joseph could not immediately depart again to their home in Nazareth. This extra time in Bethlehem likely used up what meager resources they had brought with them.

Joseph was a carpenter. Today he would be classified as a skilled tradesman; a normal father working to provide a living for his family in an occupied country. It is very likely that he was employed in the rebuilding of Sepphoris, Galilee’s capital, since it was some three miles north of

Nazareth. Sepphoris was a beautiful Greek-Roman metropolis constructed with white and colored marble. Its' luxurious villas, colonnaded streets and an imposing theater enthralled and entertained multinational crowds. Like all other boys from God fearing Jewish families Jesus learned to read and write and studied the Torah. It is interesting that Sepphoris is not mentioned in the scriptures while Tiberias Herod's winter resort town, situated some 15 miles to the northeast of Nazareth, is only mentioned in association with the people who came from it to see Jesus. He appears to have avoided these two cities of wealth and power, though he was aware of the worldly culture of Sepphoris, since He used the word hypocrite, a Greek actor, to describe a person who acts falsely in public. His parables were also drawn from real life situations. The use of parables by Jesus is a fulfillment of a prophecy in the book of Psalms. *"O my people, hear my teaching; listen to the words of my mouth. I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter hidden things, things from of old."*ⁱ

Galilee was considered by the Jews of Jerusalem to be backward and uncultured. However, the area of Galilee was to play an important part in the cosmic battle of the Light penetrating the darkness. Isaiah prophesied that *"Nevertheless, there will be no more gloom for those who were in distress. In the past he humbled the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, but in the future he will honor Galilee of the Gentiles, by the way of the sea, along the Jordan—The people walking in darkness have seen a great light; on those living in the land of the shadow of death a light has dawned."*ⁱⁱ Philip Yancey in his book, *The Jesus I Never Knew*, describes Sepphoris and the relationship of Galilee to Jerusalem.

For all its prosperity and political activism, Galilee got little respect from the rest of the country. It was the farthest province from Jerusalem and the most backward culturally. Rabbinic literature of the time portrays Galileans as

bumpkins, fodder for ethnic jokes. Galileans who learned Hebrew pronounced it so crudely that they were not called on to read the Torah in other synagogues. Speaking the common language of Aramaic in a slipshod way was a telltale sign of Galilean roots (as Simon Peter would one day find out, betrayed in a courtyard by his rural accent). The Aramaic words preserved in the Gospels show that Jesus, too, spoke in that northern dialect, no doubt encouraging skepticism about him. “How can the Christ come from Galilee” “Nazareth! Can anything good come from there?”

Other Jews regarded Galilee as lax about spiritual matters as well. One Pharisee, after eighteen fruitless years there, lamented, “Galilee, Galilee, you hate the Torah!” Nicodemus, who stuck up for Jesus, was silenced by the rebuke, “Are you from Galilee too? Look into it, and you will find that a prophet does not come out of Galilee.” Jesus’s own brothers encouraged him, “You ought to leave here and go to Judea.” From the perspective of the religious power base in Jerusalem, Galilee seemed a most unlikely place for the Messiah to arise.ⁱⁱⁱ

Jesus the Man

Jesus was plainly ordinary, so ordinary that it was not until His death and resurrection that James understood that his half-brother Jesus was God incarnate. It would be an overwhelming feeling to consider that your big brother was God, and then remember all the rough times that you had given him as a sibling. What makes the incarnation so incomprehensible for mortal man is that the Essence of the Second Person of the Trinity gave up everything that was eternal and wrapped himself in a biological coat of mortality. “*Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality*

with God something to be grasped, but made himself nothing, taking the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness.”^{iv}

Yeshua, as Jesus, increased in wisdom and stature as the complexity of his biological encasement grew. At the age of twelve in the temple, He was becoming conscious of His eternal Essence, and like all preteens was expanding His depth of knowledge. That He did all sorts of magical things as a child is pure fantasy. He was sustained by the power of the Holy Spirit and did not do any miracles unless the power of the Holy Spirit was upon Him. When He commenced His ministry at the age of 30, under the power of the Holy Spirit, the people of Nazareth thought that He had gone weird. *“They said, ‘Is this not Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How can he now say, ‘I came down from heaven?’”^v*

It is one thing to create something, and it is another to become that something that you have created. Yet, that is what Yeshua did, He created the human biological machine to give the eternal spiritual essence of its individual will the opportunity to learn spiritual perfection. How else can mortal freedom learn the essentials of eternity, love, compassion, self-giving, humility and servanthood? Yeshua came with love and compassion, He was faithful and yet learned obedience. We do not think of God learning, however the scriptures say; *“Although he was a son, he learned obedience from what he suffered and, once made perfect, he became the source of eternal salvation for all who obey him.”^{vi}* Yancey writes,

During that wrinkle in time known as the Incarnation, God experienced what it is like to be a human being. In thirty-three years on earth, God’s Son learned about poverty and about family squabbles and social rejection and verbal abuse and betrayal. He learned, too, about pain. What it feels like to have an accuser leave the red imprint of his fingers on your face. What it feels like to have a

whip studded with metal lashed across your back. What it feels like to have a crude iron spike pounded through muscle, tendon, and bone. On earth, God's Son "learned" all that. God's character did not permit the option of simply declaring about this defective planet, "It doesn't matter." God's Son had to encounter evil personally in a way that perfect deity never before encountered evil. He had to forgive sin by taking on our sin. He had to defeat death by dying. He had to learn sympathy for human beings by becoming one.^{vii}

Jesus was faithful on Earth before the Righteous Father in heaven. *"Faithfulness springs forth from the earth, and righteousness looks down from heaven.... Righteousness goes before him and prepares the way for his steps."*^{viii} *"The heavens praise your wonders, O LORD, your faithfulness too, in the assembly of the holy ones. For who in the skies above can compare with the LORD? Who is like the LORD among the heavenly beings? In the council of the holy ones God is greatly feared; he is more awesome than all who surround him."* *"Righteousness and justice are the foundation of your throne; love and faithfulness go before you. Blessed are those who have learned to acclaim you, who walk in the light of your presence, O LORD."*^{ix} The Light has penetrated the darkness, but would the darkness comprehend Him?

The Baptism of Jesus

The Legions of Doom are in council before the Prince of Darkness. The ruler of Israel is just finishing his report.

"I just do not like the situation, something is wrong but I can't tell what it is," he states lamely.

“Explain” demands the Prince of Darkness.

“There is this man called John who is dressed in clothes made with camel’s hair. He has wandered around the desert for years eating locusts and wild honey. Now, he is going around saying ‘Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near, prepare the way for the Lord, make straight paths for him.’”

“So what” said Satan, “no one will listen to him.”

“That is the problem, people are listening. They are coming to him from everywhere. They are confessing their sins and he is baptizing them in the Jordan River.”

“Maybe they stink” interrupts a demon. The council bursts into taunting laughter.

“I just do not like it,” finishes Israel’s ruler.

“I will come and take a look when we conclude,” pronounces Satan.

Satan and the ruler are standing unseen amongst a group of their followers, of the elite Pharisees and Sadducees, watching John baptizing in the Jordan River. He looks towards them and proclaims loudly.

“You brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from the coming wrath? Produce fruit in keeping with repentance. And do not think you can say to yourselves, ‘We have Abraham as our father.’ I tell you that out of these stones God can raise up children for Abraham. The axe is already at the root of the trees, and every tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.

I baptize you with water for repentance. But after me will come one who is more powerful than I, whose sandals I am not fit to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire. His winnowing fork is in his hand, and he will clear his threshing

floor, gathering his wheat into the barn and burning up the chaff with unquenchable fire.”^x

“You are right, he is rather nasty,” said Satan as John turned back to his baptizing.

“But who is he talking about?” muttered the ruler.

Neither Satan nor his ruler was prepared for what happened next. An ordinary man is standing in the river speaking to John. “Let it be so now; it is proper for us to do this to fulfill all righteousness” are the words that filter across to them as the man is plunged under the gently flowing waters of the Jordan River. As the man comes back up out of the water, a powerful blast of Shekinah Glory penetrates space-time knocking Satan and the ruler to their knees. A vortex has formed through superluminal dimensions into quantum space-time from the depths of Heaven. The words of the Infinite Father resound across the river, “This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased.” Jesus and John see the Spirit of God descending like a dove alighting on Jesus.^{xi} The Pharisees and Sadducees see nothing. Satan swirls angrily into his hyperdimensional web of darkness as the vortex closes.

Now that their momentary fear is gone, Satan and the ruler stare at this ordinary looking human. Satan understands all too well the words of the Infinite One, “This is my Son.” The challenge has been given. Here, face-to-face, on planet Earth is the Seed of the woman who will crush his head. “But He is mortal, He appears as nothing, yet His Essence is of the Eternal” ponders the Prince of Darkness. “How did He get here, how did we overlook Him he questions.” Vicious hatred permeates his thoughts, “He must be destroyed.” The network is immediately put on high alert and the council of

Darkness reconvened. The Legions of Doom know that something disastrous has happened, since Satan is extremely agitated.

“This man must be destroyed. Our eternal freedom is at stake,” he thunders. “If He can’t be killed then all the Hebrews must be put to death.”

None of the Legions of Doom dared move for each knew in his being that the latter plan was already trying to be implemented, but Michael was a tough adversary.

“Atomic weapons and all means of mass destruction must be developed. If needs be we will annihilate all mankind. We will succeed.”

“We will succeed, we will succeed.” scream the Legions of Doom as they wave their clinched fists above their heads.

A Clash of Wills

God in the Garden of Eden dictated the rules of the battle. Satan and the Legions of Doom, who are of the spiritual realm, can’t forcibly violate the individual will of a mortal. Nor can they use spiritual energy to terminate a mortal life. People who enter séances, or accept channeling experiments, are willfully opening their wills to the malevolent spiritual world. Satan will have to attack Jesus at the spiritual level and try to incite vanity and pride within the inner man, and/or bring about His destruction by manipulating mortals under his control. By default, all mortals born through Adam are the property of Satan, the Prince of Darkness, usurper of Adam’s dominion of planet Earth. Jesus, knowing that the conflict must begin, is led into the desert by the Holy Spirit.

Sometimes we may try to imagine what it would be like to be someone rich or famous, but usually not anyone impoverished. Imagine if you can, Jesus-God-Second Person of the Trinity who left all power and glory to incarnate Himself into the corporeal form of a sentient creature that He

created. His Spiritual Essence is cognizant of things eternal, but the only power that He will let Himself use in the material realm is the will of restraint. He rests on a large rock in a desert wilderness where He has been for forty days. He is tired and hungry. Standing before Him is a glistening archangel whom He had created sometime in the origins of old. Lucifer (Satan) has been toying with Him as a cat would with a mouse, trying to break His sovereign will. Jesus has withstood the devil's temptations now for forty days. The magnificent archangel looks at the puny mortal sitting in front of him and says contemptuously,

“If you are the Son of God, tell this stone to become bread.”

It is an appeal to the wants of the flesh, even as Eve had desired to taste the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. The man looks straight at the powerful archangel and replies,

“It is written: ‘Man does not live on bread alone.’”

The man is exhausted as he struggles the last few feet. Lucifer has led him to a high point of land and stands arrogantly waiting. In a flash of dimensional-power, a sea of mirages flickers into view around the mountaintop. The man gasps for breath. The kingdoms of the world dance around him as if He were on an island. The archangel seems to glow with sparkling brilliance. If we had been there, I am sure that we would have detected more than a hint of sarcasm as Lucifer bows, and with a flowing movement of his arms states with mock grandeur.

“I will give you all their authority and splendor, for it has been given to me, and I can give it to anyone I want to. So if you worship me, it will all be yours.”

Jesus did not contest this statement, for indeed Adam and Eve because of the lust for power had forfeited their rights as Regents of planet Earth. There was no easy shortcut to regain mankind's rights. In the steadfastness of His will Jesus answers,

“It is written: ‘Worship the Lord your God and serve him only.’”

In a flash of spiritual levitation power administered by Satan, Jesus finds himself, tired and weary, barely balancing on a high point of the temple in Jerusalem. It is stormy with black ominous clouds; a turbulent wind is sifting over the city. Hate wells up in the heart of Satan; how he wants to push this man to his death.

“If you are the Son of God,” he said, “throw yourself down from here. For it is written: ‘He will command his angels concerning you to guard you carefully; they will lift you up in their hands, so that you will not strike your foot against a stone,’” says he contemptuously.

Jesus turns once more towards the Deceiver and addresses the heart of the issue—vanity and pride that had defeated Adam and Eve. He speaks with patient restraint,

“It says: ‘Do not put the Lord your God to the test.’”

In the next instant, He is once again in the desert. Satan leaves him until an opportune time. Jesus returns in the power of the Holy Spirit to Galilee; the first skirmish is over.^{xii}

You Are Testing God

Jesus confirms his Divinity to Satan by this quote. Deuteronomy 6:16 reads “Do not test the Lord your God as you did at Massah.”

Religious and Political Power

Satan has carefully instituted systems of power over mankind. Willful control of people is power; whether it is by religious or political manipulation. The Roman army ruled by physical force and taxed the conquered lands. The benefits were sent to the home empire. Control by combined political and religious power is particularly effective, thus, Caesar was to be worshiped as a god. The bloodshed in Israel was extensive because there was one thing that the Hebrews had learned

after their exile to Babylon—they would not bow to man or idol; there is one God, the Lord God Almighty and He alone is to be worshipped. Rome made the Jews an exception and reluctantly allowed Judaism, otherwise there would have been no one alive in Israel to govern and pay taxes. The Sanhedrin, a religious council headed by the High Priest, ruled under the auspices of Rome. Rome had even taken away the Jewish authority to execute the death penalty as demanded by Mosaic Law.

The temple in Jerusalem was the central place of worship with the priestly order of the Levites controlling the system of grain and animal sacrifices. Synagogues in outlying areas served as places for worship and teaching. The Rabbis had elaborated upon the original Torah, or Mosaic Law over the centuries, until there were extensive volumes of dos and don'ts. The prophet Jeremiah wrote, *“How can you say, ‘We are wise, for we have the law of the Lord,’ when actually the lying pen of the scribes has handled it falsely.”*^{xiii} Interpretations of the Sabbath laws were in continual conflict (modern day Israel has the same problem). The Priests were comfortable with their framework of a God who was now defined by a millennium of documented rules. The underpinning intent of the law was lost. *“This is what the LORD Almighty says: ‘Administer true justice; show mercy and compassion to one another. Do not oppress the widow or the fatherless, the alien or the poor. In your hearts do not think evil of each other.’ “But they refused to pay attention; stubbornly they turned their backs and stopped up their ears. They made their hearts as hard as flint and would not listen to the law or to the words that the LORD Almighty had sent by his Spirit through the earlier prophets.”*^{xiv}

The Question of the Messiah

It is into this religious and political setting that Yeshua-Jesus the author of the law came. Messianic expectations were high since the time predicted by the prophet Daniel was close at hand.

This further complicated the religious and political scene. Popular opinion, based on selected prophecies, was that the Messiah would be a conquering hero who would rescue the nation from the iron grip of Rome. Unexplained were the extensive prophecies that the Messiah would suffer and die. This was the suffering servant Messiah. Few paid any attention to these dire predictions.

It would appear that many Jewish scholars then, and now in our modern world, have not truly formulated the actuality of the Messiah. If the Messiah was, or is to be only a man in the lineage of David, from the Jewish perspective, then the glory of the Israel's kingdom would last only a short few years. That the Messiah should possess the throne of his father David *forever* is incongruous with this concept of mortal regency. The Messiah, therefore, has to be of the something more—supernatural! The concept of Messiah, or Christ, is purely Jewish as it is through Abraham, Isaac and Jacob that the Seed would be revealed in the great battle of the cosmos.

To be a “Christian” means to be a follower of the Messiah—Jesus. Christians should understand that from the Jewish perspective they have borrowed Judaic religious concepts. To many Jews, Jesus is considered to be only a great Jewish teacher. However, they should consider the possibility that Jesus was the long awaited Messiah. The reason is that with the destruction of the temple in 70 AD and the loss of all genealogical records, the prophecy “*The scepter will not depart from Judah, nor the ruler's staff from between his feet, until he comes to whom it belongs and the obedience of the nations is his,*”^{xv} can no longer be fulfilled. Since 70 AD Jesus is the only Jew who has the necessary impeccable genealogical record to fulfill all the prophecies.

There is a much deeper cosmological concern, if the battle of the cosmos is an actuality in our ontology. If Jesus was not God incarnate who undertook a real-space time propitiatory death on the cross and then rose from the dead, then the hope of Christians is in vain. If the Jewish Messiah, yet to come, is only a man the hope of all mankind is in vain. There will be no one to defeat the

Usurper. If the Jewish Messiah, yet to come, is to be God Himself as the Glorious Messiah, then we still have before us all the prophecies of the Suffering Messiah. If the Jews accept the Glorious Messiah first and the Suffering Messiah second, then mankind is still doomed as there is no prophecy outlining the return of the Glorious Messiah.

If we accept that Jesus was God revealed as the Suffering Messiah, then both Jew and Gentile have a great eternal hope with the coming of the Glorious Messiah, the Lion of Judah. The battle of the cosmos then, under this latter premise, is now at a stage in history that is steadily coming into alignment with “end time” prophecy. The nation Israel will face the dire prophecies of Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Joel and Zechariah. Christianity will see prophecies unfold as revealed in the book of Revelation. Jesus, as the Lion of Judah in His Glorious resurrected body, supernaturally appeared some 60 years after His resurrection and dictated the book of Revelation to John, one of his apostles, (Greek *apostolos*: a messenger, one sent forth with orders).

The Four Gospels

The four books Matthew, Mark, Luke and John are not a bibliography of Jesus, but present His Earthly ministry from four perspectives; Mathew as king, Mark as a servant, Luke as a man and John as Divine. The words that Jesus spoke are a complete revelation “*of spirit and of life*”^{xvi} in the war of the cosmos. He came as a prophet; He died to ransom all who would believe in Him. He now serves as a priest mediating on our behalf and He will return as King.

The Declaration of Freedom

The books of Matthew, Mark, Luke and John were written by men who walked the roads of Israel with the man Jesus who was to become known as the great teacher, Rabbi Jesus bar-Joseph the carpenter.

It is Saturday, day of the Sabbath, in Nazareth. People are gathering in the synagogue. Travelers from Galilee have been bringing news all week of a man named Jesus who is teaching the scriptures with great authority. There are also rumors of miracles. The son of Joseph, the carpenter, stands up to read; He is handed the scroll of Isaiah. A harmonious penetrating voice announces, *“The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to release the oppressed, to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favor. Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing.”*^{xvii} All eyes are riveted on Jesus; this teacher is their Jesus, from their hometown Nazareth, amazing! They know his mother Mary, his sisters and his brothers James, Joseph, Simon and Judas. The nice feelings do not last long. Jesus assures them that no prophet is accepted in his hometown and proceeds to offend their religious superiority by reminding them that foreigners are more ready to accept God than the Israelites. In self-righteous anger, they try to push him over a cliff at the edge of town. Religious power is embedded with vanity and pride.

Jesus journeys down to the small fishing village of Capernaum situated on Lake of Gennesaret also known as the Sea of Galilee. It is a large fresh water lake, some 7 miles wide and 12 miles long, fed by the Jordan River. Situated in a large arid valley it is subject to sudden and violent storms. The people are amazed at his teaching, because his message has authority. One Sabbath day as He is teaching in the local synagogue a harsh voice suddenly screeches loudly, *“Ha! What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are—the Holy One of God!”* The confrontation has begun. Satan and the Legions of Doom are watching—would Jesus exercise any divine power over one of their members? *“Be quiet!”* Jesus said sternly. *“Come out of him!”* Then the demon threw the man down before them all and came out without injuring him. All the people were amazed and said to each other, *“What is this teaching?”*

With authority and power he gives orders to evil spirits and they come out!” The challenge has been given; God has intervened in the Usurpers kingdom on behalf of a mortal.^{xviii}

The power confrontations become more intense. The forces of Darkness amass in the kingdom of Israel. As if in an answer to the challenge, demon possession becomes rampant.

The scriptures record that *“Jesus healed many who had various diseases. He also drove out many demons, but He would not let the demons speak because they knew who He was.”*^{xix} Luke

records the encounter with the wild naked man of Gerasenes. This man lived in the tombs and was so demon possessed that he could not be restrained even with chains. *“When he saw Jesus, he cried out and fell at his feet, shouting at the top of his voice, “What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I beg you, don’t*

torture me!” Jesus asked him, “What is your name?” “Legion,” he replied, because many demons had gone into him. And they begged him repeatedly not to order them to go into the Abyss.”^{xx} The

demons were so desperate for some type of corporeal form that they chose to enter into a herd of pigs. The pigs went mad, ran down the hillside into the lake, and were drowned. The people of Gerasenes were overcome with fear and asked Jesus to leave their region. This would suggest that this area was one of Satan’s strongholds of spiritual perversions. Yet, the next time Jesus visited this region of the Decapolis many came to Him to be healed because of this mans witness. Light has

Malevolent Forces

These malevolent spiritual forces deceitfully appear as spiritual guides in séances and channeling sessions in our modern era in preparation for the alien invasion. The Abyss is a depthless place of confinement, a prelude to the eternal lake of fire known as Hell, which God has prepared for Satan and all his followers spiritual and corporeal at the conclusion of the great consequential action. People make choices between Light and Darkness.

power over Darkness. The demonic forces were fearful of being confined to the Abyss before the appointed time.

News spread of a new prophet in **the land** as Jesus continued to proclaim, *“The time has come... The kingdom of God is near. Repent and believe the good news!”*^{xxi} The Pharisees and Sadducees, religious authorities, and teachers of the law gathered from all over Israel to observe Him. Teaching with divine authority, Jesus performed many beneficial miracles. The blind were given sight; cripples, paralytics and people with various diseases were healed. Dramatically, several people were brought back to life after they had died. Nevertheless, what disturbed the religious authorities is that Jesus would say, *“‘Friend, your sins are forgiven.’ The Pharisees and the teachers of the law began thinking to themselves, ‘Who is this fellow who speaks blasphemy? Who can forgive sins but God alone?’”*^{xxii}

Jesus Claims to be God

There is no doubt that Jesus claimed to be God. He made strong provocative statements: *“For I have come down from heaven not to do my will but to do the will of him who sent me,”*^{xxiii} and *“No one has seen the Father except the one who is from God; only he has seen the Father.”*^{xxiv} *“I came from the Father and entered the world; now I am leaving the world and going back to the Father.”*^{xxv} *“And now, Father, glorify me in your presence with the glory I had with you before the world began.”*^{xxvi}

When His disciple Philip asked him, *“Lord, show us the Father and that will be enough for us,”* Jesus answered: *“Don’t you know me, Philip, even after I have been among you such a long time? Anyone who has seen me has seen the Father. How can you say, ‘Show us the Father’? Don’t you believe that I am in the Father, and that the Father is in me? The words I say to you are not just my own. Rather, it is the Father, living in me, who is doing his work.”*^{xxvii}

The Pharisees and teachers of the law, based on their millennium of rules, continued to harass Jesus on the keeping of Sabbatical ordinances and religious traditions, such as the washing of cups, pitchers and kettles. Jesus replies, *“Isaiah was right when he prophesied about you hypocrites; as it is written: ‘these people honor me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. They worship me in vain; their teachings are but rules taught by men.’ You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men.”*^{xxviii} *“For it is: Do and do, do and do, rule on rule, rule on rule; a little here, a little there.”*^{xxix}

The miracles and proclamation of the kingdom of God continues. In frustration, they pick up stones a number of times to stone Him. *“What about the one whom the Father set apart as his very own and sent into the world? Why then do you accuse me of blasphemy because I said, ‘I am God’s Son,’”* questions Jesus? *“Do not believe me unless I do what my Father does. But if I do it, even though you do not believe me, believe the miracles, that you may know and understand that the Father is in me, and I in the Father.”*^{xxx}

A pivotal point in the struggle against Light and Darkness comes when Jesus raises His friend Lazarus from the dead, after he has been in the tomb for four days. *“Then the chief priests and the Pharisees called a meeting of the Sanhedrin. ‘What are we accomplishing?’ they asked. ‘Here is this man performing many miraculous signs. If we let him go on like this, everyone will believe in him, and then the Romans will come and take away both our place and our nation.’ Then one of them, named Caiaphas, who was high priest that year, spoke up, ‘You know nothing at all! You do not realize that it is better for you that one man die for the people than that the whole nation perish.”*^{xxxi}

The religious and political power structures make their decision—Jesus must be murdered. Satan is elated; his self-seeking Earthly minions are doing his will. But who is this God-man who

has come into the world in the great battle of the cosmos? What is the Kingdom of God that Jesus is proclaiming?

Notes:

ⁱ Psalms 78:2

ⁱⁱ Isaiah 9:1-2

ⁱⁱⁱ Yancey Philip, *The Jesus I Never Knew*, Zondervan Publishing House Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1995, pg. 60

^{iv} Philippians 2:6-7

^v John 6:42

^{vi} Hebrews 5:8-9

^{vii} Yancey, *Ibid*, pg. 271

^{viii} Psalms 85:11,13

^{ix} Psalms 89:5-7,14,15

^x Matthew 3:7-12

^{xi} Matthew 3:13:17

^{xii} Luke 4:1-12

^{xiii} Jeremiah 8:8

^{xiv} Zechariah 7:9-12

^{xv} Genesis 49:10

^{xvi} John 6:63

^{xvii} Luke 4:18-19, 21

^{xviii} Luke 4:34-36

^{xix} Mark 1:34

^{xx} Luke 8:28-31

^{xxi} Mark 1:15

^{xxii} Luke 5:20-21

^{xxiii} John 6:38

^{xxiv} John 6:46

^{xxv} John 16:28

^{xxvi} John 17:5

^{xxvii} John 14:8-10

^{xxviii} Mark 7:4-8

^{xxix} Isaiah 28:10

^{xxx} John 10:36-38

^{xxxi} John 11:50

Chapter 26

The Face Of God

When we speak of the “face of God,” we are not concerned with looks, but character. The questions of “where is God,” or “how big is God,” or “how can He be something more than all the universe” is a struggle of spatial dimensions. If God were to somehow manifest Himself in our world as a man, and we were to meet him face to face, then the sum of His actions in our Earthly realm would define His personality. God has stated in the Scriptures that the cause of the chaos in our civilization and the increasing entropy of our material world is twofold. The first is that Satan, as Usurper of planet Earth, rules the lives of self-seeking mankind and seeks their destruction. Second, God has also created a schism between the spiritual and the natural. The material world has been subjugated to decay in hopes that mankind will exercise free will, seek Him and repent.

It was shortly after He had returned from the forty days of temptation in the desert that Jesus read from the book of Isaiah in the Synagogue in Nazareth. The reading from Isaiah was, a declaration of an assault against Satan on planet Earth by the Son of God, the chosen Seed who would defeat him. Jesus states that the “*Spirit of the Lord is on me,*” and that He is “*to preach the good news to the poor.*” Satan and his Legions of Darkness, unseen by human eye, now

continuously shadow Jesus. This is evidenced by the spiritually violent reaction of the demon-possessed man to Jesus in the Synagogue in Capernaum.

Jesus came to represent the kingdom of God; He proclaims that it is “*the year of the Lords favor.*” He has been sent for “*recovery of sight for the blind*” and “*to release the oppressed.*”ⁱ What then is the kingdom of God and who are the poor? The answer is that we are all poor in spirit and blind to the things of God. Satan has used the material and the sensual to blind mankind to the existence of God, and that each person needs to repent before the Creator of the Heavens and Earth. We are all oppressed by the Legions of Doom and face an eternal judgment along with them at the Great Consequence, unless we accept God’s provision of mercy and grace. As Jesus reaches out to the multitudes, it becomes apparent by the limited response of the wealthy, that wealth can be an appeasement to vanity and the pride of life. For the most part, it is the average person, the materially poor, the diseased, the disabled and the subjugated that come to the Messiah for physical and spiritual healing.

Hades

Jesus also makes a very startling claim, “*He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners.*” Does this mean that Jesus is going to open all the prison doors and release criminals, or persons who are imprisoned unjustly? No, this statement is a direct confrontation to Satan who controls planet Earth and knows that there is no return from the dead for the spirits of the righteous or the unrighteous. When a person died, before Jesus paid the ransom price by His death on the cross, his or her eternal spirit went into Hades. Hades is the prison for the souls of the dead as illustrated by Jesus in his parable of a rich man and a poor man.ⁱⁱ The gallantly dressed rich man had all he wanted in life, while the poor beggar lay at his gate longing to eat from the rich man’s table, as dogs licked his sores. Jesus explains that when they died they both went to Hades. Hades has two

compartments, Paradise and Torments. Paradise is a place of peaceful repose where Abraham, the prophets and all those who are righteous and worship God, await the payment of the ransom and the resurrection. Torments, a place of sweltering heat, holds the wicked dead and the fallen angels who disobeyed the Prime Directive of God by having intercourse with the human race. A great impassable chasm separates the two compartments.

The rich man went to the compartment of Torments and Lazarus, the beggar, to the compartment of Paradise. The spirits of the righteous in Paradise are called the Prisoners of Hope,ⁱⁱⁱ because when they died, they were waiting for God's provision of salvation. It is these prisoners that Jesus, as Yeshua, would free by the blood of His covenant and thus fulfill the prophesy, "*When you ascended on high, you led captives in your train; you received gifts from men, even from the rebellious—that you, O LORD God, might dwell there.*"^{iv} Jesus, in reading this scripture in Isaiah, was making a direct challenge to Satan that He will free the captives in Paradise and take them with Him to Heaven. Yeshua also speaks through the prophet Isaiah that sometime in the far future, "He will destroy the shroud that enfolds all peoples, the sheet that covers all nations; He will swallow up death forever."^v It is the silky black veil of death that enshrouds this planet of despair.

The Kingdom of God

But what about the kingdom of God, or as the book of Matthew calls it, the kingdom of Heaven? Jesus teaches that it is near, that it is being presented as a possibility to the Jewish nation. The rules of the kingdom of God are the rules of a Contrarian. That is, they are totally contrary to the rules of physical and spiritual power that Satan uses to control the wills of mankind. The rules of Jesus, the Contrarian, are the Beatitudes.

"Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are those who mourn, for they will be comforted.

Blessed are the meek, for they will inherit the earth.

Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they will be filled.

Blessed are the merciful, for they will be shown mercy.

Blessed are the pure in heart, for they will see God.

Blessed are the peacemakers, for they will be called sons of God.

Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are you when people insult you, persecute you and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of me.

Rejoice and be glad, because great is your reward in heaven, for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you. ^{vi}

Jesus continues, *“Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them, but to fulfill them.”*^{vii} *Do not judge, and you will not be judged. Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive, and you will be forgiven. Give, and it will be given to you. A good measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap. For with the measure you use, it will be measured to you.*^{viii}

“But I tell you who hear me: Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for those who mistreat you. If someone strikes you on one cheek, turn to him the other also. If someone takes your cloak, do not stop him from taking your tunic. Give to everyone who asks you, and if anyone takes what belongs to you, do not demand it back. ...Love your enemies, do good to them, and lend to them without expecting to get anything back. Then your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High, because he is kind to the ungrateful

and wicked. Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.”^{xix} “So in everything, do to others what you would have them do to you, for this sums up the Law and the Prophets.”^x

These rules are certainly not those of the kingdom present on Earth today that worships self, and deifies the rich, the strong and the beautiful. *“But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. People will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boastful, proud, abusive, disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, unholy, without love, unforgiving, slanderous, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of the good, treacherous, rash, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God.”^{xi}* This was written by St. Paul some 1950 years ago. The civilization of the “last days” is certainly characteristic of our modern era. But what about the kingdom of God? Jesus takes a group of children beside him and says, *“I tell you the truth, anyone who will not receive the kingdom of God like a little child will never enter it.”^{xii} “The kingdom of God does not come with your careful observation, nor will people say, ‘Here it is,’ or ‘There it is,’ because the kingdom of God is within you.”^{xiii}* This reflects the prophecy made by Yeshua to Ezekiel *“I will give them an undivided heart and put a new spirit in them.”^{xiv}*

The close friend of Jesus, the apostle John, records in John chapter 3 of his writings, an encounter one night between Jesus and Nicodemus, a Pharisee and a member of the Jewish ruling council. One can easily imagine the setting, a moonlit night, a soft gentle breeze is cooling the Mount of Olives after a hot day. They stand overlooking the city of Jerusalem. Nicodemus speaks.

“Rabbi, we know you are a teacher who has come from God. For no one could perform the miraculous signs you are doing if God were not with him.”

In reply Jesus declares, “I tell you the truth, no one can see the kingdom of God unless he is born again.”

“How can a man be born when he is old?” Nicodemus asks. “Surely he cannot enter a second time into his mother’s womb to be born!”

Jesus responds passionately, “I tell you the truth, no one can enter the kingdom of God unless he is born of water and the Spirit. Flesh gives birth to flesh, but the Spirit gives birth to spirit. You should not be surprised at my saying, ‘You must be born again.’ The wind blows wherever it pleases. You hear its sound, but you cannot tell where it comes from or where it is going. So it is with everyone born of the Spirit.”

“How can this be?” Nicodemus questions.

“You are Israel’s teacher,” says Jesus, “and do you not understand these things? I tell you the truth, we speak of what we know, and we testify to what we have seen, but still you people do not accept our testimony. I have spoken to you of earthly things and you do not believe; how then will you believe if I speak of heavenly things?”

At this point, we can imagine that Jesus, Nicodemus and John are looking across the Kidron Valley at the moonlight shining on the sealed eastern gate located in the creamy white stones of the city wall. Jesus continues.

“No one has ever gone into heaven except the one who came from heaven—the Son of Man. Just as Moses lifted up the snake in the desert, so the Son of Man must be lifted up, that everyone who believes in him may have eternal life.

For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.

For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through him. Whoever believes in him is not condemned, but whoever does not

believe stands condemned already because he has not believed in the name of God's one and only Son."

There is one of these lengthy pauses that happen in an intense conversation. The night crickets fill in the interlude with a pulsating orchestration. Nicodemus unconsciously strokes his beard as he ponders what has been said. With a tinge of sadness in His voice, Jesus concludes.

"This is the verdict: Light has come into the world, but men loved darkness instead of light because their deeds were evil."^{xv}

In His discussion with Nicodemus Jesus makes an intriguing statement—no one has ever gone into heaven except the Son of Man who came from heaven. This would imply that Jesus did things that even the scriptures do not record. His reference to Moses and the snake in the desert is an episode that only God could create as a symbolic futuristic event. It is recorded in the book of Numbers that when the Israelites were wandering in the desert they were bitten by an infestation of poisonous snakes. God instructed Moses to manufacture a bronze replica and raise it on a pole. All who looked upon it would be healed.^{xvi} In that sense, the Son of God is in the world, which is a spiritual desert, inhabited by demons and sinful mortals. Jesus is predicting His death on the cross and is saying that all who will in the future look upon Him and believe in Him will be spiritually healed.

If the Garden of Eden "fall" was a real space-time event, then the intrinsic programming within a person is bent, it is biased towards self. The moment-by-moment conscious decisions in the physical realm define a person's spiritual destiny. Jesus is clearly stating that one must believe that He is the Son of God—then the Spirit of God will work in ones life, "to be born again," such that one may be aligned spiritually with the invisible Kingdom of God. In this way, the Light of the Will

of God, the Eternal Father, becomes the Kingdom of God manifested visibly within the world of darkness as the Holy Spirit of God reactivates a person's eternal spiritual essence.

To Be Born Again

If we consider the possibility that there is to be *something more* to our being than this decaying body that we call home, and that we may somehow receive a new glorified body which can live in all physical and spiritual spatial dimensions, then the necessity of a spiritual birth is readily apparent. God will soon have had enough of the devil, fallen angels, demons and willful self-deluded mortals. Each person is under the same warning that God gave Cain, "*sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you, but you must master it.*" From first hand experience the apostle Peter writes, "*Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour.*"^{xvii} To begin to master sin, one first must ask God's forgiveness and believe in the One and only Son of God, Jesus the Messiah.

The next question becomes, is this to be "born again" something that just affects this temporal physical life or is it something that extends into the eternal? If all that Jesus is teaching is a better way of living—and there is no after effect, then it hardly demands the death on the cross of the eternal Son of God. This suggests that there is *something more*, something much more to the meaning of a persons life. All religious systems believe in the survival of being in some sort of indefinable afterlife. However, the Jewish belief is that sometime in the "Day of The Lord," the Messiah will establish world peace and Israel will be the head of all nations under His rule. At that time said Job "*I know that my redeemer lives, and that in the end he will stand upon the earth. And after my skin has been destroyed, yet in my flesh I will see God.*" Isaiah wrote, "*But your dead will live; their bodies will rise. You who dwell in the dust, wake up and shout for joy. Your dew is like the dew of the morning; the earth will give birth to her dead.*"^{xviii} C. S. Lewis writes,

Of all the ideas entertained by man about death it is this one, and this one only, which the story of the Resurrection tends to confirm. If the story is false then it is this Hebrew myth of resurrection which begot it. If the story is true then the hint and anticipation of the truth is to be found not in popular ideas about ghosts nor in the eastern doctrines of reincarnation nor in philosophical speculations about the immortality of the soul, but exclusively in the Hebrew prophecies of the return, the restoration, the great reversal. **Immortality simply as immortality is irrelevant to the Christian claim**^{*xix} (*emphasis mine).

Eternal life is the principle focus of Jesus's teachings, miracles and parables. His ministry on Earth lasted some three years. Because we see ourselves as leading actors in life's cosmic drama, we tend to view this Earthly visitation of the Son of God from our perspective, in a sense horizontally, as mankind and then God. But when we look at what He did on this planet, and listen to what He had to say, it is apparent that we are a subdrama interlude in the cosmic conflict between the Eternal Will of God and the will of Lucifer. It is the incomprehensible love of an Eternal Being for His created creatures that makes us central to the conflict, and the Fathers Eternal will. Eternal life and the Resurrection are not about survival of spirit, but about the creation of a new mode of being for redeemed humanity.

Living Water

It is hot and dusty in the land of Samaria. Jesus tired from his journey sits down by an ancient well that had been dug centuries before by the patriarch Jacob. A Samaritan woman comes to draw water from the well. When Jesus asks for a drink of water she is surprised because the Jews did not associate with Samaritans. In the course of their conversation, Jesus tells her, "*Everyone*

who drinks this water will be thirsty again, but whoever drinks the water I give him will never thirst. Indeed, the water I give him will become in him a spring of water welling up to eternal life.” The woman said, *“I know that Messiah” (called Christ) “is coming. When he comes, he will explain everything to us.”* Then Jesus declared, *“I who speak to you am he.”*^{xx} Water gives life in the physical world, and the Spirit of God is living water that gives eternal life in the spiritual realm.

Wheat and Weeds

There are multiple billions of people living on planet Earth. From the viewpoint of evolution, mankind is a temporary froth of carbon-based molecules with a tendency towards technological self-extermination. God’s celestial perspective is that mankind is a field of mixed wheat and weeds ready for harvest. The wheat will become *something much more* in the cosmos, while the weeds will be burnt in a fiery furnace.^{xxi} Mankind, as sentient biological machines, is seeded with eternal spirits that have been given free will. These seeds become wheat or weeds. It is the self-delusion that we shall be as gods, which deceives us into believing that we are already the *something more*. In God’s cosmological plan, we are a spiritually based free willed creature that can only be part of the *something more* through His eternal provision and will.

Jesus looks ahead to the near cosmological future when he tells his followers; *“I tell you the truth, a time is coming and has now come when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear will live.”*^{xxii} The period of “a time has now come” is the emptying of Paradise at His resurrection. The period of “a time is coming” is the future rapture (snatching away) of those who are alive and believe in Him at the beginning of Daniel’s 70th week of years (2000 years have passed since this was spoken). He continues, *“Do not be amazed at this for a time is coming when all who are in their graves will hear his voice and come out—those who have done good will rise to live, and those who have done evil will rise to be condemned.”*^{xxiii} *“For my Father’s will is that*

everyone who looks to the Son and believes in him shall have eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.^{xxiv} Jesus also refers to this simultaneous double resurrection of the living and the dead,

in the future last days, when He talks to Martha concerning her brother Lazarus who has just died. Jesus says to her, *“I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in me will live, even though he dies; and whoever lives and believes in me will never die.”*^{xxv}

Jesus brought several people back to life after they had died—they were only temporary resuscitations as death eventually claimed each victim. These resuscitations are evidence of an

The Lord’s Third Day

This early 21st century is the Lord’s third day, whereby a thousand years are like one day to the Lord.^{xxvi} There are 1971.3 calendar years in 2000 ancient Jewish prophetic years, (2000 times 360 divided by 365.24 equals 1971.3). Thus, in calendar years since the death of Jesus, around 32-33 A.D, bring us to 2003 to 2004.

eternal spiritual component within a person, since if there were no spiritual component to a corporeal being there would be nothing to resuscitate. Resuscitation implies the reentry of a spiritual essence and the re-energization of the biological machine. Jesus has command over life and death including his own life and death. *“The reason my Father loves me is that I lay down my life—only to take it up again. No one takes it from me, but I lay it down of my own accord. I have authority to lay it down and authority to take it up again. This command I received from my Father.”*^{xxvii}

The people of the harvest of wheat are to be resurrected from death and given a new body that will live forever, or if they are alive at the moment of the paradigm shift, they receive their new body and eternal life without dying. Jesus then teaches that all of the wheat will sojourn with Him in Heaven. *“In my Father’s house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take*

you to be with me that you also may be where I am.”^{xxviii} To show that there is reality to the future *something more*, Jesus takes several of His disciples up to a high mountain and gives them an interdimensional experience as they see Him transfigured in Heavenly Glory.

The supernatural power of the Godhood in the transfiguration did not come down in spatial three dimensions, such as coming down from the sky, but appears as superluminal dilation in the material fabric of space-time. Jesus’s clothes and body glow with a brilliant light. Moses and Elijah, who had lived many centuries earlier, appear with him and discuss things to come. Similarly, as occurred at Mount Sinai, they are surrounded by cloud. Later when Jesus departs to Heaven from the Mount of Olives He is enveloped in a cloud. Is it possible that it is not actually cloud, but opaqueness, a transformation cloud that forms at the dilation boundary in the fabric of interdimensional space? There are no spatial dimensions of up, down or sideways. Thus, when we think of the Legions of Darkness battling the Archangels, Michael and Gabriel, they are struggling to prevent them from breaking through the multidimensional photon barrier. This may be why reported UFOs behave so unnaturally, they are possibly interdimensional dilation vehicles.

Jesus The God-Man

Jesus, the man from Heaven, spoke ponderous thoughts of eternal life, bodily resurrection and of a time when those resurrected will have rooms with Him in Heaven. But, as Francis Schaeffer would ask, what about the “mannishness of man,” for Jesus was wholly God and wholly man. Jesus was not an automaton from the great beyond. He was deeply emotional. He loved, felt joy, was angry, had compassion and empathy. He became tired and thirsty. He felt sorrow, physical pain and mental anguish. He wept at the death of his friend Lazarus, and over the spiritual blindness of the city of Jerusalem. He wore cloths and bathed. His body performed the natural urinary and defecation functions of a mortal. His body bled when it was punctured. He ate and drank with the

wealthy and the poor. He was a guest at many house parties and was accused of being a glutton and drunkard. He was not afraid to be alone and often went into the quiet countryside to meditate and pray. Yet, there was something more, Spiritual Power would flow from him and miracles would happen. It is these miracles that the modern critic tries so desperately to discredit. It is futile to stand in our modern world and extrapolate opinions on events that occurred some two thousand years ago. Opinions are premised on ones chosen philosophy. If ones chosen philosophy based entirely on materialism is that God does not exist, then the outcome of the self-satisfying examination is a foregone conclusion.

Just as the brass serpent that hung on the pole was symbolic of the Yeshua's death on the cross, the supernaturally giving of manna to the Israelites in their sojourn in the wilderness was symbolic of God providing Jesus as the bread of life. The miracles that Jesus performed are *of the something* more categories. He made water into wine. He caused several loaves of bread and a few fish to materialize into enough food to feed thousands people. He performed this miracle twice. This in itself seems to be symbolic. At the meal known as the last supper Jesus takes a glass of wine and states that the wine is representative of His blood which is shed for each one of us. Even as He made water into wine only once, His blood was shed once on the cross for all people. He also refers to Himself as the bread of life. His first appearance in approximately 4 BC to 32 AD was the first symbolic spiritual feeding that leads to the resurrection and eternal life. His second feeding is His prophesied future second coming, which is the actualization of our resurrection and eternal life.

Dramatic miracles of causing the blind to see, healing deformed and crippled people, curing those with various diseases and bringing the dead back to life certainly caught people's attention. Miracles are difficult enough to judge in our modern skeptic world, never mind trying to evaluate what occurred two millennia ago. What makes the descriptions of the miracles by Matthew, Mark,

Luke and John so interesting, is that the people's reactions to the miracles then, is no different than if we were to see one now. Twisted logic can easily rationalize away the superluminal; such is the great chasm between evolution and creationism. Jesus said to a man with a shriveled hand, "*Stretch out your hand*" and the hand was completely restored.^{xxix} Where did the extra muscle tissue come from when the hand was restored? Where did the extra loaves and fish come from as the disciples distributed the baskets of food? Such is the mystery of the interdimensional sustaining power of God.

What of a modern person dying of cancer? Friends are in intercessory prayer, the doctor says there is no hope, the charts are meticulously graphing death, and then there is the reversal. The charts start to graph life and the cancer eventually disappears. The doctors are amazed! What then? There was no flash of light, no dilation of space-time, death was defied, a miracle occurred. Alternatively, was it a miracle? There is so none so blind as he who will not see. To pointedly illustrate to the religious leaders their spiritual blindness, Jesus places mud on a blind man's eyes and tells him to wash in the Pool of Siloam.^{xxx} He follows Jesus's instructions and is healed.

Consequentially, the religious leaders are upset because this event occurs on a Sabbath and they can't believe that the man had ever been blind. The Pharisees question the man's parents and hurl insults at the poor man. Eventually it is the poor man who speaks words of enlightenment when he tells the Pharisees, "*We know that God does not listen to sinners. He listens to the godly man who does his will. Nobody has ever heard of opening the eyes of a man born blind. If this man were not from God, he could do nothing.*" "*How dare you lecture us*", they reply and push him out of the interview. Nothing is so vain as opinionated religious power. Jesus finds the man and tells him that He, Jesus, is the Son of Man (Messiah). The man who had been born blind worships Him, an act reserved only for God.^{xxxi}

The man from Heaven speaks to the crowds, and His disciples, in word pictures called parables. These word pictures are clearly given from the perspective of Heaven and outline spiritual teachings, as well as a complete time panorama of God's plan for the war against Satan on Earth. Jesus refers to Himself as the son and heir of a landowner who rented his vineyard to tenants. The tenants kill the heir thinking they can possess the vineyard.^{xxxii} The vineyard is Earth. The Israelite nation, in league with the Prince of Darkness, is the tenant. Jesus is the heir who is murdered on the cross outside the walls of Jerusalem. Jesus tells the Pharisees and teachers of the law, "*Therefore I tell you that the kingdom of God will be taken away from you and given to a people [Jews and Gentiles who become Christians] who will produce its fruit.*"^{xxxiii}

He then relates Himself to a man of noble birth who goes into a far country (His Ascension into Heaven) to be appointed king and then to return. His subjects—self-deluded mankind—hate him. When He returns he rewards those servants (Christians) who were faithful to him and says, "*But those enemies of mine who did not want me to be king over them—bring them here and kill them in front of me.*"^{xxxiv} Jesus makes it very clear that at the end of this period of time: "*The Son of Man will send out his angels, and they will weed out of his kingdom everything that causes sin and all who do evil. They will throw them into the fiery furnace, where there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears let him hear.*"^{xxxv}

Jesus did not let his disciples falsely conclude that His time with them was to be the time of the Glorious Messiah. He takes them aside and tells them, "*We are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of Man will be betrayed to the chief priests and the teachers of the law. They will condemn him to death and will turn him over to the Gentiles to be mocked and flogged and crucified. On the third day he will be raised to life!*"^{xxxvi} Jesus weeps over the city of Jerusalem and informs the disciples

that “*not one stone will be left on another; every one will be thrown down.*”^{xxxvii} “Teacher” ask his disciples “*when will these things happen? And what will be the sign they are about to take place.*”^{xxxviii}

The Era of The Bride—His Church

The interval after the rejection of Jesus as the Messiah is a period known as the Age of Grace, or Church Age. During this time, many people of all nations will believe that Jesus was indeed God incarnate and submit to Him as Savior and Lord. These people are ambassadors for the Kingdom of God on the Earth.^{xxxix} Jesus then describes what will happen to His followers during an unknown time interval. This interval begins with Israel’s rejection of their Messiah as prophesied by Daniel. There will be wars and conflicts throughout the interval, however, at the end of the age there will be a major conflagration when Satan will attempt to destroy all mankind. Jesus will then come with his legions of Holy angels to subdue the evil being wrought by Satan.

In the book of Daniel, the angel Gabriel had informed Daniel “*the Anointed One will be cut off and will have nothing. The people of the ruler who will come will destroy the city and the sanctuary.*”^{xl} Jesus adds additional details. He tells them that they will see Jerusalem surrounded by armies and that everyone in Judea should flee. “*They will fall by the sword and will be taken as prisoners to all the nations. Jerusalem will be trampled on by the Gentiles until the times of the Gentiles are fulfilled.*”^{xli} His predictions were completed in 70 AD when the Roman army sacked Jerusalem killing most of its inhabitants and deporting the rest as imperial slaves. This period, known as the “times of the Gentiles,” began with the first deportation of the Jews into captivity by Nebuchadnezzar (606 BC). At the present time, the sons of Ham and Japheth rule the world. The times of the Gentiles may be coming to a close with the formation of modern day Israel on May 14, 1948 and the capture of the temple Wailing Wall in 1967.

Satan, the usurper regent of Earth, and his followers are furious at the witness of the followers of Jesus in his kingdom, and throughout the centuries they continue to persecute and martyr them. The intensity of malignant evil will increase, and the environment will suffer abuse as the “end times” approach. Jesus warns his disciples of this future chaos: *“Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. There will be great earthquakes, famines and pestilences in various places, and fearful events and great signs from heaven.... There will be signs in the sun, moon and stars. On the earth, nations will be in anguish and perplexity at the roaring and tossing of the sea. Men will faint from terror, apprehensive of what is coming on the world, for the heavenly bodies will be shaken.”*^{xlii}

End Times

A powerful Satan possessed man will gain control of the world’s governments using a false spiritually sensual demonic driven religion as a means to gain power. The Bible predicts that he will declare himself as God, and erect a statue of himself in the newly built temple in Jerusalem in defiance of Lord God Almighty. The prophet Daniel refers to this event as the *“abomination that causes desolation.”*^{xliii} When you see this happen, flee Judea says Jesus *“For then there will be great distress, unequaled from the beginning of the world until now—and never to be equaled again. If those days had not been cut short, no one would survive, but for the sake of the elect those days will be shortened.”*^{xliv}

Satan will attempt to destroy all mankind to prevent his incarceration in the eternal Lake of fire. The flames of war, famine and death envelop the world. Atomic weapons are unleashed. *“At that time the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and all the nations of the earth will mourn. They will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky, with power and great glory.”*^{xlv} In modern terms, Jesus is telling us that there will be interdimensional dilations and that

the armies of heaven will proceed to battle Satan, the Legions of Doom and forcibly drive them to Earth to be punished with the deceived self-deluded armies of mankind.

The return of Jesus at that time will be dynamic, with powerful flashes of lightning around the world as the space-time dilation proceeds; and yet, there is a mystery. He also tells His disciples that He will return unexpectedly when things are peaceful. It will be like the days of Noah. The world will be filled with false religion, wickedness will abound yet people will be partying saying peace, peace, and then even as the flood of Noah came suddenly so shall the Son of Man return. These two returns are incompatible.

It would appear that even as the Jews do not understand the dual visitations of Yeshua, Christians should be aware that Christ may come at any time for them before the world is enveloped in the wrath of God against Satan and his angelic and mortal armies. This first event is an invisible calling away of his loved ones, and likely precedes the dramatic visible second coming of Christ and His armies by several years. This invisible mystery coming is termed “the rapture” by modern writers. It will startle the world and likely precipitate national power alignments leading to a single world government and a world dictator. The second coming will be at a time when the whole world is at war in the Middle East. At that time, it will be clearly evident that a major supernatural event is about to occur.

When? How shall we know asked His disciples? The nation Israel is often referred to as a fig tree. Jesus tells them that when you see the fig tree begin to blossom after winter is over you know these events are almost upon you. Israel became a nation in 1948 after a long winter of almost 2000 years. He assures them that during this interval the third person of the Trinity identified as, the Councilor, the Spirit of Truth, the Holy Spirit, would come to be present with the believers forever.^{xlvi} Don't fall asleep watch patiently, expectedly for my imminent return says Jesus. In the

parable of the ten virgins, five wise virgins fill their lamps with oil (Holy Spirit) and take oil in jars to wait His return. The five foolish virgins did not take any oil with their lamps. The bridegroom is a long time coming and all ten virgins fell asleep. Eventually when the shout rings out of His return, only the five wise virgins have enough oil for their lamps. They proceed into the wedding supper.^{xlvi}

Jesus went into Heaven as the Son of Man and will return as King. He tells his disciples; *“When the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with him, he will sit on his throne in heavenly glory. All the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate the people one from another as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. ... Then the King will say to those on his right, ‘Come, you who are blessed by my Father; take your inheritance, the kingdom prepared for you since the creation of the world. ... Then he will say to those on his left, ‘depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.’”*^{xlvi} The Great Consequence will be a sad reality for sinful self-defiant mortals and immortals.

The Anointed One is Cut Off

Jerusalem is filled with crowds of people; it is the Feast of Passover. The great celestial clock strikes the year, the day and the hour, what was written must be fulfilled; the day of determination described by Gabriel has arrived. The Messiah begins his ride of triumph into Jerusalem. Are there great columns of marching soldiers, a magnificent white stallion bearing the conquering hero of the cosmos? No, there is a prophet, a gentle teacher, a kind compassionate man named Jesus who He sits astride a lowly donkey’s colt that no one has ever ridden. Tears are flowing from His eyes. Along the road a large crowd of festive people are waving palm branches and shouting:

“Hosanna!”

“Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord!”

“Blessed is the King of Israel!”^{xlix}

In a strategic pivotal moment in the war of the cosmos, the crying king and His kingdom are being presented to the nation of Israel. Jesus weeps and laments,

“If you, even you, had only known on this day what would bring you peace—but now it is hidden from your eyes.

The days will come upon you when your enemies will build an embankment against you and encircle you and hem you in on every side.

They will dash you to the ground, you and the children within your walls. They will not leave one stone on another, because you did not recognize the time of God’s coming to you.”^l

The world has passed through the meaningless Y2K precipice of the new millennium. Yet, is this event of so long ago of Jesus riding into Jerusalem meaningless? On the contrary, it is powerful evidence of God’s interaction in our ontology. Should one accept the authenticity of the evidence, then the approaching sounds of terrorism, war and chaos in this new millennium may herald events predicted by Jesus. The long interval between the 69th and 70th weeks of years may be nearly over. In the last week, the 70th week of years, God will again deal directly with Israel to announce the coming of the long postponed Kingdom of Heaven.

Yeshua predicted through the prophet Zechariah in the sixth century BC, *“Rejoice greatly, O Daughter of Zion! Shout, Daughter of Jerusalem! See, your king comes to you, righteous and having salvation, gentle and riding on a donkey, on a colt, the foal of a donkey.”^{li}* Jesus planned the fulfillment of this prophecy. He asked His disciples to get the colt. However, unless He was God He

could not have also planned His life in the time frame to conclude the 69 weeks of years to the very day that the archangel Gabriel had described to Daniel.

The key to Daniels prophecy is the 360-day year, which is used throughout the Bible. Sir Robert Anderson showed that 69 weeks of years, times 7 years per week, comes to 483 Biblical years; using 360 days per Biblical year amounts to 173,880 days ($483 \times 360 = 173,880$ days). This is the exact interval between March 14, 445 BC, when King Artaxerses gave the commandment to rebuild the walls of Jerusalem and April 6, 32 AD on Palm Sunday when Jesus rode into Jerusalem as Israel's Messiah. Grant Jeffrey writes,

For those who want to confirm these calculations of the period of the 69 “weeks” by working back from our calendar dates; follow this through with a calculator. From March 14, 445 BC. (the date of the command to rebuild Jerusalem) to March 14, AD 32 is 476 years of 365 days each—173,740 days. Add the 24 days from March 14, AD 32 until April 6, AD 32 (Palm Sunday the “cutting off” of Messiah)—twenty-four days. Then add the 116 leap days which occurred during this period (calculated by the Royal Observatory, Greenwich, United Kingdom) = 116 days. Add together ($173,740 + 24 + 116 = 173,880$) and you will get the total of 173,880 days, the exact duration of Daniel's 69 “weeks” of years = 173,880 days.

The first sixty-nine “weeks” of Daniel's vision have been fulfilled to the very day. The last seventieth “week” of seven critical years remains to be fulfilled in our generation. When we thoughtfully and fairly consider the incredible accuracy of Daniel's prophecy, how could we possibly doubt that the remaining

“week” of seven years, the seventieth “week” of years, will be fulfilled just as precisely.^{lii}

Despite the evidence of the Miracles, the religious and political power structure of Israel chose to reject the visitation of Jesus—as Messiah. A series of ecliptic events are now about to occur in the battle of the cosmos between the Divine Light of God and the Prince of Darkness.

Notes:

ⁱ Luke 4:18-19

ⁱⁱ Luke 16:19-31

ⁱⁱⁱ Zechariah 9:12

^{iv} Psalms 68:18

^v Isaiah 25:7-8

^{vi} Matthew 5:3+, and Luke 6:20+

^{vii} Matthew 5:17

^{viii} Luke 6:37-38

^{ix} Luke 6:27-36

^x Matthew 7:12

^{xi} 2 Timothy 3:1-4

^{xii} Mark 10:15

^{xiii} Luke 17:20-21

^{xiv} Ezekiel 11:19

^{xv} John 3:2-19

^{xvi} Numbers 21:4-9

^{xvii} Genesis 4:10 and 1 Peter 5:8

^{xviii} Job 19:25-26 and Isaiah 26:19

^{xix} Lewis C.S., *Miracles*, Collier Books Macmillan Publishing Company New York, 1960, pg. 47

^{xx} John 4:13,14,25,26

^{xxi} Matthew 13:24-30, 37-43

^{xxii} John 5:25

^{xxiii} John 5:25,28,29 and John 11:25,26

^{xxiv} John 6:40

^{xxv} John 11:25

^{xxvi} 2 Peter 3:8

^{xxvii} John 10:17-18

^{xxviii} John 14:1-2

^{xxix} Luke 6:10

^{xxx} John 9:11

^{xxxi} John 9:31-33

^{xxxii} Luke 21:33

^{xxxiii} Matthew 21:43

^{xxxiv} Luke 19:27

^{xxxv} Matthew 13:41

^{xxxvi} Matthew 20:18-19

^{xxxvii} Matthew 24:2

^{xxxviii} Luke 21:7

^{xxxix} 2 Corinthians 5:20

^{xl} Daniel 9:26

^{xli} Luke 21:24

^{xlii} Luke 21:10-11,25-26

^{xliii} Daniel 9:27

^{xliv} Matthew 24:21

^{xlv} Matthew 24:30

^{xlvi} John 15:26

^{xlvii} Matthew 25:1

^{xlviii} Matthew 25:31

^{xlix} John 12:13

^l Luke 19:42-44

^{li} Zechariah 9:9

^{lii} Jeffrey Grant R., *Armageddon Appointment With Destiny*, Frontier Research Publications 1988, pgs. 27-31

Chapter 27

The Transformation

Satan was pleased; his Legions of Doom had done their work well. The pious self-centered religious mortals were extremely agitated. Piety, goodness and truth did not exist unless the religious system sanctioned it. Their centuries of rules and regulations were being flaunted by—that Nazarene named Jesus. In the opinion of the religious power system, the crowds were deluded. Not only that, He was committing the ultimate blasphemy by claiming to be God. The man must be a clever magician, or worse yet, be under Satan’s control. Miracles become meaningless in the shouts of derision.

Satan had first tried to sift Peter, a rough fisherman who believed Jesus. Though Peter was impulsive in his actions, his heart was fixed on the Eternal Word of Life. Once, when Satan had tried to coerce Peter subliminally, Jesus had rebuked Peter. “*Get behind me, Satan!*” he said, “*You do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men.*”ⁱ Judas, also one of Jesus’s disciples, kept the group’s moneybag. He had treated himself to a few coins on more than one occasion. Satan was skillful, a little deception here, a little deception there and he had his man. Then Satan entered Judas.ⁱⁱ “Yes” said Judas to the High Priest who was seeking a secret way to arrest Jesus, “for 30 pieces of silver I will help you find the opportune time to arrest him and lead you to him.” It seemed so innocent, and yet Yeshua had predicted 600 years earlier through the prophet Zechariah that the price on His head would be 30 pieces of silver. Later, after Jesus had been crucified, Judas in deep

remorse would throw the money back into the temple and kill himself. The priests would use the blood money to buy the potters field, which had also been predicted by Zechariah.ⁱⁱⁱ

The religious authorities were afraid of the people, and also likely afraid of Jesus because of all the miracles that He had done. Crowds of Jewish pilgrims were turning to the teachings of the gentle Rabbi from Nazareth. He had chased the moneychangers and animal salesmen out of the Court of the Gentiles and successfully rebutted the challenges of the Pharisees and Lawyers. The Temple trade was big business. Now it is Passover. Those who had not brought their lamb with them for the Passover sacrifice are now buying one at inflated prices. In that sense, Judas went out and bought the Passover lamb who would die on the cross to redeem the world from the usurpers control.

The Legions of Doom infiltrate every willing heart. A morbid cloud of darkness saturates the city of Jerusalem; it is a battle they must win. They have accurately observed that, for whatever the reason, the Divine Spirit of the Son is encased in a mortal biological machine called Jesus and does not exercise any supernatural power of warfare. They have long forgotten that even though men are biological machines, created from the dust of the earth, they are made in the image of God. Now, God has willfully chosen to become one of His creations. Thus, reasoned the Legions of Doom, their willing minions of humanity can kill Him and then the vineyard, the deed to planet Earth, will be theirs forever.

The Last Supper

The full moon that normally floods the city with silvery light at Passover is hidden behind shifting swirls of darkness. Menacing storm clouds surge in from the Mediterranean Sea; black despondent shadows flicker over the countryside. Unseen by human eye, myriads of Holy angels have penetrated the web of darkness and are poised ready for battle. The Legions of Doom know

they have to concentrate all their forces on Jesus. He must be destroyed. In that which is supernatural, the Great Assembly in Heaven sits in silence. Eternity is focused on this moment of time. Consequences occur moment by moment.

It is time. Jesus's heart pounds as He reclines at the table. He had foreseen this moment from the pillar of fire. Flickering torch light dances on the walls of the upper room as the roast lamb, unleavened bread and wine are brought in. Across from Him sits the man with the brooding face with Satan standing beside him like a menacing ethereal shadow. The unleavened bread now lies before Him on the table and the sweet smell of roasted lamb tinges His nostrils. He is not a theophany as when He had visited Abraham; He is mortal. Even as He looks at His friends, He can see into the spiritual dimension as if it were a crystal clear pond. The Legions of Doom hover nearby, like a black mist, and yet, stretched into the latticework of time like bright beads are myriads of Holy angels. All He has to do is signal and they will spring into action. He is at the intersection of time and eternity. It is as if He is at the center of a gently swirling vortex of interconnected dimensions. His will is resolute; the will of the Father must be done. The battle is spiritual; to doubt the Father's will, would be the sin of Adam and Eve. Mankind would then be forever in Satan's dominion. He chooses His words carefully,

"I have eagerly desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer. For I tell you, I will not eat it again until it finds fulfillment in the kingdom of God."

After taking the cup, he gave thanks and said,

"Take this and divide it among you. For I tell you I will not drink again of the fruit of the vine until the kingdom of God comes."

And he took bread, gave thanks and broke it, and gave it to them, saying,

"This is my body given for you; do this in remembrance of me."

In the same way, after the supper he took the cup, saying,

“This cup is the new covenant in my blood, which is poured out for you. But the hand of him who is going to betray me is with mine on the table.

The Son of Man will go as it has been decreed, but woe to that man who betrays him.”^{iv}

There is a constant murmur of voices as the disciples discuss recent events. Their Teacher speaks, *“The hour has come for the Son of Man to be glorified. ... Now is the time for judgment on this world; now the prince of this world will be driven out.”^v* Little did they realize that He was referring to his imminent crucifixion and that their lives would be changed forever. One can imagine Satan whispering into the mind of Judas, “there He is talking about death again, this would be a good time to notify the priests that He is ready to be arrested.” Dipping a piece of bread in the dish Jesus turns and gives it to Judas. *“As Judas took the bread Satan entered into him. ‘What you are about to do, do quickly,’”* says Jesus and Judas slips away into the night.^{vi} The remaining eleven listen intently as Jesus pointedly informs them of the intense spiritual cosmological conflict that is underway. *“I will not speak with you much longer, for the prince of this world is coming. He has no hold on me, but the world*

Innocent Blood

By entering Judas, Satan, the usurper ruler of Earth, would have no appeal against a conviction in the court of Heaven in his involvement in the shedding of innocent blood. In this way, he could not say, “Oh one of my subjects did it.” (See Deuteronomy 21:13)

must learn that I love the Father and that I do exactly what my Father has commanded me.”^{vii} *“But I tell you the truth: It is for your good that I am going away. Unless I go away, the Counselor will not come to you; but if I go, I will send him to you. When he comes, he will convict the world of guilt in regard to sin and righteousness and judgment: in regard to sin, because men do not believe*

in me; in regard to righteousness, because I am going to the Father, where you can see me no longer; and in regard to judgment, because the prince of this world now stands condemned.”^{viii}

The disciples lean forward with pensive looks on their faces. Jesus continues, “*When the Counselor comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who goes out from the Father, he will testify about me. And you also must testify, for you have been with me from the beginning.*”^{ix} Though His disciples did not understand it at the time, Jesus is telling them that as the sinless second Adam, the Prince of Darkness has no hold on Him, and because of His pending murder Satan would be condemned and forfeit control of planet Earth. In addition, a supernatural force, called the Counselor, is to come from Heaven and be active on Earth in the war against Satan and his Legions of Doom.

The Arrest Conspiracy

Several hours pass while Jesus instructs His faithful disciples. Judas hurries quietly through the late night streets to meet with the ruling High Priest, Caiaphas. A plan is formed for Judas to lead them to his leader.

Jesus and the remaining eleven faithful disciples leave the upper room where they have shared the Passover meal, they pass through the city gates and cross over the Kidron Valley to a secluded large grove of Olive trees on the Mount of Olives. With each step, Jesus knows that it is drawing Him closer to the pivotal moment in the devastating cosmological conflict. Unseen ethereal shadows stalk His oblivious disciples. Falling to His knees a short distance from his sleepy followers, He prays earnestly, “*Abba, Father, Everything is possible for you. Take this cup from me. Yet not what I will, but what you will.*”^x As sweat like great drops of blood fall to the ground, Satan and his dark forces press against the spirit of the second Adam, the only sinless man on Earth, in a

desperate attempt to make Him doubt the goodness of God the Father. An angel of Glory appears and strengthens him.^{xi}

Dark menacing clouds ebb over the Moon. Light from flaming torches flicker on the giant black draping statues of the Olive trees as Judas and a contingent of men armed with swords and clubs startle the little group resting in the secluded grove. Jesus looks at His terrified little band of followers. His

spiritual vision pierces the spatial dimensions. He can see the rebel forces of darkness that have amassed within, and amongst the elite of religious vanity. He can see their contingent of false witnesses and hastily gathered conspirators from the collapsed temple trade business, run by Caiaphas of the High Priest's family. The secret trial will take place while his faithful followers in Jerusalem are fast asleep. All too soon, He will be dragging His cross to the execution site while they stand weeping—now is the moment for darkness. He turns towards the chief priests, the officers of the temple guard, and the elders who have come to arrest him. He can see the smirking face of Judas shifting in the flickering torchlight, and then says with a tone of rebuke,

“Am I leading a rebellion, that you have come with swords and clubs?”

Every day I was with you in the temple courts, and you did not lay a hand on me. But this is your hour—when darkness reigns.”^{xiii}

As they lead the gentle man from Galilee away, His little band of disciples flee into the night. A temple guard grabs at one young man, who has been following Jesus, ripping off his

Caiaphas

In 1990 in a burial cave in Jerusalem an ossuary was found with an inscription “Joseph son of Caiaphas.” “The historian Josephus referred to the high priest as ‘Joseph, who was called Caiaphas,’ indicating that Caiaphas was a family name.” The ossuary held bones of a man about 60 that may have been Caiaphas himself.^{xii}

garment, naked the young man escapes into the darkness.^{xiv} Peter and John hide in the shadows of the giant Olive trees then follow closely slipping into the city gates amongst the rebel contingent. Jesus is physically beaten at the mock trial. *“Then they spit in his face and struck him with their fists. Others slapped him and said, “Prophecy to us, Christ. Who hit you?”^{xv}*

Two admissions, one illegally obtained, from the prisoner Himself are used as an excuse to falsely convict Him. The first is by the High Priest who uses the Divine Oath of God to force Jesus to state that He is indeed the Christ because the lies of the contrived witnesses has been rejected, and the trial is about to fail. One can almost imagine the frustration of Satan behind the scenes as the fake legal morality of the members of the court assert their individual wills. Frank Morrison writes,

It is clear that after the hearing of the witnesses, and the final rejection of their testimony, the whole conduct of the case began to take an unquestionably illegal form. The illegality consisted in the President of the Court attempting to supply, by direct questioning of the Prisoner, the necessary grounds for a conviction, which the witnesses themselves had been unable to produce.^{xvi}

The book of Matthew records this scene; as Jesus remains silent, the High Priest says to Him:

“I charge you under oath by the living God: Tell us if you are the Christ, the Son of God.” “Yes, it is as you say,” Jesus replies. “But I say to all of you: In the future you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Mighty One and coming on the clouds of heaven.”

Then the High Priest tore his clothes and said,

“He has spoken blasphemy! Why do we need any more witnesses? Look, now you have heard the blasphemy. What do you think?”

“He is worthy of death,” they answer.^{xvii}

The assembly of the illegal trial then led Jesus off to see Pilate. Here the second admission occurs as they accuse Him saying:

“We have found this man subverting our nation He opposes payment of taxes to Caesar and claims to be Christ, a king.”

Pilate asks Jesus, “Are you the king of the Jews?”

“Yes, it is as you say,” Jesus replies.

Then Pilate announces to the chief priests and the crowd, “I find no basis for a charge against this man.”

In a unified voice, they cry out, *“Away with this man! Release Barabbas to us!”*

Wanting to release Jesus, Pilate appeals to them again.

But, they kept shouting, “Crucify him Crucify him!”^{xviii}

So, Pilate decides to grant their demand—He releases Barabbas, who had been thrown into prison for insurrection and murder, and surrenders Jesus to their will. It is too early in the morning for the pilgrims to Jerusalem to be active, instead, facing him with hate on their faces are the conspirators from the corrupt political-religious-business system. “*Crucify him,*” they scream, “*Let his blood be upon us and our children,*”^{xix} and so shall it be that the wrath of God will fall upon all the ungodly. The god of mammon will prevail for now.

Pilate sends Jesus to Herod, ruler of the district of Galilee, who is in Jerusalem at that time. “Herod and his soldiers ridicule and mock him. Dressing him in an elegant robe, they send him back to Pilate.”^{xx} “Then the governor’s soldiers took Jesus into the Praetorium and gathered the whole company of soldiers around him. They stripped him and put a scarlet robe on him, and then twisted together a crown of thorns and set it on his head. They put a staff in his right hand, knelt in front of

him, and mocked him. “Hail, king of the Jews!” they said. They spit on him, and took the staff and struck him on the head again and again,”

as they yank on His beard. “What’s wrong king—where are your soldiers. Do a miracle Rabbi—ha ha.” “After they had mocked him, they took off the robe and put his garment on him. Then they led him away to crucify him.”^{xxi} By now, the city is awake. A large crowd of Jewish pilgrims follows the deathly procession

Pilate

“A dedicatory inscription found in Caesarea in 1961, carved in honor of the Roman Emperor Tiberius. It also bears the name of Pontus Pilate, governor of Judea from 26 to 37 C.E. Pilate is mentioned by Josephus, Philo and others, and coins bearing his name have also been found.”^{xxii}

wailing and weeping, hardly comprehending what has taken place in the veil of darkness.

A detailed study of all the nuances of this illegal trial within the four gospel books, Matthew, Mark, Luke and John show that they portray a real life drama that could not have been faked. Morrison did such a study.

I will only say that it effected a revolution in my thought. Things emerged from that old-world story which previously I should have thought impossible. Slowly but very definitely the conviction grew that the drama of those unforgettable weeks of human history was stranger and deeper than it seemed. It was the strangeness of many notable things in the story, which first arrested and held my interest. It was only later that the irresistible logic of their meaning came into view. There may be, and, as the writer thinks, there certainly is, a deep and profoundly historical basis for that much disputed sentence in the Apostles’ Creed—“The third day he rose again from the dead.”^{xxiii}

Fitting the pieces together, Morrison showed it is very likely that Caiaphas made a hurried visit to Pontius Pilate, the Roman Procurator, and agreed upon a prearranged death sentence. Evidence shows that a prior arrangement had to have been made since Pilate came into the outer court to meet with the Jews who would not defile themselves at this ceremonial time by going into the Gentile courts. Moreover, Pilate's wife, Claudia Procula, must have discussed the situation late at night with Pilate since very early in the morning she sent a desperate hurried message to Pilate to terminate the arrangement with the priests. Morrison writes:

I will not waste time here arguing the obvious point that if Claudia knew of the arrest overnight in the circumstances suggested above, that in itself is an adequate and sufficient cause for the dream. But I do want to draw attention to a very significant detail, viz. that the dream would not have had the instant terror for Procula, on awakening early the next morning, if she had not known, or had exceptionally strong reasons for suspecting, that Pilate was going to hand over the Prisoner to His enemies. The whole tenor of the message suggests this:

“Have thou nothing to do with that righteous man, for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.”^{xxiv}

From this moment on Pilate sought to disassociate himself from the death penalty.

The Murder of The Divine Son

The Great Assembly watch in silence as the Prince of Darkness victoriously parades his prisoner, the mortal Eternal Son of God, dragging His cross towards Calvary on the hill of Golgotha, the place of the skull. The God-man-Jesus Christ has been condemned to death by Satan, the Usurper regent of Planet Earth, by the Hebrew theocracy and by the Gentile Roman political

system. Darkness has triumphed over Light in a trinity of malevolent power. Jesus the Nazarene has been condemned to death because He declared, “I am God” and because He stated “I am a king.” However, if Jesus is who He says He is, then who will bear the consequences for his murder? The apostle John records, “*Pilate had a notice prepared and fastened to the cross.*

Golgotha

Golgotha, the place of the skull,^{xxvi} is a hill outside the walls of Jerusalem. It is a local height of land, and is likely the true Mt. Moriah where God tested Abraham.

It read: JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. Many of the Jews read the sign, for the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city, and the sign was written in Aramaic, Latin and Greek. The chief priests of the Jews protested to Pilate, “Do not write ‘The King of the Jews,’ but that this man claimed to be king of the Jews.” Pilate answered, “What I have written, I have written.”^{xxv}

The Great Assembly watch in silence as the Prince of Darkness victoriously parades his prisoner, the mortal Eternal Son of God, dragging His cross towards Calvary on the hill of Golgotha, the place of the skull. The God-man-Jesus Christ has been condemned to death by Satan, the Usurper regent of Planet Earth, by the Hebrew

YHWH

In Hebrew the first letters of each word on the sign, *Jesus of Nazareth, The King of The Jews*, spells YHWH, which spells God in Hebrew. No wonder the chief priests were upset.^{xxvii}

theocracy and by the Gentile Roman political system. Darkness has triumphed over Light in a trinity of malevolent power. Jesus the Nazarene has been condemned to death because He declared, “I am God” and because He stated “I am a king.” However, if Jesus is who He says He is, then who

will bear the consequences for his murder? The apostle John records, *“Pilate had a notice prepared and fastened to the cross. It read: JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. Many of the Jews read the sign, for the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city, and the sign was written in Aramaic, Latin and Greek. The chief priests of the Jews protested to Pilate, “Do not write ‘The King of the Jews,’ but that this man claimed to be king of the Jews.” Pilate answered, “What I have written, I have written.”*”^{xxviii}

Time is now. “Crucify him, crucify him” echo like peals of thunder in the cathedral of time. This is no vision of the future. Sharp stabbing pains lace his hands and feet as iron spikes are driven through them. The flame of time is burning. What he had inspired to be written by various prophets hundreds of years before is now happening. *“I offered my back to those who beat me, my cheeks to those who pulled out my beard; I did not hide my face from mocking and spitting.”*^{xxix} *“Many bulls surround me; strong bulls of Bashan encircle me. Roaring lions tearing their prey open their mouths wide against me. I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint. My heart has turned to wax; it has melted away within me. My strength is dried up like a potsherd, and my tongue sticks to the roof of my mouth; you lay me in the dust of death. Dogs have surrounded me; a band of evil men has encircled me, they have pierced my hands and my feet. I can count all my bones; people stare and gloat over me. They divide my garments among them and cast lots for my clothing.”*^{xxx} *“Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing.”*^{xxxi}

Lucifer, invisible to mortals, stands proudly, feet apart with his arms crossed, smiling. The Son of God was a fool to try and defeat him as a mortal, he thinks to himself. Yeshua will be the victim of His own curse upon humanity—death—a sinister laugh shudders his being. Jesus will soon be a prisoner in Hades forever. The Legions of Doom mockingly dance around the cross. Harsh mortal voices taunt Jesus, screaming, *“Come down from the cross, if you are the Son of*

God.... *He saved others,*” they shout sarcastically, *“but he can’t save himself! If He’s the King of Israel! Let him come down now from the cross, and we will believe in him. He trusts in God. Let God rescue him now if he wants him, for he said, ‘I am the Son of God.’”*^{xxxii}

Pain throbs through His body as its weight pulls at the nails in His hands, (plates of wood keep the nails from pulling through his hands). His intestines hang like lead weights, laboring his breath. Two criminals are also being crucified with Him. One of them responds with an agonizing voice to his fellow criminal who has

been taunting Jesus. *“Don’t you fear God,”* he says, *“since you are under the same sentence? We are punished justly, for we are getting what our deeds deserve. But this man has done nothing wrong. Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom.”* In pain and agony His cheeks torn and caked with blood, with great drops of salty sweat and blood stinging his eyes from the crown of thorns jammed through His scalp, Jesus, through parched lips rasps out words of eternal life, *“I tell you the truth, today you will be with me in paradise.”*^{xxxiii}

It is noon; a thick dark blackness covers **the land** and presses against the soul of the Divine Light. Myriads of Holy Angels, weeping with horror and dismay, press forward, swords in hand, awaiting the command. It never comes. The great dimensional spiritual vortex that has been gently swirling around the city of Jerusalem increases in black raging intensity like a super cosmic black

Body, Soul and Spirit

The Divine man, Jesus, suffered body, soul and spirit in His agonizing death. The pain of crucifixion tortured his flesh. The agonies of uncertainty, of emotion, imagination and will tore at His Soul The great void of spiritual darkness descended upon His Spirit as His Father turned His back on Him—who was now saturated with the sins of mankind. In the despair of spiritual darkness, He cries out, *“My God, my God, why have you forsaken me.”*^{xxxiv}

hole. The hyperbolic latticework of time folds in on itself like a thunderous tornado; alone in its core is an unblemished lamb hanging on a wooden cross with blood flowing from His wounds. All that is dark and evil, the sins of all mankind, (yours and mine included), in all of time, past, present and future, like thick gooey soot, swirl from the sides of the cyclone into the very body of the Lamb. His blood trickles down the wooden cross. The Eternal Father unto the Eternal Son has meted out eternal justice. *“It is finished,”* cries the Son. *“With that He bowed his head and gave up His spirit.”*^{xxxv}

The earth shook, and even though it was mid day a dense darkness covers **the land** as foretold by the prophet Amos. The Lord had said, *“I will make the sun go down at noon and darken the earth in broad daylight.”*^{xxxvi} As the thick blackness closes in around the cross, the Roman Centurion in charge of the crucifixion and those guarding Jesus exclaim, *“Surely he was the Son of God!”*^{xxxvii} The gospels record that at that very moment the thick curtain in the temple around the most Holy Place, where the Ark of the Covenant should be, was torn from top to bottom.^{xxxviii} In the days of the prophet Ezekiel, the Holy Spirit of God, the Shekinah Glory, departed from the Holy place in the Temple. The tearing of the curtain is highly significant. God is clearly saying that access to Him is not through the temple system, but through belief in the perfect sacrifice of His Son, the Lamb of God. This is what Jesus meant when He said, *“this cup is the new covenant in My blood, which is poured out for you.”*^{xxxix} The old sacrificial system has been cancelled by the sacrifice of the perfect Lamb of God—God Himself.

The apostle John notes that Jesus was crucified on the preparation day before a special Sabbath, and because the Jews did not want the bodies on the cross on the special Sabbath they needed to make sure the men are dead. The custom was to break their legs so that the full weight of the hanging body had no support thus hastening the agonizing death. Since Jesus is already dead, by

willfully surrendering His Divine spirit to death, the soldiers stab his side with a spear but do not break His legs. John writes,

But when they came to Jesus and found that he was already dead, they did not break his legs. Instead, one of the soldiers pierced Jesus' side with a spear, bringing a sudden flow of blood and water.

The man who saw it has given testimony, and his testimony is true. He knows that he tells the truth, and he testifies so that you also may believe. These things happened so that the scripture would be fulfilled: "Not one of his bones will be broken," and, as another scripture says, "They will look on the one they have pierced."^{xi}

Joseph of Arimathea, a wealthy man, asks Pilate for the body of Jesus. He and Nicodemus wrap the body with spices in strips of linen and lay Him in Joseph's newly carved tomb in a nearby garden-cemetery. The next day, which is the day of the special Sabbath, the chief priests and the Pharisees make a request to Pilate.

"Sir," they said, "we remember that while he was still alive that deceiver said, 'After three days I will rise again.' So give the order for the tomb to be made secure until the third day. Otherwise, his disciples may come and steal the body and tell the people that he has been raised from the dead. This last deception will be worse than the first."

"Take a guard," Pilate answered. "Go, make the tomb as secure as you know how." So they went and made the tomb secure by putting a seal on the stone and posting the guard.^{xli}

If one follows the gospel narratives carefully, one will quickly realize that the modern practice of Good Friday is a Catholic custom of convenience. Jesus likely ate the Passover supper

Wednesday night and was arrested later that night. He was crucified Thursday morning, which was the preparation day before the special Sabbath of the Passover. Since the Jewish day begins at night, Friday the day of the special Sabbath, the Passover, would begin at 6:00 p.m. Thursday. Saturday was the normal Sabbath. Sunday was the first day of the week. Jesus arose from the grave just before dawn on Sunday morning.^{xlii} This explains why the women came early Sunday morning in an attempt to attend to his burial; both Friday and Saturday were Sabbaths.

In the great eternal existence outside of space-time, called Heaven, the Great Assembly is now convened; the Ancient of Days is seated upon His throne. Somehow, the Ancient of Days does not look right; it is as if He is in intense agony. An angelic contingent of rebels headed by Satan from planet Earth has demanded an audience before the Great Assembly. It is just after Saturday midnight, early Sunday morning on Earth. Satan is exhilarated his rebellion has been victorious. The contender for Kingship of planet Earth, the second Adam—Jesus, has now been locked in Hades for almost three days.

Lucifer is insisting on full legal title to the dominion of mankind. The ex-archangel, leader of the cosmic rebellion, who once in ancient times had been appointed a guardian cherub and walked amongst the fiery stones in the Mount of God before his rebellion, waxes eloquent in describing the uselessness of the human race. “It is,” he articulates, “only my masterful leadership of these sentient life forms that keeps them from annihilating themselves. That man, Jesus, tried to lead a rebellion with the use of supernatural trickery, claiming that He is Your Son,” is the essence of his legal argument. “As prince of the power of the air and ruler of the dominion of Earth it was necessary to have the life of Jesus terminated for treason.” Then, Satan makes a

magnificent jester with his arms and states with a satisfied smirk, “There is no one left to crush my head.” The great Assembly waits in pensive silence.

The Ancient of Days, who has been listening with bowed head, turns towards the great deceiver and says almost the same words that He had once said to Philip. “Don’t you know me Lucifer, even after I had been amongst you such a long time? Anyone who has seen the Son has seen Me. Believe me when I say that I am in the Son and the Son is in me; or at least believe on the evidence of the miracles themselves.”

A murmur of anticipation ripples amongst the Great Assembly. Satan hesitates, something is amiss how can this be? Jesus is locked in Hades. At that moment, a powerful beam of Radiant Glory permeates through from that which is beyond superluminal. A flash of lightning, rumbles and peals of thunder surge from the throne as The Father proclaims, “I am God We are One.”^{xliii} Satan trembles in fear as all of the Great Assembly cry out in reverent worship “Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come.”^{xliv} Radiant Shekinah Glory, like shimmering rainbows of brilliant light, now surrounds the throne. The Father speaks again,

“You have murdered My Son, My only Son. He was not a citizen of your dominion. He was a sinless man who has borne the sins of all mankind and satisfied eternal justice. You have now forfeited all rights of dominion of planet Earth. You and your rebellion, at the end of the age to come, will be cast into the Lake of Fire forever. My Son

Guilty of Innocent Blood

When Judas saw that Jesus was falsely condemned, he cried in remorse “I have sinned ...for I have betrayed innocent blood.” Matthew 27:4

will reign as King of Kings and Lord of Lords and will hold the keys to Hades and Death.” “At the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.”^{xlv} “Salvation is found in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given to men by which [they] must be saved.”^{xlvi}

The Great Assembly responds in a thunderous acclamation. In a loud voice they sing:

“Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain, to receive power and wealth and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and praise!”^{xlvii}

“I shall make all things new. There will be a resurrection. My Son shall take up His Life again—release Him from the bondage of death,” are the last words that Satan hears as he flees in panic. At that moment, a great pulse of transformation Glory surges through Paradise. The gates of Paradise spring open. An awestruck throng of redeemed glorified resurrected prisoners step as free men and women into the realm of Heaven. That is, all except a chosen few who are given a special privilege to walk again upon the Earth.

Paradise is now in heaven and is referred to by the Apostle Paul as the third heaven.^{xlviii} He became a believer after the resurrection. Thus, he was taken UP to Paradise whereas Jesus went DOWN to Paradise upon His death on the cross. When Jesus cried, “It is finished,” as He bore our sins in His body on the tree,^{xlix} His spirit was immediately ushered into Hades, containing the compartments of Paradise and Torments. His apostle, Peter, informs us “*He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit, through whom also he went and preached to the spirits in prison*

who disobeyed long ago when God waited patiently in the days of Noah while the ark was being built.”¹

In Scripture, the word “spirits” refers principally to the spirits of angels and only once to that of men. Peter is likely referring to the rebel angels locked in the deep recesses of Torments for having trespassed the Prime Directive of God, since sinful men who die are sent to Torments before and after the time of Noah, and are still arriving in vast hordes. It is only the specific period before the flood that the “sons of God” interacted directly with mankind, which strengthens the likelihood that the word spirits relates to fallen angels. R. A Torrey, a renowned Bible teacher who studied difficult passages in the Bible comments as follows:

There seems to be a clear reference to this passage in Jude 6, where we are told of “angels which kept not their own principality but left their proper habitation,” and in consequence were kept in everlasting chains in darkness unto the judgment of the great day (R.V.); and in the next verse we are told that Sodom and Gomorrah in like manner with these [that is, these angels] gave themselves over to fornication and went after strange flesh” (R.V.).

Now from this it seems clear that the sin of the angels was going after strange flesh, the very sin mentioned in Gen. 6:3. Furthermore, we read that “God spared not the angels that sinned but cast them down to hell and committed them to pits of darkness to be reserved unto judgment” (II Peter 2:3,4,R.V.). The clear implication of all this is that the spirits to whom Jesus preached when He went to the abode of the dead were the angels that sinned in the days of Noah, and who were now in prison in consequence of that sin.

Let us notice in the next place what the word translated “preach” in I Peter 3:18-20 means. There are two words in constant use in the New Testament, which are translated “preach.” One of them means “to preach the Gospel.” The other to “to herald” (to herald the king or kingdom). It is the latter of these two words which is used in this passage. There is not a suggestion in the passage that the Gospel with its offer of salvation was preached to anyone. **The King and the kingdom were heralded to them. Christ has been heralded as King in heaven, earth and hell**^{li}(*emphasis Mine).

The war of the cosmos is advancing. The rebels have been given notice. The Kingdom of God has now been proclaimed, or heralded, in Heaven, on Earth and in Hades. There is no second chance of salvation beyond the grave for spirits of men or angels. Death is the great terminator of mortal free will.

The Paradox of Good and Evil

There is no doubt that Jesus, from the Jewish religious perspective, died because He claimed to be The Son of God—and from the Christian viewpoint, as God, He sacrificed His life as our redeemer. This opens a very real question. What if Yeshua had decided not to complete His mission? If this rebellion in the cosmos is valid, then there would be no restitution on behalf of mankind to appease the justice of a Holy God. A free will love relationship would no longer be an issue and in less than a blink of an eye, space-time and dimension could be obliterated. This then answers the good and evil paradox. For the knowledge of good to exist, then evil has to exist for there to be a real dynamic free will choice between good and evil. For perfect justice to exist, then

infinite redeeming love must exist, and for eternity, space-time and dimension to exist, then Heaven and Hell, the prison of all that is evil, must co-exist.

Hell will exist forever in some finite dimension. God described this when He wrote through the prophet Isaiah, *“And they will go out and look upon the dead bodies of those who rebelled against me; their worm will not die, nor will their fire be quenched, and they will be loathsome to all mankind.”*^{lii} Jesus, the glorified Son of Man, tells the apostle John that at the great future Consequential Action; *“Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. The lake of fire is the second death. If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.”*^{liii} Heaven will exist for all eternity in the infinite aspect of God, and will interact in the spiritual and space-time interdimensions of the cosmos.

God is infinite and Hell is finite, thus, because God is infinite the rebellion and His great redeeming love will be forever in His memory. However, as far as redeemed mankind are concerned He says, *“Behold, I will create new heavens and a new earth. The former things will not be remembered, nor will they come to mind.”*^{liv} Glorified mankind will be made holy, and though they will have the knowledge of good and evil, they will be eternally abhorrent of sin and rebellion. In the moment-by-moment decisions of human history, their free will choice was to trust in the will of Lord God Almighty, and His redeeming love, through His incarnation as the God-man-Jesus Christ. Thus, this free will choice for both good and evil becomes fixed for all of eternity.

The Transformation

It is early Sunday morning on Earth. Dawn is approaching; the night has been cool and boring. One of the temple guards puts more wood on the fire. Two Roman soldiers stand erect, spears firmly in hand, by the heavy stone sealing the tomb. Imperial Rome ruled with discipline in all circumstances. The cold corpse of Jesus lay stiff with rigormortis behind the large stone sealing

the tomb. Suddenly, the earth begins to shake; startled, the soldiers spontaneously brace themselves and point their spears. Superluminal words of dynamic power surge through Paradise and into the material realm vibrating the dimension of space-time, “Glorify My Son, Let there be a Resurrection.”

It is early Sunday morning on Earth. Dawn is approaching; the night has been cool and boring. One of the temple guards puts more wood on the fire. Two Roman soldiers stand erect, spears firmly in hand, by the heavy stone sealing the tomb.

An Alien Deception

Violations of the Prime Directive of God may be occurring again soon. The modern movie industry has fallen victim to the Prince of Darkness and his minions. Sci-Fi movies depict interplanetary marriages between diverse “humanoid” species as fashionable. Evolution has stripped mankind of their uniqueness of being made in the image of God with an eternal spirit component. From that perspective, why wouldn’t procreation with a superior being be fashionable and beneficial to the human phylum? Excepting one main point, only humans “born again” through the redeeming sacrifice of the God-man-Jesus Christ are destined to rule in the heavens with Him. All angels and authorities in Heaven, on Earth and in all dimensions of sentient beings will be under the rule of King Jesus and His royal priesthood of believers.^{lv}

Imperial Rome ruled with discipline in all circumstances. The cold corpse of Jesus lay stiff with rigormortis behind the large stone sealing the tomb. Suddenly, the earth begins to shake; startled, the soldiers spontaneously brace themselves and point their spears. Superluminal words of dynamic power surge through Paradise and into the material realm vibrating the dimension of space-time, “Glorify My Son, Let there be a Resurrection.”

To the soldiers and temple guards it is a deafening roar of thunder followed by a brilliant flash of lightning. A resplendent angel shimmering with glory stands in front of the stone sealing the tomb. The soldiers fall to the ground as dead men, their spears clattering on the stones. Rebel angels flee in terror as the section of the Web of Darkness over the hill of Calvary disintegrates. The angel touches the stone and it rolls away from the entrance. Jesus, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, stands in His newly fashioned glorified body, in glistening white apparel at the entrance. He has taken up His life again. He is victorious! A new dawn is breaking. Incredible joy fills His being. His Bride will now be made ready. He disappears over the threshold of time out of sight. Light has pierced the Darkness. The great writer C.S. Lewis, in his book *Miracles*, speaks to this momentous moment in the history of the cosmos:

The next point to notice is that the Resurrection was not regarded simply or chiefly as evidence for the immortality of the soul. It is, of course, often so regarded today: I have heard a man maintain that “the importance of the Resurrection is that it proves survival.” Such a view cannot at any point be reconciled with the language of the New Testament. On such a view Christ would simply have done what all men do when they die; the only novelty would have been that in His case we were allowed to see it happening. But there is not in Scripture the faintest suggestion that the Resurrection was new evidence for something that had in fact been always happening.

The New Testament writers speak as if Christ’s achievement in rising from the dead was the first event of its kind in the whole history of the universe. He is the “first fruits,” the “pioneer of life.” He has forced open a door that has been locked since the death of the first man. He has met, fought, and beaten the King

of Death. Everything is different because He has done so. This is the beginning of the New Creation: a new chapter in cosmic history has opened.^{lvi}

The book of Matthew records that the guards and soldiers were bribed by the priests to spread a rumor that while they slept the followers of Jesus had raided the tomb. It is interesting that such a rumor need even be started, unless something dramatic did happen, such that no body could ever be produced. The area was very confined and too many people were involved; the body should have been easily found—deceit is easily bribed. Moreover the inference is, that because Pilate realized that Jesus was, in fact, *of the something more*, the real King of the Jews, he wanted nothing more to do with supernatural events surrounding this righteous man; otherwise, he would have had the soldiers killed for falling asleep at their stations.

Paradise has been emptied. All but a chosen few have entered heaven. Matthew, a disciple of Jesus, records: “*The tombs broke open and the bodies of many holy people who had died were raised to life. They came out of the tombs, and after Jesus’ resurrection they went into the holy city and appeared to many people.*”^{lvii} Research by Grant Jeffrey has shown that this event was recorded by Christians of that era. He writes: “Writings by Christians of that time have been collected in the Ante-Nicene Library. They describe that more than twelve thousand of these Old Testament saints walked through Galilee for forty days, appearing in Jerusalem before many, and later ascended into Heaven when Jesus Christ ascended to his Father.”^{lviii} Jeffrey describes the above scene as taken from *The Gospel of Nicodemus* (Latin Version Page 454 Ante-Nicene Library, Volume 8) Chap. I (17).

Then Rabbi Addas, and Rabbi Finees, and Rabbi Egias, the three men who had come from Galilee, testifying that they had seen Jesus taken up into heaven, rose up in the midst of the multitude of the chiefs of the Jews, and said before the

priests and the Levites, who had been called together to the council of the Lord: When we were coming from Galilee, we met at the Jordan a very great multitude of men, fathers who had been some time dead.... And they went, and walked round all the region of Jordan and of the mountains, and they were coming back without finding them.... And, behold, suddenly there appeared coming down from Mount Amalech a very great number, as it were, twelve thousand men, who had risen with the Lord.

And though they recognized very many there, they were not able to say anything to them for fear and the angelic vision; and they stood at a distance gazing and hearing them, how they walked along singing praises, and saying: The Lord has risen again from the dead, as He had said; let us all exult and be glad, since He reigns for ever. Then those who had been sent were astonished, and fell to the ground for fear, and received the answer from them, that they should see Karinus and Leucius in their own houses. And they rose up and went to their houses, and found them spending their time in prayer.^{lix}

The Trinity, Heaven, the interconnected dimensions and the cosmos will never be the same. A Divine man rules in Heaven. The second person of the Trinity, who became one of us, is now a Glorified Resurrected man. He is a new Creation; that which is natural has been glorified and merged with the supernatural. We shall be like Him. *“And just as we have borne the likeness of the earthly man, so shall we bear the likeness of the man from heaven. I declare to you, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable.”*^{lx}

If we shall be like Him and rule with Him in the cosmos, then we should consider what the resurrected Jesus was like. The scriptures record that He interacted with our dimension for a period of 40 days before symbolically departing upwards from the Mount of Olives. The apostle Paul writes, *“He appeared to Peter, and then to the Twelve. After that, he appeared to more than five hundred of the brothers at the same time, most of whom are still living, though some have fallen asleep. Then he appeared to James [His half-brother], then to all the apostles, and last of all he appeared to me also, as one abnormally born.”*^{xii} It is early Sunday morning; Jesus stands just behind the veil of time. He can see the animated jesters of the chief priests, temple guards and soldiers in the temple courtyard as they conspire to conceal the dramatic events of His resurrection. He looks into the garden at the empty tomb; two men, angels, in white are seated on the stone body bench where He had been laying a short time ago. A young woman kneels near the tomb weeping. His heart responds in deep compassion. He steps into the world of time.

“Woman,” he said, “why are you crying?”

Who is it you are looking for?”

Thinking he was the gardener, she said, “Sir, if you have carried him away, tell me where you have put him, and I will get him.”

Jesus said to her, “Mary.” She turned toward him and cried out in Aramaic, “Rabboni!” (which means Teacher).

James, the brother of Jesus

“Amazing as it may sound, a limestone bone box (called an ‘ossuary’) has surfaced in Israel that may once have contained the bones of James the brother of Jesus. We know this because an extraordinary inscription incised on one side of the ossuary reads in clear Aramaic letters: ‘James son of Joseph, brother of Jesus.’” Andre Lemaire^{lxi} (see note for authenticity details)

Jesus said, "Do not hold on to me, for I have not yet returned to the Father. Go instead to my brothers and tell them, 'I am returning to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God.'"^{lxiii} *"Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will see me."*^{lxiv}

That Sunday afternoon two men are walking slowly, their faces downcast, along the road to Emmaus some seven miles from Jerusalem. Again, stepping through the veil of time Jesus joins them and asks them what they are discussing. Surprised that this stranger didn't know about Thursday's terrible events, they explain about Jesus of Nazareth, a prophet powerful in word and deed, who had been put to death by the religious establishment. And how, just this Sunday morning, several of their women had gone to the tomb and saw a vision of angels who had said that Jesus was alive. Jesus said to them, *"How foolish you are, and how slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! Did not the Christ have to suffer these things and then enter his glory?"* Then beginning with Moses and all the Prophets, he explained to them what was said in all the Scriptures concerning himself.^{lxv} He continues into the village with them. As He breaks bread at the evening meal, He allows them to recognize Him and then steps back behind the veil of time.

The two men rush back to Jerusalem as the receding Moon casts its pearly light over Jerusalem. Behind locked doors for fear of the religious establishment, ten disciples, filled with ponderous excitement, press around the two travelers as they animatedly explain what has happened. Suddenly Jesus is standing amongst them. Startled, they draw back thinking they are seeing a ghost. *"Why are you troubled, and why do doubts rise in your minds? Look at my hands and my feet. It is I myself! Touch me and see; a ghost does not have flesh and bones, as you see I have."* Emotions of joy and amazement flood through the disciples. *"Do you have anything to eat?"* He asks. Cautiously, still not believing what is happening, they give him a piece of broiled fish,

which He eats in their presence.^{lxvi} The eleventh disciple, Thomas, is not present at this startling encounter with Jesus. Filled with great excitement and wonder the other disciples tell him, *“We have seen the Lord!”* Disbelieving them, he says, *“Unless I see the nail marks in his hands and put my finger where the nails were, and put my hand into his side, I will not believe it.”* A week later, all the disciples are again meeting behind locked doors, and as before, Jesus suddenly steps through the veil of time into their presence. He approaches Thomas. Thomas’s heart is pounding in fearful recognition. The God-man and the man are now face to face. *“Put your finger here; see my hands. Reach out your hand and put it into my side. Stop doubting and believe.”* The flickering light of the torches dance on the walls as the profound silence is broken by the trembling voice of Thomas as he gasps in awesome reverence and worship—*“My Lord and my God!”* The God-man then says quietly, *“Because you have seen me, you have believed; blessed are those who have not seen and yet have believed.”*^{lxvii}

Shortly after this, the eleven disciples travel to their home district of Galilee. Peter, John and five others spontaneously decide to go fishing. As is the custom, they let down their nets and drift-fish through the night. The next morning the nets are still empty. A man stands on the shore beside a smoldering fire of red coals. He calls to them to put the nets on the other side of the boat. They do so and are unable to haul up the net because it is filled with 153 large fish. As they tow the full net to the shore, they hardly dare to speak because they know that it is Jesus. Once more, His strong clear voice carries over the water, *“Come and have breakfast.”*^{lxviii} The welcome smell of broiling fish and freshly baked bread come from the bed of hot coals beside Jesus. They eat and fellowship with the Resurrected Glorified God-man, Jesus—the Messiah.

Why Wasn't Jesus Recognized

Mary, who loved Him and had wiped His feet with her hair, thought that He was the gardener until she heard His voice. The two travelers to Emmaus didn't recognize Him until He broke bread with them. When He suddenly appeared amongst His disciples in the locked upper room they thought they were seeing a ghost until He showed them his pierced side, nail holes in His hands and feet and ate some broiled fish. Later, on the lake shore of Galilee after the miraculous catch of fish, the Apostle John was to comment, *"None of the disciples dared ask Him, 'Who are you,' they knew it was the Lord."* As a Rabbi and certainly as "King of the Jews" He would have had a full beard.^{lxi} In his relentless thrust to defeat the will of Jesus against the Father, Satan had his minions exert extreme physical pain upon the sinless God-man. While they mocked Him by jamming a twisted crown of thorns on His head, and putting a scarlet royal robe on Him—they plucked out his full beard and beat Him.^{lxx} *"Again and again they struck Him on the head with a staff and spit on Him."*^{lxxi} As a result, *"there were many who were appalled at Him, His appearance was so disfigured beyond that of any man and his form marred beyond human likeness."*^{lxxii} These very actions impart reality to the resurrection story. If it had been contrived, everyone would have immediately recognized Him. Though, Jesus, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, as the God-man He may have a beard in Heaven, He will carry these victory battle scars forever. By the end of forty days before His ascension, His beard may have already started to grow in.

The Ascension

During a period of forty days, Jesus explains to His disciples about the Kingdom of God and gives them a number of special instructions. *"Then Jesus came to them and said, 'All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing*

them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.”^{lxxiii} He also tells them to wait in Jerusalem until the special power of the third person of the Holy Trinity, the Holy Spirit, comes upon them. *“But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth.”*^{lxxiv} The disciples return to Jerusalem. Once more Jesus joins them. As He and his followers walk slowly up hill to a quiet secluded area on the top of the Mount of Olives, the disciples know that something is about to happen. *“Lord are you at this time going to restore the kingdom to Israel?”* they question. The little group pause in an open space surrounded by large Olive trees; Jesus answers, *“It is not for you to know the times or dates the Father has set by his own authority.”* He looks at His chosen followers with tender compassion. The war of the cosmos will be intensified; yet, they will be the seeds of wheat that will multiply abundantly in the ages to come. His Bride, the Church will be born. Smiling gently, He blesses them and slowly steps into the superluminal dimension of eternity. They stare dumfounded as He slowly rises off of the ground and disappears into white cloud. Suddenly, two men dressed in white appear beside them. *“Men of Galilee,”* they say, *“why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven.”*^{lxxv}

John, the ex-fisherman, who has been a close friend, like a brother, to Jesus in their brief years together records; *“Jesus did many other miraculous signs in the presence of his disciples, which are not recorded in this book. But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name.”*^{lxxvi} The Glorified Son of Man is now seated at the right hand of the Father in Heaven interceding for those who choose to believe in Him, *“with angels, authorities and powers in submission to him.”*^{lxxvii}

The war of the cosmos, the free will choice between Darkness and Light will continue. Only now, victory has been assured. Light will vanquish the Darkness, and then the final differentiation between the sons of Light and the sons of Darkness will be complete.

Notes:

ⁱ Mark 8:33

ⁱⁱ Luke 22:3

ⁱⁱⁱ Zechariah 11:12-13

^{iv} Luke 22:15-22

^v John 12:31

^{vi} John 13:27

^{vii} John 14:30,31

^{viii} John 16:7-11

^{ix} John 15:26,27

^x Mark 14:36

^{xi} Luke 22:43,44

^{xii} Feldman Steven Roth Nancy, "The Short List," *Biblical Archaeological Review*, November/December 2002, pg. 36

^{xiii} Luke 22:52,53

^{xiv} Mark 14:51-52

^{xv} Matthew 25:67,68

^{xvi} Morison Frank, *Who Moved The Stone*, Faber Paperbacks 1930 reprinted 1981, Great Britain pg. 25

^{xvii} Matthew 26:63-66

^{xviii} Luke 23:1-25

^{xix} Matthew 27:25

^{xx} Luke 23:11

^{xxi} Matthew 27:27-31

^{xxii} Feldman, *Ibid*, pg. 35

^{xxiii} Morison, *Ibid*, pgs. 12 & 192

^{xxiv} Morison, *Ibid*, pg. 50

^{xxv} John 19:19-22

^{xxvi} John 19:17

^{xxvii} Missler Chuck, Tape #3, "The Bible an Extraterrestrial Message From God," Series Creator Beyond Time and Space

^{xxviii} John 19:19-22

^{xxix} Isaiah 50:6

^{xxx} Psalms 22:12-18

^{xxxi} Luke 23:34

^{xxxii} Matthew 27:42,43

^{xxxiii} Luke 23:40-43

^{xxxiv} Mark 15:34

^{xxxv} John 19:30

^{xxxvi} Amos 8:9

^{xxxvii} Matthew 27:54

^{xxxviii} Matthew 27:51

^{xxxix} Luke 22:20

^{xl} John 19:33-37

^{xli} Matthew 27:63-65

^{xlii} Torrey R.A., *Difficulties in the Bible*, Reprinted by Baker House 1964 from 1907 original, pg. 105

^{xliii} Boa Kenneth, *God I don't Understand*, Victor Books, 1979, pg. 37; Note: "In the being of God there are not three individuals, but only three personal self-distinctions within the one divine essence. The intellect, emotions, and will of

the Three-in-One God are manifested as much in His oneness as they are in His threeness. The Father, Son and Holy Spirit are distinct in their personhoods, and yet they act and exist as a unit.”

^{xliv} Revelation 4:8

^{xlvi} Philippians 2:10-11

^{xlvi} Acts 4:12

^{xlvi} Revelation 5:12

^{xlvi} 2 Corinthians 12:4

^{xlvi} 1 Peter 2:24

^l 1 Peter 3:18-20

^{li} Torrey R.A, Ibid, pg. 123

^{lii} Isaiah 66:24

^{liii} Revelation 20:14,15

^{liii} Isaiah 65:17

^{liii} 1 Peter 2:9

^{liii} Lewis C.S., *Miracles*, Collier Books, Paper back 1978, pg. 145

^{liii} Matthew 27:52,53

^{liii} Jeffrey Grant, *Heaven The Mystery of Angels*, Frontier Research Publications Inc., 1966 pg. 33

^{liii} Jeffrey, Ibid, pg. 40

^{liii} 1 Corinthians 15:49

^{liii} Lemaire Andre, “Earliest Archaeological Evidence of Jesus Found in Jerusalem,” *Biblical Archaeological Review* November/December 2002, pg. 25. Note: On June 18, 2003 Jewish Antiquities officials came forward and stated that the ossuary’s inscription is too new for the ossuary without giving details. The discovery and its public disclosure appear to have rankled the Jewish Antiquities group in a case of upset vanities. The magazine *Biblical Archaeological Review* July/August issue, page 52, contains an article by Edward J. Keall of the Royal Ontario Museum (ROM) whose team examined the ossuary in detail after it had been broken in shipment. Multiple tests were conducted. They conclude, “Now restored, the ossuary is more structurally sound than before. And the accident provided our team at the ROM with an opportunity to study the bone box and its inscription in ways that would have been impossible had the box not broken. The studies we conducted have convinced us that the ossuary and its inscription are genuinely ancient and not a modern forgery. This conclusion, of course, is consistent with the findings of leading Semitic paleographers and Aramaic linguists, as well the Geological Survey of Israel.”

^{liii} 1 Corinthians 15:5-8

^{liii} John 20:15-17

^{liii} Matthew 28:10

^{liii} Luke 24:25-27

^{liii} Luke 24:37-42

^{liii} John 20:27-29

^{liii} John 21:3-14

^{liii} Leviticus 19:21

^{liii} Matthew 27:28, Isaiah 50:6

^{liii} Mark 15:19

^{liii} Isaiah 52:14

^{liii} Matthew 28:18-20

^{liii} Acts 1:8

^{liii} Acts 1:6-11

^{liii} John 20:30

^{liii} 1 Peter 3:22

Chapter 28

The Interval Of The Bride

It would be hard for anyone to understand, yet, staring up at the white cloud you are suddenly overwhelmed again by the realization that the man you have just spent three years with, was truly the Messiah, the Son of God. Your human dreams of a glorious kingdom on Earth were shattered as the gentle teacher, a man of incredible miracles, died in agony on a rough wooden cross. Then miraculously three days later He stands before you in a locked room, alive—a dramatic transformation of mortality to immortality. You think to yourself, how could we not have understood that His death had been foretold by the prophets and was prefigured by precise rules that God had dictated to Moses concerning the ritual of the Temple sacrifice. Now it is all so clear, as He fades from view into the glowing cloud. Suddenly, you are startled as two men in white raiment materialize out of thin air. *“Men of Galilee, why do you stand here looking into the sky? This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into heaven, will come back in the same way you have seen him go into heaven.”*ⁱ Your heart thrills within; you know from the scriptures that He will return as the Glorious Messiah. The two men then vanish. Were these the same two mysterious men in white apparel that appeared at the tomb you ponder to yourself?

As we look back on those days the disciples and followers should have gone back to their jobs and families and the stories of a gentle man named Jesus should have slowly faded from memory. Instead, a powerful transformation occurs in the lives of His disciples and spreads like

a surging flame of fire out of Jerusalem, through the Roman Empire and beyond. Some two thousand years later, this flame of Christianity has changed the lives of hundreds of millions of people of all nations. The Legions of Doom make every attempt to snuff it out. Satan is desperate to eliminate Jews and Christians alike because they stand in the way of his eternal freedom.

The Coming of The Counselor

The disciples make their way back to Jerusalem from the Mount of Olives to wait for the Counselor, as Jesus has instructed them to do. Matthias is chosen by lot to replace Judas as the twelfth apostle. Ten days pass after that incredible day of the ascension—the disciples, and others, are together in one house waiting and praying. By now, it is the Jewish Feast of Weeks, Shavuot, or Pentecost, which comes fifty days after Passover. It is a time of thanksgiving for the first fruits of the grain harvest. Jerusalem is filled with pilgrims from all the nations around the Mediterranean Sea.

Satan is watching the situation closely. There has been too much interference by the angels in white. Now that Jesus has disappeared, he has assured his forces that victory will be theirs, since mortals have no spiritual substance to withstand assaults of lust, pride, hate and vanity. “Death to the sentient creatures,” is the battle cry.

Then the attack comes. Satan feels it first as a powerful vibration from the superluminal. Uneasy apprehension surges through his being, he knows who is coming but is not prepared for what happens. It begins as a small rumbling sound centered over the house where the 125 believers are praying. The sound increases in amplitude until it howls like a violent tornado vibrating all of space-time around Jerusalem. Crowds stream towards the house in wonder. An invisible flame of fire

like a standing bolt of lightning extends from the superluminal into the house where it separates into visible tongues of fire that come to rest on each of those in the house.ⁱⁱ

The door bursts open, excited men and women, their faces radiant with joy, rush out praising God. The crowd is amazed and perplexed to hear praises to God in their own language. “What does this mean they ask?” “You’ve had too much wine,” someone shouts. Satan is shocked. Tongues of fire have entered each believer setting their eternal spirits aglow. Now, inhabited by Shekinah Glory, the Holy Spirit, the third person of the Holy Trinity, they are, in effect, each a living temple for God.ⁱⁱⁱ Even though they are still mortal, Satan clearly understands that the Holy Spirit has sealed them as sons of God. Invisible to human eyes warrior angels, messengers sent to serve the sons of God,^{iv*4} stand amongst the disciples, smiling, with swords in hand. Satan is stunned—a new superluminal portal bypassing his Web of Darkness has opened. A spiritual beachhead for the Kingdom of God has been established from the realm of Heaven.

Satan withdraws a respectful distance from the Shekinah Glory and signals for reinforcements. Immediately a ring of rebel angels surrounds the small circle of glowing light in an attempt to drive it back. Instead, the powerful light of Shekinah Glory, invisible to mortals, begins to cover the crowd like a dome. As it grows, more Angels of Glory with flashing swords quickly advance through the portal and align themselves around the inside perimeter of the crowd. The dome grows until it encompasses the crowd. Rebel angels flicker their swords at the shimmering dancing wall of light as they stumble backwards in fear of the circle of Radiant Glory.

Ambassador Peter

Peter, full of the Holy Spirit, raises his voice and addresses the crowd.

“Fellow Jews and all of you who live in Jerusalem, let me explain this to you; listen carefully to what I say. These men are not drunk, as you suppose. It’s only nine in the morning! No, this is what the prophet Joel spoke about:”

In the last days, God says, “I will pour out my Spirit on all people. Your sons and daughters will prophesy, your young men will see visions; your old men will dream dreams. Even on my servants, both men and women, I will pour out my Spirit in those days, and they will prophesy.”^v

The crowd presses closer to the small circle of disciples unaware of the angelic conflict. Peter’s words, powerful and vibrant, propelled by the witness of the Holy Spirit pierce the God consciousness of each individual.

Men of Israel, listen to this: Jesus of Nazareth was a man accredited by God to you by miracles, wonders and signs, which God did among you through him, as you yourselves know. This man was handed over to you by God’s set purpose and foreknowledge; and you, with the help of wicked men, put him to death by nailing him to the cross. But God raised him from the dead, freeing him from the agony of death, because it was impossible for death to keep its hold on him.^{vi}

God has raised this Jesus to life, and we are all witnesses of the fact. Exalted to the right hand of God, he has received from the Father the promised Holy Spirit and has poured out what you now see and hear. ... Therefore let all Israel be assured of this: God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ [Messiah].^{vii}

The powerful light of Truth of the Holy Spirit penetrates deep into the heart of each person; they begin to see their bent self-taking natures—the dirty soot of their lives. In spiritual conviction, they cry out.

“Brothers what shall we do?”

*Peter replies, “Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. The promise is for you and your children and for all who are far off—for all whom the Lord our God will call.”^{viii}*8 “Salvation is found in no one else, for there is no other name under heaven given to men by which we must be saved.”^{ix}*

Satan is horrified as he watches helplessly—every time an individual makes a conscious decision of faith to ask God’s forgiveness through belief in Jesus, they become “born again.” Each time, there is a flame of transformational power and each individual becomes an eternal citizen of Heaven sealed by the power of the Holy Spirit. Soon there are 3125 flickering flames bringing more angels through the portal. The kingdom of God is taking hold. The city of Jerusalem, possibly situated over the ancient site of the Garden of Eden where Adam and Eve lost their spiritual relationship with God, is now the focal point for a portal of eternal glory connecting time and eternity. The inflow of angels and transformational births continue steadily as the dome of light slowly ebbs away and the Holy Spirit inhabits each believer. Soon there are over 5000 human temples. These people are mostly Israelites who have been steeped in the sacrificial culture of the temple, and who truly grasp the significance of the redeeming death and resurrection of the Messiah. Amazing events continue to take place with the apostles performing miracles, signs and wonders through the power of the Holy Spirit.

Even though the Kingdom of God is steadily advancing, Satan is not to be so easily vanquished. The Jewish religious power structure tries to quench any mention of the resurrection of Jesus from the dead. Amazingly, they have no rebuttal, they can't produce His body; instead they rely on religious force. His disciples are arrested and confined in jail by the high priest and associates. During the night an angel of the Lord opens the jail doors and tells the disciples, "*Go stand in the temple courts and tell the people the full meaning of this new life.*"^x The persecution intensifies. King Herod kills James the brother of John. Eyewitnesses record that Peter is arrested and the night before his trial, while four squads of four soldiers each guard him, an angel of the Lord suddenly appears. Light shines in the cell and Peter's chains fall off. The angel leads Peter past the guards and when they came to the Iron Gate, it opens by itself—and then the angel disappears. Followers of the Way, as the new believers are called, are scattered by the persecution. Satan quickly finds to his dismay that this only makes the situation worse. Wherever these new believers go they spread like flames of light, and more people reject his worldly kingdom of lust, vanity and deceit for the Kingdom of Heaven.

Stephen is Martyred

Saul, later named Paul, a devout Pharisee who studied under an influential Rabbi named Gamaliel, was indoctrinated in the centuries of traditions, rules and regulations of Judaism. John Pollock, in his book *The Man Who Shook The World*, describes him thus:

Paul outstripped his contemporaries. He had a powerful mind, which could lead to a seat on the Sanhedrin in the Hall of Polished stones, and make him a "ruler of the Jews."

In contrast, a man named Stephen, of equal academic caliber, had chosen to follow The Way and in debate could clearly show that Jesus is the Messiah as foreshadowed by the Prophets. Pollock writes:

Paul considered Stephen's arguments nonsense. The Christ had not come yet. And the way to God was fixed forever: a man must belong to God's chosen people the Jews, and try to obey the Law every detail. When he sinned, forgiveness depended on the ritual slaughter of animals day after day, year after year in the Temple. Paul could not stomach Stephen's idea that the dying of one young man, by a common if degrading and revolting form of punishment, could blot out sins. As for the alleged resurrection, he pitied those who narrowed their lives to the following of a dead Messiah. He felt no personal concern, knowing his own goodness, but he recognized Stephen's contentions as dangerous. Gamaliel had advised toleration. Simon Peter and other disciples of Jesus worshipped at the Temple and continued to obey the Law. But Paul saw, as Stephen saw, that the old and new were incompatible; man was saved either by the Temple sacrifices and obeying the Law, or by faith in Jesus. The old must destroy the new or be destroyed.^{xi}

Stephen is arrested and presents his case before the Sanhedrin. As in the case of Jesus, the theocratic elite wants only the power of self-serving legalism. Stephen raises his voice and proclaims:

You stiff-necked people, with uncircumcised hearts and ears! You are just like your fathers: You always resist the Holy Spirit! Was there ever a prophet your fathers did not persecute? They even killed those who predicted the coming of the Righteous

One. And now you have betrayed and murdered him—you who have received the law that was put into effect through angels but have not obeyed it.^{xii}

All of heaven may have been watching this scene on Earth as Stephen stands as a bold witness against the satanic control of the Jewish theocracy. At that moment, power from the Holy Spirit fills Stephen and the interdimensional photon barrier temporarily fades as he gazes into the depths of Heaven. No one misses the intense excitement as he exclaims, “*Look, I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God.*” At this, they cover their ears, then, yelling at the top of their voices and propelled by the invisible Legions of Doom they all rush at him, drag him out of the city, lay their clothes at the feet of a young man named Saul, and begin to stone Stephen. Filled with stabbing pain and bleeding profusely as stones are hurled at him Stephen cries out “*Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.*” Falling on his knees he makes one last plea, “*Lord, do not hold this sin against them,*”^{xiii} just before a massive stone smashes his skull.

Ambassador Paul

Satan has his man. Saul continues to persecute against the Church. Going from house to house, he drags the followers of The Way off to prison and death. The Legions of Doom gleefully conscript their mortal minions in the war of the cosmos. Mortals can kill each other; the Kingdom of God must be defeated by physical force. The high priest grants Saul permission to pursue the people of The Way to the city of Damascus in modern Syria. Paul’s small caravan, surrounded by the Legions of Darkness, is nearing Damascus. Suddenly a quantum gap from the superluminal immerses them. The Legions of Doom flee in terror. Pollock’s literary style describes the scene beautifully.

The sky was clear blue. Paul's memory is emphatic that there was no thunderstorm or violent wind, as some suggest who seek a natural explanation for what happened. He was not near nervous breakdown or about to suffer an epileptic fit; not even especially in a hurry. "Suddenly about midday a great light flashed from the sky all around me... a light more brilliant than the sun, shining all around me and my traveling companions."

They all fell to the ground. They were appalled by this phenomenon, not just a flash but light, terrifying and inexplicable. The companions seem to have stumbled to their feet. Paul remained prostrate. For him only, the light grew in intensity. He heard a voice, at once calm and authoritative, say in Aramaic: "Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?" He looked up. Within the center of light which blinded him from his surroundings he faced a man of about his own age. Paul could not believe what he heard and saw. All his convictions, intellect and training, his reputation, his self-respect, demanded that Jesus should not be alive again. He played for time and replied, "Who are you, Lord?" He used a mode of address which might mean no more than "Your honor." "I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting. It is hard for you, this kicking against the goad."

Then he knew. In a second that seemed an eternity Paul saw the wounds in Jesus's feet, saw the face and knew that he had seen the Lord, that he was alive, as Stephen and the others had said, and that he loved not only those whom Paul persecuted but Paul: "It is hard for you to kick against the goad." Not one word of reproach.

Paul had never admitted to himself that he had felt pricks of a goad as he raged against Stephen and his disciples. But now, instantaneously, he was shatteringly aware that he had been fighting Jesus. And fighting himself, his conscience, his powerlessness, the darkness and chaos in his soul. God hovered over this chaos and brought him to the moment of new creation. It wanted only his “Yes.”

Paul broke.^{xiv}

A powerful transformation begins in Paul’s life. He is lead into Damascus a blind man.

Three days later, (the same length of time that Jesus lay in the darkness of death) a trusting servant of Jesus is directed by the Lord to go to Paul, lay his hands on him and pray. The Lord had said to Ananias: *“Go! This man is my chosen instrument to carry my name before the Gentiles and their kings and before the people of Israel. I will show him how much he must suffer for my name.”*^{xv}

Ananias did so, and when he places his hands on Paul, Paul is filled with the Holy Spirit and something like scales fall

from his eyes. His sight is restored. He is baptized, and to the astonishment of many begins to preach that Jesus is the Son of God. Even though persecution continues, the Church grows

Scales of Enlightenment

Do scales need to fall from our eyes in our modern age of enlightenment? The philosophy of evolution seems so logical to the God denying intellect. Yet, when one comes in repentance to the King of Glory, such a worldly-wise hypothesis becomes not only statistically improbable but also scientifically illogical. Paul had all the knowledge of the scriptures similar to Stephen, yet, the scales of vanity and self-righteous religious power kept him from recognizing the evidence all around him of the actions of God in his ontology.

steadily over the next 20 years under the leadership of John, Peter and James, the Just, the half-brother of Jesus.

Salvation for All

The flames of the spiritual “new birth” quickly spread to God fearing Gentiles. In a dramatic event, Jesus makes it clear to the apostle Peter that all peoples are to come to Him in faith in His redeeming work on the cross of Calvary.

A commander of the Italian Regiment in Caesarea “*and all his family were devout and God-fearing; he gave generously to those in need and prayed to God regularly.*”^{xvi} One afternoon while in prayer to God, a man in shining clothes suddenly appears before him. The angel informs him that God has heard his prayers and that he is to send for a man named Peter who is visiting Simon, the tanner, in the town of Joppa. The next day as Peter is on the flat roof of Simons house resting, a powerful vision transforms his consciousness.

The interdimensions linking space-time seem to ripple—it is as if he is looking into another dimension. What appears to be a large sheet holding all sorts of four-footed animals, birds and reptiles is being let down to earth. Then a voice tells him, “*Get up, Peter. Kill and eat.*” “*Surely not, Lord!*” Peter replies. “*I have never eaten anything impure or unclean.*” The voice speaks a second time, “*Do not call anything impure that God has made clean.*” This happens three times, and immediately the sheet disappears. While Peter is still thinking about the vision, the Spirit says to him, “*Simon, three men are looking for you. So get up and go downstairs. Do not hesitate to go with them, for I have sent them.*”

Peter travels with the three men to Caesarea where Cornelius has gathered his relatives and close friends together. He explains to Peter what has happened. “*Then Peter began to speak: I now realize how true it is that God does not show favoritism but accepts men from every*

nation who fear him and do what is right. You know the message God sent to the people of Israel, telling the good news of peace through Jesus Christ, who is Lord of all.... He commanded us to preach to the people and to testify that He is the one whom God appointed as judge of the living and the dead. All the prophets testify about him that everyone who believes in him receives forgiveness of sins through his name.”^{xvii} Suddenly the Holy Spirit appears as flames of fire on all the Gentiles who have believed the message and they too became temples of the living God. Peter and his followers hear them speaking in other languages and praising God.

Satan and his regional commander have been following the scene closely. To his dismay, the Eternal flame of the Holy Spirit enters each believing Gentile and they are also sealed as Celestial Citizens. Thus, in the Kingdom of God all people are equal, there is neither Jew, Gentile, freeman, slave, male or female—all inherit eternal life as children of God. The flames of fire spread quickly to all nations around the Mediterranean Sea.

The Web of Darkness is in a state of perplexity. The Council of Iniquity is called into session. Members of the Legions of Doom are assembled from all around the planet and from the dimensions of interspace. The Kingdom of God must be stopped. One can imagine that it is at this council that the Manifesto of Planetary Death is inaugurated. The Jews will have to be eliminated, Jerusalem destroyed, thus, the Messiah, and the resurrected King David will have no kingdom or city to return to, as prophesied. Likewise, Christianity will also have to be terminated since it is converting mortals into eternal citizens of Heaven, who will rule all principalities and authorities for all ages to come.

The scriptures are examined and it is found that Yeshua has prophesied that Lucifer will establish a powerful worldwide kingdom in an age of high technology. It is then decided that if this kingdom is not able to defeat the coming of the Glorious Messiah, the Lion of Judah, then all of humanity must be killed. If mortals can be brought to the point of self-annihilation, as fun as they were to torment, then none of Yeshua's prophecies can be fulfilled and they will remain eternally free. An observant official points out that if the new Church of Believers can be drawn into a system of religious rules and self-righteous power, then, like the Israelites, they will be useless for God's purposes.

The council concludes that the first line of attack will be persecution, murder, spiritual corruption by religious vanity, deceptive self-appeasing rules, and regulations and finally apathy by peace and prosperity. The last resort solution will be to annihilate all of humanity. The council closes with a sign of clenched fists and a cry of "death to the sentient creatures."

The books of the New Testament cover this remarkable advance of the Kingdom of God on Earth under the leadership of King Jesus from heaven. Luke, the physician, records the life of Jesus in his book named after him. The book of Acts, his second book, is a first hand description of the spread of Christianity to the Gentiles, under the leadership of Paul, as he travels with him throughout the Mediterranean area, as far as the city of Rome. Here, in this great Imperial City, three decades later, Paul is beheaded and Peter crucified upside down. The apostle Peter wrote two books. The apostle John wrote five, including the book of Revelation. Paul wrote thirteen. The authorship of the book of Hebrews is uncertain, but Paul is considered to be its' author.

Robert Linder in an *Introduction To the Christian Centuries*, writes,

The basic claim of the early Christians was that they had discovered a different way of life that was better than that offered by the non-Christian world. They believed that Jesus was the promised Messiah or Christ, and that he had freed them from their sins and transformed their lives through the power of the Holy Spirit. They were, in words of the apostle Paul, new creations in Christ.

They believed that theirs was a better way because it offered the believer forgiveness of sin, peace with God, hope for the future, a new and higher ethical code, power to live up to that special ethical standard, and life after death. The Christian believer's first loyalty was to Jesus Christ, and therefore the Christians practiced a new ethic of love-even towards enemies. Christians emphasized concern for others rather than self. Many of the early converts to the faith, such as Justin Martyr, were first attracted by the love they saw among believers.

Since their life style was so radically different, Christians were almost automatically excluded from the mainstream of pagan society. When they refused to participate in the pageantry of imperial social life, or when they rejected luxury and personal adornment, they were suspected of being anti-social and dangerous fanatics. Because they were so obviously different from non-Christians in the Roman world, they soon were dubbed 'the third race.' That is they were regarded as neither pagan nor Jewish, but as a race apart.

Lastly, many early Christians considered earthly citizenship unimportant because they were citizens of heaven.^{xviii}

The Kingdom of Heaven Rejected

There is nothing so vain as a man who thinks he is a god and none so blind who accord him his vanity. Such were the Caesars and citizens of the Roman Empire who cried by rote, “There is no god but Caesar.” Peter and Paul were tried and condemned to death by Caesar Nero and his Senate because they would not bow and worship Caesar. In the cosmological sense then, even as the Jews rejected Jesus for reasons of religious and political vanity, the Gentile Imperial World Government of Rome, also for reasons of religious and political vanity, sentenced the Ambassadors of the Kingdom of Heaven to death. “Of Paul’s final trial nothing is known beyond a tradition that he was condemned by resolution of the Senate on the charge of treason against the Divine Emperor. How long Simon Peter and Paul were in prison together before being executed the same day, as an early and strong belief asserts, cannot be fixed; possibly as much as nine months. The date honored in the city of their martyrdom is June 29, 67 AD. Peter is nailed to a cross as a public spectacle at Nero’s Circus on the Vatican, head downward at his own request, and Paul a Roman citizen, is beheaded in a less public place.”^{xix}

The rejection of the Messiah is now complete—by Satan of the spiritual domain, and by the Jews and the Gentiles representing fallen mankind. In the religious vein, the Jews represent God’s subverted theocracy and the Romans the poly-pagan religious beliefs of the Gentile nations. The Eternal Son of God has been murdered, and now two of His principle ambassadors

are executed. Three years later in 70 AD, in fulfillment of Jesus's prediction, Jerusalem is sacked and burned. It's beautiful temple, which is the subject of modern archaeological debate, is totally smashed into a pile of rubble. Jerusalem became a heap of ruins and the site plowed in preparation for a Roman colony. Thus, the prophecy of the prophet Micah came to pass that Jerusalem would become a heap of rubble and plowed like a field.^{xx} The Roman war machine destroys the Jewish nation and its citizens exiled into the surrounding nations. In spite of persecution, the flames of Christianity keep spreading. Though God is patient, not willing that any should perish, the wrath of the Kingdom of Heaven will eventually be poured out on rebellious planet Earth.

A Cosmic Revelation

In 95 AD the apostle John, now an old man, had been confined to a remote rocky island, the Isle of Patmos in the Mediterranean, for his testimony concerning Jesus Christ. It is here that the most contentious book of the Bible, the book of Revelation was written. It describes God's wrath upon a self-centered God rejecting civilization. The word revelation is from the Latin word *revelatio*. The comparable word in Greek is *apokalupsis*, from which the English word apocalypse is derived. Both words mean—disclosure of that which was previously hidden or unknown. “*On the Lord's Day I was in the Spirit,*”^{xxi} says John, which may have been on a Sunday, but in any case, John is deep in prayer for the fledgling Church of Christ. An explosion of the superluminal suddenly envelops him. Jesus, the Divine man now fully glorified with the glory that He had with the Father before his incarnation, stands before him. John falls at His feet as though dead. Jesus instructs him to write a letter and address it to seven churches in what is now Asia Minor in the modern country of Turkey.

Brilliant Glory radiates from Jesus; in His hand are what seem to be seven glistening stars. As He speaks, His words of Eternal meaning flash like a two edged sword. In John's words He was, *“like a son of man, dressed in a robe reaching down to his feet and with a golden sash around his chest. His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow, and his eyes were like blazing fire. His feet were like bronze glowing in a furnace, and his voice was like the sound of rushing waters.... His face was like the sun shining in all its brilliance.”* Jesus speaks, *“I am the Alpha and the Omega, who is, and who was, and who is to come, the Almighty.... Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last. I am the Living One; I was dead, and behold I am alive forever and ever! And I hold the keys of death and Hades. Write, therefore, what you have seen, what is now and what will take place later.”*^{xxii} It is no wonder that John lays on the ground in reverent terror. The Magnificent One who stands before him, who speaks the words of Jehovah the Eternal Father, is also the Glorified Son Of Man. Jesus, while on Earth, said, *“I and the Father are One.”*^{xxiii}

Daniel had been given a holographic picture of the Ancient of Days whose clothing was white as snow, and the hair of His head as white as wool. Daniel had seen thrones set in place in the interdimensions surrounding Earth. One like a “son of man” had come before the Ancient of Days. Daniel was informed that this son of man *“was given authority, glory and sovereign power; all peoples, nations and men of every language worshiped him. His dominion is an everlasting dominion that will not pass away, and his kingdom is one that will never be destroyed.”*^{xxiv} It is a sacrilege to worship a man, therefore this “son of man” had to be God. What we see in mystery prophetic pictorial form in the book of Daniel is fulfilled in the God-man-Jesus Christ. “God the mighty Maker died for man the creature's sin,” writes the great theologian J. A. Seiss. He continues,

If it was not so, then I am at loss to know what atoning power there could be in his [Jesus] death more than that of any martyr to the truth. And yet there was no suspension of the continuity of that which is eternal and ever living. That there was a certain emptying of himself on the part of Christ in his humiliation and death is taught us. And that there was a certain quitting of the use and claim of his Godhood in his incarnation and submission to death a certain putting of himself out of self-existing life in order to receive it again from the Father, we must believe. But we must at the same time hold, that it was somehow The Living One that became dead, and the eternal life that had share in the mysterious immolation, giving virtue to the sacrifice, and imparting itself through it.^{xxv}

It sometimes seems that some believers have in their minds eye a picture of Jesus as a man somehow departing the Mount of Olives trailing dust from his sandals as He disappears into the great beyond. Then, because the angel had said that He would return the same way that they had seen Him go, they assume that He will suddenly appear—try to get everyone’s attention and then negotiate world peace. Some even suggest that maybe Jesus shows up as some beggar wandering the streets to test our faith. However, there is nothing in the scriptures to support this idea. They clearly state that He came once as a servant—the second time He will come as the God-man, ruler of Heavens and Earth. Yes, He will come back physically as He went—but the how of it will strike shear terror to Earth’s rebellious citizens. He will come as lightning, a massive interdimensional space-time portal will open and the armies of heaven will follow him as He executes judgment on the armies of mankind, Satan and the Legions of Doom. “*Look, he is*

coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him, even those who pierced him; and all the peoples of the earth will mourn because of him. So shall it be! Amen.”^{xxvi}

Jesus tells John to describe on a scroll what He will see and to send it to seven churches in Asia Minor; Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamum, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia and Laodicea. Many scholars believe that the message to the seven churches is both a literal message for that time, and a prophetic message outlining the era of the Church, between the 69th and 70th weeks of Daniel’s prophecy. Seiss is of this viewpoint.

In the first place, the seven Churches represent seven phases or periods in the Church’s history, stretching from the time of the apostles to the coming again of Christ, the characteristics of which are set forth partly in the names of these Churches, but more fully in the epistles addressed to them. There has been an Ephesian period a period of warmth and love and labour for Christ, dating directly from the apostles, in which defection began by the gradual cooling of the love of some, the false professions of others, and the incoming of undue exaltations of the clergy and Church offices.

Then came the Smyrna period the era of martyrdom, and of the sweet savour unto God of faithfulness unto death, but marked with further developments of defection in the establishment of castes and orders, the license of Judaizing propensities, and consequent departures from the true simplicities of the Gospel. Then followed the Pergamite period, in which true faith more and more disappeared from view, and clericalism gradually formed itself into a system, and the Church united with the world, and Babylon began to rear itself aloft. Then came the Thyatiran period the age of purple and glory for

the corrupt priesthood, and of darkness for the truth; the age of effeminacy and clerical domination, when the Church usurped the place of Christ, and the witnesses of Jesus were given to dungeons, stakes and inquisitions; the age of the enthronement of the false prophetess, reaching to the days of Luther and the Reformation.

Then came the Sardian period the age of separation and return to the rule of Christ; the age of comparative freedom from Balaam and his doctrines, from the Nicolaitans and their tenets, from Jezebel and her fornications; an age of many worthy names, but marked with deadness withal, and having much of which to repent; an age covering the spiritual lethargy of the Protestant centuries before the great evangelical movements of the last hundred years, which brought us the Philadelphian era, marked by a closer adherence to the written word, and more fraternity among Christians, but now rapidly giving place to Laodicean lukewarmness, self-sufficiency, empty profession, and false peace, in which the day of judgment is to find the unthinking multitude who suppose they are Christians and are not.^{xxvii}

The doctrine of Balaam incited believers to lust by using voluptuous women as an enticement to sexual sins. Nicolaitans held that the spiritual part of man is inherently good and is not defiled by wanton bodily pleasures. Jezebel, the pagan wife of the Old Testament King Ahab, led the Israelites into idolatrous religious rites inflamed with debased pagan sexuality. In this way, the mandates of the Council of Iniquity are implemented in an attempt to destroy and prostitute the Church, the Bride of Christ. The prophetic words of Jesus, concerning the future of the Church that are dictated to the apostle John, is further evidence of God's working in our

ontology. This letter to the seven churches shows remarkable correlation with the turbulent advance of Christianity over the last two thousand years.

Next, after he is told to write, John sees a door open into the realms of Heaven and is told “*Come up here, and I will show you what must take place after this.*”^{xxviii} John experiences the most incredible, in modern terms, holographic view of the Great Day of the Lord, when the cosmic war between Jesus and Satan is centered on Earth. Powerful angelic forces led by Michael, the archangel Prince of Israel, will cast Satan and his forces from the regions of the physical universe and the interdimensional realm of Heaven to the Earth where they will make their last stand against the forces of Heaven. As usurper of Adam’s domain and Prince of the power of the aerial regions of Earth, he is then confined to planet Earth. Prophetically this period of time is understood by many Biblical scholars to be the 70th week of Daniel, when the true Bride of Christ has been translated from Earth. During this period, 144,000 Jewish preachers will herald, amongst the nations, the coming of the Kingdom of God to Earth. Satan and his Legions of Doom will have assumed direct control of the world using deceitful paranormal events and supernatural powers. The war of the cosmos will be horrific for rebellious mankind. It will be a time of literal hell on Earth.

If it can be shown that the prophetic words of Jesus Christ to the seven churches have been fulfilled in our ontology for the period between the 69th and 70th weeks of Daniel, then they will be fulfilled for the time of God’s wrath upon Earth in the final 70th week of Daniel. Moreover, if the prophetic events that have been chronologically prerecorded throughout the Bible concerning Israel and Yeshua-Jesus have been fulfilled, and can only be explained by a transcendent reality of God working in our ontology, then, by Willard’s third tenet, God Exists.

Notes:

-
- ⁱ Acts 1:11
ⁱⁱ Acts 2:1-13
ⁱⁱⁱ 1 Corinthians 3:16
^{iv} Hebrews 1: 14
^v Acts 2:14-18
^{vi} Acts 2:22-24
^{vii} Acts 2:32-36
^{viii} Acts 2:37-39
^{ix} Acts 4:12
^x Acts 5:20
^{xi} Pollock John, *The Man Who Shook The World*, Victory Books 1972, pg. 7 & 10
^{xii} Acts 7:51-53
^{xiii} Acts 7:56-60
^{xiv} Pollock, *Ibid*, pg. 17
^{xv} Acts 9:15,16
^{xvi} Acts 10:2 +
^{xvii} Acts 10:35+
^{xviii} Robert D. Linder, "Introduction: The Christian Centuries," pg. xii, *Ferdmans Handbook To The History Of Christianity*, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., Grand Rapids, Michigan 49503, USA, 1987
^{xix} Pollock, *Ibid*, pg. 237
^{xx} Micah 3:12
^{xxi} Revelation 1:10
^{xxii} Revelation 1:13-19
^{xxiii} John 10:30
^{xxiv} Daniel 7:14
^{xxv} Seiss J.A., *The Apocalypse*, Zondervan Publishing House 1973 pg. 47
^{xxvi} Revelation 1:7
^{xxvii} Seiss, *Ibid*, pg. 64
^{xxviii} Revelation 4:1

Chapter 29

God Exists

A gunman fires on a church group in Texas. Are Evangelicals the new hate-crime target?

After the shootings a moist-eyed George W. Bush said, ‘There seems to be a wave of evil passing through America.’ Today show’s Katie Couric, interviewing Wedgwood’s pastor, Al Meredith, listened as he offered the standard explanation for the crime: the killer was ‘deranged and deluded.’

Then, almost hesitantly, the pastor noted, ‘There’s some possible theological, religious reasons you many not be interested in.’ Said Couric: ‘Well, go ahead.’

And Meredith explained that because of all the seminary students attending Wedgwood, ‘if I were Satan, and if I were real, and I wanted to deliver a death knell to the kingdom of God, I would target this church.’¹

Where have the last 2000 years gone? Just because, in the time frame of our microdot lives, this large amount of time has passed, it does not mean that God does not exist, or have a plan for mankind. Our self-elevated importance causes us to focus on the moment at hand, as if the world’s events revolve around our moment of being. If the intelligence arrow of our

existence points to an eternity of being—then this moment of our cognizant awareness is not a trite matter to discard as a passing spasm of evolutionary fantasy.

“Be happy, be happy” advise the proponents of evolution, and yet for them, the all of your being is to eat, breed and die. Trapped by a swirl of hormones your moment of evolutionary awareness is thrust in the direction of meaninglessness reproduction. Why then do concepts of spiritualism and morality haunt the empty chambers of evolutionary philosophy? Combined natural electric currents, electromagnetic fields and oceanic hot springs saturated with minerals have never evolved microchips that propel the marvels of our electronic age; yet, these magnificent servants of technology have been created with concept, design and programming context by human intelligence.

It would appear that the aspect of God is measured in the concepts of our own reality. That something has never come from nothing, or order from disorder, is blatantly refuted with the blind statement “I exist, therefore I am.” We question, how could God exist unbounded by space-time, and yet, even as our physical dimension exists we should consider the possibility that it was created by an Eternal Being who exists and seeks to impart, within this confined reality, purpose of being to sentient creatures of His creation. This concept is no less probable than the idea that something came from nothing, and that life is a statistical purposeless accident.

Lets’ take the proposition that love and communication existed within the Godhead before all that is spiritual and spatially interdimensional came into being. Love then is the essence of God’s Eternity. If God created man in His image, then man exists for the higher purpose of a love relationship with his Creator. Is it too much to believe that an Eternal Being would design a confined reality wherein His unconditional love could be manifested, such that sentient creatures may inherit eternal life in an unconfined reality? Is it too much to believe that a

powerful spirit being named Lucifer rebelled against his Creator and usurped mankind's dominion? Is it too much to believe that God took upon Himself to come as the God-man-Jesus Christ to vanquish this traitor, and free those who choose to believe in His act of love from the traitor's fate of eternal confinement? Is it too much to believe that the resurrection is a powerful transformation of mortality to immortality for those who believe in the redeeming work of Jesus Christ?

Are we like a young lover standing in a field of daisies, with one in hand pulling out the petals one by one murmuring wistfully, I am loved, I am not loved, I am loved, I am not loved until all the petals are gone? Instead, as the petals fall to the ground we ponder, God is, God is not, God is, God is not and as the last petal drifts slowly onto the grass, we are still faced with the emptiness of our existence. Evolution by its very nature has no purpose and no direction. On the other hand, if there is consistent evidence of a transcendent fulfillment of prophetic events in our ontology as outlined in the Bible, then, the cosmological argument of design takes on meaning and a first uncreated cause, God, must exist. Then, and only then do the natural physical laws of the universe and the functioning of the intricate biological mechanisms of Earth take on form, yielding purpose and direction for Earth as a birthplace for the sons of God who will inherit Eternity.

It might be argued that a first uncreated cause may be of a form that is not God-Jehovah of the Bible. However, the original premise taken is that Jehovah reveals through His supernatural inspiration of the Bible that He is Yeshua-Jesus who acts in a transcendental fashion in our space-time realm. The challenge for any other philosophy, or religious system, is to validate their beliefs, as the Bible has over the last 4000 years—that their first uncreated cause exists and gives purpose and direction to our lives. *“Present your case,” says the LORD. “Set*

forth your arguments,” says Jacob’s King. “Bring in your idols to tell us what is going to happen. Tell us what the former things were, so that we may consider them and know their final outcome. Or declare to us the things to come, tell us what the future holds, so we may know that you are gods.” ⁱⁱ In the near future Satan will use supernatural feats to deceive mankind into thinking that he is God. However, supernatural feats within a confined reality do not validate him as a first uncreated cause and will only deceive those who want self-seeking power to be “as gods.”

The Letter

Once again, we visit the Apostle John who is confined to the Island of Patmos, as a prisoner of the Roman Empire. Brilliant light shines around the old man as he kneels prostrate on the floor of the small rock hovel, barely daring to breathe. Jesus says, as He reaches out and touches him, *“I am the Alpha and the Omega, who is, and who was, and who is to come, the Almighty.”*... *“Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last. I am the Living One; I was dead, and behold I am alive for ever and ever! And I hold the keys of death and Hades. Write, therefore, what you have seen, what is now and what will take place later.”*ⁱⁱⁱ

The letter is addressed to seven literal gatherings of the followers of The Way, called Churches (Greek = *ekklesia*, a gathering of people). It is a message to each of the church gatherings, as well as a prophetic revelation of what would happen to Christian believers over the coming centuries. The number seven is associated with completion. Since this letter was written, the word “church” has drifted to mean the building where people gather. This is not the meaning used here. The letter was directed to seven different Church (Bride of Christ) gatherings of no particular significance in Asia Minor, or in Israel, which indicates that it is a prophetic message

to all Christians, about the progress of the invisible Kingdom of God in the age of the Church through to the “end times.”

The historical progress of the Church age follows that of the Western church movement out of the city of Rome as revealed to the prophet Daniel. The fourth beast with the iron teeth, in Daniel’s vision, is the Roman Empire. A ruler, or prince, of the Roman Empire destroys Jerusalem in 70 AD as predicted by Daniel and Jesus. The future last world kingdom, in the end times, to be ruled by the man of supernatural abilities (the Antichrist), will have its roots in the Roman Empire. The statue in Nebuchadnezzar’s dream had two legs, which predicted the division of the Church of Rome into the Roman Catholic and the Eastern Orthodox churches. The ten toes of the statue suggest that the religious power structure of the Antichrist comes from the region dominated by these two churches.

The opening address of the letter is to the city of Ephesus, a banking center with an excellent harbour. Its citizens practiced religious sexual prostitute worship to the goddess Diana. Yet, in the midst of this pagan worship Paul, Apollos, Timothy and John over a period of time had pastored a loyal group of followers of The Way. Jesus begins,

To the angel of the church in Ephesus write: These are the words of him who holds the seven stars in his right hand and walks among the seven golden lampstands: I know your deeds, your hard work and your perseverance. I know that you cannot tolerate wicked men, that you have tested those who claim to be apostles but are not, and have found them false. You have persevered and have endured hardships for my name, and have not grown weary. Yet I hold this against you: You have forsaken your first love. Remember the height from which you have fallen! Repent and do the things you did at first. If you do not repent, I will come to you and remove your

lampstand from its place. But you have this in your favor: You hate the practices of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes, I will give the right to eat from the tree of life, which is in the paradise of God.^{iv}

Flames of pure spiritual fire spread from this Church throughout the Mediterranean coastline from approximately 32 to 102 AD, from the death and resurrection of Jesus to just after the death of the elderly Apostle John. It is a period of Church growth when Jesus holds the Pastors and the followers of The Way close to His heart, as symbolized by the stars and the golden lampstands. The Church's intense love for Jesus brought good deeds, hard work, perseverance and hardships. Love, forgiveness and communication are the attributes of a God fearing Church. Yet, Jesus warns, "*You have forsaken your first love,*" as there was a tendency to performance and duty that would deceptively open the door to man-centered traditions, rules and rituals.

The city of Smyrna, which was on the main trade route from Rome to India and Persia, contained temples to Zeus, Cybele (the mother of the gods) and a temple dedicated to Caesar worship. Persecution, confiscation of property and martyrdom faced those who would not bow down and worship Caesar. Jesus speaks again,

To the angel of the church in Smyrna write: These are the words of him who is the First and the Last, who died and came to life again. I know your afflictions and your poverty—yet you are rich! I know the slander of those who say they are Jews and are not, but are a synagogue of Satan. Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. I tell you, the devil will put some of you in prison to test you, and you will suffer persecution for ten days. Be faithful, even to the point of death, and I will give you

the crown of life. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. He who overcomes will not be hurt at all by the second death.^v

Jesus encourages them that though they have lost their material wealth, they are spiritually rich. He reminds them that He has conquered death and that at the great White Throne judgment of men and angels they will escape the flames of Hell. Jews were also being persecuted for not bowing to Caesar and some took the attention off of themselves by reporting Christian believers. Satan ruled their lives since a true believer in Jehovah-God and His Messiah would not have acted in this manner. The prophetic church period is from 102 to 312 AD. Satan and his Legions of Doom hounded and slaughtered the Ambassadors to the Kingdom of Heaven, and yet, it seemed from the blood of the martyrs the invisible Kingdom of God advanced upon the pagan Empire of Rome.

The “ten days” of persecution is thought by many Bible interpreters to be the ten eras of persecution under ten diabolical Caesars: Nero 64-68, Domitian 90-95, Trajan 104-117, Aurelius 161-180, Severus 200-211, Maximus 235-237, Decius 250-253, Valerian 257-260, Aurelian 270-275, and Diocletian 303-312 AD.^{vi*6} Ignatius bishop of Antioch and Polycarp bishop of Smyrna were martyred in the early second century. The great writings of Justin Martyr, Tertullian and Origen are from this era. The pagan spiritualism of the Roman Empire was shaken by the power of individual transformed lives, the birth of new creations who became future eternal sons of God.

Pergamum was famous for a parchment known as pergamena. The city contained many temples, altars and sacred groves devoted to idol worship of the pagan cults of Athena, Asclepius, Dionysus and Zeus. One of the idols was in the form of a serpent, epitomizing Esculapius the serpent god. Once more John faithfully writes,

To the angel of the church in Pergamum write: These are the words of him who has the sharp, double-edged sword. I know where you live—where Satan has his throne. Yet you remain true to my name. You did not renounce your faith in me, even in the days of Antipas, my faithful witness, who was put to death in your city—where Satan lives. Nevertheless, I have a few things against you: You have people there who hold to the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to entice the Israelites to sin by eating food sacrificed to idols and by committing sexual immorality. Likewise you also have those who hold to the teaching of the Nicolaitans. Repent therefore! Otherwise, I will soon come to you and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To him who overcomes, I will give some of the hidden manna. I will also give him a white stone with a new name written on it, known only to him who receives it.^{vii}

The double-edged sword represents the Word of God that gives eternal life to the believer, or eternal banishment to the unbeliever. The Web of Darkness used Pergamum as one of its control centers; Satan's throne was there. He would have been extremely agitated at temples of the Holy Spirit moving amongst his city of physically sensual sacrificial idol worship and sexual debauchery. What had been hated practices of the Nicolaitans in the Ephesian Church became teachings in Pergamum. In spite of this evil environment, and martyrdom, Christians held on to their faith and did not deny the deity of Jesus.

The Pergamum church reflects the shifts in Christianity from 312 to 600 AD. In 312 AD, Constantine the Great battled Maxentius at the Milvian Bridge for the position of Emperor and defeated him. Maxentius was reported to be a master in the magical arts. Constantine prayed to the Supreme God for help. Church historian Eusebius of Caesarea, who later became a close

friend of the Emperor, recorded Constantine's statement of these events. He saw the sign of a cross in the noonday sky with the words "Conquer by this," and that night he had an angelic vision, which he interpreted as a visit from Christ. The story has been doubted, but for whatever his reasons, Constantine's allegiance to Christianity was genuine. Dr. Walvoord writes,

The parallel in the history of the church to the temptation and failure foreshadowed at Pergamos is all too evident to students of church history. With the so-called conversion of Constantine the Emperor, the time of persecution which the church had previously endured was replaced by a period in which the church was favored by the government.... Under these circumstances it soon became popular to be a Christian, and the conscience of the church was quickly blurred. It became increasingly difficult to maintain a clear distinction between the church and the world and to preserve the purity of biblical doctrine. Though some benefit was secured by the successful defense of biblical truth by the Council of Nicea in AD 325 as opposed to the defection from the faith by Arius and his followers, the history of the three centuries which followed is a record of increasing corruption of the church, departure from biblical doctrine, and an attempt to combine Christian theology with pagan philosophy. As a result, the church soon lost its hope of an early return of Christ, and biblical simplicity was replaced by a complicated church organization which substituted human creeds and worship of Mary, the mother of our Lord, for true biblical doctrine. The church committed the same sin of which Israel was guilty in the Old Testament, namely, the worship of idols and union with the heathen world.^{viii}

The plan of the Council of Iniquity was working well. Persecution and martyrdom were not as effective as self-seeking political and religious power within the religious system. Just as Israel's religious elite had been concerned with rules, regulations and theocratic power, likewise the Church was becoming embedded with paganism and political control. Even though some of the Church leaders fell into spiritual bankruptcy, the flames of the Holy Spirit burned like advancing brush fires throughout the Roman Empire and beyond. St. Patrick went to Ireland, Martin of Tours went to France and Ninian went to Scotland. Some believe that Brendan, an Irish abbot, may have discovered America in the sixth century. It was a time of outstanding Church leaders such as Ambrose, Jerome, Basil the Great and Augustine of Hippo.

The fourth prophetic age, as outlined to the church at Thyratira, is considered to be generally from 600 to 1500 AD. It was a time of mixed brilliant light and great darkness. The corruption of political and theocratic power, departure from apostolic biblical doctrine and merging of paganism that began in the third church age reached maturity during this period, as Europe became a so-called Christian society. Power conflicts between the Church of Rome and the Crown of England led to the formation of the Anglican and United churches in Britain. Nevertheless, the doctrine of truth shone as a brilliant light through such men as Boniface, Bernard of Clairvaux, Francis of Assisi, Thomas Aquinas, John Wycliff and Jan Hus. The theocratic power of the church system kept the Bible away from the ordinary man. This changed with the invention of the printing press by Johann Gutenberg in 1445 AD (the first printed book in the Christian world was the Bible in 1456 AD). Reformers such as John Wycliff pushed for the translation of the Bible into all languages—hence the modern organization of Wycliff translators. Jesus continues,

To the angel of the church in Thyatira write: These are the words of the Son of God, whose eyes are like blazing fire and whose feet are like burnished bronze. I know your deeds, your love and faith, your service and perseverance, and that you are now doing more than you did at first.

Nevertheless, I have this against you: You tolerate that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess. By her teaching she misleads my servants into sexual immorality and the eating of food sacrificed to idols. I have given her time to repent of her immorality, but she is unwilling. So I will cast her on a bed of suffering, and I will make those who commit adultery with her suffer intensely, unless they repent of her ways. I will strike her children dead. Then all the churches will know that I am he who searches hearts and minds, and I will repay each of you according to your deeds.

Now I say to the rest of you in Thyatira, to you who do not hold to her teaching and have not learned Satan's so called deep secrets (I will not impose any other burden on you): Only hold on to what you have until I come. To him who overcomes and does my will to the end, I will give authority over the nations—'He will rule them with an iron scepter; he will dash them to pieces like pottery'—just as I have received authority from my Father. I will also give him the morning star. He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.^{ix}

Jesus describes himself as standing amongst this small non-descriptive church of Thyatira with blazing eyes of fire and feet like burnished bronze. This symbolizes judgment. A woman, who may have been an occult medium since there was also a temple of fortune telling in Thyatira, dominated the church. She is compared to Jezebel, the Old Testament wife of king

Ahab, who led the Israelites into spiritual idolatry and sexual immorality. The God of the Bible strictly prohibits any consorting with the occult, which is the medium of Satan's "so-called deep secrets" of his spiritual world control system. Consorting with any form of fortune telling, mediums, psychics, partaking in levitation and séance experiments and the like is spiritual adultery to God. It is the world of UFOs, Aliens and the Web of Darkness. Tal Brooke explains,

I am a former psychic. As a child I had numerous experiences, such as clairvoyance, telepathy, out-of-body experiences, and sensitivity to "spirits." Perhaps the main door opened when I obtained a Ouija board when I was ten. But I am no longer a psychic. I am a Christian.... In essence, psychics and mediums claim that they can pass into the spirit world, or the realm of the dead, with as much ease as a person can walk through a door to get to another room. They claim that this realm is really another dimension, invisible in form, which intersects our physical universe. They assert that the inner spirit within them has access to both the physical dimension of everyday life and the spiritual dimension of deceased people and other types of beings. For a psychic to pass through this door, he has to "enter the deep unconscious real of his spirit," become oblivious to this world, and commune with the other world. This is called a trance. It is the link between both worlds.

The body of knowledge that psychics and mediums have claimed to have amassed across the ages is either from their entering this realm "astrally" in a "spirit body" or through contact teachings from departed spirits or higher spiritual beings. A familiar term for these higher beings is "being of light."^x

The development of the Papal system brought regulations, rites and creeds to fortify theocratic power and amass wealth. Pagan worship of the mother goddess of Earth crept into the church by the worshipping of Mary the mother of Jesus. Penance, purgatory, idols, the magical transformational and transubstantiated elements of the Eucharist and the seven sacraments gave a mystical spirituality to the ruling religious power system. These became known as the indulgences (the holy trade). Satan now controlled the religious system of the church as he had done to Judaism. Even as the screaming members of the Sanhedrin dragged Stephen out and slaughtered him, the pious Roman church instituted the Inquisition, the rule of the fist, and martyred untold tens of thousands of spiritual flames. This religious system will exist until the return of Jesus, yet He promised, *“To him who overcomes and does my will to the end, I will give authority over the nations.”* Hal Lindsey, a famous student of Bible prophesy, writes,

Prophetically speaking, the major characteristics of Thyatira fit the church era that spanned the Middle Ages. During this time the dominant church fabricated a system, that, like Jezebel, bound the people to image worship, superstition, and priest craft. These Scripture verses indicate this church will still have some adherents and some power into the “great tribulation” (verse 22). But the believing remnant from this prostituted form of Christianity is promised it will be present at the Rapture and will be delivered from the clutches of the “mother” church by Christ’s return (verse 25).^{xi}

The tone of the letter to the fifth church in Sardis is an urgent, “Wake Up, wake up!” call. This prophetic church, in general, was under the control of the Web of Darkness. Once more John sets his pen to write,

To the angel of the church in Sardis write: These are the words of him who holds the seven spirits of God and the seven stars. I know your deeds; you have a reputation of being alive, but you are dead.

Wake up! Strengthen what remains and is about to die, for I have not found your deeds complete in the sight of my God. Remember, therefore, what you have received and heard; obey it, and repent. But if you do not wake up, I will come like a thief, and you will not know at what time I will come to you. Yet you have a few people in Sardis who have not soiled their clothes. They will walk with me, dressed in white, for they are worthy. He who overcomes will, like them, be dressed in white. I will never blot out his name from the book of life, but will acknowledge his name before my Father and his angels.

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.^{xii}

Andrew Tait writes,

The people of Sardis were idolaters they worshipped the mother goddess, Cybele. The fragments of the temple that was erected to her honour still remain, and there are two stately columns, with Ionic capitals, which are fully 60 feet high and about 6 1/3 feet in diameter, whose bases are deeply imbedded in the rubbish that has fallen down from the citadel. Her worship was of the most debasing character, and orgies like those of Dionysos were practiced at the festivals held in her honour. Sins of the foulest and darkest impurity were committed on those occasions; and when we think of a small community of Christians rescued from such abominable idolatry, living in the midst of scenes of the grossest depravity, with early associations, and

companionships, and connections, all exerting a force in the direction of heathenism, it may be wondered that the few members of the church in Sardis were not drawn away altogether, and swallowed up in the great vortex.^{xiii}

Jesus says that He has the seven Spirits of God—wake up church of Sardis, you need the power of the Holy Spirit. This statement fits the needs of the prophetic church from 1500 to 1750 AD. The seven Spirits of God are, “*the spirit of the Lord ... the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord.*”^{xiv} Though the church had spread across Europe and over the channel to the British Isles, the masses of Christendom were spiritually dead. Few knew the true meaning of salvation—the new birth by confession of sins and belief in the transforming work of Jesus Christ. The work of the Holy Spirit became evident over the next 250 years.

Slowly the church lumbered awake into a period known as the Reformation. Church ideology took a shift with the publishing of the 95 Theses by Martin Luther, an obscure German Monk, on October 31, 1517 AD. The 95 Theses was a protest against the indulgences, which had become a church scandal. Luther saw that the “holy trade” was totally unwarranted by Scripture, and that the Pope did not have authority to shut the gates of hell and open the door to paradise. With the aid of the printing press Luther’s dissertation spread rapidly across Europe. The Roman Catholic Church excommunicated him in 1520 AD.

The movement that had been an effort to reform Catholicism from within split Christian Europe in two. When the Roman power structure tried to subdue Luther by force, some of the princes of the German states stood up in protest. Thus, the Protestant or Evangelical churches were born commencing the period of the Reformation. The beliefs of the Reformers destroyed the theocratic power of the dead church over the souls of men. The Reformers taught that a

believer comes into a direct relationship with Christ as the one and only all sufficient source of grace by faith in the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ. His grace is available to a penitent believer by the power of the Holy Spirit, through the preaching of the Word of God—there is no need for the Virgin Mary as mediator, the clergy as priests and the departed saints as intercessors. The Pope no longer controlled the keys to the Kingdom of Heaven.

William Tyndale became known as the father of the English Bible. He wanted it to be in the hands of every ordinary citizen. Satan would have none of it; through the power of the prostitute Roman Church Tyndale was strangled and burnt in 1536 AD. The later King James Bible, of the 1700s, contained over 90 per cent of Tyndale's Hebrew and Greek translation of Scriptures. This era gave rise to the Anabaptists, Baptists, Lutherans, Methodists, Presbyterians, Quakers and Calvinists. Religious persecution drove the Pilgrim Fathers to America's New England in the 1600s.

The Reformers began this age of scientific enlightenment and modern scientific reasoning. They believed in a God-centered view of the universe rather than a man-centered one of the Roman church. The Royal Society of London, formed by a majority of Puritan thinkers, supported scientists such as Copernicus, who purported the idea that the Earth orbits the Sun, as well as Brache, Kepler and Newton. Galileo, on the other hand who lived in Roman Catholic Italy and wrote articles in favour of the Copernicus theory came into conflict with the Inquisition and was placed under house arrest. This wake up call by Christ resulted in the beginning of the great spiritual revivals led by Zinzendorf, John Wesley and George Whitefield in the 1700s.

Such men as Edwards, Finney, Spurgeon and Moody carried the spirit of revival started by Wesley and Whitefield into the 1800s and 1900s. This period from 1750 AD to approximately 1925 AD (or 1960 with the God is dead generation?) represents the age of the church of

Philadelphia. It was a time of explosive missionary efforts around the globe that began with such Protestant men as William Cary, Hudson Taylor, David Livingston and William Booth as well as the Roman Catholic Jesuit missions. Jesus provided open doors into the kingdoms of the world. He addresses the church at Philadelphia. John writes,

To the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: These are the words of him who is holy and true, who holds the key of David. What he opens no one can shut, and what he shuts no one can open.

I know your deeds. See, I have placed before you an open door that no one can shut. I know that you have little strength, yet you have kept my word and have not denied my name. I will make those who are of the synagogue of Satan, who claim to be Jews though they are not, but are liars—I will make them come and fall down at your feet and acknowledge that I have loved you.

Since you have kept my command to endure patiently, I will also keep you from the hour of trial that is going to come upon the whole world to test those who live on the earth. I am coming soon. Hold on to what you have, so that no one will take your crown. Him who overcomes I will make a pillar in the temple of my God. Never again will he leave it. I will write on him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which is coming down out of heaven from my God; and I will also write on him my new name.

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.^{xv}

Philadelphia means brotherly love. It would appear to be more than a coincidence that the name of this letter reflects the love of Christ, which flowed through the Holy Spirit into the world bringing a period of great revival. Philadelphia, a fertile agricultural center known for its

grapes, had many devotees to Bacchus the god of wine. The church must have been a faithful witness of Jesus, since He gave no condemnation against them in His letter. It is evident that Jesus is looking forward into the prophetic era when He says that He is coming soon, which is also interpreted as quickly or suddenly. Moreover, He will keep these true and faithful believers from, or out of, a period of trial that will come upon the world to test those who dwell on the earth. These events did not happen to the local church of Philadelphia. Hal Lindsey presents his views on this subject as follows,

The scope of this promise goes far beyond the little church in the ancient city of Philadelphia. There are several reasons for this. First, this promise speaks of a specific time or hour when the whole world will be in turmoil. A crisis of this kind has never faced the whole world at one time since the promise was given. Second, this promise is unique because the believers who constitute the "Philadelphia-type" church are promised they will be "kept out of the hour of trial." Note they are not told they will be safeguarded in the trial but they will be kept out of it altogether.

A third reason for wider application of this promise is that the global judgment is to test "those who dwell upon the earth." This is a very specialized designation in the Book of Revelation. Listen to the Apostle John's description of these people in Chapter 13, verse 8. "And all who dwell upon the earth will worship him (the Antichrist), that is, those whose names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb who was slain from the foundation of the world." See Revelation 6:10; 8:13; 11:10; 17:8; for further information. These people are unquestionably men and women who have

rejected Jesus Christ as Lord of their lives. [In contrast, Satan blasphemes God, and those dwelling in heaven.]

I believe this is a clear and tremendously comforting promise to true believers in Christ that He will snatch them out of the world before unleashing the global judgments which are discussed in depth in Chapters 6 through 19.^{xvi}

Laodicea was built in the third century BC by Antiochus II and named after his wife Laodice. At the time of the letter, it was a prosperous city made wealthy from the production of black woolen garments and a medical ointment for the eyes. The water supply to the city was tepid since it came to the city via a six-mile aqueduct from hot springs, or was warmed by the Sun along the way. Jesus concludes this portion of the letter to the seven churches,

To the angel of the church in Laodicea write: These are the words of the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the ruler of God's creation. I know your deeds, that you are neither cold nor hot. I wish you were either one or the other! So, because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to spit you out of my mouth.

You say, 'I am rich; I have acquired wealth and do not need a thing.' But you do not realize that you are wretched, pitiful, poor, blind and naked. I counsel you to buy from me gold refined in the fire, so you can become rich; and white clothes to wear, so you can cover your shameful nakedness; and salve to put on your eyes, so you can see. Those whom I love I rebuke and discipline. So be earnest, and repent.

Here I am! I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears my voice and opens the door, I will come in and eat with him, and he with me. To him who overcomes, I will

give the right to sit with me on my throne, just as I overcame and sat down with my Father on his throne.

He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”^{xvii}

This church, locally and prophetically, had become wealthy, acquiring lands and buildings, giving a show of Christian health and wealth. However, Jesus looks at the heart, attitude, of a man. In fact, they were “*pitiful, poor blind and naked.*” This type of church nauseates Him to the extent that He will spit this sham of a church out of his mouth. Jesus uses the material aspects of the city and church to illustrate His denunciation. The tepid water illustrates their spiritual condition; they need living water, as did the woman at the well of Samaria. He tells them to gain heavenly gold by works of faith and righteousness, so that their eyes would be opened (eye ointment) and they would be rewarded with white garments (the righteous acts of the saints of Christ) as opposed to the black woolen garments of materialism.

Needless to say, the industrial revolution from 1925 onwards has produced tremendous wealth. Magnificent church buildings have been erected by all religious systems. Yet, the gospel (good news) of Jesus Christ has gone out into the world with more people becoming “born again” Christians than in all of the world’s history. The Roman Catholic Church has opened the Scriptures to ordinary people and also has flashes of spiritual revival. However, the churches of Christendom have suffered from the efforts of the Web of Darkness through self-centered sanctimonious traditions, rules and bigotry. Charles Colson writes,

Ultimately, of course, the sin of presumption hardens hearts and destroys the unity of the body. It sets Christian against Christian, denomination against denomination until we forget whose church this really is.... Sometimes our disagreements become even more sordid. The incredible spectacle of one

televangelist suing another provided a bonanza for the tabloids: “Swaggart Charges Gorman with Adultery”... “Gorman Exposes Swarggart’s Sin.” Gorman argued that the rivalry and lawsuits were really over the fact that he was invading Swaggart’s territory.” Both were seeking to recover millions of dollars for their television empires to support their jet planes, baronial estates, and coteries of aides and camp followers. Ordinary citizens watched the spectacle with disgust, while the Church writhed in pain.

Interdenominational strife is not as prevalent as it once was, but it still occurs and often in a way that mars the witness of the Body. A few years ago an international group of evangelical leaders met to prepare for a large conference in a country which happened to be predominately Catholic. Since the conference was on a universal subject—evangelism—I urged that Catholic evangelicals be invited.

“Never,” one of the participants shouted, slamming his fist on the table. “We fought that battle four hundred years ago, and we’re not going to surrender now.” Apparently he wanted to continue the Reformation warfare. A ceasefire would spoil his fun. He prevailed, and as a result the political leaders in the country snubbed the conference; the local Catholic bishop, himself an evangelical in the renewal movement, on the closing day of the conference led a separate evangelistic rally. All of this, of course was widely reported by the press.^{xviii}

Brilliant lights such as Billy Graham, Pope John Paul II, Mother Teresa and the many unnamed martyrs around the globe who are giving their lives for Jesus Christ, continue to shine

in this dark age of religious and scientific bigotry, atheism, apostasy and mysticism. In 1992, Pope John Paul II admitted that the Catholic Church had made a mistake in condemning Nicolas Copernicus and Galileo. On October 31, 1999, he and leaders of the Lutheran church signed a document in Augsburg Germany healing the almost five century rift. Other stiff-necked Protestants declared it was a sell out of Protestantism. However, what was signed was a “Declaration of Justification” which is the foundation of Christianity. The repentant sinner is saved by faith in the grace of God and not of works, which was what Luther’s argument against the “holy trade” was all about.

The 21st century is an age when the world should be entering a technological utopia, yet it is filled with violence, sexual debauchery, drugs, pollution, famine, deadly diseases, senseless killings terrorism and wars. The bookshelves, Internet, television and radio are filled with alternate scientific thoughts and spiritual mystic beliefs—we have been seeded by an alien race (ID), they are coming to aid us, there will be a paradigm shift of evolutionary being, is the general theme of the self-seeking utopia spiritualists. Television programming has psychologically prepared the world to accept the visitation of aliens. Are we reaching a period when the citizens of Earth will accept the leadership of aliens who will promise a paradigm shift of economic prosperity and mystical spiritual power to be “as gods”? Jesus warns again and again “*He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.*” Upon completion of the letter to the seven groups of believers of The Way, the Church is not mentioned again in the book of Revelation. Something on a cosmological scale appears to happen.

Changed Lives

Jesus gives new life to those who repent of their sins and by faith believe that He is the God-man who died and rose again. The working of the Holy Spirit in these lives and the power

of Jesus' resurrection will transform mortality to immortality, to those who believe. Is this being "born again" something more than a psychological placebo? Hundreds of millions of people show changed lives. Janice^{xix} is one of them; here is her story as she told it at a ladies tea:

I'd like to share with you what love really means to me, love that is abundant and true. Love without conditions. This love comes from God.

I came into this world more than a decade ago (humor). I was the 3rd child of 4. We were all born within a span of 3 ½ years. Mom left teaching for this challenging career. My dad was a baker with dreams of running his own business. For 18 years, we lived in the beautiful Fraser Valley; the memories of my childhood surroundings will always be with me. Probably it was mom who taught me to see the beauty in the scenery God had created.

Dad worked hard and soon had his own business. The business seemed to always be in financial struggle and mom went to work in the bakery when I was seven years old. After that, it seemed like we were on our own most of the time. Dad had a violent temper, which left emotional, and physical damage behind it. There was a lot of conflict and stress in our home, but we had a haven of rest because we spent the summer holidays with our grandparents. They were God loving people and they loved us dearly. Grandpa read the Bible every morning and on Sunday, we always went to church with them. They created such a loving and accepting atmosphere for us.

At home we went to different Sunday schools and I never doubted that there was a God and that He was a God of love and so I tried to be a good

person, hoping that this would cause God to love me fully. You see, I didn't feel that God could ever love me unconditionally and so I felt I had to earn acceptance. Actually, I was a pretty good person—so I thought. My Grandpa had given me a Bible. On the inside cover he had written a verse from Proverbs 3:6, which says, "In all your ways acknowledge Him and He will make your paths straight." This verse became very special to me—not because it came from God, but because my Grandpa had given it to me.

When I was about 13 my summer vacation with my grandparents ended and I joined the others in the bakery. It was hard, hot work but I enjoyed the challenge, however I began to feel a real lack of self worth due to dad's critical nature. I was never paid any wages—so I thought I wasn't worth any. It seemed I could never measure up. My self-esteem was the pits. I definitely had an inferiority complex and I was very afraid to meet new people. Mom was back teaching by this time and still helping in the bakery. Along with all that, she had also finished her university degree. Although she was very busy, she seemed to be there for me when I needed someone to talk to. I felt very bad for the load mom carried and tried not to add to it. Dad spent most of this time away at work. When he was gone, our home had a relaxed atmosphere but when he was there, it was fearful.

By grade 12, our home life was under such stress that my emotional health affected my physical health. It was at this time that I began dating a boy who seemed very unhappy. He had so many problems. I had been going out with him a month or so when he told me he had leukemia. He drank, but

I thought, “Who wouldn’t if they thought they were dying at 19.” We continued to date and the leukemia cleared up but something else took over. I had tried to end the relationship but Frank would be hurt and I would then change my mind. I never graduated—I found out I was pregnant.

I was very disappointed in myself. I knew I had gone against God’s ways and I felt so much guilt. Now I fully knew I was a sinner but I also felt I didn’t deserve to be forgiven by God so I would make it through the best way I knew how—on my own. I decided that the best thing to do was to live with my sister, as I wasn’t sure I loved Frank and thought the time away would be of benefit. I also thought, “I must love him or this never would have happened.” I told Frank of my decision—he became very upset and said if I went he would take his life. As I drove home, I remember thinking. If I have what’s best for my life he’ll take his. My life wasn’t worth more than his and so I stayed and we were married.

Now, you can already see we were on shaky ground. I had many insecurities and Frank’s drinking didn’t help. He also had a violent temper that did even more damage both emotionally and physically. By this time, I was busy with 4 children just under 4 years apart (history had repeated itself and I was walking in my mom’s shoes). I loved motherhood and felt a sense of worth.

Once the kids started school, I felt my sense of worth lacking again. I turned to Frank. His pattern of drinking hadn’t changed and if anything, it had increased. The effects of the alcohol had increased also, so as you can

see, he simply wasn't there for me. I started having some serious problems with depression and panic. Needless to say, I ended up in a psychiatrist's office. Although he hadn't really helped the marriage, he did build my self-esteem.

I felt such a strong need to be loved and tended to absorb myself fully in my children. It was at this time Jack entered my life. He was kind and thoughtful and it wasn't long before I was involved in an affair. He seemed to be the strength I'd needed to face my trials. I felt my marriage situation was hopeless anyway so I packed up the kids and myself and we left. This breakup wasn't easy—you see—every time I had hinted or became concerned about our marriage I would tell Frank I couldn't stay with him and it was at this point when he would threaten to commit suicide if I left him. Therefore, I had this fear with me continually.

Again, I knew I didn't deserve to be forgiven by God so I would make it through the best way I knew how—on my own. After the separation, the kids and I lived alone for over a year and in this time, I became pregnant. I had an inability to make major decisions. I already had 4 children, no husband and trying to be self-supporting—I was very confused. I made a visit to two different doctors to discuss the possibility of an abortion and they both refused to do it. I also talked to many people—looking for an answer but nothing ever materialized. I ended up looking for another doctor, who didn't question my situation and within three weeks, the hospital had called to say I was booked for the following day.

In that period of three weeks, waiting and wondering, there were times when I hoped that I wouldn't have to have the abortion and now it was only one day away. That evening, after the hospital had called I took a drive, all by myself and I prayed to God. I asked him if he would take my baby. It was a very sad event for me and I silently grieved the loss of that baby. My personal life was quickly becoming a "tangled web."

Shortly after that, Jack asked me to come to Prince George to start a new life together. "A new start! Just what I needed a man who loved me, a good dad for my kids all the ingredients to make a happy family!" Jack and I now had seven children between us. A year and a half later, we were the proud parents of a beautiful baby girl. Jack's job as a liquor rep took him away from home a lot and my life was anything but secure. We were having serious problems. I tried, in all the ways I knew how, to get love into my life. I tried to manipulate, beg, cry, threaten, and gain control and with the insecurities I felt and with such a need to be loved I only managed to tear myself apart with each attempt.

In the brokenness of my heart, I cried out to God on my knees by my bed. Would he hear my cry? Would he take my life? I had gone to the very end and now I knew I was offering Him only emptiness and broken pieces. I asked God for his acceptance of me but I didn't ask just once—it seemed I repeated this prayer time and time again wondering if God could even hear me, let alone answer me.

I wanted to become a child of God, but how does that come about? In the Bible in the book of John, chapter 1, verse 12 it tells us that “As many as received Him to them He gave the power to become a child of God.” I didn’t know that verse—I just believed God would take care of me and provide a way for me. I did know the verse which grandpa had written “In all your ways acknowledge Him and he will make your paths straight” from Proverbs 3:6.

God loves you just as you are but too much to leave you there. I heard that just recently and I thought how true it was for me. God immediately started to bring about some changes. Jack lost his job. We had to put our house up for sale and it sold within two months. God provided just the right home to meet all our needs.

In addition, in our new location I met a Christian friend. I started attending Bible studies. God was so patient and loving with me. It was through this friend that I came to understand that we need to confess our sins to God. I knew how much sin was in my life and it was at this time that I asked God to forgive me. I felt the weight lifted. I was set free. God forgave all my sins—even the little things that I didn’t recognize as sin. He also forgave me for the sin I was very aware of as being wrong. You see, God says in Psalm 103:12 “As far as the east is from the west, so far has He removed our transgressions from us.”

If I were to go before God in prayer today—unsure that I had been forgiven for the sin that I had confessed 10 years ago I would say “Lord,

remember that abortion I asked you to forgive me for?" His response would be "No my child, I don't remember any abortion." Jesus bore all my shame and guilt. 1st John 1:9 says "If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness." God doesn't ask us if we deserve to be forgiven, or if we could have prevented our broken-heartedness. He has come as it tells us in Isaiah 61:1 "to heal the broken hearted and to set the captive free."

At this time, I was lead to a book called, *Becoming The Wife Of A Happy Husband*. I knew it was for me because an out of job husband is anything but happy. This wasn't about changing him, but it was about changing me—to be more of what God wanted a wife to be and as my attitude changed, our relationship began to grow deeper. We now had 4 teenagers and a little one. Frank (my first husband) had died as a result of an alcoholic seizure. The kids were really hurting and again there were periods of anxiety throughout the years that followed, but God always supplied not only the strength but also the wisdom and love in dealing with the trials.

It hasn't been all success. I still have days when I can't see beyond the difficulties, but for these times the poem *Footprints* is so meaningful to me. I'd like to share its outline with you. One night a man had a dream. He dreamed he was walking along the beach with the Lord. Across the sky flashed scenes from his life. For each scene, he noticed two sets of footprints in the sand; one belonged to him the other to the Lord. When the last scene of his life flashed before him, he looked back at the footprints in the sand.

He noticed that many times along the path of his life there was only one set of footprints. He also noticed that it happened at the very lowest and saddest times of his life. This really bothered him and he questioned the Lord about it. “Lord, you said that once I decided to follow you, you’d walk with me all the way but I have noticed that during the most troublesome times of my life there is only one set of footprints. I don’t understand why, when I needed you most, you would leave me.” The Lord replied, “My precious, precious child, I love you and I would never leave you; during the times of trial and suffering, when you see only one set of footprints, it was then that I carried you.”

Jack now has a job he loves. We are both children of God. Jack accepted the Lord 4 years ago. Our children are all very dear to us—all 8 of them and their spouses as well. How God has blessed our family. We have 7 grandchildren, one expected now, and one in the fall. This is my story of the miracle of love. The unconditional love which God so wants to give each person. He is offering this love to you today. All you have to do is accept Him as Lord of your life. Along with this, the Bible also teaches that with this acceptance he also gives the gift of eternal life. 1st John 5:11 reads “And this is the record; that God has given us eternal life, and this life is in His son.”

I would like to take this opportunity to pray with you now. Will you bow your heads with me and if you would like to accept Jesus and become a child of God then you can repeat these words silently along with me.

Here and now—just as I am Lord Jesus please forgive me for all the wrong things that I have done. I invite you to enter the centre of my personality. I entrust my life to you. Thank you for forgiving my sin and giving me the desire to live pleasing to you. From now on, I will look to you for your love, your understanding, your forgiveness and your guidance. Thank you for giving me this new life that shall never end in Jesus name, Amen. [Amen means I believe].

God Exists

The philosophy of evolution has been the greatest peril to spiritual enlightenment in this age of cosmic introspection. Jesus reminds our modern church age of Laodicea that He is the Creator of the universe when He calls himself “*the Amen, the Faithful and True Witness, the Beginning of the Creation of God*” (KJV).^{xx} These words also suggest that we are at the commencement of something very much more in God’s eternal plan for mankind. The flames of spiritual revival that began in the 1700 and 1800s spread around the world. Then starting with J.N. Darby and G.H. Pember in the mid 1800s, and men such as Cyrus Scofield, Joseph Seiss and Charles Larkin in the early 1900s, God laid another layer of cosmic awareness with a dramatic increase in prophetic literature concerning the great cosmic battle and the second coming of Jesus Christ.

Extensive media coverage into our modern era by writers such as Hal Lindsey, Grant Jeffrey, Chuck Missler, Dave Hunt and J.R. Church, to name only a few, have been warning that the signs of the times indicate that the consummation of the cosmic battle between Christ and Satan may be close at hand. Even as deceptive spiritual mysticism seeps into the intellectual

western world, millions of people of all nationalities are accepting Jesus Christ as their Saviour. In an effort directed by Campus Crusade, the gospel of Jesus Christ is reaching many countries of the world in all languages via the *Jesus film*, an enactment of the life of Jesus according to the gospel of Luke. Mel Gibson's film *The Passion Of The Christ*, portraying in graphic detail the agonizing death and resurrection of Jesus, the God-man, to redeem mankind in this war of the cosmos, created a tremendous surge of spiritual interest. The film broke all box office records as it swept the world and seems of have come at a pivotal moment in history, because soon after there was an increase in anti-Semitism and a cry for Muslim jihad.

However, the real question is, does God exist? There are several hundred Bible prophecies concerning the Messiah and the nation Israel, all of which have come true. There are sixty major prophecies concerning the Messiah, all of which have been specifically fulfilled. According to the laws of probability the fulfillment of only eight of these prophecies is 1 chance in 10 followed by 17 zeros or 1 billion times 100 million. Fulfillment of 48 prophecies is 1 chance in 10 followed by 157 zeros.^{xxi} Logically, the chances at this point of all these prophecies being fulfilled is zero unless there is a supernatural reality. The prophetic letter of Jesus to the churches seems to closely model the history of the Biblical Church throughout these last two thousand years again verifying His transcendental authenticity.

In an event that shocked foreign governments, Israel became a nation on May 14th, 1948 and was immediately attacked by six Arab armies. Grant Jeffrey discovered that God had foretold this day in a unique way in the sixth century BC. The prophet Ezekiel was told by God to be a sign to the Jews in captivity in Babylon. He was to bear the iniquity of the house of Israel by laying on his left side for 390 days and then for 40 days on his right side for the house of Judah. Taken as years of iniquity this totaled 430 years that the Jews had violated Gods

covenants. God had also informed the prophet Jeremiah that the Jews would be in captivity in Babylon for 70 years. This was completed in 536 BC. Thus, 430 years minus 70 years leaves 360 years.

Mr. Jeffrey writes:

The solution to the mystery of the duration of Israel's worldwide dispersion and return is found in a divine principle revealed to Israel in Leviticus 26. In this chapter the Lord established promises and punishments for Israel based on her obedience and her disobedience. On four different occasions in this passage, God told Israel that if after being punished for her sins, she still did not repent, the punishments previously specified would be multiplied by seven (the number of completion). "And if ye will not yet for all this hearken unto me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins" (Leviticus 16:18; see also Leviticus 16:21, 23-24, 27-28). In other words, if Israel did not repent; the punishment already promised would be prolonged seven times:

$360 \text{ years} \times 7 = 2,520 \text{ biblical years}$

Therefore, the end of the punishment and restoration in the land would be accomplished in 2,520 biblical years of 360 days each.

Mr. Jeffrey goes on to show that $2,520 \text{ biblical years} \times 360 = 907,000 \text{ days}$. Using our calendar year of 365.25 days divided into 907,000 yields 2,483.8 calendar years. Remarkably from the spring of 536 BC, taking into account that there is only one year between 1 BC and 1 AD, brings us to May 14, 1948.^{xxii}

This astounding prophetic time code, along with the seventy weeks of years (490 biblical years) given to the prophet Daniel that showed the precise day in which Jesus rode into Jerusalem as the long expected Messiah, are of such stupendous improbability that they alone demand a transcendent reality.

Does God exist?

- The supernatural inspiration of the Scriptures would indicate that He does.
- The flow of history as predicted by God through his prophets and its fulfillment for the nation of Israel would indicate supernatural guidance.
- The fulfilled prophecies and precise date for Jesus to be presented to Israel is statistically impossible.
- The Birth of Israel in 1948 precisely matching a 2520-year-old predication is historically a miracle.
- The astounding, astronomically improbable completion of over 300 Bible prophecies concerning the Messiah, as fulfilled by Yeshua-Jesus, demands transcendental action in our ontology.
- The factual birth of Jesus Christ, His life of teaching and miracles, His historical death and resurrection impart meaning to the great schism of the cosmos.
- The progress of the church ages, as dictated to John by Jesus, strongly suggests a purpose and a plan for the advancement of the Kingdom of God in the war against Satan.
- The power of transformed lives through belief in the redeeming work of Christ necessitates the activities of Spiritual Power in these lives.

Therefore, based on Willard's third tenant—

In stage three, Willard presents the argument for God from the course of human events historical, social, and individual within the context of a demonstrated extra-naturalism (stage one), and of a quite plausible cosmic intellectualism (stage two). “This human life is to be interpreted within the ontological space of the actualities, with their attendant possibilities hewn out in stages one and two.” If nothing cannot create something, this allows, indeed demands, that a nonphysical reality be the first cause.

Further, if the text to design within a context of complementariness sustains the conclusion that order has never come from disorder, the argument for an intelligent cause is again supported. And if history and human experience reveal realities that can only be explained in the realm of **transcendent reality**,* one can compellingly argue for the existence of an intelligent first cause we call God (*emphasis mine).^{xxiii}

Therefore, it is only logical and reasonable to conclude, “God exists”! However, no matter how conclusive the evidence of a transcendent God working in our ontology may be, many will still reject this evidence. Blaise Pascal (1623-62 AD) a famous mathematician, physicist and one of the great thinkers of the West wrote: “The heart has its reasons, which the reason does not know.”

Since the Bible is the conclusive Word of God defining *what is to come*, what does Jesus tell us will happen in the great battle of *wills* in the cosmos? What will happen to Earth, to rebellious mankind, to Satan and his Web of Darkness? What will happen to the newly created children of God, will they inherit a kingdom? Will there be eternal justice? Is there purpose and direction to my life in the developing history of the cosmos?

Notes:

ⁱ *TIME*, September 27, 1999

ⁱⁱ Isaiah 41:21-23

ⁱⁱⁱ Revelations 1:8, 17-19

^{iv} Revelation 2:1-7

^v Revelation 2:8-11

^{vi} Lindsey Hal, *There's A New World Coming*, Vision House Publishers Santa Ana California 92705, 1973 pg. 50

^{vii} Revelation 2:12-17

^{viii} Walvoord Dr. John F., *The Revelation of Jesus Christ*, Moody Press Chicago, 1966 pg. 69

^{ix} Revelation 2:18-29

^x Brooke Tal, *The Other Side of Death*, Tyndale House Publishers Inc. 1979, pg. 11-12

^{xi} Lindsey, *Ibid*, pg. 58

^{xii} Revelation 3:1-6

^{xiii} Tait Andrew, *The Messages to the Seven Churches of Asia Minor*, pg. 299

^{xiv} Isaiah 11:2-5

^{xv} Revelation 3:7-17

^{xvi} Lindsey, *Ibid*, pg. 65-66

^{xvii} Revelation 3:14-22

^{xviii} Colson Charles, *The Body Being Light In Darkness*, Word Publishing 1992, pg. 88 & 101

^{xix} Janice, Used by permission

^{xx} Revelation 3:14, King James Version, Oxford University Press 1945

^{xxi} Mcdowell Josh, *Evidence that demands a Verdict*, Campus Crusade, 1972 pg. 175

^{xxii} Jeffrey Grant R., *Armageddon Appointment with Destiny*, Frontier Research Publications 1988, pg. 35

^{xxiii} Zacharias Ravi, *Can Man Live Without God*, Word Publishing, 1994, pg. 191ff. This summary of Dallas Willard's theistic defense is excerpted from J.P. Mooreland and Kai Nielsen, *Does God Exist?* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson, 1990)

Chapter 30

The Paradigm Shift

Now learn this lesson from the fig tree: [symbol of Israel] As soon as its twigs get tender and its leaves come out, you know that summer is near. Even so, when you see all these things, you know that it is near, right at the door. I tell you the truth, this generation will certainly not pass away until all these things have happened.ⁱ

What things? Before His death and resurrection, Jesus is teaching his disciples on the Mount of Olives; they have just asked him “*what will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the age?*” Jesus then gives a prophetic snapshot view of history from the destruction of the temple to his visible return. This perspective is from the Jewish viewpoint, since the Church did not yet exist. He tells them that the temple will be destroyed and the Israelites scattered into the nations of the world. There will be wars amongst nations and tribal groups. There will be earthquakes and famines. Believers proclaiming that Jesus is the long expected Messiah will be persecuted, and most of all, false religions will deceive many, love will grow cold and false Messiahs will appear. In the later days declares Jesus, there will be signs in the heavens, the Sun and Moon will be affected and comets will fall from the sky. Astronomers will detect unusual things happening in space.ⁱⁱ

At some point in history near the “end of days,” an idol of abomination will be set up in the rebuilt Jewish temple in Jerusalem. Terrible persecution against the Jewish people will take place. Then the Son of Man will come from the heavens with power and great glory. Jesus tells

his disciples that it will be like the days of Noah. People will think everything is normal, and then sudden destruction will come like a thief in the night. *“Be careful, or your hearts will be weighed down with dissipation, drunkenness and the anxieties of life, and that day will close on you unexpectedly like a trap. For it will come upon all those who live on the face of the whole earth.”*ⁱⁱⁱ If modern civilization is to be like the days of Noah, then the Nephilim will likely return as a friendly alien being.

The things that are to come, as dictated by Jesus to the Apostle John, in the book of Revelation, are details that will happen in the great cosmic paradigm shift. The paradigm shift will be two fold. True “born again” believers, at some unknown point, will be translated into heaven. Simultaneously, extraterrestrials may very well appear as universal benefactors. This multistage event will happen suddenly and will likely be associated with a world wide natural disaster, or a brief nuclear war. Arab nations backed by those around the Caspian Sea have yet to attack Israel as outlined by the prophet Ezekiel. The destruction of the powerful Assyrian on the mountains of Israel in the last days, as described by the prophets Isaiah and Micah, has also not yet taken place. A charismatic leader with supernatural abilities will make a significant seven year peace treaty, or “confirm a covenant”^{iv} with Israel. This will begin the 70th week of Daniel when spiritual responsibility will be given to the Jews to proclaim, to the citizens of Earth, the literal physical coming Kingdom of Heaven. 144,000 supernaturally designated Jews, who herald that Jesus is the long awaited Messiah, will undertake this worldwide crusade. The Legions of Doom will hate them and seek their destruction.

Modern man has the ability to destroy civilization. Sales worth billions of dollars of sophisticated weapons of mass destruction have been made. High technology armaments are poised to explode out of bigoted countries. Pollution, famine, deadly diseases, murders, civil

strife, drug abuse, sexual violence, brutal terrorism and senseless wars are on the increase. Pagan mysticism, lying, cheating, stealing, murder, adultery, free sex, and deviant sexual attitudes are eroding the once Christian spiritual fabric of Western societies.

Do The Church Ages Foretell The End?

Just as the paranormal adherents are preaching that their agenda of a quantum shift of global cosmic consciousness is near, the Bible suggests that we are nearing the last days—but how near? Seven is a Biblical number of completions. It is only a curiosity, but the length of the seven Church ages outlines an interesting pattern. The boundaries of the church ages are approximated by events reflected in ecumenical history. If we commence with 32 AD, the year of the death and resurrection of Jesus, and add the perfect number 70 for the first church age we arrive at 102 AD. The second church period ended at 312 AD, which is 210 years. The third church interval from 312 to 600 AD lasted 288 years. The fourth church interval of 900 years is the longest from 600 to 1500 AD. From this point on the intervals shorten. The fifth from, 1500 to 1750, lasts 250 years, which is close to the third church age of 288 years.

The end of the sixth church age can only be reflected by God's viewpoint of history. Certainly there was intense missionary zeal from the 1920s to the 1940s; after 1950, church life went stagnant and the *God is dead* generation arose. Thus 1948 the birth date of Israel is likely a place to end the sixth church age, which is then some 198 years in length. However, if the date of 1960 is used, the official date of the *God is dead* generation then the interval is the same as the second church age—210 years. One generation in Biblical terms is interpreted to be anywhere from 40 to 70 years. Now, if the end of the seventh church age reflects the maximum 70-year period, as did the first church, this would bring us to a time between 2018 and 2030 AD, depending whether 1948 or 1960 is used. However, Jesus wanted to spit this church out of His

mouth, thus it may last less than the perfect 70 years. Again, this is not a prediction, but a historical numerical curiosity.

If evolution is only a statistical event, then what is causing the reported paranormal interactions around the world? Are they driven by the imaginations of people who psychologically want there to be something more than statistical death, or are they real? Are the UFO reports contrived events by a subversive power group aligning with ETs to worship Egypt's ancient gods and to seize world control at an opportune time? Will mysterious events take place—involving UFOs that will convince the world that the disappearance of the believing Church is an alien attack on planet Earth? The interplanetary heroes to save mankind would then be the arrival of the Nephilim. We are warned in the book of Daniel that a man with supernatural abilities, who worships the “god of fortresses,” will come to solve the world's problems. With the assistance of this god, he will take over the world and divide it amongst 10 rulers.^{vi}

The battle of the cosmos is intensifying as the Legions of Doom attempt to repel the Angels of Glory. Filmstrips STS-48 (1991) and STS-80 (1996) from the space shuttle seem to indicate fast moving light source vehicles that were fired upon.^{vii} Mysterious gun like booms, called sky-quakes, echo in the heavens,^{viii} and real or faked complex crop

circles are appearing around the world. Nevertheless, are UFOs, ETs, Armageddon and the return of Jesus Christ just paranormal and religious hype? Many secular and religious people

Proof of aliens...?

BBC NEWS reports that a Spanish businessman using a giant satellite dish has captured image data from the SOHO (Solar and Heliospheric observatory) satellite orbiting 1,000,000 miles from Earth. The images report to show spaceship like objects. NASA maintains they are light imperfections in the sensors.^v

believe that we are somehow going to achieve a world of peace and prosperity, once an Israel-Arab peace agreement is signed. This would be wonderful, however, this scenario seems to be in conflict with the trend of world events and the attitudes of people on a personal level.

God exists. There is a war in the cosmos and unfortunately, there will be no peace until the Legions of Doom are defeated and the Prince of Peace, Jesus Christ, sets up the “Rock kingdom” that will never end. What then, does Jesus tell us is going to happen that will shape history? It will be a time of God’s wrath as described by the prophet Isaiah. God will punish the powers in the heavens above and the kings on the Earth below. Earth will be devastated and reel like a drunkard. “*But there will be singing,*” said Isaiah, your bodies will rise like the dew of the morning, as God takes his own into their heavenly rooms.^{ix} On the Earth, His wrath is poured out on rebellious men and angels.

Golden Threads

The remaining chapters of the book of Revelation (4 to 22) concern the concluding details of this great rebellion of the cosmos and the future of planet Earth. It is an exciting, yet, alarming book. However, if one has never read it before, it certainly takes some ponderous thinking. Now, since you have made it this far in reading this book, fellow time traveler, you will find that the future events described by John have their roots in the ancient past. They come like golden threads that meander their way forward from history, then weave together to form a golden ribbon leading to the gates of Eternity. Thus, kind reader, I would like to approach this adventure in more of a story form as if the Apostle John knew that he was speaking to us in the 21st century. We will then be able to follow some of these golden threads backwards into the annuals of time.

Brilliant light shines around me, my hand flows easily right to left, right to left over the parchment as if propelled by an unseen force. Finally, the first portion of the letter to the seven churches is completed. Then something impossible happens. The light increases in intensity as the wall of my hut, that seems to be so rock solid, starts to ripple and fade. Amazed, I look through it—not too far out past the fading wall, a door is swinging open—brilliant shimmering lights of all colors dance in the distance. Jesus speaks. “Come up here and I will show you what must take place after this.” Instantly I am transported out of space-time into heaven. I think to myself, now I know what brother Paul meant when he wrote to the Corinthian church: “Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed—in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound, the dead will be raised imperishable, and we will be changed. For the perishable must clothe itself with the imperishable, and the mortal with immortality.”^x

I can hardly contain my excitement. My coming up to Heaven symbolizes the rapture of the church. This is the golden thread of the resurrection. This is what Isaiah meant by the rising of the dead; and what Jesus meant when He said I go to prepare a place for you and I will come back and take you to be with me. A fearful dread comes over me—on Earth, there will be wrath—a powerful evil being will rule on the earth. Paul had informed the Thessalonians: “Don’t let anyone deceive you in any way, for that day [the day of Gods wrath] will not come until the rebellion [or departure] occurs and the man of lawlessness is revealed, the man doomed to

destruction. He will oppose and will exalt himself over everything that is called God or is worshiped, so that he sets himself up in God's temple, proclaiming himself to be God.'^{xi} *Each believer is sealed and indwelt by the Holy Spirit of God, thus, when the Church is taken away so is the indwelling of the Godhead.*

Paul also received by revelation that; "the secret power of lawlessness is already at work; but the one who now holds it back will continue to do so till he [the Holy Spirit] is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord Jesus will overthrow with the breath of his mouth and destroy by the splendor of his coming. The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the work of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders, and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing. They perish because they refused to love the truth and so be saved. For this reason God sends them a powerful delusion so that they will believe the lie and so that all will be condemned who have not believed the truth but have delighted in wickedness.'^{xii}

Effervescent colored lights flash, and peals of thunder rumble all around me; it is like I am standing on the edge of a shimmering sea of glass. Dimension seems meaningless—I am close and yet far at the same time. My eyes are drawn to a magnificent throne. A powerful laser-like red glow comes from the One on the throne; a rainbow with the intensity of multicolored emeralds encircles it. This is the throne that Daniel had seen—seated on it is the Ancient of Days, Creator of all Heavens and Earth! Arrayed around Him, I count twenty-four thrones on which are seated Elders of the Church. They are dressed in shining white garments, and wear

crowns of gold. Untold trillions of angels (I now know that they are both redeemed believers and angels) stretch in all directions like rippling hills of pure white snow.

But, more than that, positioned around the throne of the Ancient of Days stand seven powerful angels and four awesome Living Ones. They look somewhat like the Cherubim seen by the prophet Ezekiel. Each one has six wings and eyes all around like huge sparkling diamonds. One is like a lion, one like an ox, one has a face like a man and the fourth is like a flying eagle. I know from my boyhood religious studies that the Rabbis speculated that Lucifer had been the fifth Cherubim, possibly like a dragon or serpent. The voices of the Living Ones resound like resonant music, "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come." They always say holy three times, as this represents the triune God, Father, Son and Holy Spirit.

Suddenly, without moving, I find myself standing by a throne of one of the Elders. There is a feeling of excitement and breathless expectancy. It is then that I notice a scroll with writing on both sides in the hand of the Ancient of Days. A mighty angel steps forward. There is absolute silence, then, in the next breath his voice thunders out across the superluminal, across the heavens, across the Earth and like a multiple echo reverberates through the ages of mankind, "Who is worthy to break the seals and open the scroll?" I can't take my eyes off of the scroll—it is the deed to planet Earth. No one answers. I begin to panic in fear; I can't help myself, and break down weeping with dreadful anticipation. When Adam disobeyed God, he officially forfeited to Satan his dominion over planet Earth. A man untainted by Adam's sin of rebellion must be found to open the seven seals of redemption, or all of mankind will

be eternally under Satan's dominion—a world lost in Darkness. No one in Heaven, from the Earth, or even from the innumerable dead could be found.

I am weeping uncontrollably, a hand touches me—It is one of the elders. “Do not weep! See, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has triumphed. He is able to open the scroll and its seven seals.” People in the 21st century—you might have trouble believing, but I should have known. I was there, I fished with Him, saw His miracles, traveled with Him, listened to His words, saw Him murdered and then saw Him transformed. We sat shoulder to shoulder at the last Passover supper—I—John, a fisherman, and Jesus the God-man.

Then a Lamb [I understand the symbolism that this is Jesus who died as a sacrificial lamb], looking as if it had been slain, comes to the throne and accepts the scroll from the Ancient of Days. The Elders fall down in worship before the Lamb; as they lay their golden crowns before the throne a shout of triumph ascends through the heavens and the universe. An angel sets

the tune with a stupendous stroke on a harp as the harmony of the base and tenors of the Elders fill the heavens with a new song:

You are worthy to take the scroll and to open its seals, because you were slain, and with your blood you purchased men [us] for God from every tribe and language and people and nation. You have made them [us] to be a kingdom and priests to serve our

A New Song

Many scholars believe that the Elders represent the Church now in Heaven.

Thus, the “New Song” is likely the Bride’s song of salvation through Christ’s redeeming work, versus the Mosaic law of animal sacrifice, because the book of Revelation concerns Israel.

God, and they [we] will reign on the earth.^{xiii}

Then like a great spontaneous choir all of heaven respond,

Worthy is the Lamb, who was slain, to receive power and wealth and wisdom and strength and honor and glory and praise!

And like a reverberating echo I hear every creature in Heaven and on Earth and under the Earth and on the sea, and all that is in them singing:

To him who sits on the throne and to the Lamb be praise and honor and glory and power, forever and ever!

Excitement throbs through my being; Jesus will now finish what He started at the cross of Calvary. Earth is now rightfully His. The process to reclaim it in wrath and judgment will begin by opening the seven seals of redemption. The cosmos explodes in angelic warfare. Hyperdimensional lights flash in the sky of Earth. Resounding booms rumble up from its core and down through the atmosphere as the photon barrier vibrates with angelic penetration of space-time.

But before I tell you what happens on Earth, something magnificent takes place in Heaven. All believers receive their celestial rewards from King Jesus; beautiful white robes, crowns, new names and positions of authority according to what they let Jesus do through their lives on Earth. Remember on Earth, when my mother asked Jesus if James and I could sit one on His left, and one on His right when He comes into His Kingdom?^{xiv} Well those positions were given out but I can't tell you who got them, you will see for yourself when the time comes.

King Jesus begins to unroll the scroll and open the seven seals of redemption—but first let me explain something. The events I describe in the Book of Revelation

happen in the three dimensions of space-time history, while events in a book can only be read page by page in a straight line, so I would like to outline some of the word pictures that are given to create a time moving three-dimensional background. When I write that I see another sign, this is a word picture that gives historical background to the events that take place, making it easier to understand the details. For instance, I am shown a sign in the heavens of a great red dragon standing over a woman about to give birth to a baby.^{xv} This is a picture description, over the centuries, of the interaction between Israel, Satan and Jesus. It is like looking at a holographic video shining in space. The woman is in intense labour. She is clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet. A crown of twelve stars sparkles on her head. This harkens to the days of my ancestor Jacob. He is the sun, his wife Rachel is the moon and his twelve sons who fathered the twelve tribes of Israel are the stars. Thus, this woman symbolizes my people, the nation Israel.

The enormous crimson red dragon has seven heads with crowns on them and ten horns. His tail sweeps a third of the stars out of the sky and flings them to Earth. The stars represent his army, the Legions of Doom. The dragon is ready to devour the baby the minute it is born. The woman gives birth to a son, who will rule all nations with a rod of iron, He is snatched up to God and His throne. The woman flees into the desert where she hides for three and one half years. At the same time, there is a war in Heaven. Michael and his angels fight against the dragon, and the dragon and his angels fight back. The fighting is intense, but the dragon and his angels are driven out of Heaven to Earth. The dragon is furious, and knowing that he does not have much time left, attacks the Jews and new Christians. He has now lost

access to Heaven and God's throne. If he can't defeat God's promises to the nation Israel, he will have to kill all mankind, or face eternal banishment. My heart is heavy for the people on Earth. Why can't they understand what is happening?

This golden thread of the red dragon starts in the Garden of Eden. Yeshua looks past the two humans huddled in front of Him. A large beautiful dragon, covered with precious jewels of all colors that glisten like huge eyes, stands in the hidden dimension. It is the fifth Cherubim, the vain rebel, who at one time had been anointed as a guardian cherub, yet, he had incited one third of the angels in a great cosmic rebellion. A violated serpent flutters in the visible world close to Adam and Eve. Yeshua speaks; "I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and hers; He will crush your head, and you will strike his heel."

In due time, Jesus, God incarnate, was born of Mary an Israelite. Satan tries to kill him at birth and believes that he has succeeded at the cross of Calvary. Jesus completes His mission and is taken into heaven. Then there is the long wait while the Church, the "Bride of Christ," is born. Now—I—John have just been taken into Heaven to symbolize things to come. An extensive cosmic battle to conclude the war of the cosmos is underway. Rebel angels have been driven away from the throne room. Satan will no longer be able to stand before God and accuse those made righteous by the blood of Jesus, the Lamb of God. The fighting is forcing them through the latticework of dimensions towards Earth. The fighting will go on for three and one half years. Then, when Satan is completely driven past the photon barrier onto Earth, he will try to annihilate the Jews. They will escape into the

nations for three and one half years. He will intensify his attack on all new believers in Jesus who recognize what is happening and repent.

The golden thread of astrology starts at the tower of Babel, but first this is the sign that I see. A powerful angel takes me in another three-dimensional vision to a desert, which is symbolic of false spiritualism.^{xvi} We see a woman sitting on a large scarlet beast. She is dressed in purple and scarlet, and is glittering with gold and all sorts of jewels. On her forehead is a title written in bold letters; "MYSTERY BABYLON THE GREAT THE MOTHER OF PROSTITUTES AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH." She is filled with religious power and is drunk from the blood of martyrs who bore testimony to Jesus. She holds a golden cup in her hand that is frothing over with abominable things and the filth of her adulteries.

I notice in astonishment that the scarlet beast is none other than the seven headed-ten horned red dragon. My angel friend turns to me, "Why are you astonished? The beast, which you see, once was, now is not, and will come up out of the Abyss and go to his destruction. The inhabitants of Earth whose names have not been written in the book of life from the creation of the world will be astonished when they see the beast, because he once was, now is not, and yet will come." The beast symbolizes a man. The woman that you see is the great city of spiritual prostitution, the Web of Darkness, maintained by the dragon. His religion of sensual mysticism has ruled multitudes of peoples, nations, languages and the kings of Earth for thousands of years.

The angel continues to explain that the dragon will maintain this religion of spiritual adultery throughout seven Earthly imperial kingdoms (heads with crowns on them),

five have fallen, one is and the seventh is to come. The satanic dictator will rule the eighth kingdom. The ten uncrowned horns are kings that will be given authority by the beast to control the world. They will hate the prostitute of false religion that takes worship away from Lucifer. They will bring her to ruin, leave her naked and burn her with fire. The beast and the ten rulers make war against the Lamb, but He will overcome them because “He is Lord of Lords and King of kings—and with him will be his called, chosen and faithful followers.” I knew then that I, and all believers, would come back with him from Heaven to the final battle on Earth between Light and Darkness.

The spiritual adultery of astrology began at the Tower of Babel. This led to the mysticism of the occult, the worship of demons, fallen angels and Satan. Nimrod intensified this sensual worship in his city of Babylon. The worship of anything, spiritual or material is idolatry and adultery to God the Creator of the Heavens and Earth. In the first great rebellion, Lucifer sought to bring this worship to himself. This religious system of astrology has extended down through the seven imperial kingdoms of Babylon, Assyria, Persia, Greece, Egypt, and Rome—the sixth, with the seventh yet to come. The period of Rome extends to the 21st century and includes all religious worship that does not enthrone God and Jesus Christ.

In the immediate centuries after Constantine, and the merger of church and state, the state church became filled with mysticism and pagan rites leading to the Inquisition. The blood of martyrs flowed within its halls for centuries. This sixth head (kingdom) will end when the true Church of believers is taken out of the world. Then the seventh head, a super religion of spiritual mysticism and demonic power, will issue in the rule of Antichrist, a man who worships the god

of fortresses. When Satan, symbolized by the great red dragon, is cast to Earth, he will destroy this religious system and declare that he is God and that he alone must be worshipped—this is the eighth kingdom. Satan will seek to eliminate Jews and Christians and will organize a world army to try and prevent the coming of Jesus and his followers.

The next holographic picture concerns the world's governments and commercial enterprises.^{xvii} I see the dragon (Satan) standing on the shore of the sea. A beast slowly rises up out of the waters. It resembles a leopard, but has feet like a bear and a mouth like that of a Lion. He has seven heads and ten crowned horns. The dragon gives the beast his power, throne and great authority.

One of the heads seems to have a fatal wound that has been healed. The whole earth is astonished and worships the beast and the dragon, exclaiming, "Who is like the beast? Who can make war against him?" The beast utters proud words blaspheming and slandering God, his dwelling place and those who live in Heaven. He is given authority over every tribe, people, language and nation and makes war against the saints for three and one half years. "All inhabitants of the earth will worship the beast—all whose names have not been written in the book of life belonging to the Lamb that was slain from the creation of the world. He who has an ear let him hear."^{xviii}

The world ruler has a cohort, the false prophet, who is seen coming from the earth. This second beast has two horns like a lamb, but speaks like a dragon. He performs great and miraculous signs in full view of men, and makes the inhabitants of Earth worship an image of the world ruler. He is given power to give breath to the image so that it can speak. Everyone who refuses to worship the beast, who has recovered from death, is killed. He also institutes economic reform and uses it to wield religious and economic power. Everyone is given a number on his right hand or forehead, so that they can't buy or sell unless they have the mark and worship the beast.

This great world wide economic system is called the city of Babylon. I can see that it is driven by demonic power, "she has become a home for demons and a haunt for every evil spirit." As I look down on Earth in my vision, I can see that the ancient city of Babylon is the economic center of the world and is filled with excessive luxuries and spiritual adultery.

The False Prophet

This person comes from the Earth, which is Israel. He, according to the ancient prophecy of Jacob, is likely a Jew from the tribe of Benjamin.

Suddenly, Earth is illuminated by the splendor of a powerful angel descending from Heaven towards Babylon. With great authority, he warns any remaining saints to get out of her since she is to be purged. Picking up a large boulder the size of a huge millstone and tossing it into the sea, he exclaims, "By your magic spell all the nations were led astray. In her was found the blood of prophets and of the saints, and of all who have been killed on earth." In one hour, the city is

completely destroyed. The smoke of her burning swirls like a violent tornado into the sky. All the merchants, sea captains and sailors stand afar off and wail, "Was there ever a city like this great city."

Additional Information

The visions by King Nebuchadnezzar and Daniel give information that assists in understanding the significance of the heads and horns of the beasts seen by John.

What does all this mean to we mortals of the 21st century? We live in an age of cosmic awareness when the veil between the normal and paranormal has thinned. As the Web of Darkness tries to consolidate its hold on the planet, spiritualism and mysticism are being used for self-seeking religious and economic power. The beast that comes out of the sea means that he comes out of the history of the peoples of Earth. The fact that he has the body of a leopard, the feet of a bear and speaks like a lion indicates his association with ancient Middle East countries. In modern terms, this would be the area of Iraq, Iran and Syria. As stated before, the seven heads are the seven imperial kingdoms that have ruled, and will rule, on Earth in relationship to God's people, the Israelites. In Daniel's visions, he sees a fourth beast that represents the continuation of the Roman Empire into our modern era, which is an extension of the mixed cultures of Greece and Rome that become Western civilization. This is the meaning of the two legs of the statue in Nebuchadnezzar's dream. The statue has ten toes that are the same as the ten horns seen by Daniel. They represent ten kings who are to receive power in the last days. Then another little horn, the world ruler, captures three of them, consolidating his power.

This eighth head, the little horn, and the leopard-bodied beast from the Abyss that was dead and yet lived are one and the same—a mystery. How can the beast come from the Abyss

and yet be a man? Many older commentators have thought that this person could be anyone from Nimrod to Nero or even the betrayer Judas. Modern commentators tend to treat him as a normal man energized by Satan's powers, and when he is killed, Satan revives him. This may be so; however, in our modern skeptical world, of advanced medical technology, it would be very difficult to have many astonished people, such that the whole world wonders after the beast being brought back to life. Moreover, Jesus tells John that this mysterious person **once was; now is not and will come out of the Abyss**. Satan is not in the Abyss. In John's day, this man is in Torments, which may be part of the Abyss. The books of Isaiah and Revelation show that they are the same place. Isaiah chapter 14 speaks to the distant future. Lucifer, the fallen cherub, is pictured as being cast into Torments when God has broken the rod of the wicked. This correlates with Satan being locked up in the Abyss for 1000 years in Revelation 20, an event that is yet to come.

Now this is highly conjectural, but there is one person presently in Torments who fits all of the necessary criteria. This is Alexander the Great who died in Babylon at the age of 33, at approximately the same age as Jesus. Was Alexander the Great, a Greek Spartan, from the missing Israelite tribe of Dan? J.R. Church an author on Bible prophecy poses this question. He writes,

We previously mentioned a letter, written by the king of the Spartans to the high priest in Jerusalem, wherein he claimed to be of the "stock of Abraham."

We also related a similar statement written by the historian, Flavius Josephus.

According to Josephus, the symbol of the ancient Spartans was an eagle with a dragon in his claws. The dragon, by the way, was synonymous with

the snake among the early cultures. This is an incredible clue linking the tribe of Dan with the Spartans of southern Greece.^{xix}

It is curious to note that the Spartans claimed to be brothers to the tribes of Israel, of the stock of Abraham—displaying the symbol of an eagle and its

enemy, the snake. Jacob the patriarch in an ancient prophecy on his deathbed said of his son Dan. “Dan will be a serpent by the roadside, a viper along the path, that bites the horse’s heels so that its rider tumbles backward.”^{xx} Is it possible that now in the age of expected ET contacts and world problems, the Nephilim, to appear benevolent, bring Alexander the Great back from the dead in the form of a UFO contact? He rode a magnificent white stallion and was said to be the one man who could unite East and West civilizations. Nevertheless, it is only God who has the power to allow a departed mortal to return from the Abyss. An event of this magnitude would explain the recovery from death and the wonderment of the world. The dragon of course claims the glory as God who controls all spiritual power. In this way, the dragon mimics the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Jesus predicted that, “*I have come in my Father’s name, and you do not accept me; but if someone else comes in his own name, you will accept him.*”^{xxi} In tune with the age of mysticism, Alexander, or who ever it is, comes back as evidence of cosmic enlightenment from the apparent Alien rulers that created us.

However it comes about, future world power will be concentrated in revived Babylon, and it will become a haunt of demons. Deceived mankind will believe that it is a time of enlightenment and make special trips to Babylon to be possessed by superior spirits. Spiritual possession is a willful act on the part of an individual. A demon cannot force spiritual access. A

The Tribe of Dan

The replacing of the tribe of Dan with the tribe of Manasseh seems to imply that the world ruler is from the tribe of Dan (Rev 7:6).

human spirit is the gateway or channel by which spirits gain entrance to our material world for their own selfish reasons. You can't will them out; it is only the power of the sacrificial blood of Jesus that can remove them. Bonding with an invading spirit is a hollow reflection of the works of the Holy Spirit, Who is the Eternal Spirit of God and not a created spiritual force. The human will is programmed to reject spiritual violation; this will must be overridden by selfish motivation to be "as a god." It would

indeed be like the days of Noah, like the great fabled kingdoms of the Titans, Cronus, Zeus, Osiris and Isis. Sensual pleasure, demonic driven commerce and spiritual enlightenment would walk hand in hand, all of which is evil filth and spiritual abomination to God. Whatever happens, the beast has

Petra

Upon seeing the statue in the temple, a Jewish remnant flee to a special refuge prepared by God in the desert^{xxii}—believed to be the ancient cliff dwellings of Petra in Jordan. There, they plead to Messiah Jesus for His return as foretold by Hosea, "*Then I will go back to my place* [which shows that the Messiah has already come] *until they admit their guilt ... in their misery they will earnestly seek me.*"^{xxiii}

supernatural abilities and gives world power to ten rulers. These are the ten crowned horns. The beast consolidates further control by subduing three of the rulers. When Satan and his Legions of Doom are cast out of Heaven after three and one half years of cosmic warfare, Satan then possess this person and the world ruler becomes totally diabolic. Satan will be filled with wrath against the human race because he knows that he has only three and one half years of freedom left.

Daniel and Jesus warn us that this diabolic being will set up an image of himself in the Jewish temple and proclaim that he is God. The false prophet will use magic to cause the statue to speak. Jews are to flee the city immediately. How many Technicolor movies are already

psychologically preparing the world for magic? The chaos of nations will be intense. Daniel has previously informed us that all will not be well in the world; other nations will attack the kingdom of the beast. Men have their own wills, evil as they may be, apart from Satan. Jesus informs John that the whole demonic religious and commerce system will be destroyed in a fiery holocaust symbolized by the angel throwing the millstone. John has one more picture to describe to us before we find out what happens when Jesus commences opening the seven seals.^{xxiv}

Next, I see four angels that have been given power to harm the land and the sea. A fifth angel appears and shouts to them, "Do not harm the land or the sea or the trees until we put a seal on the foreheads of the servants of our God." I see seals placed on the foreheads of 144,000 people, 12,000 from each of the twelve tribes of Israel. Manasseh the son of Joseph replaces the tribe of Dan. Even though my race of people have been scattered throughout the nations, God still knows the family lineage of each person.

At the same time, two men suddenly appear on the streets of Jerusalem. I can't believe whom I am seeing. It is Enoch and Elijah the two judgment prophets. They are dressed in sackcloth. For three and one half years, they prophesy concerning the return of Jesus and against the false religious system in place on the earth. They are given supernatural power to turn water into blood, to withhold rain and to create every kind of plague as often as they want. Anyone who tries to harm them is burned with supernatural fire [spontaneous human combustion?]. At the end of three and one half years, the beast from the Abyss overpowers them and kills them. The world's citizens gloat over their death and celebrate by giving gifts to one another.

Their bodies are left on the street to decompose in the hot sun. Media coverage by television and Internet relay the moment-by-moment details, such that the whole world can rejoice. Then after three and one half days, a dramatic event happens.

Suddenly, the swarms of flies flee the decomposing blood stained bodies. A brilliant light flashes from heaven and the breath of life from God enters the murdered prophets. The bloodstains disappear, their faces glow with life, they stand on their feet—they have been resurrected from the dead. Now there is visible proof of the resurrection of transformation. A powerful voice speaks. “Come up here.” The world watches in amazement as they rise from the ground and disappear into white cloud. TV commentators replay the scene over and over again in disbelief.

A powerful earthquake strikes the city and seven thousand people are killed. Momentarily the survivors in the city give glory to the God of heaven.

This golden thread of Israel’s mandate relates back to the visit of the archangel Gabriel to the prophet Daniel. He was informed that: *“Seventy ‘sevens’ are decreed for your people and your holy city to finish transgression, to put an end to sin, to atone for wickedness, to bring in everlasting righteousness, to seal up vision and prophecy and to anoint the most holy.”*^{xxv} At this point in history, only one week remains to be fulfilled. Thus, by supernaturally appointing and maintaining the lives of the 144,000 witness for this last remaining week of seven years, God causes Israel to complete the Jewish mandate to testify to the whole world concerning the coming Kingdom of God. This must be done before the “Most Holy One” can be anointed on the Earth as “King of Kings” and rule on the throne of His father David forever and ever. This then

is the Earthly kingdom promised to King David. Israel will be the head of nations and the sons of Shem will rule the world as prophesied by Noah.

There is no doubt as to who one of the judgment prophets is. This is Elijah as prophesied by the prophet Malachi, “*See, I will send you the prophet Elijah before that great and dreadful day of the LORD comes.*”^{xxvi} Early church scholars such as Tertullian and Ambrose and other apocryphal documents held that the second witness was Enoch.^{xxvii} Modern scholars tend to uphold Moses as a candidate largely because of his ability to inflict plagues, and secondly because he appeared with Jesus and Elijah in the transfiguration episode. Enoch may be the more likely candidate from a modern cosmological viewpoint. We are told in the book of Hebrews “*man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment,*”^{xxviii} Enoch did not die because God took him. Elijah went to heaven in a chariot of fire. (The changing of those alive at the resurrection, described by Paul, constitutes physical death in the ceasing of mortality and the transformation to immortality). Therefore, Enoch is a witness of the ages before the flood and Elijah to the generations after. The witness of Enoch is significant from a modern cosmological viewpoint because he is a witness to the deception of the Nephilim in ages past. He will witness about the evil highly technological civilization that existed, and the meddling of the Nephilim to be as gods, so Enoch is a witness to the Gentile nations and Elijah to Israel. Mankind in the kingdom of the beast will have no excuse for their actions. The two witnesses harass the kingdom of the beast for three and one half years. At this point, Michael and his army finally drive the Dragon and his Legions of Doom out of the interdimensions of Heaven. Satan possesses the body of the world ruler, the man from the Abyss, and immediately attacks the two witnesses. God allows him to over-power the witnesses and killing them.

To celebrate the Dragon's greatness people send gifts to one another. Then in the ultimate vanity, the world dictator enters the Jewish temple and claims to be God. He demands to be worshipped, or be killed. The false trinity, of the Dragon as God, the world dictator as Jesus, and the false prophet along with the demons as spirits masking as the Holy Spirit, is in place. The world in its haste to be part of the great cosmic civilization has bought into the great deception. Yet, Satan wants mankind terminated. It is only redeemed mankind that will attain that great cosmic civilization when they will rule the cosmos under Jesus, the King of Kings and Lord of Lords. At the end of three and one half days, both witnesses are resurrected and raptured. Again, there will be no excuse. Though people may have doubted the initial disappearance of so many believers being resurrected to heaven, or the historical Ascension of Jesus, they have the opportunity to hear the call of Jesus and watch the departure take place.

The 21st century is commencing. The Y2K scare and the millennium fever are jokes of the past. Nothing happened, and yet there are more armed conflicts then ever before. Terrorism strikes at the heart of

Gifts

Christmas in December is a celebrated time of gift giving. If the two prophets were resurrected at this time, then running backwards three and one half years takes us to June, the time of Pentecost and the coming of the Holy Spirit, which may imply that He departs with the Bride at this same time.

freedom. Religious strife becomes an excuse for political and theocratic power. There is more fear, as to who has nuclear and biological weapons of mass destruction, the uncertainty of genetic cloning, the question of genetically modified foods and worrisome out- breaks of new super diseases. Jesus warned that sudden destruction would come like a thief in the night. So how then, might the signs given to John become action in our ontology? There is always the

remote chance that the world might repent like Nineveh and God possibly say as he said to Jonah; “look there are over six billion people with much cattle and goods, they have repented and are accepting the salvation of My Son Jesus, I will delay.” However, there is no sign of repentance. Conversely, fascination with the paranormal, spiritual mysticism and deliberate Satan worship are increasing rapidly. Storms, earthquakes, and unseasonable weather patterns have been escalating in intensity all around the world creating damage of untold billions of dollars. There seem to be more comets in the heavens than ever before, and asteroids with near Earth orbits.

It is possible that the following events happen differently than proposed, however, no matter how one tries to arrange them, God says certain outcomes will happen. The 2003 war of “Iraqi Freedom” lead by the United States and Britain and economic aid has not brought peace to Iraq. Nor is a peace treaty between Israel and Palestine likely. The President of Iran is calling for Muslims to exterminate Israel. World affairs are quickly aligning to approximate the right time for the sudden attack upon Israel by the Assyrian and the Russian nations around the Caspian Sea, called Meshech and Tubal. The sudden commencement of the wrath of the Lamb may start with the removal of His Church. Simultaneously a series of violent earthquakes occur around the world. The devastation is horrific. Many highly technically trained people are missing from the powerful western nations. In this temporary power vacuum Russia, Gog and Magog, and the Assyrian, which is Syria, Iran and Iraq, attack Israel. With them are the North African countries such as Libya. The prophet Micah describes the attack of the Assyrian, while the prophet Ezekiel^{xxix} details the attack by Gog and Magog the leaders of the Caspian confederacy. The attack will be sudden; a massive army will advance through Lebanon and Syria to the Golan Heights. God said through the prophet Isaiah “*I will crush the Assyrian in my land; on my*

mountains I will trample him down,^{xxx} *Damascus will no longer be a city but will become a heap of ruins.*^{xxxi} There will be a great earthquake, fire, burning sulphur, hail and torrents of rain.

Nuclear weapons will likely be exchanged between continents.

In a supernatural panic inspired by God, each of the attacking nations will attack each other (Shiite against Suni?). Micah^{xxxii} says that when the Assyrian, marches through our fortresses seven shepherds, even eight leaders of men will push against the land of Nimrod with the drawn sword and deliver Israel. The seven shepherds may possibly describe the United Nations forces of the G7 nations. The eighth may be none other than the Little Horn of Daniel who appears at this time empowered by the god of fortresses. However, Israel will know that God delivered them. They will spend the next seven months burying the dead. The dynamic leader from the Abyss will likely consolidate the remains of Iran, Iraq, Syria and Saudi Arabia thereby controlling the Middle East oil fields. Babylon will be established as the oil capital of the world. The nations recognize that it is God who preserves Israel. However, the simultaneous superficial wonderful contact with the Nephilim (the great delusion and the lie) and the wonderment of the beast from the Abyss confuse the nations into believing that they have, at last, arrived at the age of enlightenment and world peace. The paradigm shift will have occurred; millions of people of all languages, peoples and nations who will not follow the spiritual mysticisms of the beast will perish. The world is ready and waiting.

I, John, could hardly believe that all these things are to take place on Earth, and yet individual wills would still deny their Creator, that for a season they may be, “as gods.” Now that I have described the overview of holographic word pictures, I want

to tell you what happens when Jesus starts to open the first of the seven seals. It is then that I hear a loud thunder of pounding horse hooves.

Notes:

ⁱ Matthew 24:32-34

ⁱⁱ Mathew chapter 24, Mark chapter 13 and Luke chapter 21

ⁱⁱⁱ Luke 21:34-35

^{iv} Daniel 9:27

^v *BBC NEWS*, January 15, 2003, "Proof of aliens goes on show,"

<news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/uk_news/england/2662787.stm>

^{vi} Daniel 11:39

^{vii} Enterprisemission.com/oh_my_god.htm

^{viii} Gary Stearman Web (prophecyinthenews.com/joeh113b.htm)

^{ix} Isaiah's little apocalypse chapters 24-27

^x 1 Corinthians 15:51-53

^{xi} 2 Thessalonians 2:3-4

^{xii} 2 Thessalonians 2:7-12

^{xiii} Revelation 5:9-10. Note: King James Version and noted interpreters Joseph Seiss, *The Apocalypse*, pg. 117, and Dr. F. Walvoord, *The Revelation of Jesus Christ* pg. 116 use 'us' as it occurs in Codex Alexandrinus, Codex Basilianus and in the oldest manuscript Codex Synaiticus.

^{xiv} Matthew 20:21

^{xv} Revelation chapter 12

^{xvi} Revelation chapter 17

^{xvii} Revelation chapters 13 & 18

^{xviii} Revelation 13:8-9

^{xix} Church J.R., *Guardians Of The Grail*, Prophecy Publications, 1989, pg. 119

^{xx} Genesis 49:17

^{xxi} John 5:43

^{xxii} Revelation 12:6

^{xxiii} Hosea 5:15

^{xxiv} Revelation chapters 7 & 11

^{xxv} Daniel 9:24

^{xxvi} Malachi 4:5

^{xxvii} Seiss J.A., *The Apocalypse*, Zondervan Publishing House, 1973, pg. 250

^{xxviii} Hebrews 9:27

^{xxix} Ezekiel chapters 38 & 39

^{xxx} Isaiah 14:25

^{xxxi} Isaiah 17:1

^{xxxii} Micah 5:5-6

Chapter 31

Cosmic Warfare

With John, I have heard the distant sound of hoofbeats. I have seen evil riders on the horizons of our lives. I am still an evangelist whose one goal is to proclaim new life in Christ, but there is serious trouble ahead for our world, for all of us who live in it, and in the four horsemen of the Apocalypse there is both a warning and wisdom for those troubled days ahead.

Billy Graham,ⁱ *Approaching Hoofbeats*.

“Do not be deceived: God cannot be mocked. A man reaps what he sows. The one who sows to please his sinful nature, from that nature will reap destruction; the one who sows to please the Spirit, from the Spirit will reap eternal life.”ⁱⁱ There are untold thousands of Satan worshippers in the world who celebrate black mass in a mockery of Jesus Christ. The cross is hung upside down, black is used and a defrocked priest spits on the altar. “To make the blasphemy even more despicable, sexual rites are added. Sometimes a child is even slain. During the ceremony, the worshippers renounce their faith, acknowledge Satan as Lord and, when the ritual is concluded, the high priest closes with a curse rather than with a blessing.”ⁱⁱⁱ Dr. Graham has had his services interrupted a number of times by Satanists. He describes such an event at a Young Peoples Night in Chicago when they entered the meeting chanting.

I am going to ask you Christian young people to surround these Satan worshippers,” I exhorted. “Love them. Pray for them. Sing to them. And gradually ease them back toward the entrances through which they have come.” I will never forget that moment! Hundreds of young Christians stood to their feet and did exactly as I had asked. Some grabbed hands and began to sing. Others put their arms around the Satan worshippers and began to pray for them. Others calmly shared their faith with them. Everyone else in McCormick Place sat praying as God’s Spirit moved through His people to confound the work of Satan in our midst.... The same thing happened in Oakland California.... Later that week I received a letter from one of the leaders of the Satanist group thanking me for what I had done. He wrote, “I think you saved our lives.” The power of those Christian young people came not in the impact of evil and violent force, but in their quiet, loving prayerful resolution.^{iv}

Therein lies the great dichotomy—Satan’s kingdom of evil and violent force, or Christ’s of loving prayerful resolution. Who will rule Earth—Jesus or Satan? Whom would you rather serve, Christ or Lucifer? The war of the cosmos affects the Heavens and Earth, and someday “*the LORD will punish the powers in the heavens above and the kings on the earth below.*”^v In this great schism of the cosmos, humanity has no way of knowing what battles have taken place in the heavenlies. In the book of Revelation, the focal point of this war has moved onto planet Earth as those in heaven watch. The Great Consequence, for angels and men, is looming on the horizon of time.

The Riders of the Apocalypse

All of heaven is watching as the sound of hoofbeats gains in intensity. Jesus opens the first of the seven seals. Startled, I jump as a one of the Living Ones shouts like a clap of thunder, "Come!" Suddenly, like a three dimensional hologram a white horse gallops onto Earth, the rider is waving a powerful bow in his hand. He is given a crown and rides out as a conqueror bent on conquest. A second Living One shouts, "Come!" and a fiery red horse thunders by, its rider wielding a large sword. As he rides onto Earth, men begin to slay each other. In a loud voice, a third Living One exclaims "Come," and as Jesus opens the third seal, a black horse canters out with its rider holding a pair of scales in his hand. Then I hear an ominous voice from amongst the living creatures say, "A quart of wheat for a day's wages, and three quarts of barley for a day's wages, and do not damage the oil and the wine!" The fourth Living One calls "Come!" I look, horrified, a pale horse paws its hooves and streams towards Earth like a wispy wraith with its rider, Death, clutching his mane. The gate to torments flails behind him like a gaping black hideous hole, a fourth of the earth writhes under wanton violence. Millions die from war, famine, plague and wild beasts. Twisting and screaming their spirits float into the gaping black hole of death.

It is then that my attention is drawn to the altar, as if I haven't seen it before, a huge room lies under it. As the Lamb opens the fifth seal a chorus of voices call loudly, "How long, Sovereign Lord, holy and true, until you judge the inhabitants of

the earth and avenge our blood?" Each one is given a white robe and told to wait a little longer until all of their fellow martyrs come home.

As I mentioned before, from our perspective in the heavenlies, we are around the throne in Heaven, and yet, we seem to be placed somewhere in interdimensional space between Heaven and Earth. What is difficult to understand is that we can see close and far at the same time. Earth rotates slowly in space like a great blue, green and brown globe with white tops. It is covered in places with swirling white fleecy clouds. The moon orbits like a silvery colored ball around Earth—it is awesome. How many times had I watched the silvery moon from my boat on the Sea of Galilee, or from a nearby ridge as the crickets chirped and the warm breezes touched my face? Then it overwhelms me again, I had been there with Jesus, my redeemer, the Lamb, the Lion of Judah who is about to open the sixth seal.

I notice, out of the corner of my eye, that some of the stars are winking out as a black cloud moves rapidly towards Earth from interstellar space. Then, as Jesus opens the sixth seal, a massive earthquake ripples around the world. At the same time, huge streaks of fire ascend through the atmosphere all over the earth. The cloud is so dense that a dark shadow flitters over Earth's fleecy clouds, which from my viewpoint turn blood red as does the moon. The blazing heat from the massive meteorite storm creates great vortexes in the atmosphere forming stupendous tornados. On Earth it was recorded; "The sky receded like a scroll, rolling up, and every mountain and island was removed from its place. Then the kings of the earth, the princes, the generals, the rich, the mighty, and every slave and every free man hid in caves and among the rocks of the mountains. They called to the mountains and

the rocks, 'Fall on us and hide us from the face of him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb! For the great day of their wrath has come, and who can stand?''^{vi}

Jerusalem and Babylon

God Exists. The course of history has purpose and direction, even though Satan is Prince of this world and the surrounding aerial regions (local space?), God is ultimately in control. The destructive purposes of Satan combined with the bent natures of humanity can only go so far, God will use their vain free will actions to His purpose and glory. Why is it that it always seems to be trials and tribulations instead of peace and prosperity that cause men to seek God and repent before their Creator? Could it be that peace and prosperity seem to abet the delusion of vanity that one can be “as gods.”

Various commentators, over the years, have had diverse ideas as to the time and method of the return of Christ. Most of the controversy centers on the question of whether or not Christ comes for his Church before the time of wrath, during the time of wrath or after the time of wrath. Most do not question that Jesus comes at sometime; that there is a resurrection of the dead and that there is a judgment of the living and the dead. In this 21st century, some of the Churches of Christ around the world are in tribulation and being martyred, and yet some have peace and prosperity. The world is simultaneously living all ages of the seven Churches—it is just that in this time frame of the 21st century, the prophetic Church of Laodicea dominates.

The book of Revelation quite clearly defines a time of God’s wrath upon an apostate Gentile world, and the time of Jacob’s trouble upon the Jews. God lets Satan use mankind’s bent God-denying nature to almost annihilate themselves. At the same time, Satan and his complete

rebel contingent are cast to the Earth for judgment. The remaining two thirds of the heavenly host watch as God effectively says to the ancient rebellious Cherub, Lucifer; “see what you can do with this mess that you have created amongst the independent bent wills of sentient creatures called humans.” In all this, God’s eternal love is made known through his mercy and grace to a lost world. There is no greater story of love that could be told, in all of the Cosmos, than the Creator of all that there is, died to redeem a sentient creature created in His image. Each person has a choice, to believe by faith and accept His grace and mercy, or reject His offer of salvation through the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ. Thus, the wrath of the Lamb is focused on a world that is in an alliance with the great cosmic rebellion. Its people have chosen to worship the great red dragon. There will be only one will in heaven, and that will be—the will of the Eternal God, Creator of all that there is, and Creator of all that is to come—in the Ages of Ages.

The prophet Isaiah has clearly informed us what will happen. The dead will rise like the dew of the morning and go to their rooms until God’s great wrath has passed by. Jesus has said the same thing. *“I am going there to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with me that you also may be where I am.”*^{vii} Moreover, *“since you have kept my command to endure patiently, I will also keep you from the hour of trial that is going to come upon the whole world to test those who live on the earth.”*^{viii} God will punish the people of the Earth for their sins and punish the dragon with a fierce and powerful sword. This paradigm shift will happen suddenly. *“I am coming soon. Hold on to what you have, so that no one will take your crown,”* says Jesus.^{ix} Paul writes to us in his letter to the church at Thessalonica; *“Now, brothers, about times and dates we do not need to write to you, for you know very well that the day of the Lord will come like a thief in the night. While people are saying, “Peace and safety,” destruction will come on them suddenly, as labor pains on a*

pregnant woman, and they will not escape. But you, brothers, are not in darkness so that this day should surprise you like a thief. You are all sons of the light and sons of the day. We do not belong to the night or to the darkness.”^x

The season of Iniquity seems to be upon us as the Web of Darkness envelopes Earth. Echoes of the hoofbeats of the four horsemen of the Apocalypse can already be heard on Earth as they ride towards the future. The rider on the white horse represents the charismatic being from the Abyss as he flitters from nation to nation, consolidating world power. The world hungers for a dynamic leader, a hero so to speak. He would be particularly effective if he has access to a hyperdimensional space vehicle piloted by the Nephilim. A much heralded, “covenant with many,” likely meaning a peace agreement between Israel and her Arab neighbours, will be signed. The signing of this document will start God’s celestial clock, commencing the seventieth week of Daniel’s prophecy.

The Jews will rapidly begin to assemble a new temple and will commence animal sacrificial worship according to the laws of Moses. If war, meteorites, or one of the massive earthquakes does not destroy Islam’s Dome Of The Rock, then it is likely that a temporary temple will be built over a small cupola 100 meters from it.^{xi*}11 The Arabic name of the cupola means Dome of the Spirits (or Tablets), it is thought to be the ancient position of the First Temple Holy of Holies. The prophet Daniel states that the statue of abomination will be placed in “*a wing*” of the temple,^{xii} which likely means that the exact temple according to God’s design does not yet exist. This concept would appear to be reinforced by the fact that John is told that the outer court is given to the Gentiles for 42 months.^{xiii*}13 The Dome of the Rock would be in the court of the Gentiles. This two-temple arrangement may possibly be the coming world ruler’s peace plan that would appease both Jew and Moslem under his strict rule. This is also the time

when the two witness, Elijah and Enoch preach to the Jewish nation. It is no wonder that all eyes are focused on the Temple Mount.

The three-dimensional pictures described by John, inform us that a powerful economic system gets underway. Some commentators believe it is spearheaded by the economic might of the United States and the revived Roman Empire of Europe, the EEC. Capital cities such as New York and Rome have been suggested to be the World's capital. However, if the Gog-Magog Arab-Russian attack upon Israel does initiate a limited nuclear exchange between the U.S. and the Russian confederacy, the economy of the U.S. may be incapacitated similar to the September 11, 2001 New York catastrophe, only on a national scale. If the world ruler, the beast, does consolidate the power of Iran, Iraq, Syria and Saudi Arabia, then he will control the world's oil supply. Babylon may then be the more logical choice for a world economic capital. Saddam Hussein spent almost one billion dollars refurbishing this ancient metropolis, and under the super ruler the rebuilding would be accelerated. The ten horns or powers that are rewarded for their allegiance to the kingdom of the beast likely come from the countries of Europe under the EEC arrangement. However, there is no reason that the horns cannot represent rulers of a consortium of world nations. The nations of Asia have become powerful economic engines. Canada, the United States, the British Isles, Australia, South Korea and New Zealand may be crippled by the removal of their large population of believers. These countries and others where revivals are now taking place may well be the sheep nations, referred to by Jesus, to which the Jews flee when the diabolic beast claims to be God. The World's present economic systems are not supported by profitability fundamentals and will certainly be wiped out. Thus, the beast's proposal of leadership to lead the world back into peace and economic prosperity will be gratefully received.

Possibly, after three and one half years of pseudo peace, war and famine break out over Earth's surface as the beast consolidates his power by subduing three of the ruling horns of power. This begins the ride of the second, third and fourth horses of the Apocalypse. One quarter of the Earth, which amounts to an area the size of Africa and Australia combined, is initially affected. The voices speaking of the future said "Do not damage the oil and the wine." This indicates that the already prosperous nations will, in some way, continue to prosper. The whore of Babylon, the apostate church, will somehow consolidate various religious factions into a powerful mystical belief system that assists the world dictator in accumulating power. This takes place during the first three and one half years of the seventieth week of Daniel. The 144,000 Jewish preachers are active around the world proclaiming the coming Kingdom of God. The two witnesses warn the Jewish people and condemn the world ruler from Jerusalem. There are untold millions of people who realize what is happening, repent and believe in Jesus. Many pay for their belief with their lives.

"After this I looked and there before me was a great multitude that no one could count, from every nation, tribe, people and language, standing before the throne and in front of the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and were holding palm branches in their hands. And they cried out in a loud voice: "Salvation belongs to our God, who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb." All the angels were standing around the throne and around the elders and the four living creatures. The elders fell down on their faces before the throne and worshiped God, saying: "Amen! Praise and glory and wisdom and thanks and honor and power and strength be to our God for ever and ever. Amen!"^{xiv}

Death From Space

The population of Earth is in sheer terror. Astronomers using the Hubble telescope and those at standard observatories around the world, along with multitudes of amateur astronomers, have detected an unprecedented swarm of meteorites, and a blackness that can only be large meteorites and meteoric dust headed towards Earth. The sky is alive with powerful bursts of gamma rays as if the fabric of space-time is being violated. Bright flashes of warring hyperdimensional spaceships occasionally twinkle in the heavens.

A Question of Gravity

A number of alternate thinking scientists suggest that gravity is a complex form of magnetism and magnetism comes from electrostatic forces inside electrons and atomic nuclei. They also believe that the vacuum of space is not empty; that it is filled with scalar forces that are just not detected because they are static (not moving—if there were movement they would be vectors). These scalar quantities may possibly form a hyperdimensional latticework that intersects the local framework of space-time.

The sunspots increase in intensity as great spiral vortexes of charged particles shoot from the sun. Some of them strike Earth devastating its protective magnetic shield, wrecking havoc on satellites and the world's electrical power grids. The very hyperbolic latticework of dimensions that intersects the material planets is vibrating, causing unprecedented gravity and electromagnetic disturbances. If the Nephilim are present they may speak heroically of hyperdimensional shields, but will be able to do nothing. Earth's population flees in terror hiding in caves and amongst the rocks in the mountains. They call to the mountains and the rocks, "*Fall*

on us and hide us from the face of him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb! For the great day of their wrath has come, and who can stand?”^{xv}

All through the Old and New Testaments, both lightning and earthquakes occur when God, the Creator of the heavens and Earth, interacts with our dimension of space-time. This is particularly evident in the book of Revelation. With a thunderous, roar spectacular fireballs and gigantic forks of lightning dance around Earth as the devastation from heaven strikes its atmosphere. Earth rumbles with

Lightning and Earthquakes from Space?

If gravity is somehow related to electrostatic forces between subatomic particles then possibly interspatial electromagnetic disturbances will affect Earth’s gravitational field creating high atmospheric lightning and earthquakes. Moreover, the action of God or angels from the hyperdimensions of space-time may possibly be the cause of some of the smaller newly detected gamma ray bursts.

earthquakes, mountains crumble and monstrous oceanic tsunamis wash over the low lands and islands. The hiding people get an answer to their shouts to God as the black hole, the gate to torments, opens to receive them. The sudden shifting of Earth’s tectonic plates reactivates ancient volcanic centers. Vast plumes of smoke and ash explode into the stratosphere.

Unbeheld in the material dimension, Michael and his army rout the remaining Legions of Doom rebels past the photon time barrier. It is recorded in heaven; *“Therefore rejoice, you heavens and you who dwell in them! But woe to the earth and the sea, because the devil has gone down to you! He is filled with fury, because he knows that his time is short.”^{xvi}* Satan enters the body of the man from the Abyss. Demon possession has prepared an abundance of spiritually enlightened mortals. Members of the Legions of Doom shove the lower order demons aside and

seize control of their spiritual initiates. God permits Satan to attack and kill Elijah and Enoch. The first three and one half years have elapsed. At this point, the Beast from the Abyss breaks his covenant with Israel and sets out to annihilate all Jews. They flee into the nations, a special remnant flee to Petra. He also turns his wrath on believers in Jesus.

I, John, watch aghast as the world reels like a drunkard. I see blinding flares of meteorites in the atmosphere and brilliant celestial lightning as Earth's magnetosphere reverberates and flashes like a dynamo against the solar wind. Earth shudders with earthquakes.^{xvii} Then Jesus opens the seventh seal.

Around the throne no one moves—there is silence in heaven for about half an hour, I can see what is coming. Space-time seems to vibrate with a sense of pending doom. The two prophets of judgment have deliberately withheld rain for a number of years over portions of the earth, as they so willed. Isaiah had looked into the future and written, “the earth dries up and withers ... therefore earths inhabitants are burned up.”^{xviii} I look at Earth as it moves in its' orbit and can see where it is heading. From what I have just witnessed I am fearful for the citizens of the rebellious planet.

The seven angels who attend the throne of God come forward. Each is given a trumpet to sound. Jesus, as the Angel of Jehovah in his capacity as priest, advances to the golden altar. Taking a golden censer, He fills it with incense and the prayers of all saints and offers it on the golden altar. The smoke of the incense rises up before God. Then, I see Jesus take the censer, fill it with fire from the altar, and hurl it towards Earth. It spirals though to the dimension of space-time like a great

fiery ball, as it hits Earth there are celestial flashes of lightning, peals of thunder and an earthquake.

Several months pass on Earth after the great meteorite storm. The beast erects a statue of himself in the Jewish temple. All of Earth's citizens are commanded to worship the Dragon as god. The apostate religious system is purged with fire by the beast and his rulers. Humanistic delusions of godhood and the worshipping of other gods by various religious factions do not satisfy Satan's vanity to be a supreme being. Rule by the fist means worshipping Satan, or be disqualified from the economic system—and death. Powerful computers control the economic transactions of men and nations. Everyone is given a number; no worship—no oil—no food!

Humans have independent wills and start to rebel; questioning, “maybe these supernatural beings are not benevolent aliens from the galactic administration of the universe, maybe the Bible is right; we have been duped by a vain malevolent being.” Civilization is in chaos. Gangs run rampant ransacking, looting, killing and raping. “I want, me powerful, me a god” and the greatest self-centered generation the world has ever known relives the fantasies of the violent videos, movies and war games that have saturated their psyche since their youth—all this spurred on by demonic magic. Gone are the days of morality—evolution is in full sway, rule by might, power and sexual prowess. Cold glazed-eye demon possessed people murder and torture with abandonment. The spirits within them laugh with spine chilling howls as they feast on the emotional rages of the human body.

Yet, in all this, God is gracious. Many God fearing people are able to evade the beasts system and help each other. How they treat the Jews, and the 144,000 revival preachers, fleeing the diabolic beast will be a record of works to their credit. The devastating meteorites,

earthquakes and war dismantle the web of technology. Communication and spy satellites that did not explode under meteorite impact are fried by hot plasma sun storms. In many areas of the world, there is no economic control, never mind anything to eat. The controlling computer number of the beast is mostly effective in the beast's kingdom. Astronomers are horrified at what they now see in the heavens. The disintegrating dark dust cloud reveals an even more destructive menace.

I look towards the projection of Earth's orbit. The first angel sounds his trumpet and a second wave of meteorites, which must have been electrostatically charged, pelt Earth. Massive electrical discharges strike all over Earth—setting one third of it on fire. The tinder dry forests and grasslands of the world explode into towering fiery vortexes that reach the upper atmosphere and blacken the skies with ash and soot. Earth is pounded with hail, blood red ash and mud, but what the astronomers have detected is a large asteroid, the father of the meteorites and behind him is the mother of them all, a blazing comet; both are on an Earth intercept trajectory.

The second angel trumpets and the asteroid, creating brilliant fire and a thunderous roar, torpedoes into one of Earth's oceans. A deadly shockwave roars through the atmosphere. Skyscraper high tsunamis race in all directions destroying one third of all the ships on the high seas. The once beautiful green water swirls with red blood as one third of all sea creatures die.

The third angel sounds and the monstrous comet hits the atmosphere like a blazing torch. Blocks of poisonous ice fall and dissipate into the sky as rain. One third of all the fresh water is affected. It turns bitter and many people die.

As the fourth angel issues a loud trumpet blast, light from one third of the heavens is blotted out by the polluted atmosphere due to volcanic ash, smoke and interspatial dust.

Evolutionists have postulated that organic molecules from meteorites may have seeded life on Earth. The problem is that “most of the carbon is tied up in kerogen, a material composed partly of polycyclic aromatic hydrocarbons, and compounds perhaps best known as carcinogenic pollutants on Earth.... Polycyclic aromatic hydrocarbons are the most abundant class of carbon-bearing compounds in the universe, trapping as much as 20 percent of the total galactic carbon in their molecular lattices.”^{xix} One can only conclude that there is a blind leap of faith by evolutionists—that death can give life. All recent comets have carried these aromatic carcinogenic hydrocarbons. This one described by John must be particularly potent. It may possibly contain cyanide, a compound of carbon and nitrogen. It is almost ironic that mankind, in their desire to eliminate God, have sought life in natural organic compounds from outer space—it is as if God is saying, “fine if that is what you believe, have a taste.”

Some commentators have interpreted these scenes to be evidence of thermonuclear war. This may be partly so, however, our solar system is rotating in our galaxy and is passing through new space every minute. Since God says that he holds the times and seasons in His hands, it is more likely that God has created an appointment with interstellar destiny.

The results from the next two trumpet blasts, the fifth and the sixth, have been interpreted by many as technological warfare between human armies. The fifth trumpet brings eerie locusts onto Earth. The sixth involves an army of 200 million unknown beings. The army of two hundred million is thought by some commentators to be the army of China. Again, this may be so, however, one point that is continually downplayed is that this is a cosmic war against evil angels and wicked humans, one whereby a huge alien army amounting to possibly one trillion or more spiritual despots are cast to Earth for judgment. Mankind has wanted to worship gods and cavort with them—God gives them their wish.

I can't help staring at Earth, which now reflects the sunlight as blood red. As it rotates it looks like a swirling ball of blood floating in space. Then I hear the swish of powerful wings. Startled, I look up and midway it seems, between here and there, an immense eagle has taken wing in the dimension of heaven. He calls with a loud voice; "Woe! Woe! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the trumpet blasts about to be sounded by the other three angels!" It is then that the fifth angel sounds his trumpet and immediately a powerful angel rockets, like a blazing streak of fire, through the photon barrier to Earth. In his hand is a large key, which he places into the side of a mountain. The top springs open revealing the shaft to the Abyss. To you 21st century readers the angel has a key that opens an interdimensional wormhole. It leads to a prison containing evil beings.

Smoke darkens the sky as it pours from the dark hole like smoke from a huge coal furnace. No, this is not a volcano—the smoke is likely dark dimensional transition cloud. Living beings follow the smoke out of the Abyss. In the lead is their

evil angel king, Apollyon, which means Destroyer. They look like flying locusts with human faces fanged with lion's teeth. Long hair streams out from under what appear to be crowns of gold. Their breastplates look like iron while their tails curve up behind them like that of a scorpion. As the aliens attack, the sound of their wings is like the thunder of many chariots going into battle.

Their one delight is to torment people without the seals of God on their foreheads. Using their tails they sting like a scorpion. People writhe in pain wishing to die, but death eludes them. This torment lasts for five months until the end of the Great War when they are thrown back into the Abyss. I think to myself, the ancient history of the first rebellion must have been horrendous, these creatures show no compassion even after being confined in the Abyss for eons of time. Their wills are crystallized. Be warned, oh men of Earth, the freedom to choose exists in life—your destiny is fixed at death—you have become what you will be, a saint or a despot. Purgatory is a religious illusion.

The sixth angel raises his trumpet and blows. I hear a command given to release the four angels who have been bound at the Euphrates River since the days of the deluge. Now they are released to lead an army of rebellious angelic host that have just been cast to Earth by Michaels' army. I am told that the mounted troops number 200 million. To me they look like horses with heads like lions wearing fiery red, dark blue and yellow breastplates. Their tails have heads like snakes. Somehow, people are killed by the fire, smoke and sulfur that come out of the heads and tails. A third of mankind is killed by these three plagues.

Modern Sci-Fi wants star gates, wormholes and weird looking ET's, now God allows aliens to invade through a dimensional wormhole. It is easy to see why, in modern terms, the locusts could be Apache attack helicopters and the 200 million troops are armored tanks from China. However, the locusts sting everyone in the world that is not sealed by God, while China can field an army of 200 million men, but not likely 200 million tanks. Moreover, this is God's picture given to John. God sees things differently than men. Daniel had the same problem when he looked at the beasts in his visions. The Roman Empire was pictured as a beast with great iron teeth that crushed and devoured its victims; yet, it's army, seen by men, contained handsome well-clad colorful young soldiers.

There are several reasons why this army belongs to the Legions of Doom. Satan wants to be worshipped as god, but more than that, he wants mankind killed however they can be destroyed. They kill one third of the human population! In October of 1999, the world reached six billion people.^{xx} One third of this is two billion people. All the people in China, India, Pakistan and the areas in between to Turkey, amount to some 2.5 billion people. Thus, most of these people would have to be killed including all the citizens of China, which is almost one half of the total. A Chinese army is not likely to kill all of its citizens. Thus, it is more likely that the Legions of Doom fan out over the world torturing and murdering at will. Devastation and destruction to this point may have already killed one half of the world's population, yet, the Bible records that in all of this, people "*did not stop worshiping demons, and idols of gold, silver, bronze, stone and wood—idols that cannot see or hear or walk. Nor did they repent of their murders, their magic arts, their sexual immorality or their thefts.*"^{xxi}

In one of the most powerful enactments of future history, John in a hyperspatial move, stands somewhere on Earth. He is about to witness a mighty angel make the Lamb's claim to

planet Earth official. The final conditions written in the scroll for redemption of Earth will soon be completed.

From my new position on Earth by the Big Sea, I look skyward and see a dimensional transition cloud forming. A mighty angel steps through from Heaven. White cloud swirls around him, a rainbow shines above his head. His face is as bright as the sun and his legs are like fiery pillars. He is holding a little scroll, which lays open in his hand. He quickly strides to the seashore, plants his left foot on the land and his right foot on the sea and raises his voice in a mighty roar like that of a lion. Then the voices of seven thunders speak, but I am told not to write what they said. Raising his right hand to Heaven the magnificent angel “swore by him who lives for ever and ever, who created the heavens and all that is in them, the earth and all that is in it, and the sea and all that is in it, and said, ‘There will be no more delay! But in the days when the seventh angel is about to sound his trumpet, the mystery of God will be accomplished, just as he announced to his servants the prophets.’”^{xxii}

I am told by Jesus to go and take the little scroll out of the hand of the angel and eat it because I must prophesy again about many peoples, nations, languages and kings. Now that might sound silly to you moderns, but this is highly significant. Eating it means that I am to absorb the information and be sure that its contents are written for the future. The original redemption scroll is now a “little scroll” as most of the acts of redemption have been completed. All that is left is the sounding of the seventh trumpet and all it portrays. Upon completion of the events of the seventh

trumpet, Jesus Christ will officially return to planet Earth as King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

Time is running out for Satan and his Legions of Doom. Humans have wills of their own. The prophet Daniel was informed by the Archangel Gabriel that Egypt in the distant future would lead an armed force out of Africa to attack the world ruler in Israel, followed by the remnant armies from the countries from all the nations around the Black and Caspian Seas. The dictator sets up a huge battle complex as his headquarters on the plains of Megiddo in Israel. He quickly over runs Egypt and the North African countries taking all their gold, silver and riches. He becomes concerned at the strength of the northern army. His military command center is alerted to a vast army moving out of the Eastern countries headed by the remnants of China, Pakistan, India and Japan.

Immediately that the mighty angel departs, I see three angels flying in midair one after the other around Earth shouting in loud voices to every nation, tribe, language and people. The lead angel shouts "Fear God and give him glory, because the hour of his judgment has come. Worship him who made the heavens, the earth, the sea and the springs of water." The second angel cries out "Fallen! Fallen is Babylon the Great, which made all the nations drink the maddening wine of her adulteries."

The trailing angel pronounces loudly, "If anyone worships the beast and his image and receives his mark on the forehead or on the hand, he, too, will drink of the wine of God's fury, which has been poured full strength into the cup of his wrath. He

will be tormented with burning sulfur in the presence of the holy angels and of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment rises for ever and ever. There is no rest day or night for those who worship the beast and his image, or for anyone who receives the mark of his name.^{xxxiii} It is apparent that it will take patient endurance on the part of the saints who obey God's commandments and remain faithful to Jesus. They will be blessed upon death and their deeds will be recounted in heaven.

As the last angel passes overhead, I instantly find myself back in Heaven by the throne and God's magnificent temple. The instructions given to Moses were to duplicate on Earth the pattern and layout of the holy temple in Heaven.^{xxiv} The seventh angel who attends God's throne sounds a tremendous blast. The excitement is overwhelming as voices call out: "The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever." Immediately the twenty-four elders fall down on their faces and worship God, saying:

We give thanks to you, Lord God Almighty, the One who is and who was, because you have taken your great power and have begun to reign. The nations were angry; and your wrath has come. The time has come for judging the dead, and for rewarding your servants the prophets and your saints and those who reverence your name, both small and great—and for destroying those who destroy the earth.^{xxv}

Then as God's temple opens, I can see the ark of His covenant sitting in its place. I look over at Earth. The effect is immediate—as the temple opens there are flashes of lightning, rumblings, peals of thunder, a great hailstorm and an earthquake. Then, next to the temple, an interdimensional shimmering of flickering

mirages begins to form. It is like a sea of glass that seems to dance with flames of fire. Standing by the sea are people from all nations. It is made known to me that they have been victorious over the beast and his image and over the number of his name. They are holding harps and singing an incredible song of victory that only a martyr could sing. All of heaven listens,

Great and marvelous are your deeds, Lord God Almighty. Just and true are your ways, King of the ages. Who will not fear you, O Lord, and bring glory to your name? For you alone are holy. All nations will come and worship before you, for your righteous acts have been revealed.^{xxvi}

Then seven angels dressed in clean shining linen, wearing golden sashes around their chests, come out of the temple from the area of the tabernacle of Testimony. Then, one of the four living creatures gives each of them a large bowl filled with the wrath of God. I am told that these are the seven last plagues, for then the wrath of God will be completed and Jesus will have full legal title to planet Earth. Smoke fills the temple from the glory of God. No one can enter the temple until the seven plagues are poured onto Earth.

It is hard to explain; the angels seem to walk over to a hyperdimensional opening and pour their bowls into space. The effect on the solar system is immediate, as the first angel pours his bowl out on the land everyone with the mark of the beast breaks out with painful sores. When the second angel pours, the already stricken oceans turn into blood and every living thing dies—followed by all the fresh water springs and rivers when the third angel pours. As he pours, he says something to the

effect “You are just and true Holy One, they shed the blood of your saints and prophets now you give them blood to drink as they deserve.”

The fourth angel reaches over and pours his bowl on the Sun. Huge spiral vortexes shoot out causing corona flares and jets of solar wind that assail Earth. People are seared by the intense heat and curse God. As the fifth angel pours his bowl over the beast’s kingdom, it is plunged into a dense darkness. Men curse God and gnaw their tongues in agony because of their painful sores. But they refuse to repent.

As the sixth angel pours his bowl over the Euphrates River to dry it up, three evil spirits that look like frogs come out of the mouths of the dragon, the beast and the false prophet. The frogs represent hordes of demons. They go around the world, performing miraculous signs, to gather the armies of the nations of the world to the last great battle of Armageddon, on the great day of God Almighty, against King Jesus. The seventh angel pauses, allowing time for the world’s armies to gather on the plains of Megiddo. I remember that the prophet Joel saw this scene in a vision centuries ago and recorded: “Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision! For the day of the LORD is near in the valley of decision. The sun and moon will be darkened, and the stars no longer shine. The LORD will roar from Zion and thunder from Jerusalem; the earth and the sky will tremble. But the LORD will be a refuge for his people, a stronghold for the people of Israel.”^{xxvii}

Still the seventh angel waits. The fighting is intense. Jerusalem is like a rock against the army of millions of men coming in from the south, from the east, from the

north and by ships to the west. Two-thirds of the Israelites remaining in the land are killed and one half the city taken with savage slaughter and rape.^{xxviii}

It is then that I see a massive glowing transition cloud form over Israel between the dimension of Heaven and Earth. It seems to stretch from horizon to horizon. One, with a gold crown on His head and a sharp sickle in His hand, “like the Son of man” mentioned by Daniel the prophet, is seated on the cloud. Then as another angel comes with a sickle, glittering in the sunlight, the angel who is in charge of the fire from the altar calls out, “Take your sharp sickle and gather the clusters of grapes from the earth’s vine, because its grapes are ripe.” “On that day men will be stricken by the LORD with great panic. Each man will seize the hand of another, and they will attack each other.”^{xxix}

*Then as the seventh angel pours a loud voice calls out of the temple from the throne saying, “IT IS DONE!” Through the cloud, a gigantic breach opens up from Heaven as colossal flashes of lightning envelope Earth from the leading point of the breach. Deep rumblings, violent thunder and atmospheric compression-decompression waves torture the atmosphere. Huge hailstones of about 100 pounds each pound Earth. Simultaneously an earthquake, the likes of which has never before occurred or will ever occur again, strikes Earth—*islands and mountains disappear—oceans slosh like dirty water in a washbasin over continental lowlands.**

A major fault ruptures through to the hydrocarbons under Babylon in Iraq. Oil and natural gas fireball explosions reach the upper stratosphere as the evil city is devoured in brilliant flames and intense heat. A deep-seated thrust rift through Jordan, parallel to the Dead Sea Valley, also ruptures tapping the oil and natural

gas reservoirs underlying Saudi Arabia. “Edom’s (Jordan) streams will be turned into pitch, her dust into burning sulfur; her land will become blazing pitch! It will not be quenched night and day; its smoke will rise for ever.”^{xxx}

*The armies surrounding Jerusalem vehemently curse God as they try to hide from the super hail. What I can see, but they can’t, because of the temporary dense dimensional transition cloud, is the heavenly highway rapidly extending like a wide ribbon, as if a road comes at a gentle angle from nowhere out of the sky onto **the land**. It stops at the Mount of Olives, in Israel, beside the city of Jerusalem.*

Then Earth starts to tremble with the beat of untold millions of horse hooves. The sound of shouting and neighing dwarfs the thunder of artillery and the screaming of the terrified and dying. Suddenly, the clouds are gone. The interdimensional connection is complete.

I—John, “saw heaven standing open and there before me was a white horse, whose rider is called Faithful and True. With justice, he judges and makes war His eyes are like blazing fire, and on his head are many crowns. He has a name written on him that no one knows but he himself. He is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and his name is the Word of God. The armies of heaven were following him, riding on white horses and dressed in fine linen, white and clean. Out of his mouth comes a sharp sword with which to strike down the nations. “He will rule them with an iron scepter.” He treads the winepress of the fury of the wrath of God Almighty. On his robe and on his thigh he has this name written: KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.”^{xxxvi} His galloping magnificent white steed draws to a halt on the Mount of Olives.

*The King has returned from a far country, He will now judge those who did not want Him to be king. The mighty celestial steed gently bows. The king steps onto Earth. As His feet touch **the land**, the Mount of Olives splits in two, forming a great valley. The citizens of Jerusalem flee down the valley. Then I see standing with Him on Mount Zion the 144,000 who had been sealed by God. They sing a new song of triumph for they were purchased from among men and offered as first fruits to God and the Lamb (see special note).^{xxxvi}*

As artillery from the beast's army fires uselessly at the quantum breach, the King of Kings speaks. It is like a

The Bride's Song

The new song that the 144,000 sing is possibly the song of the Bride of Christ, as they are said to be "first fruits." While harpists play, they sing before the throne, the living creatures and the Elders; therefore they may also be like the Elders, "a kingdom and priests."^{xxxii} This suggests that they are redeemed by Jesus into His Bride. Those of the Bride are "first fruits"^{xxxiii} "a royal priesthood"^{xxxiv} compared to those coming out of the tribulation who "are before the throne of God and serve Him day and night in His temple."^{xxxv}

sword flashes from His mouth—immediately, starting at Jerusalem, an invisible wave sweeps over the armies of the rebellious nations—it travels like a ripple in all directions—all flesh of men and animals instantly rots, and turns to mushy blood. A river of blood flows for three hundred kilometers (186 miles) along the Jordan Valley, from about Beersheba to the south to Damascus in the north. In some places, the mushy debris laden blood is over 1.5 meters (5 feet) deep. Isaiah prophesied,

“Their dead bodies will send up a stench; the mountains will be soaked with their blood.”^{xxxvii} Billions of scavenger birds descend to feast on the carnage.

Now, all I can hear is a great multitude, in Heaven and on the quantum breach road, shouting Hallelujah like a thunderous roar. All powers, authorities, peoples in Heaven, and peoples on Earth know that the cosmic war is over—Earth has been redeemed and liberated. Once again, it is the dominion of man, with Jesus, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, as Supreme Regent. The twenty-four elders and the living creatures are on their knees worshipping God seated on His throne. The myriads and myriads of men and angels in Heaven and those pouring down the Heavenly road keep shouting “Amen,” “Hallelujah” as they watch Babylon burn. The smoke from her would go up for ever and ever as a reminder of mankind’s rebellion. The Legions of Doom and their cohorts of rebellious mankind are completely routed.

Then I hear what sounds like a great multitude, like the roar of rushing waters and like loud peals of thunder, shouting: “Hallelujah! For our Lord God Almighty reigns. Let us rejoice and be glad and give him glory! For the wedding of the Lamb has come, and his bride has made herself ready. Fine linen, bright and clean, was given her to wear.” (Fine linen stands for the righteous acts of the saints).^{xxviii}

In a burst of emotion the angel standing beside me shouts, “Write: ‘Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb!’” and adds, “These are the true words of God.” I am so over-whelmed, so exhausted from the emotional turmoil and jubilation at the great victory that I fall down to worship him. “Do not

do it!” he exclaims, “I am a fellow servant with you and with your brothers who hold to the testimony of Jesus. Worship God! For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.”^{xxxix} I often wondered, during my last days on Earth, about the angel’s life history, was he an angel, or a redeemed modern man? I will meet him again in the future, at the great banquet, and hear his story.

Next, let me tell you about the Great Consequence of the war of the cosmos.

Notes:

ⁱ Graham Billy, *Approaching Hoofbeats*, Avon Books 1985, pg. 13

ⁱⁱ Galatians 6:7-8

ⁱⁱⁱ Graham, *Ibid*, pg. 85

^{iv} Graham, *Ibid*, pg. 87

^v Isaiah 24:21

^{vi} Revelation 6:14-17

^{vii} John 14:2-3

^{viii} Revelation 3:10-11

^{ix} Revelation 3:11

^x 1 Thessalonians 5:1-5

^{xi} Ice Thomas & Randall Price, *Ready To Build*, Harvest House Publishers, 1992 pg. 160

^{xii} Daniel 9:27

^{xiii} Revelation 11:2

^{xiv} Revelation 7:9-12

^{xv} Revelation 6:16

^{xvi} Revelation 12:12

^{xvii} Isaiah 24:18-20, Revelation 6:12-17

^{xviii} Isaiah 24:1 & 6

^{xix} *Scientific American*, July 1999, “Life’s Far-Flung Raw Materials,” pg. 42-49

^{xx} *TIME* Canadian Edition, October 18, 1999

^{xxi} Revelation 9:21,21

^{xxii} Revelation 10:6,7

^{xxiii} Revelation 14:7-11

^{xxiv} Hebrews 8:5

^{xxv} Revelation 11:17-18

^{xxvi} Revelation 15:3-4

^{xxvii} Joel 3:14-16

^{xxviii} Zechariah chapters 12-14

^{xxix} Zechariah 14:13

^{xxx} Isaiah 34:9

^{xxxi} Revelation 19:11-16

^{xxxii} Revelation 5:9

^{xxxiii} 1 Corinthians 15:23

^{xxxiv} 1 Peter 2:9

^{xxxv} Revelation 7:15

^{xxxvi} *Revelation 14:1-5 Note: There is much scholarly discussion as to who the 144,000 are, and whether or not Mount Zion is the Heavenly or Earthly one. In Revelation chapter 7:3, 144,000 Jews were sealed—12,000 from each tribe. To be sealed means to be protected through the tribulation. To be virgins is thought by many to mean spiritually pure as is the Church, 2 Corinthians 11:2.

Dr Walooovrd, *The Revelation of Jesus Christ*, Moody Press 1966, pg. 213, writes “Chapter 14 consists of a series of pronouncements and visions assuring the reader of the ultimate triumph of Christ and the judgment of the wicked. Much of the chapter is prophetic of events that have not yet taken place, but which are now impending. The chapter begins with the assurance that the Lamb will ultimately stand in triumph on Mount Zion with his followers, and it concludes with a series of pronouncements of judgment upon the wicked.”

J.A Seiss, *The Apocalypse*, 1900 reprinted 1973 Zondervan Publishing House, pg. 358, writes “They stand with the Lamb on Mount Zion. To be *with the Lamb*, as over against being with the Beast, is a perfection of blessing which no language can describe. It is redemption. It is victory. It is eternal security and glory. To be with the Lamb *on Mount Zion* is a more special position and relation. It respects Jerusalem and the throne of David. It will not meet the case to take Mount Zion here as simply “the heavenly Jerusalem;” [Hebrews 12:22] for that is not so distinctively the standing-place or point of occupation of these 144,000. It must take in some new and exalted order touching the earthly Jerusalem, the Jewish nationality, and that throne and Kingdom of David everywhere promised to be rebuilt and restored never to fail any more. The scene thus looks over into the new earth, to that time when ‘*the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads, and shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away,*’ Is. 35:10.”

Nevertheless, whatever the viewpoint, the 144,000 are specially ransomed unto Christ, “*redeemed from the earth,*” and “*They follow the Lamb wherever He goes,*” Revelation 14:3-4. Thus, they appear with Jesus Christ, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, in triumph over the Beast and his armies.

^{xxxvii} Isaiah 34:3

^{xxxviii} Revelation 19:6-8

^{xxxix} Revelation 19:10

Chapter 32

The Great Consequence

Suddenly, in an instant, the LORD almighty will come with thunder and earthquake and great noise, with windstorm and tempest and flames of a devouring fire. Then the hordes of all the nations that fight against Ariel, that attack her and her fortress and besiege her, will be as it is with a dream, with a vision in the night—as when a hungry man dreams that he is eating, but he awakens, and his hunger remains; as when a thirsty man dreams that he is drinking, but he awakens faint, with his thirst unquenched. So will it be with the hordes of all the nations that fight against Mount Zion.ⁱ

I—John—slowly get my strength back. As I stand beside my mysterious angel friend, I can see the amazing quantum gap road reaching into the heavenlies. Looking at Israel, I can see the bloody carnage and mounds of bent and twisted weapons of war, the likes of which I have never seen. The beast and the false prophet are captured alive. Then as the King points towards the horizon over the Mediterranean Sea, a massive fiery red hole opens up like a door. It is the wormhole leading to the eternal Lake of Fire. Prepared in ancient times by God for the devil and his demons, it has never been occupied. Two of God's angels, with the white linen robes and the golden

sashes, seize the beast and the false prophet and throw them alive into the swirling flaming vortex. They are the first two beings to encounter the eternal Lake of Fire, known as Hell. Torments and the Abyss are only retention centers; their gates are yet to open.

In our space-time world of the 21st century, you may think that nothing like this will happen. Yet, consider how, in the blink of an eye, the New York 9/11 catastrophe dramatically changed the superficial stability of the world. There are the religious-political uncertainties of the Middle East, of India and Pakistan, of North and South Korea, of the Philippines and Indonesia, of the disintegrating Russian confederation, of rebel turmoil in Africa and many other less noted simmering conflicts. At the same time, subtle changes are taking place, a personal identification number by computer chip, only debit or credit card transactions, an increase towards world government, a world council of churches, an increase in government control in the name of freedom, the wanton violence of terrorism, the increase of amorality, drugs, plagues, mysterious diseases, and environmental pollution. Moreover, pure time-plus-chance evolution is being challenged by the belief in alien aided evolution, ID creators, and an increasing fascination with the paranormal and occult worship. Maybe, by the time this book is in circulation the Nephilim will have already appeared. What then is their agenda; a self-serving utopia with mankind as their minions?

No greater cosmic purpose could exist than that of God. It is one that leads to the rule of the King of Kings, the abolition of death and the curse upon Earth, to eternal life, an ever-expanding civilization of mankind, creativity in the cosmos, and interdimensional rule for the Celestial citizens of the resurrection. A 1000-year era of peace will begin under the rule of the

King of Kings at the conclusion of the battle of Armageddon, and then will come the Ages of Ages. God is creating a people of all ranks and authorities who will worship Him, and enjoy His Eternal Fellowship of Love. What lies before us, no man can possibly comprehend. Yet, here and now, there is a choice to be made—and maybe a price to pay; the war of the cosmos is still underway.

Israel Recognizes Their Messiah

A mighty angel advances down the quantum break road to the battlefield with a key and a great chain, “He seized the Dragon, that ancient serpent, who is the devil, or Satan, and bound him for a thousand years. He threw him into the Abyss, which was then locked and sealed to keep him from deceiving the nations anymore until the thousand years are ended. After that, he must be set free for a short time.”ⁱⁱ

The gateway to the Abyss, or Torments, forms like a dark ominous circular cloud over the Mediterranean Sea. In its center is a swirling oily black vortex like the column of a great tornado. It opens its mouth and all the Legions of Doom, the Locusts, the 200 million mounted troops and the wraiths of the rebellious armies of the nations spiral screaming, into its evil smelly smoky vortex to await judgment.

It is then that the most amazing event occurs between God and His beloved nation Israel, as prophesied by the prophet Zechariah. “And I will pour out on the house of David and the inhabitants of Jerusalem a spirit of grace and supplication. They will look on me, the one they have pierced, and they will mourn for him as one mourns for an only child, and grieve bitterly for him as one grieves for a firstborn son. On

that day the weeping in Jerusalem will be great, like the weeping of Hadad Rimmon in the plain of Megiddo. ⁱⁱⁱ

Then came true that which was foretold by Isaiah the prophet, “No longer will they call you Deserted, or name your land Desolate. But you will be called Hephzibah, and your land Beulah; for the LORD will take delight in you, and your land will be married. As a young man marries a maiden, so will your sons marry you; as a bridegroom rejoices over his bride, so will your God rejoice over you.” ^{iv}

Next, the administration of the war torn planet gets underway. I see thrones set up for those who are given authority to judge. Then, the citizens of Earth are astounded as those martyred and beheaded by the beast are resurrected—they will rule with Jesus on Earth for 1000 years. Those who survived the great holocaust weep with great joy and wonderment as they hug friends, whom they thought they would never see again.

Judgment of the Nations

It is time for the King of Kings to complete one last judgment of the nations. Heavenly glory and the Kingdom of God extends throughout Earth. Powerful angels bring people from all nations before King Jesus for the harvest of the wheat and weeds. People who worshipped the beast and his image are immediately thrown alive into the black hole of torments. Amazingly there were many outlying people groups and individuals that the evil ruler was not able to control with his spiritual and economic systems. Ironically, it was the powerful, the technological elite and the affluent that eagerly sought the grandeur of the great delusion, and the mark of the

beast. Many other people used whatever selfish means they could to stay alive and avoid the dictator's kingdom, selfishly helping no one. The angels place these people on the Kings left.

It was the remote national groups, where the missionary efforts and the Jesus film had been most effective, that resisted the spiritual mysticism of demon possession. One can imagine these people secretly studying the Bible, reading books on prophecy, replaying prophetic teaching tapes and videos as the chaos of the cosmic war spreads around them. Their simplicity of life and sometimes meager possessions did not blind them to their spiritual need. These people accepted the warnings of the 144,000 preachers as they spread throughout the world. It is these individuals or groups that hide the Jewish people from the diabolic beast, at risk of their lives. Many, of course are betrayed, and killed. These survivors find themselves standing on the king's right.

The King says to those on His right; *“Come, you who are blessed by my Father; take your inheritance, the kingdom prepared for you since the creation of the world. For I was hungry and you gave me something to eat, I was thirsty and you gave me something to drink, I was a stranger and you invited me in, I needed clothes and you clothed me, I was sick and you looked after me, I was in prison and you came to visit me.”* The surprised people ask, *“When did we do this?”* The King replies; *“I tell you the truth, whatever you did for one of these brothers of mine, you did for me.”* This record of sacrificial works is what separates the goat nations on the left from the sheep nations on the right. The King points—the vortex of the black hole opens up and swallows the people of the goat nations.^v In these events the Beatitudes, spoken by Jesus in His Sermon on the Mount, unfolds in history. The vain, the powerful, those possessed by their material goods are swept into torments. It is the gentle, the kind, and the unselfish that sought to

follow a code of Godly righteousness who enter the golden kingdom. Thus, the first shall be last and the last shall be first, and the meek shall inherit the earth.

The Millennium

The question becomes—how many people are left on Earth to enter the 1000-year kingdom, with Israel as head of nations? There is no way of knowing, but would the ratio of the living to the dead be any less for the Gentile nations than for Israel? If it is the same, then only one third of all the gentile population survives. This would leave approximately 1.5 to 2 billion people. For comparison, the world's population was close to 1.5 billion at the beginning of the twentieth century. In 1927, it was around 2 billion. However, God told Isaiah that at this time of His wrath, humans would be as scarce as the gold of Ophir, so there may be even less.^{vi}

John is told that Satan is bound in iron chains for 1000 years. This period is referred to as the Millennium. Isaiah describes Satan's arrival into Torments. *"The grave below is all astir to meet you at your coming; it rouses the spirits of the departed to greet you—all those who were leaders in the world; it makes them rise from their thrones—all those who were kings over the nations. They will all respond, they will say to you, 'You also have become weak, as we are; you have become like us.'"*^{vii}

The Millennium period will be a time when human civilization operates without the malevolent influences of Satan, his Legions of Doom and the unclean (uncovered or body seeking) demons. It will be a time when the King of Kings will rule man's bent nature with a rod of iron. The Church, His Bride will assist in the administration of the Earthly and Heavenly realms. The release of Satan for a short time at the end of this period, will show that even under perfect rule and tremendous technological advances, man's innate nature will have to be reprogrammed. This last temptation will test the children born in this utopian environment,

whether they trust in the goodness of God or yield to their vain desires to be “as gods.” Fire from heaven will devour the rebellion. It is then that the cosmos enters the Ages of Ages (Eternity), when God creates a new Heaven and a new Earth.

The 1000-year period will be the golden years of mankind, a glorious utopia of health, happiness, achievements and a continuous revealing of the Glory of God. It will be a time when the veil between Heaven and Earth is very thin. Flesh and blood can’t inherit the kingdom of heaven, meaning the interdimensions of the citizens of Heaven. The physical realm will see exiting technological achievements in space exploration. Earth’s citizens will take for granted the appearance and disappearance of the Celestials, the resurrected transformed people of the administration of Heaven.

Nevertheless, what will this period of 1000 years be like? What events take place? God has not left us in doubt about this incredible era on planet Earth. He leaves us with no excuse to say; we did not know the outcome of the future. Daniel is told by the angel Gabriel, who stands at the throne of God, *“Multitudes who sleep in the dust of the earth will awake: some to everlasting life, others to shame and everlasting contempt. Those who are wise will shine like the brightness of the heavens, and those who lead many to righteousness, like the stars for ever and ever. But you, Daniel, close up and seal the words of the scroll until the time of the end. Many will go here and there to increase knowledge.”*^{viii} Man is fearfully and wonderfully made, He is created in the image of God. Of mankind God has already said, *“If as one people speaking the same language they have begun to do this, then nothing they plan to do will be impossible for them.”*^{ix} Mankind of the 21st century has the technical power to annihilate themselves. Though they understand good and evil, they haven’t the spiritual power to refute evil. If Adam and Eve, after their rebellion, had eaten of the tree of life, the human race would have been unredeemable

diabolic despots. However, God has a greater plan and now we see another chapter of it unfold in the Millennium.

God uses the words *new heavens* and *new earth* in two different ways in the Bible—Isaiah chapters 65, 66 and Revelation chapter 21. If we look at the way they are used with respect to God’s acts of creation, from Eternity past to Eternity future they show a remarkable divine cosmological plan. We live in the “later days” spoken of by Daniel, a time when we go to and fro, a time of unprecedented cosmological knowledge. Let’s review God’s creative acts and actions within those periods.

1) God created: The unknown of Eternity past. The angels and interdimensions of heaven were created, powers, authorities, and rulers of various estates, which implies material space-time dimensions as well as interdimensional beings. Lucifer sought the glory of God for himself in the great divergence of vanity, and the cosmic rebellion ensued.

2) God creates the heavens and the Earth, and the era of mankind commences. Adam and Eve join the rebellion—Satan becomes usurper ruler of Earth. The heavens and the Earth are cursed and death is decreed. The spirit body of man is separated from the Glory of God—man’s corporeal form is allowed to decay and die, which in turn separates the spirit body of man from his biological form, his tent of clay. The Dragon is given the power of death, subject to the Eternal will of the Almighty.^x An unknown number of fallen “sons of God” leave their homes and copulate with human women.

The Plan

The cosmological conflict to redeem mankind began with an ultimate Eternal purpose in Mind. The physical bodies of believers in Jesus Christ, as their redeemer, will be rejuvenated and then transformed at the resurrection into an immortal physical/spiritual body.

3) God now moves into a transition phase in the Millennium. He tells Isaiah, “*Behold I will create new heavens and a new earth.*” God explains to Isaiah, as well as to others of the prophets, that there will be a time of peace, prosperity and knowledge of God. It will be a golden age for mankind. God says I will create *new heavens* in the *plural*. It is the author’s belief that this has confused some commentators in the past, who have tried to make the Isaiah *new heavens* and *earth* the same as the *new heaven* and *earth* in Revelation chapter 21. The use of *heavens* plural, and then *heaven* is remarkable from our cosmological perspective, since we are becoming aware of the dynamic relationship between the interdimensions of Heaven and Earth. The interdimensional heavens, in the Millennium, have been purged of Satan and his fallen angels; thus the Isaiah *new heavens*, is the joyful freedom of no more war in the heavenlies. The Isaiah *new earth* is the suppression of the curse except for death, which is the last dark shroud enveloping mankind. All dimensions will be under the administration of the King of Kings with His Bride, the Church. The Revelation *new heaven and earth* is a complete cosmic regeneration, a new order of things.

4) Eternity future—the new heaven and Earth of Revelation, which we have yet to explore, come into being after Earth is purged with fire; then, death and the curse are no more. A vast city called the New Jerusalem, home of God, the Lamb and His Bride descends from heaven. God makes His dwelling with mankind. The word heaven is now singular possibly implying that all that is cosmological and hyperdimensional—that is all the latticework of dimensions, intersect at the superluminal focus of Eternity, which is the throne of the Triune God in the New Jerusalem. God, the Creator and sustainer of all that is, is still beyond knowing in that He is in all that there is, and yet beyond all that there is; in our cosmological sense—He is

Omnipresent, Omnipotent and Omniscient. We are the Bride of the Second Person of the Trinity, how much more awesome can the direction of the intelligence arrow be?

The Bride

John, while in heaven, hears a great celebration and is told that the wedding of the Lamb has come. This means it is a state of being that has already happened. Just as for us the 21st century has come—we are in it—it has already happened. In her translation to Heaven, the Church, His Bride was given linen, bright and clean to wear, which stands for the righteous acts of the saints. His accompanying angel says, “*Blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the Lamb!*” After this, John sees the Bride and the Lamb on white steeds galloping through the quantum gap, as the King of Kings comes back to save Israel, to judge the nations and to rule Earth. In this way, the kingdom of God takes visible possession of Earth.

Dr. John Walvoord relates the symbolism of a Jewish wedding to the wedding of the Church:

The marriage symbolism is beautifully fulfilled in the relationship of Christ to His church. The wedding contract is consummated at the time the church is redeemed. Every true Christian is joined to Christ in a legal marriage. When Christ comes for His church at the rapture, the second phase of the wedding is fulfilled, namely, the Bridegroom goes to receive His bride.

The third phase then follows, that is, the wedding feast. Here it is significant to note that the bride is already the wife of the Lamb, that is, the bridegroom has already come for His bride prior to His second coming described in 19:11-16. That which is here announced is not the wedding union but the

wedding feast. This has been variously interpreted as relating to the wonderful fellowship in heaven following the rapture or to the millennium itself. Of primary importance at this point, however, is the order of events.

The third phase of the wedding is about to take place, namely, the feast, which presumes the earlier rapture of the bride. The translation would be much improved in verse 7 if it would read, ‘for the marriage feast of the Lamb is come.’^{xi}

There will be no other wedding feast like it in the history of the universe. During His sojourn on Earth, Jesus told the Pharisees: *“There will be weeping there, and gnashing of teeth, when you see Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, but you yourselves thrown out. People will come from east and west and north and south, and will take their places at the feast in the kingdom of God. Indeed there are those who are last who will be first, and first who will be last.”*^{xii} It is at this feast, that Jesus will again taste the fruit of the vine as he had told his disciples at the last supper.

Great will be the celebration of victory. It will be a joyous wedding celebration prefigured by Psalm 45, the wedding psalm. The King is clothed with splendor and majesty He rides forth victoriously. *“Your throne, O God, will last for ever and ever; a scepter of justice will be the scepter of your kingdom.”* Your robes are *“fragrant with myrrh and aloes and cassia, ... the music of the strings makes you glad, ... and “daughters of kings are amongst your honored women.... At your right hand is the royal Bride in gold of Ophir ... her gown is embroidered and interwoven with gold”* and joyfully *“her virgin companions follow her.”* **It is time**; in that moment the King of Kings, as if a ripple of time opens up, remembers watching Abraham on Mt. Moriah. He sees again the vision of the beautiful Bride He would redeem from Earth. Now, the

great red dragon has been defeated and His Bride is with him—joy surges through the Triune Son as He looks at her gentle smiling face. Oh, how He loves her. She is His for Eternity.

Where is her home? The prophets and Saints, of the Old and New Testaments, have long recognized that God is preparing a great city in Heaven of which we will be citizens. John has a chance to view this stupendous city of almost unimaginable beauty and incomprehensible complexity. This city will remain in Heaven during the Millennium age. What does John see?

One of the angels, dressed in shining linen with the golden sash on his chest, says to me “Come, I will show you the bride, the wife of the Lamb.” I am instantaneously transported in Spirit to a great high mountain. There I see the Holy City, the New Jerusalem, coming down out of Heaven from God. “It shines with the glory of God, and its brilliance is like that of a very precious jewel, like a jasper, clear as crystal. It has a great, high wall with twelve gates, and with twelve angels at the gates. On the gates are written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel. There are three gates on the east, three on the north, three on the south and three on the west. The wall of the city has twelve foundations, and on them are the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.”^{xiii} When the angel measures the city, he determines that it is 12,000 stadia, (1,400-1,500 miles or approximately 2,200 kilometers) on each side like a square and it is as high as it is long and wide. The magnificent grandeur of this city is so overwhelming that I can hardly explain it to you.

“The wall is made of jasper, and the city of pure gold, as pure as glass. The foundations of the city walls are decorated with every kind of precious stone. The first foundation is jasper, the second sapphire, the third chalcedony, the fourth

emerald, the fifth sardonyx, the sixth carnelian, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth topaz, the tenth chrysoprase, the eleventh jacinth, and the twelfth amethyst. The twelve gates are twelve pearls, each gate made of a single pearl. The great street of the city is of pure gold, like transparent glass. ^{xiv} *I will tell you what the city is like inside when I see it actually come down out of Heaven in the “Ages of Ages.” But one thing I clearly understand, as illustrated by the design of the city, is that the foundation of all that God has planned for the “Ages of Ages” is built on the sacrificial act of His Son, a Lamb chosen without spot or blemish before the creation of the world. The Lamb’s twelve apostle’s names are written on the twelve foundations of the city. The gates are named after the twelve sons of Jacob and represent Israel as head of all nations. This administration is now ready to begin the 1000-year utopia of mankind.*

Topographic Adjustments in Israel

We are given specific prophesies by Zechariah, Ezekiel and John that tremendous topographical changes occur in Israel as a consequence of the series of unprecedented earthquakes. Parts of Iraq and Jordan are on fire from the oil and gas seepages caused by the crustal displacements that have taken place. The Jordan River, in Israel, follows a deep rift valley that leads southeast to the Gulf of Aqaba. Zechariah knew this valley as the valley of Arabah. It varies from 6 to 15 miles (10 to 25 kilometers) wide. The Dead Sea, in this valley, is some 1,200 feet (365 m) beneath sea level. When the feet of Jesus Christ touch the Mount of Olives, a cataclysmic earthquake occurs dramatically adjusting Israel’s topography.

Three major events take place as a result of this massive topographic rearrangement. Geophysically, this earthquake is the final pressure release from all the other earth movements that have preceded it around the world. The first major event, as the mountains and hills crumble, is the formation of an east-west rift valley as wide as Arabah.^{xv} It cuts the southern part of the city of Jerusalem and forms almost at right angles to the rift of Arabah. Second, the rift that underlays the valley of Arabah undergoes upward vertical movement of at least 1,500 feet (457 m), such that the Dead Sea will flow into the Gulf of Aqaba. This rift is likely associated with a number of new parallel valleys eastward into modern Jordan along which oil seepages occur. In addition, to the west, the land between Jerusalem and the Mediterranean Sea has to rise as both Zechariah and Ezekiel see a river flowing southward from a mountain north of Jerusalem. It is only speculation, but the rise in elevation may possibly add considerable additional land to Israel that was once under the Mediterranean Sea.

The ancient prophet Ezekiel was given a time forward vision of the future. In it, he sees a new temple on a high mountain north of Jerusalem. This temple is to be built by the Messiah. He writes: *“In visions of God he took me to the land of Israel and set me on a very high mountain, on whose south side were some buildings that looked like a city.”*^{xvi*} This vision of the “very high” mountain with buildings on the south side of it, gives a dimensional aspect of the tremendous uplift that takes place. Needless to say, this rise in elevation will change the weather patterns, likely bringing more rain and snow at higher elevations.

A study of the land allotments for the tribes of Israel, the Levites, the Priests and the city suggest that the new sanctuary is built some 15 miles north of the present day city of Jerusalem. Rebuilt Jerusalem is “the city” that is described by Ezekiel. Its’ walls are approximately 9 miles per side (4500 reeds not cubits).^{xvii} Each side has three gates. The gates are named after each of

the twelve tribes.^{xviii} Thus, the worship and headship of King Jesus is separate from the laborious administration of the Earth's governments as decreed by King Jesus.

The third major event is the fresh water river that Ezekiel sees flowing out of the side of the high mountain southward, for some 15 miles towards, and through the city of Jerusalem. There it divides and flows west to the Mediterranean and east to the Dead Sea. Topographically this suggests that an elevated new north-south rift valley, parallel to the Arabah rift

Reeds or Cubits?

Which is **more probable**, reeds or cubits for the size of the city walls? 4500 reeds is 9 miles, while in cubits it is only 1.6 miles. See details in endnote #17.

valley, forms some 15 miles west of the Arabah rift. This supports the concept of a topographic uplift between the Arabah rift and the Mediterranean Sea. It appears that the majority of the water flows eastward towards the Dead Sea. The angel who takes Ezekiel on this vision-tour measures the depth of the water flowing towards Jerusalem. At a distance of approximately 6 miles (9.5 kilometers) from the temple the water forms a wide river deep enough to swim in. Ezekiel was not about to try and swim across it.^{xix}

This river flows southward to Jerusalem, and then eastward and westward along the new east-west rift valley indicating that there is a natural elevation divide, again supporting the vertical uplift described by the prophets. The actual city of Jerusalem likely extends up this elevated river valley towards the sanctuary. The river, parks and roadways all lined with flowers and trees will be spectacular. Eastward, from Jerusalem, the river valley forms a junction with the valley of Arabah in the area of the Dead Sea creating a large fresh water lake, likely from 6 to 10 miles (10 - 16 Km) wide and possibly over 60 miles (100 km) long. Ezekiel tells us that it is swarming with all sorts of fish. Fruit trees, which bear fruit every month, line both sides of this

river. Their leaves are used for medicinal purposes. The curse is only suppressed; anyone who persists in sin will still die.

Otherwise, at the age of 100, one is still as youthful as a child.^{xx}

Ezekiel, the good environmentalist, notes that the marshes along the shore, likely of the Dead Sea, remain salty for the benefit of other aquatic life. The agricultural impact of this river along the Arabah rift valley will be immense.

The Millennial Temple

Jesus, the Messiah, will build the new temple over the source of fresh water, which symbolizes spiritual living water. It is the living water of the Holy Spirit that gives life through Jesus the Lamb. This principle will still be in effect. Descriptions of this temple given to Ezekiel indicate that it will

The River

One might question that such a large river could flow out of the side of a high mountain in these southern latitudes. This is not a supernatural river, but one that can be caused by natural forces under supernatural guidance. The earthquakes somehow connect large underground aquifers (porous rock through which water can flow) leading to the northern latitudes where there are high snow covered mountains. Moreover, the centrifugal force of the Earth's rotation will cause water to flow in these underground aquifers towards the equator. For example, water will fly off of a spinning top or ball at its equator. The surface of the Earth at the equator is traveling at 1000 miles (1600 Km) an hour while at the north and south poles it reduces to almost zero miles per hour. Earth has a radius of 4000 miles, which is sufficient for water to flow gently to the surface from deep interconnected aquifers. Centrifugal forces do not affect local lakes, streams or aquifers. It also is interesting that Israel has no oil in these subterranean rocks that would contaminate this river.

be 500 reeds (one mile)^{xxi} per side and will be situated some 15 miles north of present day Jerusalem, on the side of the high mountain. This places it just south of Mt. Gerizim where the Israelites were to proclaim the blessings of God after crossing the Jordan River from the desert, to a land flowing with milk and honey. Mt. Gerizim may very well be the northern peak of this high mountain. Readers with a Jewish or Christian background may recognize this profound prophetic significance. Crossing the Jordan River is symbolic of passing through death to a new life in heaven on the other side. In this way, the new temple signifies God's blessings to Earth after the curse and horrors of the cosmic war.

It is into **this temple** that Ezekiel describes the glory of God entering through the Eastern gate. It will be a celebration broadcast around the world as the King of Kings and Lord of Lords officially rides through the Eastern gate to take His place as Regent of planet Earth. Just as we celebrate Christmas and Easter, the feast days of Israel will be enhanced, joyful, and full of symbolism and meaning.^{xxii} Sacrifices will take place in the temple—not for the remission of sins, but for a remembrance of the meaning of the sacrificial act of the Son of God. They will be peace sacrifices as Jesus died once, for all who will accept His Eternal provision.^{xxiii} Children born under this administration will have a way to understand the impact of the war of the cosmos, and the freeing of planet Earth from the rule of the Prince of Darkness and his Legions of Doom. Family groups, in their pilgrimages to worship Jesus, will share these peace sacrifices. Oh, what a celebration of remembrance, joy, thanksgiving and worship those times will be at the new temple!

Our intellectual pursuit of the Bible is to see if a Divine Mind inspired it. The layout of the Messiah's temple in relation to women shows the hand of the Divine planner. John and Carl Laney write, "It is significant that the description of Messiah's Temple does not mention a court

of the women. In fact, the floor plan of Ezekiel's Temple leaves no room for such a facility. What happened to the court of the women? The answer is found in Galatians 3:27-28, where Paul writes, *'For all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free man, there is neither male nor female; for you are all one in Christ Jesus.'* Paul is emphasizing that in Christ believers become part of a spiritual unity that invalidates superficial human distinctions. Whether Jew or Greek, slave or free, male or female, all believers share in spiritual equality with the same access into the presence of God. If man had inspired the design of the temple, the temple would have had a court of women. Even today at the Western Wall in Jerusalem this ancient tradition is still evidenced by the barrier that separates men and women.^{»xxiv}

It is highly speculative, but there may be a special interdimensional gate that connects the quantum gap road with this temple and the heavenly New Jerusalem. Isaiah writes of a mysterious *Way* that only the redeemed can walk. *"And a highway will be there; it will be called the Way of Holiness.... It will be for those who walk in that Way; ... But only the redeemed will walk there, and the ransomed of the LORD will return. They will enter Zion with singing; everlasting joy will crown their heads. Gladness and joy will overtake them, and sorrow and sighing will flee away."*^{»xxv} The prophet Micah may have also prefigured the quantum gap road in his writings. He writes, *"One who breaks open the Way will go up before them; they will break through the gate and go out. Their king will pass through before them, the LORD at their head."*^{»xxvi} The opening of the quantum gap into the heavenlies with its transformational clouds will be the most spectacular sight on all of planet Earth. Isaiah informs us that it will be over the new temple. *"Then the LORD will create over all of Mount Zion and over those who assemble*

there a cloud of smoke by day and a glow of flaming fire by night; over all the glory will be a canopy.”^{xxvii}

The Rule of the Iron Scepter

The Royal Grant promised by God to Abraham will be divinely decreed. This will include a large section of Syria, Iraq and Jordan all the way across to the Euphrates River. It is very likely that the false prophet will kill many Moslems who refuse to worship the statue of the beast as the Qur’an forbids idol worship. Israel, the symbolic son of Shem, will be head of the Gentile-Japheth and Ham nations. King David will rule as regent under Christ. *“My servant David will be king over them—their prince forever.”*^{xxviii} Mortal priests and governors will serve under king David. This time of human paradise on Earth will be under the iron rule of Jesus Christ who will reign in love with justice and righteousness. Many prefigure this period as a time of glorious peace, and if it were—it should last forever, but it doesn’t, it ends in rebellion. Albert Israeli, a messianic Jewish believer, is of the opinion that this is a time of great evil.^{xxix} His point is that it is a time of God’s greatest revelation to mankind under the rule of the God-man Jesus Christ. The prophet Jeremiah records Gods words, *“they will all know me, from the least of them to the greatest.”*^{xxx} However, humanity still has their bent self-taking wills desiring to be “as gods.” Kings and rulers will conspire against this theocratic rule of justice complaining, *“Let us break their chains and throw off their fetters.”* God will laugh at them saying *“I have installed my King on Zion, my holy hill, ... [He] will rule them with an iron scepter [and] will dash them in pieces like pottery.”*^{xxxi} *“He will judge between many peoples and will settle disputes for strong nations far and wide.”*^{xxxii} God informs Israel *“If anyone does attack you, it will not be my doing; whoever attacks you will surrender to you.”*^{xxxiii}

Administrations of Heaven and Earth

It will be a time of agricultural abundance. Isaiah tells us that the Sun will shine seven times brighter and the Moon will shine like the Sun.^{xxxiv} This is either a joyous metaphor, or there are some physical planetary adjustments that Jesus has in mind. Possibly a thicker atmosphere and ozone layer to reduce ultraviolet radiation, along with more cloud cover in the tropics otherwise the planet will overheat. Greenland, the Arctic and Antarctica will be treed with vast grasslands. This would suggest a climate more like that of the age of the mammoths. In addition, with mosquitoes, blackflies, horseflies and deerflies that do not bite, the arctic fishing will be fantastic.

Isaiah illustrates some of the work of the Heavenly Bride. Her people will act as spiritual counselors since there will still be trouble and affliction amongst mortals. God tells him that, *“your teachers will be hidden no more; with your own eyes you will see them. Whether you turn to the right or to the left, your ears will hear a voice behind you, saying, “This is the way; walk in it.”*^{xxxv} Jerusalem will be the capital city of the world. This is what the LORD Almighty says: *“Many peoples and the inhabitants of many cities will yet come, and the inhabitants of one city will go to another and say, ‘Let us go at once to entreat the LORD and seek the LORD Almighty. I myself am going.’ And many peoples and powerful nations will come to Jerusalem to seek the LORD Almighty and to entreat him.... In those days ten men from all languages and nations will take firm hold of one Jew by the hem of his robe and say, ‘Let us go with you, because we have heard that God is with you.’”*^{xxxvi} The center of religious, economic, scientific and artistic disciplines will be the Middle East. God has encouraged the Arab Nations; they will be one-third with Israel in a Messianic league. They will realize that the Word has become flesh and dwelt amongst us. *“In that day there will be a highway from Egypt to Assyria. The Assyrians will go to*

Egypt and the Egyptians to Assyria. The Egyptians and Assyrians will worship together. In that day Israel will be the third, along with Egypt and Assyria, a blessing on the earth. The LORD Almighty will bless them, saying, "Blessed be Egypt my people, Assyria my handiwork, and Israel my inheritance."^{xxxvii} And thus, Israel will be—the “head of nations.”

The dynamics of this period will be phenomenal for those who accept Jesus as Lord of their lives in this age, now, before the great paradigm shift. They will be of the resurrection with physical/spiritual bodies such as Jesus exhibited at His resurrection. Because of the curse, the genetic combinations of our earthly bodies have been plagued with destructive mutations down through the centuries. God knows the master blueprint of your DNA, what you should have been like. In a twinkling of an eye, you will be reformed with a spiritual/physical substance that will be perfect with no physical needs, a pure being filled with self-giving love and energy, physically beautiful or handsome; able in a split second to stand on the Moon or Mars if you so desire. George Otis writes on some of these ideas in his book *Millennium Man*.

Yes, the Millennium rebuilding will be accomplished, both through supernatural acts and by human endeavor. We can look forward to thrilling months, witnessing changes in this exquisite planet, while it is being restored to its Edenic perfection. Millennium citizenry will include all of the saints, plus the millions of unsaved people still alive at the conclusion of the Armageddon. The entire society will be directed from Jerusalem, the world's capitol, and headed by Jesus, King of the earth. He will delegate authority and power to the saints who will reign over designated areas under Him. “And he said unto him, Well done, thou good servant; because thou has been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities” Luke 19.

Millennium won't be a classless society, but one with well-defined orders allowing a high order of efficiency under our Lord's direction. Are you exhausted already; just thinking about your assignments during the Millennium? Never, never will it be tiring, but instead it will be a stimulating time with the vitality of immortality pulsing in every cell. Our knowledge, wisdom and ability will have been instantly expanded at the moment of our translation. We will have "the mind of Christ." Never again to experience mental sluggishness nor forgetfulness the dynamic of resurrection power ours at last. Complex problems will then become very simple. Assignments will then be easy for us. The joyful sound of progress will grace the Millennium years. What a day.^{xxxviii}

We will know our family, friends and even people we have never met. "*Now we see but a poor reflection as in a mirror; then we shall see face to face. Now I know in part; then I shall know fully, even as I am fully known.*"^{xxxix} Will we be married in heaven is a usual question. The answer is; likely if you were soul mates on earth "became one flesh" then how much more dynamic will your relationship be in heaven. It will be made perfect. Until death do us part is a human insertion allowing for an earthy relationship after the death of a loved one. God did not plan death. He allowed the possible eventuality of it in his plans. Eve, typical of all women was created by God, before the flawed age of humanity, to be a helpmate, an equal human being, to be a soul mate, genetically compatible to create other individual beings with unique physical attributes and personalities. Since the fall, sexual activities have lost their high original intention of deep soul-to-soul, person-to-person communication between soul mates. Free love turns relationships into selfish objects of personal gratification, which undermines God's intention.

Jesus was asked by the tricky Sadducees, who did not believe in the resurrection, what would happen to a woman who had been married to seven brothers? Whose wife would she be in the resurrection? According to Jewish law, she could be passed down the line of sons as each one died in an attempt to provide a son for the deceased brother. In the context of the culture in those days, and still prevailing in many parts of the world, a woman is a possession, a servant, an object of sexual gratification and breeding to provide a male heir. Jesus replied, *“Are you not in error because you do not know the Scriptures or the power of God? When the dead rise, they will neither marry nor be given in marriage; they will be like the angels in heaven.”*^{xl} Angels do not have to reproduce they are individually created, and so are the children of the resurrection.

Otis deals with the question of marriage by having God give a hypothetical answer:

“There will be children born among the non-glorified mass of people. But for My own royal family there will be even greater ecstasies, the sexual aspect of human relationships has been the most perverted of all My designs for humanity. Sex has been so abused it has become a stench to My nostrils! It is not yet time for you to know the full design of the new age. But of this be assured: there will be FULLNESS OF JOY! Every good thing experienced during this present, flawed age will have a finer counterpart when you are with me. Read again the Song of Solomon, with a pure and holy heart. My patterns and principles will not be abandoned in eternity, for they are right and pleasing to Me.”^{xli}

The way Jesus related to women of His day should be a lesson for men today. He was never condescending or chauvinistic, but kind gentle and communicative. It is no wonder that He had many women followers. They were treated as human beings who complete the “mannishness

of man,” in respect to the male—female contributions to the wholeness of mankind. This harkens back to the discussion of differentiation of being—by God—at the creation of Eve.

It is commonly said in our 21st century, as we look at the stars, “what a waste of space” if no one else is out there. Yet, they fail to understand that it is here on planet Earth that the rulers of all that space are being born, tested and refined to be the royal family of Jesus. The irony will be that all the innocent children before the age of accountability will be resurrected, while parents who spurned the love of Christ will be forever in eternal flames. Children came to Jesus when He taught on Earth. He said, *“Let the little children come to me, and do not hinder them, for the kingdom of God belongs to such as these.”*^{xliii} Children in Heaven will have a new sinless nature, a new beginning as they develop into mature members of the family of God. Great will be the joy in the kingdom of heaven in the extended family of God. Jesus died to rescue all of mankind, but at some point, in this present age, the will of a person makes it’s own self-giving or self-taking decision. There will be no innocent children in Hell; they will be in the paradise of God.

God Does Not Get What He Wants

“He is patient with you, not wanting anyone to perish, but everyone to come to repentance,”^{xlii} but self-seeking human wills, will perish.

A Timely Story

April 11, M555; how time flies. I like the year; 5s are good crib numbers and of course, the M is for Millennium. Pat, an experienced archaeologist, sheds his lightweight atmospheric space suite and with a big smile, joins me in the lounge for coffee. As we lean back on the soft cushions with a hot cup of Java from South America, we can look out from the huge atmospheric

dome across the desert-like rocky plains of Mars to the D&M pyramid. He chuckles, “You Celestials are amazing.”

Our friendship has deepened over the last 100 years after I had assisted in rescuing his archaeology team from a near disaster on the Moon. “Here I am,” he continues with a wave of his cup; fortunately the gravity enhancers simulate Earth’s gravity in the compound, and the coffee never sloshes over, “out there detailing the holographic measurements of the Face and you suddenly appear.” We laugh at the thought.

“I guess it can be rather startling to suddenly have your friend standing beside you with no space suite on,” I concede. “But Karen and I thought we would like to join you and Mary for supper, if that is alright with you two?”

“Alright!” exclaims Pat, “It is long over due.” He pauses for a moment and then continues, “Mary is enthralled with the metallic items that were found by D&M. That must have been some civilization...” He never has a chance to finish his sentence. There is a momentary blink of opalescent light and my soul mate is standing by the table in her radiant white gown, her blue eyes dancing as she flicks her long rich brown hair back over her shoulder. We have an instant bond of telepathic communication of deep love as she settles down beside me on the lounge, and with a twinkle in her eye, she hands me her handbag.

Pat’s eyes glow, as his blonde angel seemed to glide into the lounge. Mary is at least 175 years old, yet, looks like a vibrant 26-year-old beauty. Kissing Pat on the cheek, her flashing hazel-green eyes sparkle mischievously. The two ladies greet each other as only women can—a sensitive world outside the male domain. I peer inside the handbag and glance at Karen, her excitement is contagious, “I just had to bring some for Mary and Pat—it is Gaza’s finest.” I draw a bottle out of the bag; wine from the markets of Jerusalem. We smile in anticipation—let’s eat.

The delicate aroma of our after dinner coffee drifts from our cups as Mary comments, “The metallic items uncovered today are a new alloy of some type; that must have been a tremendous civilization.”

“We have not determined if it is Adamite, or pre-Adamite yet,” says Pat.

“Yes,” I say, “That was the era of the first great rebellion. It will be disparaging to see history repeat it self once again 500 years from now.” Both Mary and Pat are born again servants of King Jesus and have made an awesome pilgrimage to Jerusalem participating in the Feast of Praise sacrifice.

“Why will mankind rebel,” questions Mary, “Look at all the health, happiness and exciting challenges in life.”

“But look at how many times the Celestials have to gently assist in situations now,” says Karen softly. “Right now it is only the mortal conscious will that interacts with one other. Now is a time of perfect, just government and yet there is subtle discontent. If people are like this now, what will it be like when the Dragon and his Legions of Doom are released again for a short time,”

“I find it so hard to understand discontent when all is so wonderful,” says Mary quietly.

“It will be a time of the refiners fire, only those who are worthy will enter the “Ages of Ages.” Look back over the thousands of years to the Garden of Eden. God has been “just” in showing that mankind is deceitfully wicked. There was a period of Conscience from the fall to Noah’s flood, then Human Government to Abraham. From Abraham to Moses was the time of the Patriarchal Family, then the Law until the coming of the God-man-Jesus Christ. His death and resurrection, as you know, inaugurated the Church Age and now we are in the Age of Perfect

Justice, and look at what is happening. It is heading towards self-centered rebellion. It is no wonder that God is going to regenerate the Earth and make all things new,” I conclude.

Over 500 years more have now passed. Mary and Pat have joined us in the Celestial City. That supper evening on Mars seems just like yesterday, but for tomorrow the “Ages of Ages” is on the horizon. Earth is being consumed with a fiery holocaust. The King of Kings and His angels have concluded the White Throne Judgment. Eternity is waiting.

The Millennium is Over

I—John, see Satan and his Legions of Doom released from the Abyss. They proceed around the world tempting the vain selfish discontent that lay brooding in the hearts of mankind. Even though there has been perfect justice, peace and challenging purpose for 1000 years, the unreason of the heart overrules the reason of the mind. Nations from all around the world are once again deceived by the Dragon’s lies, “You shall be as gods.” “In number they are like the sand on the seashore. They marched across the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of God’s people, the city he loves. But fire came down from heaven and devoured them. And the devil, who deceived them, was thrown into the lake of burning sulfur, where the beast and the false prophet had been thrown. They will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.”^{xliv}

In that same instant, all who are accounted worthy as mortals to enter into the new heaven and new earth are translated off of the earth. In a blink of an eye; “the heavens will disappear with a roar; the elements will be destroyed by fire, and the earth and everything in it will be laid bare.”^{xlv} The curse, the sinful works of man

and the shroud of death are purged forever from the ellipsoid of time. The Great Consequence of Satan, angels and men has arrived. Satan and the Legions of Doom are cast into the fiery wormhole of Hell. A great White Throne is set up, every person who was not counted worthy, and those who are locked in Torments are called before the judge of Heaven and Earth.

This is the resurrection of the dead. They receive new bodies and go on trial. “And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened. Another book was opened, which is the book of life. The dead were judged according to what they had done as recorded in the books. The sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and Hades gave up the dead that were in them, and each person was judged according to what he had done. Then death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire. The lake of fire is the second death. If anyone’s name was not found written in the book of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.”^{xlvi} There is no excuse. The fallen angels, demons and all interdimensional powers that are in the Abyss are called forward. There is no excuse, the lake of fire opens to receive them. The great fiery wormhole of Hell swallows the curse of death and the retention centers of Torments and the Abyss.

Then I see a new heaven and a new earth. The old order of things has passed away.

The “Ages of Ages” has begun.

Notes:

ⁱ Isaiah 29:5a-8

ⁱⁱ Revelation 20:3

ⁱⁱⁱ Zechariah 12:10,11

^{iv} Isaiah 62:4,5

^v Matthew 13:37-43; 25:31-46

^{vi} Isaiah 13:12

^{vii} Isaiah 14:9,10

^{viii} Daniel 12:2

^{ix} Genesis 11:6

^x Hebrews 2:14

^{xi} Walvoord John F. Dr., *The Revelation Of Jesus Christ*, Moody Press Chicago, 1966, pg. 271

^{xii} Luke 13:28-30

^{xiii} Revelation 21:11-14

^{xiv} Revelation 21:18-21

^{xv} Zechariah 14:4:11

^{xvi} Ezekiel 40:2

^{xvii} Larkin Clarence, *The Greatest Book on Dispensational Truth in the World*, Rev. Clarence Larkin Est., 1918, pg. 93 Note: There is confusion between the King James Bible and the NIV between the usage of “reeds” or “cubits.” There is a significant difference. Ezekiel 40:5 describe one reed as six cubits plus a handbreadth, which makes a cubit around 21 imperial inches and a reed 10.5 feet. The problem results in the “philosophical” interpretation of modern translators who took their work from the **opinion** of the Septuagint translators. “The Septuagint (Greek) [translated 285-246 BC] so reads, The term ‘cubits,’ rather than ‘reeds’ is supplied throughout this chapter only as **the more probable**. * Neither is definitely designated.” *The Amplified Bible*, Zondervan Publishing 1964, note on page 987, (*emphasis mine).

So, let’s look at what Scripture really implies. Ezekiel 40:5 defines the reed in relation to the cubit. He then measures the temple wall, gate and alcoves using both reed (rod NIV) and cubits. When he measures the surrounding outside wall, Ezekiel 42:16, he uses reeds (KJV). It is 500 reeds, which makes each side approximately one mile long (500 x 10.5 feet/5280 = 1 mile); in cubits, this is only 875 feet. It becomes self-evident that the reed is used for large distances and the cubit for smaller dimensions. In chapter 45, the size of the “holy portion” to the Lord is to be 25,000 reeds by 20,000 reeds. For the city, another 5,000 reeds are then added to the 20,000. This makes a square of 25,000 reeds per side. In reeds, this is 50 miles per side—in cubits this is 8.3 miles—a vast difference.

Chapter 48 describes the size of the city within the 5000 by 25,000 reed area (10 miles by 50 miles). If we use cubits, the area is only 1.6 miles by 8.3 miles. The city’s walls are 4500 reeds per side (9 miles, or 1.6 miles using cubits)—1.6 miles is a very small area to be describes as—It “*will be for the common use of the city, for houses and for pasture land*” (verse 15). “*The city will be in the center of it.*” Think upon this— if we use cubits, we now have the world’s capital, Jerusalem, as a miniscule 1.6 mile per side city, which is ridiculous. It took Jonah three days to walk through the ancient city of Nineveh, Jonah 3:3. The walls surrounding the ancient city of Babylon had a circumference of seventeen miles. So, from our modern viewpoint, with Jerusalem being the governing city of the world in the Millennium, which is **more probable**, 1.6 miles per side or 9 miles?

Next, let’s make sense of the river that flows out of the sanctuary, it rapidly increases in volume as it is fed by subterranean springs—3000 cubits or 3000 reeds from the sanctuary it is—“*a river that no one could across*, Ezekiel 47:1-7. If we assume that it is one mile across, similar to other large rivers, then it is one mile wide 3000 cubits, which is one mile, from its source. If it is 3000 reeds than it has increased to one mile across, 6 miles from the sanctuary, which is **more probable**. If we follow the river to “*the city*,” and assume that it does not increase anymore in volume, we find that it forms a “T” in the city. Zechariah 14:8 “*On that day living water [fresh water] will flow out from Jerusalem, half to the eastern sea and half to the western sea, in summer and in winter.*” If the river is even one-half to one mile wide, with trees lining its edges, it occupies most of the area of a city with 1.6 mile sides, but it would beautify a city with 9 mile walls.

^{xviii} Ezekiel 48:31

^{xix} Ezekiel 47:

^{xx} Isaiah 65:20

^{xxi} Ezekiel 42:16 (KJV) See note #17. This is more probable in that the large river flows out of the sanctuary, and this large area would be needed to accommodate numerous family gatherings, from around the world, participating in the Feast of Praise sacrifices.

^{xxii} Zechariah 8:18

^{xxiii} Schmitt John W. & Laney Carl J., *Messiah’s Coming Temple*, Kregel publications 1997, pg. 118

^{xxiv} Schmitt John W., & J. Carl Laney, *Ibid*, pg. 143

-
- xxv Isaiah 35:8-10
xxvi Micah 2:13
xxvii Isaiah 4:5
xxviii Ezekiel 37:24&25
xxix Israeli Albert “Thy Kingdom Come” tape #2 Chuck Missler 2002.
xxx Jeremiah 31:34
xxxi Psalms 2:6 & 9
xxxii Micah 4:3
xxxiii Isaiah 54:15
xxxiv Isaiah 30:26
xxxv Isaiah 30:20-21
xxxvi Zechariah 8:20-23
xxxvii Isaiah 19:23-25
xxxviii Otis George, *Millennium Man*, Bible Voice Inc., 1975, pg. 56
xxxix 1 Corinthians 13:12
xl Mark 12:24-25
xli Otis, Ibid, pg. 107
xlii 2 Peter 3:9
xliii Luke 18:16-17
xliv Revelation 20:8-10
xlv 2 Peter 3:10
xlvi Revelation 20:12-15

Chapter 33

The Ages Of Ages

Then the end will come, when he hands over the kingdom to God the Father after he has destroyed all dominion, authority and power. For he must reign until he has put all his enemies under his feet. The last enemy to be destroyed is death. For he “has put everything under his feet.” Now when it says that “everything” has been put under him, it is clear that this does not include God himself, who put everything under Christ. When he has done this, then the Son himself will be made subject to him who put everything under him, so that God may be all in all.¹

A new eon begins; the White Throne Judgment is past. The sky and Earth in all its Edenic beauty have been regenerated; God is to be all in all. He will make His dwelling place with men. The old order of things has passed away. Clarence Larkin explains:

The Greek word “Parechomai,” translated “pass away,” does not mean “termination of existence” or annihilation,” but means to pass from “one condition of existence to another.” The Apostle Paul in his letter to Titus, (Titus 3:5), speaking of the “Regeneration” of men, uses the same word that Jesus used when in Matt. 19:28, He promised

His Disciples that in the “Regeneration,” that is in the “New Earth,” they should sit on “Twelve Thrones” judging the “Twelve Tribes” of Israel. Now no one supposes that the Regeneration of a man is his “Annihilation.” It is simply a Renewing Process by which he is brought back to the condition of man spiritually as before the Fall. The word “Restitution” in Acts 3:21, means the same thing. The “Dissolving “ of which Peter Speaks, (2 Pet. 3:11), is the same word Jesus used when He said of the colt—“Loose him and let him go.” The teaching of the Scripture is, that “Creation” is at present in a “State of Captivity,” waiting to be Loosed from the Bondage that sin has caused. Rom. 8:19-23ⁱⁱ

In the Ages of Ages, it is likely that mortal humanity, at the end of the Millennium, will be instantaneously reprogrammed, just as at the Tower of Babel and the change to multiple languages. Freedom of will—will exist, but now by the Holy Spirit of God, the eternal code of God, is written into each person’s subliminal innate programming, such that people become self-giving instead of self-taking. Humanity is now ready to populate the stars. Maybe, in this era at a certain age, or time of experience, an individual at a great joyous celebration, is translated into a Celestial being of a different order than that of the Bride. Possibly—this is what may have been originally planned for Adam and Eve.

The New Earth

John informs us that “there was no longer any sea.”ⁱⁱⁱ This may mean the expansive oceans of the world. At present 70% of the planet is covered by water. However, there will be large bodies of water since the new Earth is described as having rivers and streams. It may also mean that the Mediterranean Sea, which dominates the area of Biblical life, is much reduced in size. An alternative possibility is that the word “sea” means chaos of peoples. It is used this way in Revelation chapter 13 where the beast comes out of the sea. Thus, the peoples on the new Earth have structure and order. The old order of things has passed away. Modern science has shown that the oceans are important heat sinks moderating climate. They absorb carbon dioxide and supply the Earth with abundant biological diversity. Consequently, it may be presumptuous to say that there are no large bodies of water. God looked at His initial Adamite creation of oceans and fishes and said that it was “*very good*.”^{iv}

To try and make this new Earth a different bigger planet is outside the promises of God to Israel, “*Generations come and generations go, but the earth remains forever.*”^v Abraham was told, “*All the land that you see I will give to you and your offspring forever.*”^{vi} “*Then will all your people be righteous and they will possess the land forever. They are the shoot I have planted, the work of my hands, for the display of my splendor.*”^{vii} God said of King David, “*Your house and your kingdom will endure forever before me; your throne will be established forever.*”^{viii} “*You have established your people Israel as your very own forever, and you, O LORD, have become their God.*”^{ix} Of Jesus, through the lineage of David, Isaiah prophesied, “*Of the increase of his government and peace there will be no end. He will reign on David’s throne and over his kingdom,*

establishing and upholding it with justice and righteousness from that time on and forever. The zeal of the LORD Almighty will accomplish this.”^x

In the Eternal Ages of Ages, *“He will swallow up death forever. The Sovereign LORD will wipe away the tears from all faces; he will remove the disgrace of his people from all the earth. The LORD has spoken.”^{xi}* Israel will continue as head of nations in the realm of mortals. *“They will live in the land I gave to my servant Jacob, the land where your fathers lived. They and their children and their children’s children will live there forever, and David my servant will be their prince forever.”^{xii}* God will come and dwell with His chosen people forever and say *“Son of man, this is the place of my throne and the place for the soles of my feet. This is where I will live amongst the Israelites forever.”^{xiii}*

In the Ages of Ages, the focal point of the Universe and the dimensions of dimensions is at Earth. The New Jerusalem, the Bride of the Lamb, for that is the dwelling place of the Church, is the home of the Triune God, God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. *“No longer will there be any curse. The throne of God and of the Lamb will be in the city, and his servants will serve him. They will see his face, and his name will be on their foreheads. There will be no more night. They will not need the light of a lamp or the light of the sun, for the Lord God will give them light. And they will reign for ever and ever.”^{xiv}*

A Divine Mind

It should be noted, except for the first quote, that these “forever” supporting scriptures are taken in order through the Bible. Thus, the Divine Mind of God is present in purpose and design from Genesis to Revelation.

The New Jerusalem

The new Earth may possibly have high mountains because John is taken in spirit in his holographic adventure onto one of the highest to view the arrival of the New Jerusalem from Heaven. In each of the other visions, John is either in Heaven or on Earth. Here, he seems to be in between, neither on the flat part of Earth nor in Heaven. Thus, his vision is meant to be spatial, which is the meaning of the very high mountain. It is a startling concept, but, the New Jerusalem may possibly orbit Earth. John does not tell us that it settles on Earth. We already know that it is some 1,400 to 1,500 miles (2,200 km.) per side and is as *high* as it is *wide* and *long*. In other words, it looks like a cube. The only other alternative is that it is pyramid, with the height of the pyramid being the same as the square sides, though this is not what is implied.

John sees a remarkable sight as the New Jerusalem descends out of Heaven. He hears a voice tell him. *“Now the dwelling of God is with men, and he will live with them. They will be his people, and God himself will be with them and be their God.”* He writes: *“It shone with the glory of God, and its brilliance was like that of a very precious jewel, like a jasper, clear as crystal.”*^{xv} We find out later that the nations walk in the light of the New City. Some commentators have suggested that the New City may possibly be enclosed in a luminescent spheroid like a great jewel. Remarkably, a circle with a diameter of 2140 miles, almost the same as the Moon (2160 miles) encircles a cube with sides of 1500 miles—and that is a very large lump to land on Earth.

Dr. Gary Cohen and Salem Kirban in their book, *Revelation Visualized*, illustrate John’s difficulties in trying to describe this magnificent scene.

Here John attempts to describe in anthropomorphic terms what the holy city looked like to him. Her light is “like unto” (Greek: homosios) the light coming from a dazzling crystalline jasper. A jasper reflects a green white light. From this and what follows we get a glimpse, a peek, into the glories of heaven. John here attempts to tell us what cannot be fully told (Isaiah 64:4!).

May we compare him to a primitive native blindfolded while yet in his jungle, and then after being transported have the blind removed at night when he stands amid Chicago’s O Hare International Airport. His description of this glimpse would then, on his return to his native friends, have to be “Junglepocentric”—or in terms of the jungle life which his companions could comprehend. For him to say, “Then we saw a Boeing 747 land with full flaps down,” would be meaningless. He might have to describe this as a gigantic flying elephant. Thus the Apostle John tells us of New Jerusalem; but since his account is inspired of God we know that it is not only helpful but trustworthy and accurate.^{xvi}

In regard to this quote, the author begs to differ with Dr. Gary Cohen and Salem Kirban, in that Jasper is quartz embedded with reddish to blood red iron oxide. Thus the pinkish to red glow, more like a ruby, may be an eternal reminder of the ransoming blood of Yeshua—Jesus. The regenerated Earth and its moon will orbit the Sun. Israel as a people and a nation will still exist on Earth in this new order of things. If we correctly understand the size of the New Jerusalem, and try to place it physically on Earth, it does

not fit. Since John is taken up on a very high mountain, symbolic of height, to see the New Jerusalem descend from Heaven, it is reasonable to postulate that the sphere containing the New Jerusalem is in orbit around Earth—as the kings of the Earth walk in the light of it,^{xvii} which may be literal as well as symbolic. Nevertheless, what is inside the New Jerusalem?

I, John, “did not see a temple in the city, because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple. The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp.”^{xviii} “The great street of the city was of pure gold, like transparent glass.” I saw a central throne radiating tremendous power and glory. “Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb down the middle of the great street of the city. On each side of the river stood the tree of life, bearing twelve crops of fruit, yielding its fruit every month. And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations.”^{xix} Then Jesus said to me, “Behold, I am coming soon! My reward is with me, and I will give to everyone according to what he has done. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End. Blessed are those who wash their robes, that they may have the right to the tree of life and may go through the gates into the city. Outside are the dogs, those who practice magic arts, the sexually immoral, the murderers, the idolaters and everyone who loves and practices falsehood. I, Jesus, have sent

my angel to give you this testimony for the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, and the bright Morning Star. ^{xxx}

It is then that I walk back through the door of time. Behind me, and yet before me, is the New Heaven, the New Earth and the New Jerusalem home of God, the Lamb and His Bride. The light from the city is shining through the door as it closes behind me. The wall ripples as it closes. I sit on my bench, parchments in hand, overwhelmed, but filled with exceeding joy. I know that my future, and that of each one who believes in Him, is in the hands of the Lamb, the living God. However, there is one last thing that I strongly would like to remind you, “I warn everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this book: If anyone adds anything to them, God will add to him the plagues described in this book. And if anyone takes words away from this book of prophecy, God will take away from him his share in the tree of life and in the holy city, which are described in this book. He who testifies to these things says, “Yes, I am coming soon.” Amen. Come, Lord Jesus. ^{xxi}

We will meet John one day at the great celebration feast of the wedding of the Lamb and His Bride, the Church. Jesus, in the closing of this book, clearly states who He is. He is the Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End. He is Lord God Almighty. He confirms His incarnation on Earth by declaring that He is the root that grew out of Israel from the lineage of David. He is the Seed of the woman. He crushed the head of the

Dragon. In the great separation of Light from Darkness, all that is evil has been cast into Hell forever. Gohen and Kirban explain,

The fate of the righteous and of the unrighteous is oft times contrasted—as in Deut. 28:1ff, “Blessed...,” and 28:15ff, “Cursed...” Men who claim to be the intellectuals of this world may becloud the issue, but God here makes both the choices for Him and against Him and the fates that each shall receive as a result crystal clear. “For without are...”—**It should not be thought that they are upon the New Earth immediately outside the walls of the New Jerusalem. No, these were sent away forever into the Lake of Fire (Rev. 20). They are “without” (Greek: exo), that is, “outside” of both the New Earth and the New Jerusalem forever. They have been cast into the “outer darkness”* (Matt.8: 12; 22:13; 25:30) [*emphasis Mine].^{xxii}**

It would be impossible for the beloved Apostle John to describe in a brief paragraph what he saw. This writer believes that John was given a glimpse of that which is dynamically pertinent—and that is the Throne of God and the River of Life. How it is dimensionally positioned within the Great City is unknown. We do know that God “*lives in unapproachable light, whom no one has seen or can see.*”^{xxiii} Therefore, when John sees God, the Lamb and the Water, he is describing the Triune God, wherein the Son has turned all reign over to the Father that “*God may be all in all.*”

Jesus said that we should drink of the Water of Life, which is the Holy Spirit. The tremendous River is, or is symbolic of, the continuous flow of the Holy Spirit of God

throughout the latticework of dimensions and dimensions from the infinite “I AM,” Who sustains all that there is. Yes, God dwells with men, but at the same time, in a sense, the New Jerusalem surrounds the Throne in our physical space-time world. Though it appears finite in aspect, it is the focal point for the infinity of God where the Son is the Lord God Almighty; visible with Him is His Bride, the Church. Earth is no longer in a galaxy in the middle of nowhere. It is the center of all that is, and thus it will be, forever and ever!

The Holy of Holies

The Jewish temple prefigured this cubic city, in that the area of the Holy of Holies was a cube, as wide as it was long as it was high, within it dwelt the Shekinah Glory.

If we use the cube as a concept for the City rather than a pyramid, then the Glory of God would in some way be central within the cube. The walls would then shield mortals from the unapproachable light of God. We are told that people walk in the light of the City and that the gates would never be shut. The kings and nations will bring their glorious worship to the City. The City is the home of the Bride of Jesus, administrators of the Heavens and Earth. Because resurrected believers are made immortal in the image of Christ, then the City is the place of rooms, or mansions, that Jesus went to prepare. If the City is 1,500 miles by 1,500 miles and is composed of unknown multiple layers for dwellings, then the river of life may flow from layer to layer in unimaginable Edenic beauty. The tree of Life stands on each side of the River yielding twelve crops of fruit, one for each month. This would indicate that there are still seasons on Earth.

On Earth, Israel will be head of nations. There will be no Earthly temple for that order of things is past. Technologically environmentally designed cities will likely

abound around rejuvenated Earth. There are majestic mountains, forests, rivers, animals, and birds of all descriptions. Hyperdimensional space ships may slip from galaxy to galaxy exploring, colonizing and developing. There will be no “wars of the worlds.” The era of fallen rebellious angels, of bent willful sentient creatures is over. God has what He so desires, “gods” that will love Him as God and reign with Him forever.

The Lord God Almighty loves to Create so why should He stop? Earth will glisten like a jewel in the heavens. Its vast and unique cities will host visitors from all over the universe. The twelve tribes of Israel will have the administrative responsibilities of all intergalactic civilization under the supreme rule of Jesus and His Bride. If the New Jerusalem is perchance an orbiting celestial sphere, one can imagine the continuous flow of visiting spaceships and shuttlecraft docking at its massive portals. The sphere would be at full atmospheric pressure for air breathing mortals. Around the sphere, huge multilevel ellipsoidal openings with air retention fields let standard spaceships and the intergalactic hyperdimensional craft in to dock. The distance between the portal entrances and the city structure would be around 300 miles, which would be covered with beautiful landscaped staging areas and buildings.

As a traveler approaches the city, the massive wall will seem to loom up into the heavens. The foundation stones made of precious jewels will sparkle like colored rainbows. Along each towering wall are three gates formed from huge pearls, one for each of the twelve tribes of Israel. The pearls may be as much as several miles, or even much more, in diameter giving easy access to the city. Can you imagine traveling several miles or more through the dancing iridescent light reflecting from the trillions of layers of mother pearl; then on the other side seeing mansions, and dimensions of mansions

interconnected with streets of pure gold like glass? Finally before you is the indescribable awesome, awesome, awesome Throne and River of Life connecting the finite to the Infinite! Holy, Holy, Holy is the Lord God Almighty! Powers, authorities, heavenly principalities, estates, mortal tribes from Earth and all intergalactic nations will come and worship before the Throne of God and the Lamb.

Light Has Vanquished Darkness

Do we have purpose to our lives as microdot man on planet Earth? Is there any direction to the intelligence arrow? Am I loved? Either we live in a deterministic universe with everything left to chance, or God exists. God exists has been validated as more than a reasonable philosophical premise. The Bible has proved to be a book that leads us into concepts that give meaning and purpose to the cosmos, evil, Earth, mankind and Eternal Love. You are loved so much that God Himself paid the price of eternal justice to redeem you. The intelligence arrow of mankind points to a vibrant eternal destiny of love, purpose and fulfillment under the headship of Jesus Christ, King of Kings and Lord of Lords. The Great Consequential judgment of the Dragon, fallen angels, demons and rebellious mankind has satisfied eternal justice. Those that overcame through the sacrifice of God Himself, have an eternal destiny to reign as immortal Celestial citizens with Jesus as priests and kings—forever, in a universe that is totally anthropocentric (built for mankind).

The war of the cosmos is over. Light has vanquished Darkness. The final differentiation is now complete; the sons of Light have inherited Eternity. Creation is beginning again. The opportunity to be part of this eternal destiny is now. The Apostle

Peter cried out to the spiritually seeking crowd. *“Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.”*^{xxiv} With the powerful vision of the New Jerusalem fresh in his mind, the Apostle John writes: *“The Spirit and the bride say, ‘Come!’ And let him who hears say, ‘Come!’ Whoever is thirsty, let him come; and whoever wishes, let him take the free gift of the water of life.”*^{xxv} Jesus told his disciples, *“I have told you these things, so that in me you may have peace. In this world you will have trouble. But take heart! I have overcome the world.”*^{xxvi}

Eternity, the Ages of Ages is on the horizon of time. Will you be there?

Respectfully

Glen E. White

An Ambassador For King Jesus To Planet Earth

Notes

ⁱ 1 Corinthians 15:24-28

ⁱⁱ Larkin Clarence, *The Greatest Book on Dispensational Truth in the World*, Rev. Clarence Larkin Est. 1920, 41st printing. pg. 145

ⁱⁱⁱ Revelation 21:1

^{iv} Genesis 1:31

^v Ecclesiastes 1:4

^{vi} Genesis 13:15

^{vii} Isaiah 60:21

^{viii} 2 Samuel 7:16

^{ix} 2 Samuel 7:24

^x Isaiah 9:7

^{xi} Isaiah 25:8

^{xii} Ezekiel 37:25

^{xiii} Ezekiel 43:7

^{xiv} Revelation 22:3-4

^{xv} Revelation 21:3,11

^{xvi} Cohen Gary G. Dr., Kirban Salem, *Revelation Visualized*, Moody Press Edition 1972, pg. 438

^{xvii} Revelation 21:24

^{xviii} Revelation 21:22-23

^{xix} Revelation 22:1-2

^{xx} Revelation 22:12-16

^{xxi} Revelation 22:18-20

^{xxii} Cohen Gary G. Dr., Kirban Salem, *Ibid*, pg. 468

^{xxiii} 1Timothy 6:16

^{xxiv} Acts 2:38

^{xxv} Revelation 22:17

^{xxvi} John 16:33